



LONG LIVE SUMMONS

BOOK 04

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Long Live Summons

(召唤万岁)

by

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

(霞飞双颊)

Synopsis

The Soaring Dragon Continent is a world of summons, you can only become strong if you become a summoner! Yue Yang, an average high school boy, was suddenly transported into this world. When he woke up, he was greeted with a lot of worried faces and found out that he had assumed another person's identity. Turns out he's the good-for-nothing third son of the Yue Family, who had just recently drowned himself because of a failed engagement. Unlike the third son of the Yue Family who was useless in summoning, Yue Yang succeeded in making a contract with a summoning grimoire on his first try, even when the other guy failed for the past fifteen years. Others would have a headache making contracts with beasts afterwards, but countless beasts tried to gain favour with Yue Yang instead, acting like a good kid before him.

Yue Yang the brat, however, didn't feel grateful at all: "Scram, Mythical Beasts! Do you think you are cool like that? Go away from me now, I only like beautiful summons!"

Even when royal families approached him for his talents, the shameless brat replied, "I'm not interested in government stuff, I'm only interested in beauties!"

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by heliumm, Last, want2eat, Λαστ, YES LOLITA! NO TOUCH!, Janet, May, Sheng, Andy, Shiro, Augere, Yunichan, Taffy, youcanbeKing, Sephilia, Zaza, Shiroyukineko, Ignis @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

Translation Edits by Khh, Rango, Krithika, Based Jessica @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 301 – Creating Pills, Martial Spirit Pill

The battle of Yue Clan Castle shook the whole world.

The previous Yue Qiu was powerful beyond compare. Some people had suspected that he was fake, but this and that was different matter. They didn't see the real Yue Clan Third Young Master in good favour.

It was a battle between a lone Innate Ranker against a team of several innate Rankers after all. Furthermore, anyone with eyes could see that Yue Qiu was supported by Zi Jin Kingdom, Thousand Goblins Sect, Green Summit Sect and even the Lion Pagoda Sect. Everyone believed that Yue Yang would fail, and the fake Yue Qiu would take over the Yue Clan.

The action of Yue Yang bringing his sister and coming to the Yue Clan Castle the second time was perceived as the most foolhardy action that he had ever done by many people.

He was a genius young man, the future hope of the Yue Clan.

But due to the impetuosity of a young heart, unable to endure silently, he had walked to his own death.

He would be gone forever.

That was how everyone in the world had thought.

Beyond their expectations, the final result of the battle had made countless people pop their eyes out in shock. The fake Yue Qiu, who possessed the power and support of many organizations, even the Demon Abyss, had actually been defeated miserably. The fake Third Young Master had also been eaten alive by the real Third Young Masters' beast. Several Innate Rankers who had helped the fake Yue Qiu, such as Yao Guang, Kai Yang and Tian Quan from the Seven Great Bears had all fallen dead on the mountainous road towards the Yue Clan Castle. They had all been slaughtered by the Yue Clan Third Young Master, whose abnormality was simply beyond everyone's imagination. Even the Demon Innate Ranker Chi Liao, the Zi Jin Heavenly Imperial Guardians Ma Shang and Niu Guo, and the Chief Official of Zi Jin Kingdom Luo Wei were all defeated with the help of the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar's help.

The Green Summit Sect who attacked the Yue Clan with all their had were completely annihilated.

None of the experts within the sect was spared.

Firstly, the Vice Sect Leader Moqi Xu Ling had been killed by the Yue Clan Third Young Master in the Battlefield of Death, with the latter not suffering any kind of injuries at all. The Sect Leader, Duan Mu Long Cheng, who was a famous Innate Ranker in Tong Tian Tower, suffered a crushing defeat and tried to escape, but the Yue Clan Third Young Master succeeded in persuading him to the Demon Abyss and killed him off.

Even the extremely powerful Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian, who had been a respected senior since nine hundred years ago, regarded as the Great Emperor of Zi Wei in Tong Tian Tower Level 7, had retreated with tails between his legs in the end.

Everyone really couldn't imagine the strength of the Yue Clan Third Young Master, who managed to defeat so many strong opponents.

The maddest thing was that that brat was only twenty years old.

If other people became an [Elder] at twenty years old, everyone would regard him as a genius who only appear once in hundreds of years...

Compared to him, they were not even worthy to carry his shoes.

The Yue Clan Third Young Master could actually kill the Level 6 Innate Ranker, Green Summit Sect Leader Duan Mu Long Cheng, when he was only twenty years old. Furthermore, he had even managed to return after going to the Demon Abyss. Such a prosperous thing was definitely unprecedented in mankind's history!

As their two Heavenly Imperial Guardians had died in battle, the Zi Jin Kingdom who had planned to attack Da Xia Kingdom with their army decided to recall their two hundred thousand men army back.

They changed their attacking tactic to defensive one, stationing their army at the border between the two kingdoms for fear of the Da Xia Kingdom attack.

The previously high and mighty Zi Jin Ambassador who asked the Da Xia Crown Prince to surrender his royal sister Princess Qian Qian to become the Prince of Zi Jin's concubine, were immediately kicked out of the Da Xia Kingdom by the Crown Prince as soon as the Yue Clan Castle battle ended. The second prince was more knowledgeable, he ordered some generals to capture this fellow, and after beating the hell out of him, stripped him of his clothes and hanged him on top of the Da Xia Palace walls, publicly displaying him to the citizens. Although the Da Xia Crown Prince had no authority to issue the order of declaring war against Zi Jin Kingdom, the Crown Prince, Second Prince and other Princes who were fighting for the throne all started to announce that Zi Jin Kingdom had tarnished their royal sister's reputation, hence Da Xia would not stop attacking Zi Jin until they were completely annihilated, in order to avenge the shame they brought to their royal sister.

Following that, the Zi Jin Kingdom sent another envoy to beg for mercy and forgiveness.

However, once again, the princes announced that the envoy had colluded with the Demon Abyss, and that he was not sent by the Zi Jin Kingdom's emperor. He was sent in order to drive a wedge between the two kingdoms.

The Crown Prince of Da Xia and several other princes didn't accept Zi Jin Kingdom's Envoy's explanation at all, proclaiming

that they would pursue the matter to the end.

Before Jun Wu You come back and take charge of the whole situation, the Crown Prince who had not ascended the throne and the other princes didn't have any authority to move their troops. Furthermore, there were several uprising and rebellion in the Da Xia Kingdom, bandits and robbers ran rampant. They had suffered a lot of civil unrest that needed to be put down urgently. It was completely impossible for Da Xia Kingdom to send their troops for war. However, even blind people could see that Da Xia and Zi Jin would sooner or later broke into war.

Other than sending their subordinates to congratulate Yue Yang on his victory, the Da Xia Crown Prince and several other princes had also sent him a large amount of reward to show their appreciation.

There was an intense competition between them. Even the Crown Prince of Da Xia had personally led several generals and troops to kill bandits, putting down rebellions and pacifying City Masters, relying on the influence of Yue Yang's victory in the Yue Clan Castle.

As for the rest of the great Clans, they had also come to congratulate Yue Yang.

The one who welcomed their visit was Yue Ling, Yue Yang's second uncle, who was also the new Yue Clan Substitute Clan Master.

Yue Yang had no interest whatsoever in becoming the substitute clan master. Furthermore, wouldn't he be tired to death if he was to manage so many of the Yue Clan's member and rebuild their destroyed land? Yue Yang didn't want to take any part in it and threw all the responsibilities to his Second Uncle Yue Ling instead. Although Yue Ling wasn't as talented as his older brother Yue Shan, nor as powerful as his third brother Yue Qiu and not as wise and farsighted as his fourth brother Yue Ling, he had the advantage of being average in everything. He was a jack of all trades. Furthermore, although he didn't help Yue Yang during the bloody battle in Yue Clan Castle, he also did not assist the fake Yue Qiu. He was suffering in silence as he watched the Yue Clan's name being tarnished. Hence, he was quite outstanding in some aspects.

(Shiro: Those who are confused, Yue Yang's second uncle is Yue Ling (岳岭) and fourth uncle is Yue Ling (岳陵). The two Lings are written differently, had different meanings and they are pronounced with different tones.)

Hence, the only two elders that were still alive were willing to allow Yue Ling to assume the position of substitute clan master until Clan Master Yue Hai returned.

Yue Ling would never imagine even in his dreams that the position that he had always hoped for, the clan master, would finally fall onto his hands... Previously, there were the strong Yue Qiu and his elder brother Yue Shan before him, then there was also Yue Ting who were cultivated to be the next Clan Master. His father was old but in good health, his brother was still at his prime and his nephew was still growing... Yue Ling thought that he would never be able to be a substitute clan master in his life. Furthermore, Yue Yang, who possessed such an extraordinary talent had appeared afterwards. Forget about his own father, the Clan Master Yue Hai, even the whole of Yue Clan saw him as their

future hope, their future clan master. As long as Yue Yang agree, no one would oppose him to be their clan master.

Unexpectedly, he had yielded the position of substitute clan master to him.

He had done that even though Yue Ling had not supported him previously.

Second Uncle Yue Ling felt both guilty and touched in his heart. When Yue Yang tried to find him to ask if he wanted to become the substitute clan master and lead his clansmen to re-establish their home, Yue Ling was speechless for quite a while. He almost thought that he had heard wrongly.

However, he didn't decline the offer, immediately accepting it without hesitation.

Yue Ling was determined to be a good substitute clan master and lead his clansmen until his father return from the Eastern Goblin Tribe's clutches. He would rebuild the Yue Clan Castle from its ruins.

Yue Yang, this nephew of his, was already an Innate. His future would be in Tong Tian Tower, so he wouldn't cherish the clan master position. That was completely normal.

Even if Yue Yang didn't have any governance ability, every night, Second Uncle Yue Ling would give him a report on the progress of

their work. Even though Yue Yang didn't have the time to meet him, he would summarize the report to a few points and report it to Yue Yu and Yue Bing, asking for their help to pass it on to their brother.

After this battle, there was an undeniable change between the Yue Clan members. They had become more united.

The clansmen from the branch families or those with different surnames were not regarded as if they were lower in status like last time. Under the leadership of Lin Miao and Lin Lei, the newly promoted Clan General, they had become more spontaneous in participating in rebuilding their home. Yue Clan possessed a lot of reserves from the beginning, furthermore, the great clans, Da Xia Crown Prince and several other princes had given them several precious items and sent over a lot of workers to help with the rebuilding. This was in the hope that the Yue Clan Castle would be reconstructed more quickly. Although it was still under construction, with this kind of momentum and energy, it wouldn't be long before the newly constructed Yue Clan Castle, more glorious and majestic than ever, was done.

"Qilin girl, take a look at this pill, is it refined in the right way?" Yue Yang was an extremely good student right now, eager to learn.

"Stupid, you can't use Nirvana Flame right now. Nirvana Flame is too pure, the medicinal properties would be changed. Your purple flames is enough to refine it, it would be best if you can use Life Water to adjust it a little, but I never tried it before." The airheaded Qilin girl was usually airheaded, but with regards to refining pills, not even a hundred of Yue Yang could compare to

one of her finger.

Previously, Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia had been discussing about making the Martial Arts Pill and Martial God Pill. The Qilin girl who was passing by while on her way out to play looked down at them when she heard their words.

She had unintentionally blurted out that making the Martial Arts Pill was equivalent to making candies. Only the Immortal Pill that she refined was the real deal.

When she said that, Yue Yang immediately grabbed her.

Yue Yang threatened to give her a beating on her butt and kick her out of the castle if she didn't teach him how to refine pills. After threatening the lost little girl with no place to call home, he finally succeeded in learning the skill. Just like that, Yue Yang managed to acquire a free teacher who was more knowledgeable than any other sages in the whole world.

The only disadvantage was that this teacher had no patience when she was teaching her disciple.

The Qilin girl really liked the naughty clothes that Yue Yang had invented, for example like lace stocking, lace bra and so on.

She even wanted to try wearing the naughtier clothings such as see-through, revealing clothes, fishnets and so on. It was those kind of undergarments that would make a girl blush the moment

they see them, but make perverts drool when they see them... Most regretfully, due to the Qilin Mommy's super protection, the Qilin girl was unable to change her clothings. This was because Qilin Mommy had put on the legendary Qilin Armor on her precious daughter's body.

Forget about others, even the Qilin girl herself was unable to take it off her body in her human form.

Yue Yang was very busy. Although his wish of making sexy undergarments was a great ambition, he was unable to pursue it at the moment. He could only draw it on paper to entice the Qilin girl at the most.

There was the task of refining the Martial Arts Pill waiting for Yue Yang. He needed to create them to help improve the abilities of the girls, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others, so that they can become Innates. He also had to research on Heaven Runes and Ancient Runes, it was the preparation he needed to do in order to search the God's Ruins in the future. There was also the mission given to him by the Night Empress, to acquire the Black Turtle Pearl from the wounded Dragon Turtle in the Despair Abyss. Then, he would need to gather the Azure Dragon Pearl, the White Tiger Pearl, the Vermillion Bird Pearl and the Black Turtle Pearl too. Of course, there was also the World Tree Quest which he need to complete in order to obtain Wisdom Fruit and Luminous Branch, that would help in preparing Yue Bing's Thousand Year Old Treant General to level up into Ten Thousand Years Old Treant King. At the same time, he would be able to fulfil his agreement with Zhi Zun of offering her a Wisdom Fruit every year.

(Shiro: About Night Empress, see chapter 165)

He also need to explore the Death Canyon.

The Death Canyon was the outskirts of the God's Ruins. Yue Yang had acquired a secret treasure map in the Aries Temple before. There was definitely some kind of secret inside the secret treasure map.

Of course, there was also the hidden treasure that the Bloody Queen had mentioned. It was a place where even a Gold King Beast would level up when it entered the place, an extremely high quality place. The Bloody Queen's mother had managed to rise to the Fourth Level of Tong Tian Tower or even higher realms because she had gone to that place. Yue Yang suddenly wanted to see it for himself.

If it could even make a Gold King Beast evolve, then there would be hope for Ye Kong's King Kong Demon Ape and the Li Brothers' Soldier Ants to level up and evolve.

He also wanted to enter the Puppet Shrine, and look through the precious legacy that the Ghost Genius Yue Gong had left behind. Yue Yang wanted to study them and then design a whole new Puppet Beast.

He also needed to cure Grandma Wu Teng's injury and help her to recover, then help the old fox to become Innate...

There was also the matter of exploring the mysterious Heaven Stairway... (Chapter 192)

And how to enter the world inside the Grimoire...

Find out how to truly reveal every beasts' abilities and dig out their hidden potential and skills..

Train his own abilities so that he would be strong enough to fight against the Great Emperor of Zi Wei Shun Tian, Thousand Goblins Sect Leader and the Great Demon Kings and Lich Kings...

Things like that and so on and so forth. There were so many things waiting for Yue Yang to do, so many that he wouldn't be able to complete them even if he was divided into 10. If it wasn't for the fact that the Yue Clan needed him here to keep up their spirits, he would have ran back to the Little Flower Garden and enjoy the services of the sickly beauty. Yue Yang was the Yue Clan's only hope right now, everyone was afraid that the Third Young Master would abandon them. They need to see this brave, courageous Third Young Master strolling on their premises everyday in order to feel reassured. Only then would they be able to give it their all to work!

Hence, Yue Yang was forced to stay at the moment. Other than getting himself busy with his own matters, he also encouraged his clansmen who were rebuilding their home everyday.

They didn't need Yue Yang to do anything. As long as he stayed, they would be satisfied.

In the situation where he was unable to leave, knowing that the

Qiling girl knew how to refine pills, Yue Yang decided to learn it from her.

He should forget about creating Immortal Pills right now, even if he knew how to make it, he wouldn't have the material for it. Currently, Yue Yang wanted to create the Martial Arts Pill that every warrior could ever wish for. Although this was more or less like making sweets to the Qilin girl, this pill was filled completely with Yue Yang's hard work.

“Qilin girl, what do you think of the quality of this pill? If I add more God's Dew, would it be better?” Yue Yang was definitely a serious student when asking other people to teach him.

“Whatever, that precious God's Dew of yours is not even as good as the well water in my house. If I were you, I would add a little bit more. Why are you economizing so much? Economizing materials wouldn't give you a good pill as a result... Oh right, why aren't you calling me by my name?” The Qilin girl was bewildered.

“You have a name?” Yue Yang had really not asked her about her name yet.

“Of course I do...” The Qilin girl blinked her big eyes and looked at Yue Yang cutely, “Don't you know that we, the Immortal Tribe, have our own unique, one-and-only name?”

“Immortal Tribe people have names? Then what's yours?” Yue Yang was extremely curious about the Eastern Immortal Tribe. He had always thought that the Old Daoist Priest that had kicked him

to the Soaring Dragon Continent might just be a respectable figure amongst the Immortal Tribe. If the Old Daoist Priest was too powerful, it would be difficult if he wanted to take revenge of him. However, if he really had granddaughters, Yue Yang thought kidnapping one of them would suffice as compensation for him.

“Mommy said that my throat is too delicate, it’s not good for me to speak too much...” The Qilin girl lowered her head as she replied Yue Yang.

She wanted to enter the world inside the Divine Grimoire, but she didn’t control her strength to well. She accidentally knocked Yue Yang onto the ground before she turned into a rainbow light and floated inside him.

Yue Yang really suspected that the Qilin girl was doing it on purpose.

When he thought about it again, the Qilin girl was a natural airhead. To her, knocking him to the ground might be the same as knocking her head into some pole when she walk...

Xue Wu Xia had been quietly watching Yue Yang refining the pill. She had also been quietly listening to his conversation with the Qilin girl, not disturbing them. When Yue Yang needed her, she would bring him the herbs he needed without him asking. She would help him pour the God’s Dew or Life Water. In any case, whenever Yue Yang needed her, she would appear. She would disappear when Yue Yang was studying, she would definitely not disturb the exchange between him and the Qilin girl.

Amongst the girls, only she was able to do that.

Yue Yang saw that the concoction that he had not finished creating on the table had spilled a little when the airheaded Qilin girl knocked him over just now. He sighed aloud, and was about to make a new one.

However, Xue Wu Xia stopped him.

She pointed at the concoction that had already started to glow slowly, “Don’t. Look, you have succeeded.”

“This... Impossible, am I that lucky?” Yue Yang was pleasantly surprised when he saw it. The pill that he had been concocting for so long was finally done. He had succeeded just by mixing them up like that? Furthermore, he could sense that the pill’s power was even better than what had been recorded under the Medicine Encyclopedia. It was almost at the level of Martial God Pill.

“Why didn’t you suspect that the Qilin girl had the intention of helping us?” Xue Wu Xia looked at Yue Yang.

Chapter 302 – Heart Palpitations!

Accurately speaking, the thing that he had managed to create was not the Martial Arts Pill, it was Martial Arts Pill Concoction.

Although Yue Yang had acquired the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit from Mercenary Zhong Hao in the Ant Hole previously, which was a compulsory ingredient needed for the creation of Martial Arts Pill, he was still lacking of one kind of herb, which is the Snow Lotus Herb. Without the Snow Lotus Herb, the last step of making the Martial Arts Pill Concoction into a pill would not be realized. For warriors, the pill must be hard and slow to break down, so that they would be able to slowly absorb its strength in their stomach. This would help their bodies to adjust and improve themselves slowly. If they take the Martial Arts Pill Concoction just like that, it would be absorbed very quickly that their bodies wouldn't be able to endure the influx of power... Another point is that the power from the Martial Arts Pill Concoction would disappear quickly. Even if a warrior manage to assimilate the pill without exploding, he wouldn't be able to absorb the precious pill completely, causing a huge loss in effectiveness.

In conclusion, taking the concoction on its own was not only dangerous, it was also a waste.

However, Hard-shelled Dragon Fruits and Snow Lotus Roots were all extremely rare. Yue Yang managed to get the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit last time, and with Grandma Chi's help, he managed to steal a little Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit Juice. So that ingredient had been acquired without problems.

But he still lacked the Snow Lotus Root.

It was said that the Western Lion Pagoda had cultivated it, but Yue Yang had become enemies with the Western Lion Pagoda. He would obviously not ask for the ingredient from them.

As for the ten over herbs and ingredients needed for the Martial Arts Pill, Yue Yang managed to gather them through various people. The Prince of Tian Luo had brought some from the Tian Luo Palace. Xue Tan Lang had also represented the Xue Clan to present some materials as a contribution to the Yue Clan. The Crown Prince of Da Xia and various other princes had also brought some precious herbs and ingredients to him. Lastly, there were also the hidden materials that the Yue Clan possessed, which the two elders give to Yue Yang for his use. When Second Uncle Yue Ling found out that Yue Yang managed to finish a Martial Arts Pill, he had awkwardly asked him if he could spare a failed product for Yue Tian... The fact that Yue Ling had begged Yue Yang to give the Martial Arts Pill to Yue Tian instead of his other son Yue Yan shocked Yue Yang a little.

He realized that his Second Uncle was serious, he wasn't trying to test him. Yue Yang felt that after this Second Uncle assumed the position of the substitute Clan Master, he had changed and prioritize the benefits of his Clan first.

Letting him be the substitute clan master seemed to be the right choice.

Yue Tian and Yue Yang had bullied the pitiful guy a lot last time. As someone who had assumed the identity of the pitiful guy, Yue

Yang definitely bore a grudge towards them.

If he didn't go through this war, even if he had to feed the Martial Arts Pill to dogs, he would never give it to Yue Tian or the others.

However, when Yue Yang thought about it again, he had become an Innate Ranker now, why would he pick a fight with Level 6 [Elders], who were as weak as ants to him? At least they didn't betray the Yue Clan even when oppressed by the fake Yue Qiu. Other than Yue Bao, that greedy fellow, Yue Tian and Yue Yan didn't rely on the fake Yue Qiu. So they actually had backbones.

Yue Tian and Yue Yan were bound not to be very successful in the future. They would probably not be able to leave Soaring Dragon Continent their whole life.

Since it's that way... Yue Yang made a decision.

"If I had some extra, I will consider it. At this moment of time, I don't have any consideration of doing so. Let's wait and see!" Yue Yang didn't reject him immediately, but he also didn't give it to him immediately.

If he managed to make too many Martial Arts Pill to eat, Yue Yang would consider giving two pills to Yue Ling.

Of course, Yue Yang thought that such a situation would probably not happen.

But Yue Ling was completely overjoyed.

He also knew that Yue Yang would never give the Martial Arts Pill to Yue Tian first, he was already grateful that Yue Yang didn't kill Yue Yan and Yue Tian. Yue Ling's thoughts were similar to Yue Yang's. If Yue Yang made too many Martial Arts Pill and couldn't finish them, then he could spare him two so that Yue Tian and Yue Yan could have a brighter future. Although it was highly unlikely that Yue Yang made too many Martial Arts Pill, at least there was still hope.

Without the Snow Lotus Root ingredient for his pill creation, Yue Yang was actually at a loss.

However, he still had his super awesome teacher, the Qilin girl.

Qilin girl had never seen a Snow Lotus Root before, but she immediately understood the moment she read the Medicine Encyclopedia. She felt that the Snow Lotus Root could be substituted with Life Water, Hoar Frost Truffle, Purple Red Grindstone Fruit and three Cockscomb Flowers leaves. When Yue Yang tried the prescription, he discovered that the medicinal properties were slightly suppressed and it became harder to absorb, so he took the initiative and added a tenth of a drop of God's Dew into the concoction.

Xue Wu Xia secretly admired Yue Yang's bold approach.

It was a pity that Yue Yang didn't have a good control on the fire

he used to refine the pills. He had always been unable to make it into a pill. Then, the Qilin girl knocked onto the mixture accidentally and mixed it up more, hence increasing the chances of success.

The pill concoction glowed brightly.

The Martial Arts Pill Concoction slowly evaporated and condensed, becoming a pill.

Yue Yang quickly used his smallest Nirvana Flame to refine the semi-manufactured product. After refining it 3 more times, he finally had a successful result... The whole room was filled with an exotic smelling odour that was extremely refreshing. Simply by smelling the aroma of the Pill, one would feel some kind of strength in their body. If one ate it and absorbed its energy, they would definitely gained enough energy to overcome their limits and reach higher levels. The three Martial Arts Pill that he had just created was simply high quality goods... If normal Pharmacist creates a Martial Arts Pill, they wouldn't use Life Water and God's Dew. Especially the finishing touch of refining it with Nirvana Flame in the end. All of these small changes helped Yue Yang to create an extremely high quality Martial Arts Pill.

According to the evaluation written on the Medicine Encyclopedia, the Martial Arts Pill was a medicine of the 'Sixth Rank'.

A Sixth Ranked Medicine was already a miracle medicine that every warrior would dream about. Furthermore, Seventh Rank medicine was already the limit of what a normal warrior's body

could take. If a normal warrior eat a higher ranked Medicine such as Eighth Rank Medicine, their body would probably explode. It was only something an Innate Ranker could take in.

Right now, Yue Yang added Life Water, God's Dew, and even used Nirvana's Flame to create these Martial Arts Pill. Hence, it had surpassed Sixth Rank, even the Seventh Rank, almost the same as Eighth Rank.

Yue Yang didn't doubt that these three pills would help with increasing someone's strength, he was just afraid that their body wouldn't be able to take it.

"Smells nice! Have you finished the pills?" Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian and the others immediately burst in when they smelled the nice smell. They looked at the surrounding curiously and saw the three round, red-coloured pills that Yue Yang had placed on the jade bowl in front of him. They couldn't take their eyes off the pills, looking completely eager to eat it. The Bloody Queen Red and Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man could still control themselves, but the Thorny Flower Demoness had completely lost her control, her saliva dripping all the way to the floor. If it wasn't for the fact that she was afraid Yue Yang would get angry with her, she would have already grabbed the pills immediately and shoved it into her mouth.

Hui Tai Lang worked really hard to pretend that it was an obedient dog.

It knew if it behaved itself well, its master would definitely reward it.

Although these three pills didn't have as much power as the Innate Rankers' Dan, its body longed for the power inside those pills. Hence, Hui Tai Lang desperately wanted those pills.

Yue Yang actually wanted to give one each to Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian and the others to boost their power and help them reach Innate Level. Especially Luo Hua City Mistress, who needed it the most. As for Xue Wu Xia, she didn't really need it. This little bookworm might actually possess the strength equivalent to Innate Level 1 already. With her great sense of perception and wisdom, coupled with Yue Yang's Body Fusion training and fusing of their Yin and Yang abilities, she would definitely be able to break through the realm of Innates soon.

The thing he was most concerned about was that the quality of the Martial Arts Pill was too high. The medicine was too effective, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress might not be able to take it.

Princess Qian Qian looked at Yue Yang, then looked at Xue Wu Xia.

Suddenly she shook her head, "I won't eat it, give it to Yue Yu instead! Yue Yu need this pill more than me..."

Yue Yu hurriedly shook her hands and rejected her, "No, don't waste it. The Martial Arts Pill will be useless if I am the one who eat it. I still have a long way to be an Innate. I will rather do it slowly and build a strong foundation. In the future we will

definitely be able to make Martial Arts Pill again, so we can talk about it again then. I don't need it now, give it to Bing-er instead!"

When Yue Bing heard it, her face blushed as she give out a sweet smile, "No need, with brother helping me to train, I believe I will become an Innate soon. I'm improving very quickly nowadays, I haven't reach my limits yet, so I don't exactly need it. I think Big Sister Yi Nan would need it more, or Vice Principal and Grandma Wu Teng. Let's give the pills to people who needed it the most!"

Luo Hua City Mistress also agreed.

Her situation was more or less like Yue Bing's. Her powers had been improving very quickly with Yue Yang's help nowadays, she had not reached her limit or bottleneck to her powers. So he didn't really need the pill.

Furthermore, Yue Yang would definitely not stop at making three Martial Arts Pills. In the future, if she had reached her limits and was unable to improve any further, she could still ask him for them.

"I, I, I..." Although Yi Nan had levelled up from the great battle, she had encountered some kind of bottleneck when she was training. She felt that her cultivation speed was slower than the other girls.

Most importantly, Yi Nan was gravely dissatisfied with her own combat power.

She felt that Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress were all useful to Yue Yang, able to help him with their strength. Only she was a burden to him. Sister Wu Hen could help him research Runes while Sister Wu Xia was his best partner in combat, their harmony was incomparable to anyone else. They were practically a perfect match made in heaven. Compared to the other girls, Yi Nan felt that she, his fiancée, was extremely useless.

If she could lend him her strength like Luo Hua City Mistress and the others if she eat the Martial Arts Pill, why wouldn't she do it?

It's just that everyone had refused it, it was very awkward for her to say since she was the only one who wanted it...

Yue Yang lightly patted Yi Nan's head and said gently, "Let's decide it that way then. I will help you to control the power of the pill. I was too busy last time, so much that I forgot to help you improve your strength. I can make up for it now. Yi Nan, you'll be the first one!"

"Unn!" Seeing that Yue Yang was patting her head in front of the other girls, Yi Nan was so embarrassed that she wanted to find a hole to bury herself inside.

Her face felt like fire as she blushed red, all the way to her ears.

Especially when she remembered how she lied to him about wanting to betroth her sister to him. She was actually betrothing herself to him, and she had brazenly gave him the Jade Pendant Necklace, warning him not to have a tragic ending like Liang Shan

Bo and Zhu Ying Tai. She had also repeatedly told him to find her... Yi Nan felt all the more embarrassed when she remembered these past memories. Fortunately the other girls didn't laugh at her. Fourth Mother had even praised her saying that she was brave and smart, and that she would be a good daughter-in-law.

Afterwards, her identity was revealed, and Yi Nan didn't dare to meet Yue Yang anymore, afraid that he would make fun of her trying to betroth herself to him.

Remembering the past, Yi Nan felt an urge of wanting to laugh.

Yue Yang was extremely hilarious in the past, he was unable to tell that she was a girl. He told her various heartfelt things, saying something like, "Brother Yi Nan, let's go and pick up some girls... Brother Yi Nan, I'll introduce you to some big-breasted girls..." He had even said something about "In front of my bed, there are two pairs of shoes. Taking off my clothes, I left them on the floor..."

(Shiro: the two shoes is a pun from China's most famous classical poem, Quiet Night Thought)

If he knew that she was a girl at that time, he would definitely not do that. He would definitely pretend that he was an honorable guy.

However, that ordinary, yet impressionable poem that he recited to her, the "[Quiet Night Thought](#)", really resonated with her, leaving her with a homesick aftertaste.

In front of my bed, there's bright moonlight

Could it be frost on the ground instead
Lifting my head, I gaze at the bright moon
then lower it, thinking of my home

If he had not said this poem that time, she wouldn't have bothered with him. She had always thought that he was a skirt-chaser, a happy-go-lucky guy that liked to make trouble. Unexpectedly he was full of secrets that he wouldn't say out no matter what. He would only reveal it if he had no other way. Yi Nan couldn't help but think of him. When she accidentally met him at the Mercenary Guild, this brat had purposely teased her, saying that he couldn't write his name and told her that his name was Titan. He had even said that Titan was the name of a dwarf. When she asked her aunt later on, she had explained that Titan was the name of the biggest giant in the Outer Realms, who could even defeat Giant Dragons... Of course, the thing that she was most suspicious about was that she had managed to fool him.

Strictly speaking, not counting Xue Wu Xia who was his past fiance, she should be the first girl that he met, right?

Since she had given him her Jade Pendant, she was also the first girl who gave him a betrothal gift, right?

By any chance, could he still be carrying the Jade Pendant that she had given him?

Yi Nan shyly looked up, gazing at Yue Yang.

But she suddenly realized that the surrounding people had all left without her knowing, there were only the two of them in that room. She immediately panicked.

Turning around, she prepared to leave, but Yue Yang grabbed her hand instead.

Yi Nan's heart rate shot up as she protested with a small voice, "Re-release me!"

"If I release a beauty's hand that I managed to grab onto, wouldn't I be a big fool?" Not only did Yue Yang refuse to let her go, he even reached out and pulled Yi Nan to his embrace. Yi Nan was embarrassed to death. With regards to his perverted move, she tried to avoid him with her weak body, her fists beating against his hand, asking him to release her. Her face was completely red, even her snow-white neck was blushing red too.

"Stop it, if you have something to say, just say it." Yi Nan avoided Yue Yang's hug and succeeded in struggling free from his arms.

She realized that he still held on to her hand, so she didn't reject him and allowed him to continue holding her hand.

The feeling of letting him holding her hand felt so mysterious, comfortable and warm, yet chest tightening at the same time. It was so strange.

Yue Yang knew that he had to be patient, haste would just ruin

everything. The little lamb was always his all along, he could eat her up slowly, there's no need to hurry.

Pulling Yi Nan's hand, he sat down, purposely looking at her who had refused to look at him, "Brother Yi Nan, it's been a long time since we chat. Do you want to discuss about big-breasted girls?"

When Yi Nan heard him, she immediately punched him, unable to bear her shame, "You still dare to say it? You liar... Say, you have already realized I was a girl back then, right?"

Yue Yang laughed as brightly as the sun, and replied back, "If I really didn't know back then, what would you say?"

"Then you are really an idiot!" Yi Nan laughed out. When she thought about how he had called her Brother Yi Nan before, she couldn't hold her laughter.

"What if I pretended not to know?" Yue Yang asked again.

"Then you are a liar... a big liar!" Yi Nan pouted at him. She felt that he might have realized it afterwards, but didn't say it, and even plotted to tell her about the story of Liang Shan Bo and Zhu Ying Tai. He must have said that to hint that she was a fool. When she thought about it again, when she was nervously putting on the Jade Pendant Necklace onto his neck, he must have been laughing at her in secret a hundred times over. What a hateful liar! Yi Nan was so angry that she wanted to punch him, but when she looked up and saw his smiling face, the strength in her punch become as weak as an ants'.

“Do you like fools or liars more?” Yue Yang inched closer to her, almost touching her nose.

“Who, who would like the likes of you... That, that was my aunt’s deciding without my permission...” Yi Nan felt that this scoundrel was going to kiss her, and she felt extremely nervous. She felt her lips tightening and parched, and she was completely unprepared.

He was going to kiss her, what should she do?

Yi Nan wanted to lick her lips and relax her tensed expression first, but she was afraid that Yue Yang would see through her nervousness. She was more afraid of him misunderstanding that she longed to be kissed by him...

Yue Yang’s lips were only one cm apart from Yi Nan’s, it was as if their lips would touch if one of them speaks.

The hot breath coming out of their mouths make her feel dizzy.

Yi Nan was so nervous that her heartbeat increased like crazy.

As her heart continued to thump wildly, she was so embarrassed that she wanted to avoid him, but she was afraid that he would be angry with her. Moreover, she also kind of want to be kissed... She didn’t dare to kiss him first, but she was willing to wait. She knew that this scoundrel would definitely kiss her, but he was teasing her, trying to make her kiss him first... That is impossible. She

would definitely not let this scoundrel get his way. He had fooled her to betroth herself to him last time, making her give the Jade Pendant to him. Now he even wanted her to kiss him first, that is definitely impossible!

“Do you want to hear another story? I can tell you the story about [Xu Xian and Madam White](#). Wanna hear it?” Yue Yang slowly blew onto her small, delicate lips, making her blush even redder.

“...” Yi Nan was both embarrassed and furious. What kind of story was he going to say at this kind of time? If he wanted to kiss her, then he should kiss her. She couldn't last any longer. Can't he just tell her the story later on?

“Do you want to hear the story?” Yue Yang leaned in even closer to her, almost touching her red lips, so close that she could almost feel the heat coming from his lips.

“I, I'll bite you to death!” Yi Nan shouted out in frustration. If this brat did not kiss her right then, she would really be angry with him.

Chapter 303 – The Old Fox Becomes An Innate

His hot lips felt like electricity tingling on hers as the room was filled with the sound of her short breaths and the thumping of her heart that couldn't be stifled.

Yi Nan felt like she was in a dream.

It was beautiful, yet indistinct.

It didn't seem real. When she remembered the kiss again, she still couldn't believe that she just had her first kiss. It feels like that scoundrel had stolen her first kiss before she even managed to realize what was happening. The memory that she was left with was as hazy as a dream, it was indistinct and unclear. She could remember the feeling yet she couldn't remember the process. She couldn't remember when he started kissing her, and she couldn't remember how she had reacted.

Her whole memory was only filled with his gentle, yet domineering kiss.

At first he was extremely gentle, his lips only touching hers lightly, gently and softly marking her lips with his. When she felt the friction between their lips, it felt like a jolt of lightning was coursing through her body. Then, his kiss turned bolder, as he spread her lips and entered her mouth, sucking onto her tongue and refusing to let her go...

Yi Nan felt like she was extremely clumsy compared to him. On the other hand, he was extremely well-practiced and skillful, kissing her to the point that she was unable to breathe.

She was intoxicated the whole time. Yi Nan could only remember feeling extremely good during the kiss. She felt an unexplainable wonderful feeling.

As for whence Yue Yang had pulled her into his embrace, she couldn't remember at all.

“Greedy bastard!” Yi Nan thought about how he had continued to kiss her for a long time, not giving her time to rest at all. Even when her lips had become swollen, he still continued to kiss her while his naughty hands touched her body brazenly. If it weren't for the fact that the Vice Principal had come and Yue Bing warning them with [Heart Telepathy] from outside, he would probably still be holding her and refused to let go! When she thought about how he had demanded a mile after getting an inch, she really wanted to bite him. That greedy fellow, if she had not stopped him, he would have sneaked his hands inside her clothes...

“How does it feel to be kissed?” When Luo Hua City Mistress saw that Yi Nan had been staring blankly ever since she returned to her room, looking extremely smitten, as if her soul had flown to ninth clouds and above, she became a little curious. Do kissing really felt that good?

“We, we didn't kiss.” Yi Nan refuted immediately.

“Really?” Luo Hua City Mistress saw that Yi Nan’s lips were obviously swollen. She secretly felt that it was really funny. Looks like Yue Yang had kissed her too hard, otherwise her lips wouldn’t become like that. Of course, she wouldn’t expose Yi Nan. She would rather not embarrass Yi Nan, who had proposed to betroth herself to Yue Yang, further. Yi Nan shyly shook her head, as she looked down, not daring to look at the other girls.

When she remembered the intoxicated feeling that she felt when she was kissed just now, her heart immediately felt sweet and warm.

He finally kissed her.

Although she didn’t do ‘that’ with him, at least she could be sure now that she was in his heart, she had always been in her heart...

In another house, Yue Yang and the old fox were discussing secretly. They didn’t want the contents of their conversation to be known by the girls, so that they wouldn’t be worried.

“How’s the Feng Clan now?” Yue Yang asked about Fourth Uncle’s Matter. Before Yue Yang went to the Yue Clan Castle, they had heard news about the kidnapping of Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng. The kidnapper was extremely quick, the Feng Clan did not manage to react at all, they didn’t even see the figure of the kidnapper. Yue Yang thought that this was the Thousand Goblins Sect’s doing, because the Thousand Goblins Ssect wanted to rescue the Thousand Goblins King that was sealed inside the Heaven

Stairway.

Fourth Mother was the key to opening the Heaven Stairway, and the only one that could be used to threaten her was Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng, who was pregnant with their child.

The reason for the Thousand Goblins Sect kidnapping Fourth Uncle was definitely because they wanted to force the secret of unlocking the Heaven Stairway out from Fourth Mother.

The old fox had gone to the Feng Clan to see the situation, he sighed, “The Feng Clan didn’t lose anything. It’s just that the Clan Master was extremely saddened. He didn’t have any other wish, he only wanted you to give your best and save his grandchild inside Miss Feng’s belly.”

If Yue Yang had enough time, he would probably be able to heal the poison affecting Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng. Especially now that the Qilin girl could teach him about it.

However, Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng had been kidnapped by the enemies.

He thought that Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng’s lives were in danger, even the baby inside Miss Feng’s belly was also in danger. If the Thousand Goblins Sect was unable to acquire the secret to the Heaven Stairway, there was a high chance that they would kill their hostages. Of course even if they managed to get the secret to the Heaven Stairway, there would still be the possibility that they would kill their hostages... They had no other way other than

finding the enemies' hidden lair and rescue the hostages before the enemies could react... If the poison in Fourth Uncle's body was not treated, even though they managed to rescue him out, it would be hard to save his life. Yue Yang really did not dare to pass the news to Yue Bing, he chose to hide it from her at this moment. He would explain it to her at the right time.

“What about Fourth Mother?” Yue Yang asked about Fourth Mother's situation.

“Before the Night Empress went to explore the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, she had sent someone to fetch Fourth Mother. Right now, your Fourth Mother and little Shuang-er is inside the Mirage, they are very safe. She has heard about Fourth Uncle's situation, and is greatly saddened. However, she said that you should just concentrate protecting your sister. She told you not to be impulsive, be careful so that you will not fall into the enemy's trap.” The old fox patted Yue Yang's shoulders and nodded, “I also think that way.”

“Don't worry, I know what to do.” Yue Yang felt that he would fight with the Thousand Goblins Sect sooner or later. He definitely shouldn't avoid this battle.

“Seems like there's some kind of medicine smell...” The old fox smelled the Martial Arts Pill smell the moment he finished relaying the important news.

“Seems like the eighth Innate in Da Xia Kingdom will be born soon...” Yue Yang gave a jade bottle containing the Martial Arts Pill to the old fox. When the old fox heard him, his hands trembled a

little as he received the bottle. Pulling the cork and smelling the smell inside, he smelled something that reverberated straight to his soul.

His old face immediately turned emotional, his eyes turning red.

He carefully held the jade bottle, afraid that the precious object in his hands would shatter.

After observing the pill for a while, the old fox suppressed his emotions and nervously asked, “Have you successfully created it? This pill’s power seemed to be very condensed. Aren’t you lacking the Snow Lotus Root? How did you manage to finish creating it?”

Yue Yang smiled secretively, “You don’t need to know. I have finished making the pill, and it’s also Seventh Rank!”

The old fox looked at Yue Yang with unbelieving eyes, asking him in surprise, “Seventh Rank? Can Martial Arts Pill be Seventh Rank?”

Yue Yang spread his hands, trying to indicate that this was merely child’s play to him. He looked arrogant like hell.

If it was in normal times, the old fox would definitely knock his walking stick on his head. But this time he actually nodded, full of joy, feeling that his arrogant demeanour was cute and justified. He nodded and smiled from ear to ear, “Good boy, look at your wonderful accomplishment! Is it really a Seventh Rank Martial

Arts Pill? It's so precious, I don't even know if I would be able to take it. Seems like I have to prepare myself well... to a brat like you, I'm not going to say thanks. This Martial Art Pill, I will gladly accept it!"

Grandma Wu Teng was not present, otherwise Yue Yang would give the last pill to her, to cure the grave disease that she had been enduring for many years.

Princess Qian Qian called the Ascetic Practice Saint so that he could help the old fox reach the Innate Realm.

Although Yue Yang was also an Innate, he was an exceptional case. His experience of becoming an Innate would not be of help to the old fox.

Furthermore, Yue Yang couldn't let anyone know about his Innate Invisible Sword Qi. The unique innate skill belonged to him alone.

The Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar, the two Heavenly Imperial Guardian, arrived. They first selflessly taught the old fox about their own experience, then used their own Holy Beasts to guide the old fox and help him absorb the Martial Arts Pill, so that he may overcome his bottleneck and reach the Innate realm. Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the others all listened to the two senior's experience, especially Xue Tan Lang, Prince of Tian Luo, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others. They were extremely focused listening to the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar's experiences, because to them, becoming an innate was a wish that they had longed for since

forever... Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and the others could use [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang and receive his teachings. Improving together as a group, there would be no problem for them to be Innates.

However, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others had no such possibility. They would have to depend on their own cultivation to break through the Innate realm.

Right now, the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar's teachings were still very early for them, but at least, they would possess some theoretical knowledge about this.

After eating the Martial Arts Pill, the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar assisted the old fox together with their Holy Beasts.

Little by little, they helped to absorb the power inside the Martial Arts Pill.

After meditating for one whole day and night, the old fox finally managed to absorb all the power inside the pill. Slowly breaking it down, he pushed it to all parts of his body and break through the Innate Realm.

With two Holy Beasts' assisting him, together with the Gold-ranked Level 7 Guardian beast 'Space Dimension' that he owned himself, the old fox finally managed to reach a whole new level. His inner power burst out. The Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar pulled out their power and retreated ten metres back, leaving the rest of the process to the old fox.

As long as he could break through the bottleneck, he would step into the Innate Realm and levelled up to become an Innate.

If he failed, then he might not be able to become an Innate anymore in his life.

The power in the old fox's body exploded, dispersing like a hurricane. The wind from the shockwave almost blew Ye Kong and Fatty Hai away.

The old fox's body glowed with a golden light as his power burst out to the maximum.

However, even after quite a while, the old fox was still unable to break through. The Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar were nervous for him... If the old fox failed to open the door to the Innate Realm and reach a breakthrough in his cultivation during this maximum outburst of his power, he would not be able to become an Innate. But they were unable to help him at all at this stage, otherwise they might affect his mental health and hasten his failure. The old fox's face was shining in gold, his hair and his beard floated in the air as his clothes waved with the wind. Drops of golden light started to appear on his Guardian Beast and his summoning grimoire. However, he still had not reached a breakthrough yet.

He was about to fall back to the ground. Yue Yang couldn't bear it anymore and decided to help him.

He didn't care about the consequences anymore. He was going to fail anyway, he should just try to help him in this last moment!

According to the situation that he saw with his Level 5 Divine Vision, Yue Yang condensed Innate Qi in his hands and channeled it into the old fox's blood channel acupoint on his back. Yue Yang's Innate Qi linked the flow of Qi in the old fox's back that was obstructed previously. Yue Yang then pressed onto the old fox's Bai Hui Point on his forehead and channelled Innate Qi there too, helping the old fox who was about to lose control of his mind to recover.

When the old fox's mind finally focused back, the aftermath of his obstruction struck his body and he vomited a mouthful of blood.

His body swayed as if he was about to collapse to the ground.

The old fox had lost control of the energy flow in his body, but Yue Yang had managed to link them up again easily, with a skill that was much better than the old fox's. He finally managed to break through the Innate Realm.

Kaboom!

A loud explosion resounded.

Yue Yang was completely blown away, thrown into the air.

Golden light started pouring out of the old fox's forehead, his summoning grimoire and his Guardian Beast. Interweaving together with each other, they formed a huge light pillar, rising up twenty metres high to the sky. For a long time, the light didn't dissipate. This phenomenon, was indeed the sign of a warrior breaking through the Innate Realm. As for the light pillar, it signify the potential of the Innate Ranker that had just levelled up. Everyone was different.

Normal Innate Rankers would only emit a light pillar that was ten metres tall.

Warriors who don't possess true Innate strength, and levelled up because they were power levelled by someone else, such as Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan from the Thousand Goblins Sect, Kai Yang, Tian Quan and Yao Guang from the Seven Great Bears, their light pillar would only be around five metres high. They would definitely not go over ten metres.

Since the old fox's light pillar was twenty metres high, he would definitely be a very strong Innate Ranker with an outstanding potential.

Of course, no one would ever be able to compare to Yue Yang, the abnormal guy. Nobody knows how high Yue Yang's light pillar was when he became an Innate. It had soared up beyond the clouds, no one could see the ends of it even hundreds of kilometres away. It was so high that no one could estimate the height.

If not for the fact that Yue Yang had so much potential, he wouldn't have shocked the whole world.

Fortunately nobody had seen it, otherwise Yue Yang wouldn't be able to level up more before troubles come knocking at his door.

“Not bad, you have unexpectedly emitted a twenty metre tall light pillar when you become an Innate. This potential means that there is a high chance that you will be able to reach Innate Level 5. Seems like the Kingdom of Da Xia will be able to gain another Heavenly Imperial Guardian.” The Scholar and the Ascetic Practice Saint was extremely happy. Not all Innates could become a Heavenly Imperial Guardian. Only an Innate Ranker who had reached Innate Level 5 could become a Heavenly Imperial Guardian. Only then would his abilities be powerful enough to protect the country.

“The thing that made me happiest is that little Yue Yang seemed to understand how to guide the flow of power at the dangerous point at the end, helping his teacher to reach Innate.” The Ascetic Practice Saint was very happy.

He was not the only who could see that, even Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others all could see this point.

Even though the old fox had almost failed when his body floated into the air.

It was Yue Yang who had pulled him back to the right path, guiding him to release his power once again and break through the Innate Realm.. Although Yue Yang only helped him for a few seconds, the quality and the help that he provided was much more

meaningful than the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar who tried to help the old fox initially for one whole day and night.

With Yue Yang's help, looks like the chances of the others failing to breakthrough the Innate Realm would be low.

The old fox looked to the sky and roared as the Guardian Beast [Space Dimension] beside his body turned into shards of transparent glass, revolving around the old fox body as it shot out countless mysterious lights. Seems like it had also levelled up.

As the old fox's roar died down, the shards of [Space Dimension] condensed into a ball and returned back to the grimoire.

At this moment, the old fox had finally finished breaking through the Innate Realm.

The old fox who was floating in the air slowly descended down. He looked at Yue Yang with tear-stained eyes then hugged him tightly, the student who had time and time again perform miracles for him. With his help, he had finally managed to bid goodbye from his status as an ordinary warrior and stepped into the Innate realm, becoming a true Innate Ranker.

"Congrats, teacher." This was the first time Yue Yang called the old fox teacher.

"Yes, yes." The old fox patted Yue Yang's shoulders. He was so emotional that he couldn't say anything else.

Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar also congratulated the old fox for becoming an Innate. Although the old fox was only Innate Level 1, with his potential, his power would definitely be on par with the two of them in the future. Furthermore, the old fox's Inherent Skill was the extremely rare [Space Dimension]. They believed that their teleportation technology would improve greatly with the old fox's help.

Looking at Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Li Brothers, Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo's envious eyes, Yue Yang smiled slightly, "Train hard, I believe you guys can also become Innate Rankers soon!"

With one sentence, Ye Kong and the others immediately became fired up with fighting spirit.

The Innate Realm was right before them, how far could it be?

With Martial Arts Pill and Yue Yang's advice, coupled with the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar's assistance, how far could it be before they become an Innate Ranker? Look at the real-life example, the old fox. The only thing they need was just one thing, their hard work in training!

In this way, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others convinced themselves that they still had a chance.

Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian looked at each other. They didn't say anything, but they knew that the two of them would be the ninth and tenth Innate in Da Xia in the future.

Chapter 304 – The Ultimate Weapon For Picking Up Girls

After witnessing the old fox levelling up to Innate, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others trained hard day and night.

Even the ice cube guy Xue Tan Lang who always trained alone stayed back and trained with them.

Normally, other than training, they had also challenged Hui Tai Lang, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Thorny Flower Demoness and the others to a fight. It was definitely worth of praise, but they were practically asking for trouble. Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were beaten black and blue by Hui Tai Lang, to the point that all of their bones were completely broken. Fortunately Hui Tai Lang and Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man were the types of beasts that would only give their all during real battles, they wouldn't show 100% of their strength during training. Otherwise, Ye Kong and the others would suffer an even more crushing defeat.

The old fox also stayed back to coach them. The Ascetic Practice Saint would visit at times.

The Ascetic Practice Saint mostly coached Xue Tan Lang, who was the best student there, while the Scholar coached the Prince of Tian Luo.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai thought that they would be severely disadvantaged this way, so they looked for Yue Yang to ask for coaching. Yue Yang had created a new skill from combining Yue

Qiu's 《Armageddon Slash》, the royal family's 《Emperor's Sword Qi》, Moqi Xu Ling's Domain of Power 《Heavy Pressure》, Duan Mu Long Cheng's 《Weaken》, Marquis of Zi Jin's 《Teleportation》, the Eastern Goblin Tribe Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's "Transformation" and even Demon Marshal Duran's "Summon Darkness". The name of the skill was 《Great Totem Pole Battle Technique》.

This was some kind of shameless team battle skill. The more people using the skill, the greater its power would be.

The Great Totem Pole Battle Technique was some kind of Rune Circle.

Yue Yang had also refined the King of Black Light's body to create "Metal Crow Obsidian" and "Iron Essence of the Meteorite". With these two materials, Yue Yang created a totem pole. Combining them with Heaven Runes, Yue Yang used the knowledge of totems that he had learnt from games in his previous life to create a special area of effect from the Totem Pole Rune Circle.

Since Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others still couldn't use Domain of Power yet, they could produce some kind of Domain of Power with the totem pole.

Carving the Heaven Runes onto the totem pole, an effect similar to the Domain of Power would appear within a specific area.

This was Yue Yang's copycat creativity.

Although this creation was copied, the power and effects of the totem pole was extremely good. The Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar greatly praised him.

Great Totem Pole Battle Technique was finally born through Yue Yang's shameless plagiarizing and copying.

He had created four totem poles for the first batch.

Other than giving one totem pole to Ye Kong as a weapon, he had also given one each to Fatty Hai and Li Brothers.

Before going to battle, they would need to stick the "Heavy Pressure", "Weaken", and "Darkness" totem poles on the battlefield. Then, they could start attacking their enemies the moment they activate the area of effect.

The more totem poles that they stuck, the greater the power they would have when they team up together. The area of effect would also be greater.

As for battle techniques, they would need to depend mostly on "Armageddon Slash" as their main skill, and "Emperor's Sword Qi" as the complementary skill. They would also utilize the special effect from "Teleportation" and "Transformation". That was the 《Great Totem Pole Battle Technique》. Ye Kong and Fatty Hai would focus on "Transformation". Fatty Hai, in particular, would definitely have no problem, since he had mastered transforming to Behemoth last time. Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo would focus on "Teleportation". Yue Yang thought that if he didn't teach

them, they would probably tried to learn it secretly anyway, hence he decided to be magnanimous and teach all of them.

As for the Li Brothers, other than assisting as support, they were also responsible to protect the totem poles.

If it weren't due to the lack of materials, Yue Yang had wanted to give Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo a totem pole each too.

In any case, the 《Great Totem Pole Battle Technique》 that Yue Yang created was a cheat-like group skill. A single person alone wouldn't be able to show much power, the more people in the group ganging up on their enemies would produce greater power.

On the testing phase, forget about normal warriors, even the old fox who had just levelled up to Innate almost suffered a great defeat.

This was only the beginning.

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others had not even showed their true strength. They had only started to learn the technique, and had not completely mastered it. They had also not perfected their group harmony and synchronization yet. When Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others mastered the skill perfectly and were able to bring out 100% of the power of the technique, they wouldn't have a problem fighting against enemies like Yao Guang and Tian Quan from the Seven Great Bears, those kind of second-rate Innates.

Jun Wu You, Elder Hai and the others had not returned yet.

The Yue Clan Castle reconstruction had proceeded smoothly due to Second Uncle Yue Ling's passionate management and the fact that the enemies had vanished without a trace. The Yue Clan Castle was completely peaceful, there were no attacks from the enemy at all.

Yue Yang decided to stop producing pills or totem poles due to lack of materials, and busied himself with other things.

He left Hui Tai Lang to spar with Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others, to torture them. Together with Xue Wu Xia and the others, he then went to the Little Flower Garden. IN the morning, he would practice [Body Fusion] with the girls and improve their abilities together. At night, he could enjoy his blissful sexual life as much as he liked. The sickly beauty had become more and more like a wise wife... More accurately speaking, Yue Yang's talent for teaching was too great. There were a lot of shameful things that the sickly beauty didn't know and was not willing to do before that Yue Yang had slowly enticed her to do on him. This had made Yue Yang's life for this period of time so blissful and happy, as if he was in heaven.

Although Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress' room was quite far away, they could hear the sickly beauty's unique gasps and moans every night, especially when Yue Yang was doing his naughty tricks, making her unable to stop her cries. Her cries were especially loud and clear.

Princess Qian Qian who had the Six Records Inherent Skill was

more troubled. Seems like having a sharper sense might not always be a good thing.

However, the most troubled one was not her. It was Yue Yu.

She knew the exercises that husband and wife do on the bed. This was normal, she had even hoped that the sickly beauty could bore Yue Yang a beautiful son so that he could continue his Third and Fourth Branch line.

However, when she accidentally heard these sounds, she would feel very awkward.

Her status was his older sister after all.

There were not many rooms in the Little Flower Garden. Furthermore, Yue Yu had been improving quickly for the past few days, honing her senses and making her vision and hearing much sharper. At night when she was trying to sleep, she could still hear the faint sounds no matter how she tried to cover her ears with her pillow or blanket... The most frustrating thing for Yue Yu was that although she had steeled herself to refuse listening to these sounds, she would often find herself straining her ears to hear the faint sounds by reflex. It was as if she really wanted to listen to these kind of shameful voices...

Her heartbeat would quicken at the sound of the sickly beauty's gasps.

At the beginning, she really couldn't get used to this kind of life.

However, she saw how Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress acted like nothing had happened, so she didn't feel right to discuss about this.

After a few days, she realized that she had gotten used to hearing her younger brother and sister-in-law's happy voices at night. It was to the point that she would feel that something was not right if she didn't hear them at night.

The happiest one was Yue Bing. She always felt tired from training during the day, so she slept like a log at night. Furthermore, Yue Yang would always enjoy his night activities after tucking her to sleep.

As for Yi Nan, her relationship with Yue Yang had also developed rapidly.

The reason was because Yue Yang would tell stories to her every day.

The [Butterfly Lovers](#), [Madame White Snake](#), Romeo and Juliet... Everyday was different. If Yi Nan wanted to laugh, Yue Yang would tell her about how [Hua Mu Lan](#) had disguised herself as a guy, like her, to join the army. If Yi Nan wanted to listen to sad stories, he would tell her the story about [Du Shi Niang](#); There was also another sadder story about [Li Qing Zhao](#) who married a liar and was imprisoned, and the most tragic one, about [Liu Ru Shi](#), one of the Eight Beauties of Qing Huai, who had committed suicide

following her husband's death.

There were also romantic, everlasting love stories such as [Lady Meng Jiang](#) and [Farewell My Concubine](#).

Yue Yang had even abandoned his studies and proceeded to re-enact the sad and beautiful story of [Lu You](#) and his cousin Tang Wan, vividly. The girls in the whole house couldn't help but cry when they heard about Lu You's "[Phoenix Hairpin](#)" poem.

Your pink tender hands,
Gave me golden-bottle wine,
Green willows are confined by the palace walls.
Eastern wind was cruel,
Happy times were short,
A cup of grief,
You have been separated from me for many years.
It was wrong, wrong, wrong!
Your spring-like beauty withered,
Your body skinny like empty air,
Your silk scarf full of scarlet tears stains.
Peach blossoms are falling,
The garden seems empty without us!
Even if we kept our promise,
We can't send our love letters.
No! No! No!

(Shiro: Story about a guy called Lu You and his cousin Tang Wan. They love each other and got married, but Lu You's mom forced them to divorce because Tang Wan was childless after several years. The poem is written by Lu You when Lu You and Tang Wan met again after ten years, but both had already remarried)

In order to flirt with girls, Yue Yang had memorised Lu You's Phoenix Hairpin poem. Of course, this was also related to the fact that his memories had enhanced greatly after mastering Innate Invisible Sword Qi. When he wanted to remember whatever he had learnt in the past, he would remember them all very clearly, recalling them with just a thought.

If he had this kind of ability last time, he wouldn't need to revise before exams to get a good result.

When he recited the Phoenix Hairpin Poem, even Xue Wu Xia who was usually not easily moved begged him to write down the Phoenix Hairpin Poem that Lu You had written for his cousin Tang Wan. In the end, Yue Yang could

The world is fickle,
Its people cruel,
Twilight shower bids fragile blossoms adieu.
Dawn wind dries,
Though tear marks remain,
Wishing to scribe my thoughts,
I ruminate aloud against the leaning balustrade.
It's so hard, hard , hard!

To each their own,
Yesterday is no more,
My ill soul quivers like the swinging rope.
Piercingly frigid sound of horns,
The night is waning away,
Fearing people's questions,
I swallow the tears and feign happiness.
Hide, hide hide!

(Shiro: In response to Lu You's poem, Tang Wan wrote this poem for him)

Now, no one doubted Yue Yang's ability as a poet.

At the beginning, Xue Wu Xia had even thought that Yue Yang was simply making stories to flirt with Yi Nan. She only laughed at whatever nonsense he said about Romeo and Juliet. However, when she continued to listen afterwards, she realized that he was even singing when re-enacting the story of Madame White Snake. The song in "Farewell My Concubine" was so tragic. Although Yue Yang's voice couldn't bring out the sadness in the song, Xue Wu Xia could hear the tragedy within the lyrics. It was so sad that it hits her deep in her heart, making her soul tremble.

If a girl sung the song instead, it would definitely be even sadder.

That brat might be making things up with regards to the songs, but with regards to poems, that would be impossible. Innate talent is required for poetry... Could it be that Yue Yang had a knack for writing poems?

Xue Wu Xia had suspected that he had read some kind of ancient book and plagiarized the poem “In front of my bed, there are two pairs of shoes. Taking off my clothes, I left them on the floor”, turning it into such a trashy poem...

Afterwards, Yue Yang had told even more stories to Yi Nan, making her happy. This made Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Yu and the others felt doubtful. Was there really an ancient book that had written so many stories and poems? They were stories and poems that could make everyone gasp in amazement too.

Even Xue Wu Xia who had read many books had never read the poems and love stories that Yue Yang had told.

The sickly beauty who was fervently researching Ancient Runes and other Runes had also been enraptured by the stories.

Everyone guessed that there were only two possibilities.

First, that Yue Yang brat had some kind of god-like ability to dream about things that no one knew about when he slept.

Second, this brat was really an abnormal genius. Not only in martial arts, he could also author stories and poems. Although there were really not much use for that. He could only use the stories to flirt with girls.

After a heated discussion, the girls thought that both possibilities were probable. The reason was that Yue Yang had the ability to train during his sleep, so maybe there was some kind of god in his dreams who would coach him in his dreams. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to improve his abilities just by sleeping. Sometimes, when Yue Yang encountered setbacks or problems in his training, he would go to sleep and solve the problem very quickly afterwards. This brat was definitely hiding something, it's just that everyone didn't know about it. This was for the first possibility. With regards to the second possibility, the girls didn't doubt that Yue Yang was a genius. This brat could even create such a cheat-like, abnormal skill like the 《Great Totem Pole Battle Technique》. He could also compose stories to flirt with Yi Nan easily, and he had previous criminal records too... When he first met with Yi Nan, he had pretended to be illiterate and asked her to write his fake name, “Titan” onto the adventurer sign up form.

For Yue Yang, who had never heard of Titan or the Outer Realms, how could he mention this kind of name?

He could even state an ironic remark, saying that Titan was a dwarf...

This meant that he not only knew about, but was extremely familiar with the matters in Outer Realm.

The fact that Yue Yang could compose poems should be related to the matter of his mother passing down her knowledge to him. Maybe Lu You and Tang Wan were ancient people from the past. Although their story wasn't passed on, Yue Yang's mother had passed the story onto Yue Yang through the Ancient Runes. That's

why Yue Yang knew about so many stories that others never knew about.

“Yue Yang, study hard. Make a more powerful poem next time,” Xue Wu Xia patted Yue Yang’s shoulders, and before the girls could react, she immediately took the two Phoenix Hairpin poems written on the paper in front of Yue Yang away.

“Write a poem for me too. It must be an extraordinary poem of the highest quality.” Princess Qian Qian glared at Yue Yang with her tigress eyes.

“Yeah, write a few more. I like poems and songs. If you can sing for me while I plant flowers and water them, I would be really happy.” Luo Hua City Mistress smiled sweetly, but if Yue Yang dared to deny her request, she would definitely pull his ears off.

“Did you think making poems is as easy as making children? I don’t have any... Forget it, what’s so difficult with that?” Yue Yang decided to be a full-fledged plagiarizer. Why would he be afraid of not being able to compose poems? He could just read the Three Hundred Tang Dynasty Poems again. If he couldn’t compose poems, he could steal them. It would only be reciting poems at the most. As long as he could make these girls happy, what’s so difficult about reciting poems? He still had the Poems from the Song Dynasty, if he finished reciting the poems from the Tang Dynasty. If there were no more Chinese poems to be recited, he could recite English ones. There were quite a few of them, right? Johann Wolfgang von Goethe, Heinrich Heine, George Byron... He would use them all! This was a great weapon for flirting with girls, so he must be bold and thick skinned! If he could flirt with girls,

plagiarizing was merely a drop of water in the ocean!

“Brother, you are so cool!” This time, Yue Bing respected her brother even more.

As for Yi Nan, she decided to ask Yue Yang to stay the night and watch butterflies with him... There's no butterflies at night? Well, she could simply use her Hallucination Butterfly then!

(Shiro: Hallucination Butterfly is Yi Nan's Guardian Beast)

Shiro's Afterthoughts:

I swear I'm gonna skin Yue Yang alive if he recited another poem. He obviously didn't know what a pain in the ass translating poems are. But it's kinda interesting to learn about all the chinese literatures/folktales mentioned in this chapter. For some of the stories, I've never known they existed lol. Also, some of the characters mentioned are real life people that existed hundreds of years ago...

Another issue I want to talk about is...After translating this far, I actually felt that rather than translating “佣兵” as mercenary, I should have translated it as “adventurer”. The chinese world literally meant mercenary soldiers, but the activities and job scopes that these “mercenaries” have in the story are similar to “adventurers”.... So, I'm gonna change it from this chapter onwards... please don't kill me? Too lazy to change all the mercenary to adventurers in the previous chaptersahaha...

Anyway, sorry for posting this late, all of the poems and research really take up a lot of time!

Chapter 305 – Weapon Level Up, Luring The Smoky Flame Girl

The “Iron Essence of the Meteorite” that was refined from the King of Black Light’s corpse were mostly used by Yue Yang to create the Totem Pole.

The rest of them were used to reforge the Crescent Blade.

The Bronze-ranked Crescent Blade was unable to withstand Yue Yang’s strength as an Innate. Even the Hui Jin Magic Blade that had levelled up and reached Gold rank had to be levelled up even more or Yue Yang would fall into the awkward situation of not having any weapon to use in battle. Of course he would be able to use the Dragon Slaying Dagger, but the Bloody Queen Red who uses assassination techniques to fight would need that piece of good dagger more than him.

Yue Yang had mastered a lot more Heaven Runes now. Coupled with good materials and his Nirvana’s Flame ability, he was more than able to forge a weapon that best suit his needs himself.

After adding the “Metal Crow Obsidian” and “Iron Essence of the Meteorite” and reforging the Crescent Blade, its quality rose to become Silver rank.

The Crescent Blade’s appearance looked like Hui Jin Magic Blade.

However, it was bigger and heavier.

Yue Yang had also poured several Gold-ranked Magic Crystals into the new Crescent Blade. Furthermore, he had also used his Nirvana's Flame to meticulously carve the Ancient Rune "Permanent Hardening" and Heaven Rune "Frost", "Sharp". After working hard to carve them for three days and night, the new Crescent Blade's quality rose up another rank again, to Gold rank. Now, it had the ability to withstand Yue Yang's innate level attack or defense.

Since the new Crescent Blade had levelled up in quality, Yue Yang decided to give it a name, "Crescent Moon".

With regards to Hui Jin Magic Blade, Yue Yang didn't need to modify it too much. There were already the Flame Lord's Molten Core and Demon Dragon's Crystal inside, it would continue to level up as long as it could absorb flame and darkness power. After countless battles, the two cores had absorbed a lot of power. Yue Yang had let the Hui Jin Magic Blade absorb the Magma Wyvern's Magic Crystal and the Demon General's Demon's Heart, making it evolve even further... Yue Yang had even wanted to let it absorb the Demon Pearl that he acquired after killing the Dark Golden Spectre. The Demon Pearl that contained an extremely destructive power would definitely increase the rank of the Hui Jin Magic Blade further after it was absorbed into it.

It's a pity that the Flame Lord's Molten Core and Demon Dragon's Crystal were afraid of this Demon Pearl.

Even until now, the two cores were still resisting the Demon Pearl.

Yue Yang was worried that the Flame Lord's Molten Core and Demon Dragon's Crystal, these two low-levelled cores that had awareness would be destroyed the moment he put the Demon Pearl in. He even suspected that the Dark Golden Specter didn't truly die, and was hiding inside the Demon Pearl.

Hence, Yue Yang could only put the matter of combining the Demon Pearl on hold.

Yue Yang had been levelling the Hui Jin Magic Blade's grade long before he turned the Crescent Blade into Crescent Moon.

At first, Yue Yang didn't dare to expose the Hui Jin Magic Blade to his Nirvana Flame directly. Having the ability to burn everything in the world, the Hui Jin Magic Blade would definitely not be able to withstand the Nirvana Flame. He chose to use the kind of 'Fake Nirvana's Flame' that was burning on the Stone-Element Medusa's head instead. After the Flame Lord's Molten Core adapt to the heat of the fake Nirvana's Flame, it turned into Flame Lord's Blazing Core. Its flame ability became much purer, but as the Demon Dragon's Crystal didn't become stronger along with the Flame Lord's Blazing Core, the Hui Jin Magic Blade was still Gold rank, unable to rise to Platinum Rank.

When Yue Yang pursued Duan Mu Long Cheng, he had teleported to the Demon Palace.

When he was destroying the gigantic Demon King Statue, Yue Yang had acquired a huge Magic Crystal.

This Magic Crystal might be a high quality demon core that was refined for hundreds of years, used to safeguard the Demon King Statue. Although Yue Yang was surrounded by three Great Demon Kings and two Lich Kings at that time, he didn't forget to greedily steal the Magic Crystal and brought it back home.

With the power from the huge Magic Crystal, the Demon Dragon's Crystal finally managed to receive enough power up.

When the Hui Jin Magic Blade level up to Platinum Rank, Yue Yang carefully used his Nirvana Flame to purify the Flame Lord's Blazing Core again. In the end, the evil awareness inside the Flame Lord's Blazing Core had almost been destroyed completely, but because Yue Yang tried to control the evil awareness, half of it was preserved. The Flame Lord's Blazing Core was almost destroyed, but it had levelled up to become "Flame Lord's True Flame Core", which had the ability to produce flames like the Nirvana Flame. The Hui Jin Magic Blade was now even more powerful than the Dragon Slaying Dagger which had absorbed a huge amount of darkness energy and Demon King's evil intention.

Yue Yang carved a few Heaven Runes on the Hui Jin Magic Blade that had already levelled up, including "Blood Absorb" and "Ability Absorb". As for Ancient Runes, Yue Yang felt that the Hui Jin Magic Blade would probably still be able to level up higher to Diamond Rank, so he decided to not use "Permanent Hardening" on it first.

Moreover, maybe there would be a better Ancient Rune than "Permanent Hardening" in the future. Yue Yang didn't want to fix

the direction of Hui Jin Magic Blade's growth.

The Platinum-ranked Hui Jin possessed two great spirits' remnants.

In the world, it was definitely amongst the ranks of the "Holy Weapons", an extraordinary existence. Moreover, it was unique and unmatched, only Yue Yang was able to use it. If it were another person, they would be engulfed by the two spirits' remnants inside the Hui Jin Magic Blade. The two Heaven Runes "Blood Absorb" and "Ability Absorbed" might be used against the person holding the blade instead.

Only Yue Yang could use it.

And only Yue Yang could truly bring out the terrifying power within the weapon.

"What a terrifying demonic blade. It couldn't be called a "Holy Weapon", it's more suited to be called a "Demonic Weapon"!" Princess Qian Qian evaluated the powered up Hui Jin Magic Blade this way.

"This Hui Jin should be able to level up to Diamond Rank in the future. At that time, you could add the "Iron Essence of the Meteorite" and "Obsidian Emperor Heart" from the King of Black Light's body, and carve an Ancient Rune, or even an Immemorial Rune. I think it could become a "Mythical Weapon" in the future!" Xue Wu Xia also thought that the Hui Jin Magic Blade still had a huge growth potential.

The Crescent Moon didn't have any spirit remnant, and it was also unable to absorb energy. Seems like no matter how hard Yue Yang tried to reforge it again, it wouldn't be able to be upgraded much.

Platinum Rank was the limit for the Crescent Moon.

But Hui Jin was different. It's potential was equivalent to beasts like Hui Tai Lang, it was unlimited.

Hui Tai Lang had continuously absorbed flame, metal and darkness energies. In particular, demon race's demon's heart had given it endless source of energy. It could get energy from Demon Soldiers, Demon Generals, Demon Commanders, Demon Marshals and even Demon Kings. If Hui Tai Lang continued to eat this way, it would continue to evolve. Its potential became even more unlimited. If Yue Yang could kill more Eastern Goblin Tribesmen in the future, the Eastern Goblin Tribesmen's Dan would become a great tonic for Hui Tai Lang.

Compared to Hui Tai Lang, who could fight its own battles, devour magic crystals and evolve, Hui Jin Magic Blade wouldn't be able to move much, hence its evolution speed would definitely be much slower.

Most importantly, although there were two spirit remnant's inside the blade, the two spirit's were merely remaining consciousness, and the two spirits were still faintly fighting against each other.

Furthermore, no matter how aware Hui Jin Magic Blade was, it wouldn't be as smart as Hui Tai Lang.

Hui Jin would definitely be incomparable to Hui Tai Lang and other beasts. It could only be the big boss of weapons, but that was only if it didn't need to fight it out with Xue Wu Xia's Ancient Book that also contained spirit's remnant and could also continue to level up.

After Yue Yang finished forging his weapons, he planned to bring Yue Bing and Yi Nan to Despair Abyss to look for the injured Dragon Turtle that the Night Empress told him.

He needed to find the Black Turtle Pearl, one of the Four Pearls that the Night Empress required him to find.

Before that, Yue Yang decided to kidnap a certain Smoky Flame Girl.

She was obviously his Guardian Spirit Beast, yet she always hid herself inside the Dimension of Duel. This shouldn't continue.

The Spirit of Flame and Smoke was originally a big-breasted tavern girl. After losing her life, she had also lost her memories. Only a tiny remnant of her awareness remains.

Yue Yang had brought Yue Bing and the others to meet her for a few times, but he realized that she only recognized him at the

most. She couldn't remember anything from the past at all. Maybe because she had turned into a beast, she didn't have her "person's" thoughts anymore.

After not meeting her for a period of time, the Spirit of Flame and smoke had actually levelled up from Silver-ranked Level 1 to Silver-ranked Level 3.

Seems like Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan's hidden volcanoes and magmas had become a good source of nourishment for her. Her smoke was thicker right now, and the temperature of her fire had become hotter. When she transformed, her appearance had also looked more human-like. At first, she didn't show any kind of reaction to Yue Yang's arrival, however, after she tried to sense him carefully, she realized that it was Yue Yang, and immediately become overjoyed. Her smoky body (in literal sense) floated over in the air, creating a long plume of smoke. Huffing flames everywhere, she rushed towards Yue Yang.

"I have a magic crystal that you will definitely like." Yue Yang took out a sand beast's magic crystal that had been refined by his Nirvana's Flame.

The sand beast was a Gold-ranked Level 8 'Storm King'.

(Shiro: sand beast Storm King – Moqi Xu Ling's beast, chapter 282)

The Spirit of Flame and Smoke looked at the magic crystal as if she was a little kid looking at candy.

As long as she absorb this Gold-ranked Level 8 magic crystal that had been refined by Nirvana's Flame, the spirit of Flame and Smoke would definitely be able to evolve to Gold-rank. It might evolve to Platinum-ranked. This magic crystal, forget about the Spirit of Flame and Smoke, even the Blood Queen Red wanted it badly. However, Yue Yang felt that it would be better for the Spirit of Flame and Smoke to absorb it. In the end, he chose to give this pure, element-type beast core to the Spirit of Flame and Smoke... Yue Yang didn't mention it on the surface, but he was thankful for the tavern girl's help previously. He was especially touched by the fact that she and her friends had sacrificed their lives to help Fourth Mother.

Although he couldn't save the tavern girl and make her return to her original appearance, Yue yang still hoped that she would evolve into a Holy Beast. She could then lead a new life with new wisdom.

The Spirit of Flame and Smoke was extremely excited when it saw the magic crystal, wanting to swallow it whole immediately.

It didn't have any human reservations, she was only reacting by her instincts.

"Do you want it?" Yue Yang enticed the Spirit of Flame and Smoke evilly, just like how a pedophile would kidnap little girls. He raised the Storm King's Core and dangled it in front of the Spirit of Flame and Smoke, whispering, "Follow me, do you understand?"

Yue Yang summoned took out his Silver Grimoire which had

levelled up to Advanced Silver Grimoire after so many battles. He signalled to the Spirit of Flame and Smoke to accept his summon.

After his grimoire levelled up from the battle, Yue Yang's Inherent Skills had also levelled up.

Actually, what Yue Yang hoped for the most was Thorny Flower Demoness becoming his Guardian Spirit Beast too... Or a new skill for Barbarian Cow Shadow, Bloody Queen and the others. It was a pity that Yue Yang's wishes were unrealized, only his Inherent Skills, "Counterfeit" and "Gemini" levelled up. His Level 5 Divine Vision didn't even level up. With the level up of his Gemini Inherent Skill, Yue Yang acquired a "Spirit Pacifier" ability. Currently, he could only use it on his own beasts. Through Spirit Pacifier, he could free his beasts from a negative mental state.

Right now, Yue Yang was using the 'Spirit Pacifier'... He tried his best to bring the Spirit of Flame and Smoke's guard against him down, erasing her feelings of hostility.

It's not known whether it was due to the enticement of the Storm King's Core or the usage of Spirit Pacifier, when the Spirit of Flame and Smoke received the Storm King's Core, she also accepted Yue Yang's recall. Turning into a plume of smoke, she returned into the grimoire. This was the first time she listened to Yue Yang's orders.

Seeing that Yue Yang succeeded in recalling the Spirit of Flame and Smoke, Yue Bing and Yi Nan who had been keeping quiet, afraid to alarm the Spirit of Flame and Smoke, immediately burst out in cheers.

As long as the Spirit of Flame and Smoke managed to absorb the Storm King's core, it might become a Gold-ranked Smoky Flame Girl the next time it was summoned. Yue Yang didn't have any element-type beast, so the Smoky Flame Girl fits the vacancy perfectly. After getting the Smoky Flame Girl, Yue Yang took Yue Bing and Yi Nan to Despair Abyss, returning to the Camp which was besieged by the Demonic Palace at that time. Yue Yang planned to make this place their base before they go deeper into the Despair Abyss to search for the injured Dragon Turtle.

The second time they came to Despair Abyss, not only Yue Yang, Yue Bing had also greatly improved.

The three people didn't care about the other adventurer's curious gazes, they only cared about moving forward.

(Shiro: In case you guys didn't read the TLN last chapter, I decide to change mercenaries to adventurers)

Yue Bing summoned her Treant and sat on the Treant's shoulders with her brother as they advanced deeper towards the center of the Despair Abyss. Yi Nan didn't summon her Flying Pegasus as per normal, but sat beside Yue Yang instead, her arms twining around Yue Yang's like Yue Bing. She sat there as she chatted with Yue Bing.

Yi Nan and Yue Yang's relationship had advanced greatly, but Yi Nan was still a little shy in front of Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and the others.

However, in front of Yue Bing, she had already assumed the status of becoming her sister-in-law.

“Silver-ranked Level 5 Treant General?” An adventurer platoon leader who knows his stuff stared at the gigantic treant that thudded away as it walk, completely stupefied.

“Mount...” Yue Yang had been thinking of mounts all the way. The Qilin girl definitely would not be willing to become his mount, otherwise everything would be perfect. How should he persuade that lost little girl with no home to return to? This was really a problem!

Chapter 306 – Water Palace, Ancient Structure

Last time, it was extremely exhausting for Yue Bing to explore the Despair Abyss.

The endless waves of spiders, various snake monsters, demon eagles, giant bats, fire ants, goblin wasps, and so on and so forth made Yue Bing suffered a lot.

After bravely challenging the Twelve Zodiac Temples Quest and the Hundred Schools Elite Competition, rescuing her mother, returning to the Yue Clan Castle and experiencing several great battles continuously, Yue Bing had grown up. Due to Yue Yang's meticulous teaching and rewards from the Twelve Zodiac Temples, Yue Bing's power had already surpassed Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, and even the Three Great Killing Stars. Xue Tan Lang who possessed beasts that were Yue Bing's beasts' natural nemesis might be slightly more powerful than her, but with regards to the other members like Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun, they had completely lost their advantage when Yue Bing's Treant evolved to Thousand Years Old Treant General.

With regards to combat skills, other than Yue Yang's coaching, Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and the other girls had also taught her their experiences.

Yue Bing's abilities improved greatly day by day.

Yue Yang , the competent brother, had even thought of a good

combat skill that best suit his sister.

After reflecting on the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament and several other battles afterwards, it was obvious that Yue Bing's strength was in agility and attack power. Her Treant's [Coiling Roots], [Tree Thorns] and [Intense Poison] were also very effective. Her only flaw was in the lack of defense... Yue Yang debated on whether to give her an extremely high-quality armour, just like the armour that the Qilin girl was wearing.

It was a pity that the Qilin girl was still wary towards Yue Yang, she didn't allow him to touch her clothes. Otherwise Yue Yang would really love to study her heavenly clothes.

With Yue Yang beside her and Yi Nan supporting her with mental skills, Yue Bing ordered the two Thousand Years Old Treant Generals to trash around in all direction, stomping deeper into the Abyss unstoppably.

The Bloody Queen Red didn't need to attack at all, she was only responsible for collecting the magic crystals and loot left behind.

As for the Thorny Flower Demoness, she was trying to quickly evolve into Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. She was in deep sleep right now, hence the corpses could only go to waste.

The Reaper Mantis flew around in the air, scaring away monsters that could fly...

Although it wasn't as strong as its mother, the current Reaper Mantis was still a Gold King Beast.

The Reaper Mantis, who had just evolved into Gold-ranked Level 4, still didn't know how to conceal its Qi like the Bloody Queen Red. Its Gold King Beast's Qi spread around the surrounding, scaring away the low-levelled flying monsters in the Despair Abyss. Those monsters immediately scurried away the moment they saw the Reaper Mantis.

On the ground, there were also different kinds of monsters that ran away the moment they saw the Thousand Years Old Treant General.

Only strong monsters that were Bronze-ranked Level 6 and above, Gold King Beasts, a colony of starved beasts or beasts like the Fire-red Ants that lacked intelligence dared to attack the Treant General.

“Boom!”

Several Horned Pythons that were as thick as water jars fell under the two Thousand Years Old Treant Generals' attack.

Their cause of death was Yue Bing's [Intense Poison] Inherent Skill and [Antiaris] ability.

The Horned Pythons' flesh was extremely thick and its scales was as hard as steel. Several of them attacked all at once. With just the

abilities of the Treant Generals, although they would win in the end, they would need to spend a lot of effort for a long time.

Seeing that the Treants were having a difficult time, Yue Yang secretly added two of his [Giant Phantom Shadows] onto the two Treants. With the power up from Yue Yang's [Giant Phantom Shadows], although the Treant Generals weren't be able to power up as much as Yue Yang did when he used the [Giant Phantom Shadows], their abilities had increased tenfold at least.

With a series of strong punches, the Horned Pythons were immediately pummeled into meat paste.

Yue Bing had also activated her [Intense Poison] Inherent Skill at the same time. With the activation of her [Antiaris] ability, the battle very quickly come to an end...

Entering into the centre of Despair Abyss, the party encountered strong beasts everywhere. In swamps and marshes, there were Swamp Crocodiles, Horned Pythons, Dog-headed Fish Monsters and Water Spiders. In the skies, there were Giant Bats, Demon Eagles and Flying Goblin Jackals. Furthermore, there were Marsh-spitting monsters everywhere disguised as puddles of water.

There were even the poisonous Water Scorpions and Quicksand Dogs that were hard to deal with hiding between rock slits.

These Quicksand Dogs looked like spiders, but they had dog heads.

They could neither make spider nets nor produce spider threads. They also swayed a lot when they walked, they had a very slow speed. However, they could drill into sand very quickly. They were experts in creating flawless quicksand traps. The moment their prey fall onto their trap, they would immediately drill out of the quicksand and suffocate their prey inside the quicksand. Before their preys enter their traps, they could even imitate an injured dog's howl to attract them.

This type of Quicksand Dogs were cunning monsters. With his Level 5 Divine Vision, Yue Yang could see that the Quicksand Dogs were actually a variant of a bat. It was actually neither a spider nor a dog.

Their wings had degenerated. Unable to fly, the wings bones had evolved into drills.

Their previously four claws also evolved and split into eight, hence they looked like spiders on the surface.

The level of these Quicksand Dogs were low, most of them were Normal-ranked. A handful of them were Bronze-ranked, but Yue Yang had never seen a Silver-ranked one before.

However, Yue Yang felt that their magic crystal had special attributes... Yue Yang thought that these kind of magic crystals from monsters that had strange abilities would be useful to Hui Tai Lang, Smoky Flame Girl and Barbarian Cow Shadow. The reason was because these magic crystals held the power of earth attribute inside.

More accurately, it was the power of transforming earth into quicksand.

If Ye Kong and Fatty Hai made use of these crystals, they might be able to improve their body transformation.

Yue Yang had even wanted to analyse these crystals and make some kind of “Transformation Pill”. Due to his desire and goal to study these crystals, Yue Yang and the two girls killed more than hundreds of Quicksand Dogs and collected a huge amount of magic crystals.

The central area of the Despair Abyss was humongous. Without a map, Yue Yang could only explore it step by step. The deeper they explored, the lower-lying the ground became.

Most of the ground were covered by big bodies of water.

The water pooled into a lake, and fall like a waterfall from the steep cliff in front. The bottom of the cliff couldn't be seen at all.

As the three people reached at the edge of the cliff, the Treant Generals were unable to continue. A waterfall-like wall covered the edge of the cliff all the way to the bottom. Countless drops of water splashed down through the air. If one didn't have flying-type beasts, one might not even be able to reach the bottom after walking for a fortnight through the wall of water. However, Yue Yang, who had reached Innate, didn't have to toil with his legs at all. Releasing some of his Innate Strength, he carried Yue Bing and

Yi Nan and floated down to the bottom leisurely... The Bloody Queen and Reaper Mantis led them in front, trying to find a path that would reduce the distance Yue Yang needed to fly, hence saving his Innate Qi.

Previously, they could still see a slit of sky above, but it completely disappeared now.

Going several miles downwards, that slit of sky had completely disappeared, and the abyss turned extremely dark. As they went deeper, it became pitch black.

Countless monsters hid their killing intent in the darkness. Some of them could produce light to attract their preys. The moment preys who approached their light appeared, they would open their big mouth and swallow them whole.

Of course, this kind of situation wouldn't happen to Yue Yang.

The moment an Innate appeared, all the monsters became scared stiff and kept quiet out of fear.

There were a few monsters who didn't manage to hide in time and tried to fight, risking their lives, but they were easily killed by the Bloody Queen Red and the Reaper Mantis.

Yue Yang carried Yue Bing and Yi Nan and traversed down the gigantic waterfall twenty kilometres deep. At the end, he realized that the pitch black bottom of the abyss was actually an "Abyss

Ocean”.

Yue Bing and Yi Nan didn't have Yue Yang's [Night Vision], hence they were unable to see anything.

They were only able to use the “Night Pearl” that Princess Qian Qian gave them and see a limited area of their surrounding. When they saw that there were ocean waves beating against the shores at the bottom, they were extremely shocked. They never thought that the centre of the Despair Abyss was actually this kind of place. In the sky, a strike of lightning flashed and heavy rainfall started to rain down... Very faintly, the two girls could see that there was a gigantic monster on the surface of the ocean which was extending its long neck and twisting it around.

If there was only one, they would think that that monster was the Dragon Turtle.

However, there were more than a dozen of gigantic monsters extended their long necks, shocking them so much that they immediately asked Yue Yang to leave this place and find another place without monsters to land.

When Yue Yang killed the Ten Thousand Years Old Giant Crab in the Cancer Temple before, he had acquired the “Tidal Pearl” from its body.

The Tidal Pearl could create a gigantic bubble that would protect its user to dive underwater, nullifying the effects of water pressure.

At the same time, a skill called “Breathe Underwater” could also be activated three times daily by the Tidal Pearl. If one could endure the water pressure under the water, one could use the skill and swim around underwater like a fish.

The Bloody Queen and the Reaper Mantis were kings of the sky, but their fighting abilities were severely reduced underwater. They could even be easily killed by a Bronze-ranked fish monsters underwater... This was the power of beasts that were their natural nemesis. It was the same logic similar to the situation when the extremely strong Flame Lord met the Storm Mermaid. It met its tragic end very quickly.

If Magma Giants or Magma Wyverns were to go underwater instead, they wouldn't even need enemies to kill them, it would be instant suicide.

Hence, the Bloody Queen Red and Reaper Mantis were recalled back into the grimoire. Yue Yang then summoned Xiao Wen Li, who entered the water and dispersed the surrounding monsters. Then, she summoned Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid and Thunder Naga. As for the strongest Ice Serpent Demon, she didn't summon it. Maybe Xiao Wen Li thought that there were no use for her to summon the Ice Serpent Demon now.

The Stone Element Medusa could also summon beasts, hence, she summoned the Gold Tiger Shark which had just eaten the remains of the Gold-ranked Level 8 Fishing Net Spider and was about to level up. She then ordered it to work hard and open the path in front.

The moment these three beasts, who were ‘overlord’-level underwater, appeared, countless starved ocean monsters immediately scurried off.

Even the Gold Tiger Shark was also a powerful existence in the ocean.

“Brother, do you think that the Dragon Turtle is inside this ocean?” Yue Bing thought that with an ocean this vast, how are they going to find the Dragon Turtle?

“It should be. We should go this way, wait, let’s go that way!” Yue Yang knew that searching a Dragon Turtle in the ocean was like looking for a needle in a haystack. If it was before, he would definitely not do something so strenuous. However, after reaching the Fifth Level of Innate Invisible Sword Qi, he could faintly sense the life force of the strongest existence here... It might not be one hundred percent accurate, but he felt that he could roughly determine the direction of the Dragon Turtle.

Yue Yang used “Breathe Underwater” skill on himself and stayed outside of the water bubble, while Yue Bing and Yi Nan hid themselves inside the water bubble.

Stone Element Medusa and Thunder Naga protected them in front while Storm Mermaid controlled the water flow to slowly move the water bubble, following closely behind Yue Yang.

Yue Yang rode on top of the Gold Tiger Shark, advancing forward

following the sense he felt from his heart.

The injured Dragon Turtle should be sleeping right in front.

Seems like it was different from the Qilin girl. If it was the Qilin girl, she would definitely sense him coming from afar. She could even send him a thought wave asking for help when she was sealed. Seems like this Dragon Turtle... still couldn't be compared to the Qilin girl. However, since it possessed the Black Turtle Pearl, its original strength must be quite strong.

The deeper they went, the more powerful, ugly-looking ocean monsters appeared. There were even some that were Gold-ranked.

When they saw Yue Yang, they didn't immediately attack like usual.

Instead, they sensed danger and escaped far away.

Yue Yang was anxious to look for the injured Dragon Turtle, so he didn't pursue to kill them. Otherwise, he could have acquired a lot of Gold-ranked magic crystals...

After swimming quickly underwater for a long time, they still couldn't find anything.

Yue Yang was also a little tired from trying to sense for a long time, hence he stopped to rest for a while. He felt that he didn't sense wrongly, but he just couldn't find the place. The two girls

were also a little bored inside the water bubble, hence they swam to the surface to take a breather and eat some snacks. Yue Yang then thought to give something a try and summoned the water attributed Quintet Golden Puppet Mice, trying his luck. Yue Yang felt that although this inner ocean was not a real ocean, it was as big as a real one. Ordering a little mouse to find an injured Dragon Turtle in this big ocean might be quite a tall order.

He just wanted to try, so he didn't hope too much.

Unexpectedly, after half an hour, when Yue Yang and the two girls finished resting and was about to continue their search, Yue Yang's grimoire suddenly flipped opened on its own. The water attributed little puppet mouse had found something...

The words "Discovered water temple, ancient structure" appeared on the grimoire page.

"This can't be..." Yue Yang sweated profusely. He had searched for more than half a day, yet he was actually unable to compare to a little mouse. Had he known earlier, he would have ordered the mouse to search for the Dragon Turtle, then he wouldn't need to spend so much effort.

The Ghost Genius Yue Gong was indeed an extraordinarily awesome person. How many more secrets could Yue Yang dig out from the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice that he created?

Chapter 307 – Dragon Turtle

The Water Palace was an extremely strange place.

When Yue Yang entered it the first time, he realized that the space inside was actually filled with air. There was a water dome on top of the palace, separating the ocean water and the temple.

Entering inside, Yue Yang felt some kind of strong, invisible power that separated the ocean water, forming a distinct space. This place was completely different from above ground. The gravity was weaker, hence a person could easily float into the air inside. They could swim around like fish and walk on thin air. At times, some monster fish would accidentally barge in, but they would leave immediately. No matter what kind of strong sea monster it was, they seemed to be extremely wary of this unique place. Yue Yang took in a few breaths and realized that the air inside was as clean and fresh as the air in a forest. Although there was no wind, the place didn't feel hot or stuffy at all.

As Yue Yang waddled downwards, he saw some strange plants that could actually give out light. It looked both like a mushroom and a tree, and there were several vines dangling from it. Yue Yang had never seen this kind of plant before in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

He suddenly thought of something, as if there was some kind of relevant information with regards to the plant in his head...

Using his super memory, he racked his brain and searched for the

information.

Was it recorded inside the Medicine Encyclopedia?

Yue Yang, Yue Bing and Yi Nan made their way down and compared the plant with the similar-looking illustration in the Medicine Encyclopedia. Yue Yang realized that he had actually managed to find the relevant piece of information. This was a 'Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree', which originated from the Outer Realms in Tong Tian Tower. In Soaring Dragon Continent, only the Ming Kingdom, which had already been destroyed, cultivated it. However, as the Ming Kingdom's territory became engulfed in the flames of war, the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree had since become extinct for a few hundred years. Unexpectedly, it still grew here.

The Medicine Encyclopedia recorded that the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree could produce an effect to slightly reduce darkness energy. If one suffered a wound from demon monsters, one could use the fruit's juice to heal the wound.

However, the thing that people seek the most wasn't the healing properties of this plant.

It was its aphrodisiac properties.

The Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree had the same aphrodisiac properties like the [Horny Goat Weed](#). However, the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree's effects were slower and its side effects were weaker.

The Horny Goat Weed, on the other hand, was the complete opposite. Its effects were quick but it produced very strong side effects. One would experience a very strong sex drive and wouldn't get tired even after a long time. The herb was extremely favoured by a lot of old nobilities. Of course, its side effects were strong, even to the point that it harms the user's body. Prolonged usage would risk one's life. Forget about others, two generations of Emperors ago, it was said that the previous Emperor of the Zi Jin Kingdom, the 'Golden Wolf' Emperor Chu Chong Chi who was a mighty Level 7 [Overlord], due to prolonged and frequent usage of the Horny Goat Weed, pleasing over ten women every night, died from exhaustion in the end. A great Level 7 Overlord like him didn't actually die in the hands of his strong enemies, he died from exhaustion on top of his favourite concubine instead. He had since become a big joke in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

Different from the Horny Goat Weed, in comparison, the fruit juice of the Dodder Silk Sphere Tree were more gentle and mild on the user's blood. It wasn't as explosive as the Horny Goat Weed. Unless it was used by an extremely weak person, it wouldn't harm the user's body at all.

In the Medicine Encyclopedia, the Horny Goat Weed was rated a Grade 3 poison while the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree was rated as a Grade 4 herb.

As the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree had vanished with the Ming Kingdom, those who possessed it were very few. It was extremely rare, hence only influential nobles could possess such a precious herb.

In the Palace, it was even nicknamed ‘Dragon Sleeping With Concubines’ or ‘Son-bearing Dodder’.

The reason was because if a concubine possessed the herb, she would receive the Emperor’s favour and would even acquire the son that she hoped for.

Hundreds of years passed and the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree slowly disappeared from the Soaring Dragon Continent, going into extinction. Otherwise, Chu Chong Chi, the Golden Wolf Emperor would not meet the tragic end of dying due to overdosage of Horny Goat Weed.

Yue Yang never thought that the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree actually exist in the depths of the inner ocean in the Despair Abyss.

Looking at it closely, these Dodder Silk Fruit Trees were all grown, big trees. The largest one was so thick that ten people wouldn’t be able to put their arms around it. It was obvious that it had existed for at least thousands of years... Yue Yang had one other superpower that was as abnormal as his martial arts talent. The sickly beauty alone couldn’t satisfy him at all... Despite this, Yue Yang still wanted to collect these Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Trees.

The tree sap of the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree had darkness dispelling properties and its fruit juice had aphrodisiac properties. Other than these, Yue Yang knew a secret property of the tree that no one knew. It was not even recorded in the Medicine

Encyclopedia.

Yue Yang had found a secret prescription within the memories that the tragic guy's mother had passed down to him.

Rebirth Pill!

One of the variable ingredients needed to make Rebirth Pill was the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit. If one mixed the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit juice and the sap of the Lustrous Tree Branch and used it as the variable ingredient, the effects of the Rebirth Pill would be much stronger.

Yue Yang already had the Goddess' Tears and God's Dew right now, he was about to start making the Rebirth Pill.

With this Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit juice in front of him, it was like giving a pillow to someone who had consumed sleeping medicine.

He obviously wouldn't mind it at all.

Furthermore, there was a special kind of fruit in the Tong Tian Tower, called the 'Youthful Fruit'. It allows a normal person to recover some of their youth, and if an Innate consumed it, his lifespan would be extended. However, this Youthful Fruit contains strong poison, it couldn't be easily consumed straight away. One would first need to consume the 'Heart Protection Pill' that had antibody properties to fight against the poison. Only then would

one be able to fully absorb the medicinal properties of the Youthful Fruit... One of the important ingredient needed to create the Heart Protection Pill was the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit juice.

If one reached the Innate Realm, even if one didn't consume any kind of godly medicines, a real Innate would live a long life of more than a thousand years.

Of course, this was with the exception of Innates like Yao Guang and Tian Quan who became Innates quickly through someone else power levelling them.

Yue Yang never worried about himself or Xue Wu Xia and the others, but Fourth Mother didn't know martial arts at all. She would definitely not be able to remain youthful, hence he wanted to create the Rebirth Pill or gave her the Youthful Fruit so that she would live a long life and maintain her youthfulness... Although Yue Yang never said it before, this had been his wish all along.

“What is this?” Yue Bing and Yi Nan didn't have Yue Yang's knowledge or the knowledge he inherited from the tragic guy's mom. They only thought that the trees looked kind of weird.

“Medicinal herbs.” Yue Yang didn't explain in detail as the two girls had no interests in medicinal herbs.

If it were Yue Yu instead, she would definitely ask for a full, thorough in-depth explanation of the tree from him.

This Water Palace contained several other plants other than the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree. Yue Yang gathered a lot of other medicinal herbs, recognizing them through his hyper memory and the knowledge inheritance from the tragic guy's mom. All the plants here were species that didn't exist in Soaring Dragon Continent. It was a pity that Yue Yang couldn't find the Snow Lotus Herb here, otherwise he could have created another Martial Arts Pill. When Elder Yue Hai and Jun Wu You returned, he could give them one each as a surprise present... Elder Yue Hai, Jun Wu You and the others were stuck in their level for many years, unable to level up. If they consumed the Martial Arts Pill, even though they didn't become Innate in the end, they would still acquire a huge boost in power.

Once their powers increased, they would have the power to protect themselves. Yue Yang would worry less about them when he goes to the Tong Tian Tower in the future.

After walking forward for more than two kilometres, Yue Yang suddenly felt a mysterious kind of energy in front.

Bypassing the thickets, he discovered a huge stone pillar.

From the outside, it looked very similar to the Crystal Pillar that the Qilin girl was sealed in. It's just that it was not made of crystals, and there weren't many pillars, there was only one mysterious-looking, gigantic stone pillar. On top of the ten metres-tall giant pillar, there was a statue of a creature that looked very much like a demon king. There were rows of inscriptions on the pillar, but Yue Yang could only recognize some of them.

These inscriptions were in Ancient Language. Although Yue Yang had the knowledge inheritance, he still had difficulties in reading them. Seems like it was the description and introduction of the Demon King statue.

At the bottom of the pillar, there was a row of Heaven Runes inscription.

There was also an Ancient Rune that represents “Suppress”.

“What is this now?” Yue Bing and Yi Nan felt unwell the moment they saw the pillar, as if there was something evil hiding inside it.

“In the ancient times, human warriors had defeated the Fallen Warriors and sealed them here... Seems like this is the graveyard for Fallen Warriors. This pillar is not the only one.” Yue Yang led Yue Bing and Yi Nan and walked forward, discovering a similar-looking pillar nearby.

As they walked forward further, they discovered more giant pillars representing the sealed Fallen Warriors.

After tallying in the end, Yue Yang felt that there were at least hundred over Fallen Warriors trapped here. Although they might be sealed on different years, they had been sealed here for a very long time.

Those that had been sealed since the ancient times didn't emit any evil energy at all. The stone pillars were also worn out from

wind erosion. Seems like the Fallen Warrior trapped inside had completely vanished. There were some pillars that were more intact, and they exude so much evil aura. There were some extremely potent evil auras that seemed to be able to break the Stone Pillar Seal at any moment. At the centre of this disarrayed arrangement of sealed Fallen Warriors Stone Pillar Seals, there was a huge Hall.

Yue Yang led Yue Bing and Yi Nan as they entered the palace hall together.

They discovered that the palace was extremely big. There was a staircase that seemed to have thousands over steps leading towards the hall. When they reached the huge palace hall, they discovered that it was as big as a football field.

The palace hall looked like it had seen glorious days before, but after several years, the splendorous paint had faded. Other than some statues that had eroded away, the palace hall was completely empty. Looking around the palace hall, they discovered that the building majestic and awe-inspiring.

Going down a few hundreds steps and walking forward for one kilometre, they arrived at a hundred metre tall building made of white stone. The tower that was covered in dust stood tall before them, as if it were a giant looking down on people.

To the left, there were a few houses of different sizes.

To the right, at a far distance, there was a small hill and a pond

on the foot of the hill... Walking nearer to it, Yue Yang and the others realized that the ponds were actually quite big, ranging around hundred metres in length. And inside the pond, there was some kind of gigantic shadow. It seemed to be sleeping inside the water.

“It’s the Dragon Turtle, Dragon Turtle! We finally found the Dragon Turtle!” Yue Bing cheered out happily.

“It’s body is too big...” Yi Nan thought that Lightning Mammoths and Herculean Rhinoceros Beetles were already considered huge. The thirty-metre tall King of Black Light was the largest existence she had ever seen, no other beast could compare to it. However comparing the gigantic shadow inside the pond with the King of Black Light, it was simply insignificant in comparison, not even worthy of mention. Looking at the dark shadow that seemed to fill up the whole pond sleeping, Yi Nan even felt that the pond was too cramped for it.

Yue Yang had wanted to throw a stone inside to wake the slumbering Dragon Turtle.

However, before he managed to throw a stone, the pond water slowly begin to tremble and overflow... In the end, water splashed everywhere and a whirlpool appeared suddenly as the dark shadow wiggled and moved the huge body of water. Its head that was several metres long burst forth from the water, almost drenching Yue Yang completely.

The ground shook violently.

Along with an extremely loud howl, the dark figure started to surface, creating raging waves all over the pond.

A huge head and a hard shell surfaced from the water.

Yue Yang saw it very clearly. It was indeed the Dragon Turtle.

It had a dragon head and a body of turtle.

It looked like it was Platinum-ranked Level 6, but to his surprise, Yue Yang realized that the Dragon Turtle was injured to the point that it was on the verge of death. If it was allowed to recover its maximum strength, wouldn't it be the end for them? It was so strong even though it was on the verge of death. If it fully recovered, would there be anyone in the Soaring Dragon Continent who would be able to stop it?

Of course this Dragon Turtle was originally from the higher floors of Tong Tian Tower. It only escaped here to nurse itself because it was injured.

If it wasn't injured so seriously, this Dragon Turtle wouldn't even come to the Soaring Dragon Continent, the newbie village.

“Old turtle, I have received the mission to heal you. But allow me to speak rudely... Other than the Black Turtle Pearl, do you have any other rewards? No matter what, you should give me some tip reward for running this errand right? It was so difficult for me to

reach this place. If it wasn't for the Night Empress, I wouldn't even come to such a desolated place.” Yue Yang purposely spoke out the Night Empress' name, trying to see the old turtle's reactions.

“Is the little missy Night Empress the one who sent you? What proof do you have?” Yue Yang had guessed correctly. The huge Dragon Turtle could speak indeed. That fellow's voice sounded very old, sounding as if it was over ten thousand years old. Yue Yang secretly sweated when he heard the Dragon Turtle. The Night Empress was actually a 'little missy' to this old turtle...

Chapter 308 – Prison Emperor's Divine Palace

“I have no proof.” Yue Yang cried out, spreading out his hands. “Had I known you wanted proof, I would have asked for proof from Night Empress no matter what.”

“Every year, there will always be people coming here to disturb my sweet slumber. Sometimes human warriors, sometimes demons...” the Dragon Turtle let out a long sigh with its ancient voice, “If you cannot prove your identity or ability, I won’t believe in you easily. I think you’d better leave!”

“My brother definitely came here by the orders of the Night Empress. He wouldn’t lie to you!” Yue Bing hurriedly spoke on Yue Yang’s behalf when she saw the Dragon Turtle rejecting her brother.

“He is also Zhi Zun’s disciple!” Yi Nan thought that that they would have better credibility if Zhi Zun’s name was mentioned.

“Really? Then have you learnt any of Zhi Zun’s ultimate skills?” Looks like the Dragon Turtle knew Zhi Zun too, and it seemed like it was quite familiar with her.

“...” Yue Yang was speechless.

Although Zhi Zun was Yue Yang’s Introducer, she had never taught Yue Yang any ultimate skills before.

Other than giving him a Crystal Card at Shang Wu Camp and chatting with him for a while at the Heaven's Line Cave on top of the Cloud Peak Lake, she never cared about Yue Yang at all usually, much less teaching him some kind of ultimate skills.

Zhi Zun had indeed admitted that she was Yue Yang's Introducer, but she had failed a little as his Introducer... According to Zhi Zun's words, she wanted to give Yue Yang unlimited freedom to learn his own skills. She didn't want to restrict Yue Yang like she did with her younger sister years ago. In reality, Yue Yang really hoped to have a sexy and beautiful teacher to take care of him. Wouldn't it be cool to see big boobs bouncing in front of him everyday? It's a pity that because of her bad experience with her younger sister, Zhi Zun was not willing to take care of Yue Yang anymore. In the end, because of this unlimited freedom, Yue Yang didn't get any treasures or mythical beasts. He didn't even know the beautiful Zhi Zun's ultimate skills.

Yue Yang had no way of answering the Dragon Turtle's question.

Forget about learning her skills, Yue Yang had never even heard of them before.

Yue Bing also find things rather difficult to explain, but she still tried to answer truthfully, "Dragon Turtle Grandpa, although Zhi Zun didn't pass on her ultimate skills to brother, she was indeed her Introducer. If you want to see brother's abilities, why not ask brother to release his Innate strength and show it to you here?"

The Dragon Turtle shook its huge dragon head, “There’s no need to. My eyes are not blind, I can see through his strength with a glance. I can see that the little boy have the powers of an Innate Level 3. He has quite a bit of potential, I have never seen such a young Innate like him before. It’s a pity that he is still very young... As for you and the other little girl, you have the strength of a Level 7 Beginner [Overlord] and the other a Level 6 Advanced [Elder], you are slightly stronger than that girl who are good with mental skills. Let me just break it down for you. With your current abilities, even if I give you the mission of going to the Prison Emperor Divine Palace to help me acquire the Prison Emperor’s Divine Staff and Seal, you won’t even last half an hour inside...”

“Aren’t we supposed to find herbs to heal your wounds?” Yi Nan knew that her powers were lacking, but she never imagined the Dragon Turtle saying that even Yue Yang would be killed if he went to the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

She was very clear about what kind of person Yue Yang was.

Yue Yang had managed to pursue the Green Summit Sect Leader Duan Mu Long Cheng who escaped to the Demon Abyss, and returned back safely after killing him.

Yet this old Dragon Turtle said that Yue Yang was not qualified to enter the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

Isn’t this too much?

“My soul is injured. Right now, my body is like a water jar with a

hole, I can't retain my Qi. It will be useless for me to eat any kind of medicine. Even if I can recover, I will only be able to recover my strength to Platinum-ranked Level 10. I don't think I can recover my original strength even after a thousand years. In that case, wouldn't medicine be completely useless!" The Dragon Turtle sighed deeply.

"Are you in a hurry?" Yue Yang thought that the Dragon Turtle sounded a little strange.

Maybe the Dragon Turtle had given him a higher-ranked mission when it saw his abilities.

Previously, the Night Empress didn't even mention anything with regards to the Prison Emperor Divine Palace to him.

If he wouldn't even last half an hour with his current abilities, why would the Night Empress give him such a dangerous quest?

Furthermore, the Night Empress would probably not be able to predict that he would grow stronger so quickly. It was something that he had not predicted himself... This Dragon Turtle looked skeptical on the outside, but in reality, it looked like it had the intention to give the mission to him. Otherwise, why would it talk so much nonsense? It could have just submerged itself back into the pond and continue to sleep. It's just that, wasn't the level of its mission raised too high?

Originally, the quest of healing the Dragon Turtle was probably B-ranked Quest, and the reward item was the 'Black Turtle Pearl'.

Right now, this Dragon Turtle had suddenly raised the quest rank, and it looked like it was at least an S-ranked, or even SS-ranked quest. If he wouldn't last half an hour inside the Prison Emperor God Palace, Yue Bing and Yi Nan wouldn't even need to be mentioned.

As for acquiring the Prison Emperor's Divine 'Staff' and 'Seal', what kind of things are those?

Holy-ranked Equipment? Mythical-ranked Equipment?

The Dragon Turtle mumbled to itself for a long time, and finally sighed and answered with its ancient voice, "At the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, there is a door that leads to the Heaven Realm. It will only open once in a hundred years. If I don't acquire the Prison Emperor's Divine Staff and Seal this year, I wouldn't be able to recover my original strength. If I don't recover my original strength, I wouldn't be able to kill that traitor, the Prison Emperor Divine General. If the Prison Emperor Divine General managed to enter the Heaven Realm, I'm afraid he would be able to get away from his crimes... It was a pity that Zhi Zun and Night Empress, due to the restrictions of their Innate Alliance Contract, were unable to kill anyone with the qualifications to enter the Heaven Realm. After this year, the door to Heaven Realm will be closed. You are all kids with high potentials, it's a pity that I couldn't wait until you guys are stronger. I don't have much time left..."

"What's inside the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace?" Yue Yang was thinking whether he should receive the mission or not. It would definitely be dangerous if he did, but it would be a waste if

he didn't!

“Six thousand years ago, I was still two thousand years old and my status was the Prison Emperor's Heavenly Imperial Guardian Beast. I was very young at that time, I was the youngest of all the Heavenly Imperial Guardian Beasts, but I received the Prison Emperor's trust. No matter if it was an expedition to the Demon Abyss or Heaven Realm, I would always accompany the Prison Emperor as his right-hand man. Prison Emperor was a human warrior with powers that couldn't be imagined by the warriors of today. He was completely unrivalled, even warriors from the Heaven Realm would tremble at the sound of his name. However, afterwards, afraid that the Prison Emperor would pose as a threat to Heaven Realm, the three big shots of Heaven Realm went against the rules of Ancient Code and forced themselves out of Heaven Realm into the world below. They led an army of Heaven Realm warriors to attack the Prison Emperor... That battle destroyed the whole heaven and earth, so much that even some continents had sunk underwater. Two of the three big shots of the Heaven Realm had fallen for eternity, just like how Gods have fallen in the ancient times. They were sealed inside the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace by the Prison Emperor and would not be able to return to the Heaven Realm for all eternity. The remaining big shot escaped to the Heaven Realm and abandoned a hundred over Heaven Realm warriors, fleeing alone. The Prison Emperor allied with the human warriors of that time and killed the Heaven Realm warriors one by one. In the end, they managed to seal everyone in the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace... Prison Emperor's used his own life as the price for sealing his enemies. After sealing everyone, he was seriously injured, hence he was unable to leave the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace and was sealed inside too. Afterwards, the Soaring Dragon Continent that had lost the Prison Emperor fell into chaos. At this time, the Prison Emperor Divine General, that traitor, had seized the opportunity

and caused further chaos. In the end, the stability and peace of the Soaring Dragon Continent crumbled completely. The Soaring Dragon Continent fell into decline slowly, unable to regain its original glory... All the strong warriors had died during the battle with the Heaven Realm. My comrades had also died one by one during the battle, and in the end, I was the only one who survived... Inside the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace, there were sealed souls of Heaven Realm warriors. Although they didn't have flesh and blood, even their souls were not something that you can easily defeat." The Dragon Turtle's ancient voice was imbued with indescribable sorrow as it recounted the past. Only then did Yue Yang know that humans were extremely strong last time, they could actually won a war against the Heaven Realm.

Think about it. Right now, the human warriors in Soaring Dragon Continent couldn't even enter the Heaven Realm.

What a huge difference between six thousand years ago and six thousand years later!

Yue Yang tried to match Empress Fei Wen Li's words. Empress Fei Wen Li was a Ranker from the Demon Abyss ten thousand years ago. Although she was so strong, she was actually sealed by human warriors inside the Black Hole Dimension. From this, one can infer that the human race had really fallen drastically.

If mankind lost Zhi Zun or Night Empress, those super strong warriors, and allowed the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian or the Thousand Goblins Sect to stir up havoc in Soaring Dragon Continent again, mankind might not even be able to contract a beast after a few hundred years. At that time, mankind would

completely fall under Demon Abyss control and become their slaves or food. The current Soaring Dragon Continent was like a boat full of holes, leaking water everywhere. If it was not repaired quickly, forget about continuing to sail, it might even sink into the ocean tomorrow, unable to recover for eternity.

“Do we have to fight against those sealed spirits? Can we steal the things out instead?” Yi Nan offered an advice.

“The spirits inside will definitely interfere with theft. Furthermore, the moment the Seal and Staff were taken away from the seal, the sealed spirits will obtain more freedom and regain back their strength. Even if they wouldn’t be able to leave the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, their powers would become at least ten times stronger. At that time, it would be difficult for you guys to leave.” The Dragon Turtle obviously didn’t think too highly of Yue Yang and the two girls, because in its eyes, Yue Yang was simply too young. Even though he was a super genius, a twenty year old Innate was simply too young.

“Dragon Turtle Grandpa, can we rescue the Prison Emperor out?” Yue Bing felt that the Prison Emperor might already be dead, but she still hoped for a miracle. If they revived the Prison Emperor, who was such a strong figure, even if they could only save his soul, things would become much easier.

“The Prison Emperor has already passed away... His Divine Staff and Divine Seal still stored some of his powers, but it’s a pity that you guys are not the descendents of the Prison Emperor. Otherwise you can use them and inherit the Prison Emperor’s power. With the Prison Emperor’s Divine Staff and Divine Seal, I believe you

guys would be able to kill the Prison Emperor Divine General, that traitor. At that time, if he had not become the receiver of the three big shots of the Heaven Realm, the warriors in Heaven Realm would not be able to descend onto the Soaring Dragon Continent so easily.” The Dragon Turtle had carried the grudge for six thousand years, determined to kill the Prison Emperor Divine General no matter what.

“So you need the Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Seal...” Yue Yang felt that other than Zhi Zun, not even Night Empress could gauge his true strength. Although this Dragon Turtle was very powerful, after getting injured, it shouldn’t be able to see through his true strength.

Could this old Dragon Turtle really see through his [Counterfeit] skill?

With his Nirvana Flame, World Exterminating Wheel, Star Explosion, [Devour] Domain of Power and most importantly, his Innate Invisible Sword Qi, who could stand a chance against him?

Amongst his beast, he had Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man and the others to support him in battle.

If he really can’t, he still had the Qilin girl and the twin Phoenix girls... If they were not willing to come out and help, then he could hide inside Empress Fei Wen Li’s Black Hole Dimension and think about a way to release Empress Fei Wen Li out! She was an extremely powerful figure ten thousand years ago, if it wasn’t because of her injuries and the seal, the Prison Emperor and the

three big shots of Heaven Realms might just be buzzing flies to her!

Yue Bing and Yi Nan had still wanted to ask about the situation, but Yue Yang shook his hand, showing them there was no need to.

He recorded the location in front of the Dragon Turtle in ten Teleportation Scrolls, then nodded at the Dragon Turtle, “I might be able to try breaking into the Prison Emperor Divine Palace on your behalf, but I need to make some preparations first.”

The Dragon Turtle seemed to understand that Yue Yang had made up his mind, but it still delivered the final advice, “Little boy, I appreciate your good intentions. However, the Prison Emperor Divine Palace was a special kind of Sealed Dimension. Without the Prison Emperor’s Divine Staff and Divine Seal, you won’t be able to exit it... The problem was that the Divine Staff and Divine Seal were used to seal the two big shots of Heaven Realm. Even if they only had a hundredth of their strength left, they were still beyond your level.”

“You are not me, how do you know if I can’t do it?” Yue Yang rolled his eyes. He secretly thought, he could even enter and exit the Black Hole Dimension as and when he pleased. How could the Prison Emperor Divine Palace defeat him? He planned to return back and discuss it with Xue Wu Xia and the tigress first, and he would also negotiate for a higher reward. Otherwise, he would have been taken advantage off in this quest, the reward was much too low for the effort he had to give.

He should at least receive a Mythical Equipment from this Dragon Turtle or something. If he couldn’t get the Prison

Emperor's Divine Staff or Divine Seal, he didn't mind getting the Prison Emperor's Divine Armor, Divine Helmet or whatever else.

Yue Yang brought Yue Bing and Yi Nan and teleported back to the Little Flower Garden.

Attacking the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace should be much more difficult than attacking the Twelve Zodiac Temples.

Yue Yang felt that he should discuss it with the girls first and listen to their opinions. Maybe they would be able to think of a good idea.

Chapter 309 – Qian Qian’s Decision: Become An Innate!

Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia were training on the surface of a lake ten kilometres away. Luo Hua City Mistress was planting flowers in the small garden outside their house, while inside the house, the sickly beauty was copying some Heaven Runes. When Yue Yu saw that Yue Yang and the others had returned, she happily welcomed them and said, “Have you found the Dragon Turtle?”

“Yep!” Yue Bing nodded cheerfully.

“What do you need to heal it? Can Healing Water be used?” Yue Yu thought that it was finally her turn to be useful.

Although she couldn’t fight, she could heal, no problem.

Yi Nan shook her head, saying that it was not that simple.

Yue Yu was astonished. Luo Hua City Mistress who heard the commotion from the garden abandoned her flower planting and ran back to the house. The three-tailed snow fox followed her, running even more quickly than her.

As Yue Bing explained the situation to Yue Yu, Yi Nan hurried to inform Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia to return.

On the other side, Luo Hua City Mistress was performing a body search on Yue Yang. She knew that if he found any strange-looking plants on his journey, he would definitely keep some for her. Of course, this was only her excuse to check if he had any unseen injuries. Yue Yang hurriedly said that he was uninjured, and passed her the seed for the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree.

“Eh... what is this?” Seeing the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree seed that had disappeared for a few centuries, Luo Hua City Mistress was surprised. There were actually seeds that she couldn’t recognize?

“It’s Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree. It’s useful to disperse dark energy.” Yue Yang explained to her.

“Woowww, hasn’t it gone extinct in Soaring Dragon Continent for a few hundred years? What a nice timing, I happen to lack plants that can glow at night in my garden!” Luo Hua City Mistress was insanely happy as she hugged Yue Yang’s arm and tiptoed to give him a sweet kiss. Luo Hua City Mistress was too ecstatic, in reality, her relationship with Yue Yang had not progressed to the point that she could casually kiss him... Yue Bing didn’t mind at all, but Yue Yu blushed a little.

As the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree had the similar ability of dispersing dark energy like her own abilities, Yue Yu knew about the herb.

When they were studying about it in Shang Jing Academy before, there were even several perverts in her class who started calling her by the nickname of ‘Dodder Silk Water Moonlight’.

The nickname ‘Dodder Silk Water Moonlight’ was referring to her skin that was white and smooth like flowing water and her sexy body. If her [Spirit Spring] Inherent Skill levelled up until the final evolution, according to their teacher, Yue Yu’s Spirit Qi would be like moonlight. It would feel warm and comfortable on other’s skin, and when Yue Yu release a huge amount of Spirit Qi, it could even disperse evil Demon Qi and other negative effects.

If she had not been born in the Yue Clan and had a fiance of her own, Yue Yu’s suitors would probably be lining up into a queue that was a thousand metres long.

Xiao San was already so powerful, if he drinks the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit juice which had the effect of boosting male potency, how could Sister Wu Hen withstand him?

When Yue Yu thought about this, her face became even redder.

However, seeing Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia who was running back at a far distance, she calmed down. There were still Qian Qian and the others, why would she be worried about him? There are no negative side effects from consuming the Dodder Silk Sphere Fruit Tree, maybe he brought it back here to grow it for fun!

Yue Yu hurriedly switched her attention to other things, and caught Yue Bing saying ‘Prison Emperor Divine Palace’ by chance.

Prison Emperor Divine Palace?

She had never heard about that place before...

When Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia returned, Yue Yang told them about the situation. The girls started frowning their brows.

“With regards to the great battle with Heaven Realm that happened six thousand years ago, there are no records about it at all. However, according to Dragon Turtle’s story, we cannot let our guard down. After all, mankind still cannot go to the Heaven Realm even until now. As for the Prison Emperor’s Divine Palace, if there are really the two big shots of Heaven Realms spirits sealed inside, then it is really not a place that we can easily break in into.” Xue Wu Xia was aware that this quest was even harder than their plan of exploring the God’s Ruins in the future.

Other than Yue Yang’s mom, no one managed to enter the Inner layer of God’s Ruins before. It would definitely be a big challenge.

However, this two spirits of big shots from the Heaven Realm that had already been trapped for six thousand years in Prison Emperor Divine Palace was also not that simple.

Princess Qian Qian would never beg others at normal times, but she suddenly suggested to Yue Yang, “Why don’t you ask that big-breasted lady? She must know a few things. Furthermore, hasn’t she been trying to come up with ways to approach you? Why don’t you give her a chance?”

The big-breasted lady that she was referring to was the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Tian Fa.

If it was the previous Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Princess Qian Qian would definitely be worried about her. However, after going through the fight at Yue Clan Castle together, seeing how Phoenix Fairy Beauty had risked her life to save Yue Yang and fought against the Great Emperor of Zi Wei until she fainted from her injuries, Princess Qian Qian had changed her opinion towards her. Although Princess Qian Qian didn't really like the seductive Phoenix Fairy Beauty who could seduce Yue Yang to bed any time, her logic told her that it wouldn't be enough if they only relied on their own strength, instead of asking for Tian Fa's help, to explore the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace.

She wouldn't be able to rest easy if she allowed Yue Yang to fight alone.

And she wouldn't have the heart for it.

The best method was to find a partner that wouldn't betray him even when they have the opportunity to do so... The person she chose was Tian Fa!

As Tian Fa, one of the great leaders of Demonic Palace, she definitely had everything in her hands. She didn't lack anything, she only lacked a man that could accompany her and put an end to her lonely life. As long as Yue Yang secretly used his pretty boy's ways and sacrificed his body a little, Tian Fa would definitely help him. For example, during the Yue Clan Castle battle, she had tirelessly fought against the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian,

and even fought against three Great Demon Kings and two Lich Kings in the Demon Abyss. She didn't abandon Yue Yang and escaped on her own. This proved that the big-breasted lady was a comrade that was worthy of their trust.

"I agree. I think it would be best if we can explore the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace together with Tian Fa. I think we should give her a fixed reward." Luo Hua City Mistress would usually not care about managing matters, but she was actually very decisive. If she wasn't a girl, the Tian Luo Kingdom's future Emperor's seat would have been hers, not the Prince of Tian Luo's.

"I think we should train with all our might. If we are not Innates, even if we want to enter and help, we wouldn't be able to help much!" Xue Wu Xia slowly said.

These words struck right into the girls' hearts.

The underlying meaning of her words was that they were all useless, unable to be of a help to Yue Yang. In the face of a challenging situation, instead of them, they had to ask for Tian Fa for help.

Xue Wu Xia didn't oppose to asking Tian Fa's help, but she felt that the most logical thing to do was to raise their abilities too.

After all, if you want to do something well, you should do it yourself!

Even if they were successful in exploring the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace this time, what would happen if they went to the Heaven Realms in the future? The old Dragon Turtle said that the Heaven Realm's Gate only opened once in a hundred years. This year happened to be the year it opened. If they missed it, they would have to wait another hundred years. If Yue Yang wanted to enter the Heaven Realm, it wouldn't be difficult for him if he partnered with Tian Fa and the others. But the girls didn't have that kind of ability at all... Then wouldn't they be unable to see Yue Yang for a hundred years?

At that time, Tian Fa and Yue Yang would probably be carrying their grandchildren and have no business with them whatsoever anymore.

Princess Qian Qian clenched her fist and gritted her teeth as she resolutely proclaimed, "One month, let's rush to be an Innate!"

However, it would be quite impossible for her to be an Innate by training on her own for a month.

No matter how talented she was, she wouldn't be able to compare to Yue Yang, the abnormal guy.

However, if she abandoned all reservations and practiced [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang like lovers or even married couples, then nothing would be impossible.

As long as she could become an Innate, she wouldn't be abandoned... Although she was extremely fierce towards Yue Yang

on the outside and had even helplessly suggested joining hands with Tian Fa just now, she felt extremely grieved in her heart. Her actions was equivalent to giving him up to another person on a silver platter!

Princess Qian Qian could imagine how Yue Yang's abilities would greatly improve once again after battling in the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace. At that time, there would be the possibility to explore the God's Ruins or even go to the Heaven Realm. If he went to the Heaven Realm, one hundred years later, would he still call her tiger-girl like today? Forget about Tian Fa, Night Empress and Zhi Zun. There would definitely be a lot of outstanding beauties in the Heaven Realm. It's hard to say that he wouldn't meet some of them. At that time, they would probably took over her place.

Anything could happen in a hundred years time.

Under such a threat, Princess Qian Qian decided to forget everything and simply focus to be an Innate.

If she wanted to be by his side forever, she shouldn't be like those other weak, worldly girls who relied on their men. She must change herself and become stronger, so that she could be an irreplaceable existence to him!

"I will also train!!!" Yue Bing's willpower soared.

"Let's work hard!" Influenced by Yue Bing's zeal and the sudden leap of progress in relationship between her and Yue Yang, Yi Nan

wasn't as against [Body Fusion] as last time.

Luo Hua City Mistress and Xue Wu Xia glanced at each other for a moment. They had decided to train and become an Innate too, without speaking it aloud. Xue Wu Xia thought that she would reach Innate more quickly than Princess Qian Qian, because she had been practicing [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang regularly. She only need to train a little bit more. Luo Hua City Mistress might be slightly slower. Seems like if she trained with all her might, she would also be able to become Innate in at least a month, at most two months time.

The sickly beauty's was already quite powerful, it's just that she was not an expert in battles. She has low attack power.

When she became Yue Yang's wife, all of her blood channels had been linked. However, she didn't mention it so as to not shock the others.

If it was needed, she could become an Innate anytime.

Princess Qian Qian and the others had known of this fact a long time ago.

The most flustered one was Yue Yu. She wasn't comfortable with practicing [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang. Even if they really did practice together, she wouldn't be able to completely accept him like Princess Qian Qian, because her status was Yue Yang's sister. Unless her father was really an impostor, and was actually a demon, it was impossible for her to marry Yue Yang.

Yue Yu didn't want her father to be a demon and also wasn't willing to have a drop of demon blood in her veins, but her status as Yue Yang's sister really made her feel depressed.

The person who always protected her every time, why has it to be Xiao San?

He was her brother...

If he wasn't, it would have been much better. Brothers and sisters have no future together... Yue Yu sighed. She wasn't like Yue Bing, who could proclaim that she would become an Innate so confidently.

Yue Bing was still young and didn't understand much about relationships between men and women. When she grew up a little more, she would naturally understand it better.

"Sister Yu, let's all train to be Innates and go to Heaven Realm together. We can bring the best things from Heaven Realm back and give it to mother as souvenirs." Yue Bing hugged Yue Yu cheerfully, as if they could already go to Heaven Realm tomorrow. To the little missy, the mysterious Heaven Realm that was only mentioned in legends was filled with dreams and hopes. It was inevitable that she looked forward to going there.

"Yes, yes." Yue Yu promised her on the surface, but laughed bitterly in her heart. Become an Innate? Practice [Body Fusion] with Xiao San? Is it even possible?

As for Heaven Realms, would it be so easy to enter? Maybe the Heaven Realms was even harsher and crueler than the Soaring Dragon Continent, where the strong will prey on the weak... Of course, she didn't want to put down her younger sister Yue Bing's spirit, so she could only agree with her.

Yue Yu knew that her Seventh Sister would be more accomplished than her.

She was not only a genius, she was also extremely focused. When she trained, she rapidly improved. Before she understood the relationship between men and women, she would definitely be able to reach higher realms with Third Brother's help.

"If it's possible, we should also ask Bing Yin about this matter. She would definitely have an idea!" The sickly beauty suddenly quipped.

"Eh? Who is Bing Yin?" Yue Yang was bewildered. He never heard of that name before. Could it be Night Empress or Zhi Zun's name?

"Who's calling me?" The Qilin girl suddenly jumped out. As she had looked to the sickly beauty when jumping, she didn't see her front and knocked Yue Yang onto the ground accidentally, unable to stop her feet on time. Whether she did it on purpose or because she was naturally airheaded, no one would ever know.

Chapter 310 – Grimoire Level Up

Upon hearing about Prison Emperor's Divine Palace and Heaven Realm's Gate, the Qilin girl yawned and apathetically said: "Regarding this matter, let's talk about it in the future. I am just a girl and have no interest in fighting and killing. Furthermore, those two girls inside your house had just recently expanded the Phoenix Nirvana Flame Pillar again. I am preparing to temporarily borrow the Nirvana Flame Pillar, bathe in it and sleep for a while. Wait for me to level up to a Golden Qilin and then I'll think about helping you!"

When Yu Yang heard it, he knew that this girl could not be counted on. She and the phoenix sisters were all good and honest Holy Beasts that would not take the initiative to attack at all. Looks like they would only make a move when he was on death's door, he shouldn't even hope for their help at normal times.

The sickly beauty, however, asked on her husband's behalf, "What is the Phoenix Nirvana Flame Pillar? Can you bring Yue Yang inside to have a look?"

The Qilin girl cutely blinked her big eyes, and replied: "That's what I was confused about, why doesn't he live inside...? Ah, my throat is very delicate. I cannot speak too much everyday. Everybody goodnight!" She turned into a rainbow light and floated inside Yue Yang's body. Seeing this, the girls sweated. This Qilin girl, once she has reached the crucial point in this important moment, she would act like this.

There definitely must be a reason as to why she was not willing

to say it.

However, even if that was the case, she did not have to keep using this excuse!

Yue Yang went outside to find the Thief's Guild and sent a message to Phoenix Fairy Beauty. The message was very simple and contained only four words, Prison Emperor's Divine Palace.

However, because the message was being delivered to Tian Fa, the Thief's Guild received no less than one hundred gold coins from Yue Yang. Also, there was no guarantee that they would successfully deliver it. Yue Yang's heart ached for a while, what the hell, killing a Bronze-ranked Level 3 Lightning Leopard and harvesting its intact skin and magic crystal was only worth five gold coins after all.

This message actually required a hundred gold coins, it's simply no different than daylight robbery!

Sending a message was equal to killing twenty Lightning Leopards?

Even [China Mobile](#) was not that sinister!

Yue Yang almost raised his new crescent blade 'Crescent Moon' and cut down the vulgar old robber in front of him.

Returning to the Little Flower Garden, Xue Wuxia proposed a

suggestion to Yue Yang: “Your grimoire hasn’t leveled up and your Inherent Skills haven’t been promoted yet, why not take this opportunity to upgrade them, they should be quite useful for you. After clearing Twelve Zodiac Temples, you must clear the Three World Shrines. Once you clear it, there would be no level restriction on whatever you do in the Tong Tian Tower. Even being a Level 3 [Hero] would not matter now that everybody knows you’re an innate, and raising your level would let you receive the Ancient Code’s Rewards. We should do this, who knows after receiving the rewards, we would acquire the assurance of being able to explore the Prison Emperor’s Divine Prison.”

Her suggestion was very good. It’s just that in the past, Yue Yang was not used to summoning out his grimoire and raise his protective shield in battles. Hence he was unable to level up or upgrade his grimoire.

Xiao Wen Li did not need to be summoned and she could also help to summon the Barbarian Cow Shadow and the Bloody Queen out. As a result, Yue Yang did not have to summon them out and continued to fight like this. No matter if it were big battles or small battles, Yue Yang did not use his grimoire often. It was like this even when he was blitzkrieging through the Twelve Zodiac Temples.

“Then I’ll go and clear the Three World’s Shrine Quest on Tong Tian Tower Level 2!” Yue yang remembered getting a mysterious pearl that he couldn’t identify even with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision after clearing the Twelve Zodiac Temples. It was even more mysterious than the pearl that sealed the Dark Golden Sceptre, it felt like the Black Jade Pendant Necklace that was used to seal Empress Fei Wen Li. It looked normal and ordinary on the outside,

he couldn't see any ripples of energy from it.

However, in the Dream Realm, this mysterious pearl was the only thing that appeared, other than the Black Jade Pendant Necklace.

When the big loli held it in her hands, she had observed it for a while before throwing it back to Yue Yang.

That was the reward for clearing the whole twelve trials of Twelve Zodiac Temples, so it couldn't be a trash item. Especially when it was the only thing that could enter the Dream Realm other than the Black Jade Pendant Necklace, it was definitely a treasure amongst treasures.

The Black Jade Pendant Necklace sealed Empress Fei Wen Li. Even if there was no powerful being sealed in this mysterious pearl, it was definitely still a precious treasure.

It's just that with Yue Yang's current Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he wasn't able to identify the truth behind the pearl.

He had acquired many rewards from the Twelve Zodiac Temples. What about the Three World Shrines?

The Three World Shrines had the same level of difficulty with the Twelve Zodiac Temples... Of course, other than Yue Yang, the super abnormal strong Innate Ranker, there were no other warrior who managed to become Innate when he was still a Level 3 [Hero]!

The entry to Twelve Zodiac Temples and the Three World Shrines, Sky, Earth and Human, were restricted to Level 6 [Elder] below. Other than Yue Yang who could clear the trials so easily, it was nothing short of impossible for other people to clear the Twelve Zodiac Temples and the Three World Shrines when their levels were still below Level 6 [Elder].

It could be said that Yue Yang's bad habits of not summoning his grimoire during battle had led him to this opportunity.

If Yue Yang had summoned his grimoire in every battle, he would have accumulated battle experience points and would probably reach Level 6 Elder very quickly. He wouldn't be able to enter the Twelve Zodiac Temples and the Three World Shrines.

"I will stay behind and train with Sister Yi Nan. Brother, work hard!" Yue Bing knew that if she tagged along, her brother would definitely give all the quest rewards to her.

"Stop talking around the bush, go and return quickly." Princess Qian Qian reached out and bumped Yue Yang's shoulders with her fist.

She looked fierce on the outside, but she was actually nervous in her heart.

If she wanted to become an Innate in a month, she would probably need to be more extreme in practicing [Body Fusion], more than simply holding hands like they did last time, maybe even more than hugging and kissing like Xue Wu Xia did... They

were not yet married, and that brat was also not that passionate in pursuing her. Yet they have to lie together naked, and she had to allow him to see all the secrets of her body. It was really too demeaning... But there was no other way. If she didn't do this, how could she become an Innate in a month? She could accept it if it was just lying together naked, but what if that brat wasn't able to restrain his passions and ate her up? She would really be regretful at that time...

Could it be that when her old man come back from the Eastern Goblin Tribe, she would have to say, "Congratulations, you have a new son-on-law. It's your Brother Hai's grandson. If you don't mind hearing another good news, I would also like to tell you that you will have a grandchild to hold very soon."

Looks like her old man would be so angry that he fell from his throne!

No matter how angry her father was, it would pass.

At the most, she would be scolded for a while.

However, the real problem was that she was not prepared yet. Could it be that she would end up like Sister Wu Hen? Since the rice has turned into porridge, she ended up servicing that brat every night, being played with from night till dawn. Princess Qian Qian was restless, but she obviously didn't talk about her worries to the others. Moreover, they wouldn't be able to comfort her.

Forget about Wuxia, she would probably dismiss her worries

nonchalantly.

Sister Luo Hua had the same worries as her, as for Yue Yu, she looks like she was even more worried about it than her!

Seeing Yue Yang's retreating figure, Princess Qian Qian sighed out inexplicably... Seems like her body would be given to that brat at a bargain price. How could this brat be so lucky? All of her sisters were extremely proud and arrogant, they wouldn't fall easily for guys no matter how excellent they were. In the end, none of them could escape from that brat's clutches. Could this be heaven's will?

The sickly beauty seemed to be able to read Princess Qian Qian's worries. She smiled gently.

She wasn't pale anymore, the rosy red colour was obvious on her snow-white skin. Her eyes that were as clear as spring water sparkled with a wise wife's gentleness, "Qian Qian, you think too much. Actually, that thing is not very scary. Moreover, Yue Yang is also not a big tiger that will eat people!"

Princess Qian Qian was slightly scared when she heard that.

She thought that Wu Hen was quite right. Even her, who had such a fragile body could take it. The others should have no problem too.

Moreover, they would usually be able to hear that naughty brat

and her exercising for the whole night incessantly. But she had always felt alright the next day, she was even more spirited, as if her face was glowing. Could it be that girls were able to accommodate boys naturally? Does it really feel good doing that thing? From Sister Wu Hen's moans at night, seems like even her soul has melted... Princess Qian Qian suddenly thought about Yue Yang's body, remembering that she had seen his 'thing' for a few times before. She blushed immediately as her heart started to hammer in her chest. It's definitely impossible! His 'thing' was so huge, if he forced his way in into such a delicate place, wouldn't it be extremely painful?

Moreover, before her old man agreed to betroth her to him, she would definitely not meet him with a baby in her womb. She could be shameless, but he was an Emperor, so she need to maintain her reputation!

What kind of princess would have a child out of wedlock?

At this time, Yue Yang didn't know what Princess Qian Qian was thinking of, he was busy running to the Tong Tian Tower.

His journey was smooth sailing. He teleported to Tong Tian Tower, then teleported to the Second Floor, making his way to the Three Worlds Shrine, which was located in the 'Great Void Realm'.

Similarly located in the Star Domain like the Twelve Zodiac Temples, there was a restriction imposed by the Ancient Code on the 'Great Void Realm'. Warriors were not able to use combat skills, they could only fight with their beasts. Of course, warriors who used [Beast Fusion] and [Beast Strengthening] were

exceptions...

Warriors with [Beast Strengthening] seemed to hold an advantage on the outside, but due to the limitations of the Ancient Code, they would be disadvantaged in the end. This was because as they fought with their own bodies, the moment they encountered danger, there's a high possibility that they would immediately die. Element-type and fighting-type beasts could still run away. As for special-type beasts, they had been down-graded as recreation pets, they had been completely abandoned by normal warriors.

Unless someone could get hold of Yue Yang's super abnormal special-type Guardian Beast!

"Are you sure you want to challenge the Three Worlds Shrine?" The Gold-armoured Guard Captain who watched over the trial was not the same person as the guard from the Twelve Zodiac Temples. He didn't recognize Yue Yang at all, and Yue Yang's appearance right now was that of a little thief.

"Yes." Yue Yang was too lazy to explain, he paid the entrance fee straight away.

"May the odds be in your favour." The Gold-armoured Guard Captain received not less than 1000 challengers every year. Every single one of them came filled with confidence, but left with their heads hung on their shoulders.

He thought that this Level 3 [Hero] little thief wouldn't even last ten minutes. He would probably be scrambling out as he escaped,

or die inside, unable to leave for eternity.

Yue Yang had learnt his lesson this time. He didn't use the Crystal Card that attracted everyone's attentions. He had especially used his identity as Yue Yang and created a Bronze Card, accompanied by the old fox. The old fox helped to conceal his identity and became his Introducer. Although normal warriors would only be able to make one card in his life, Yue Yang had several supporters behind him, so he could make another card secretly and became an exception.

The old fox thought that Yue Yang would make a fake Bronze Card that couldn't be used for anything. Unexpectedly, he found out later on that the card was actually recognized by the Ancient Code.

At that time, he was so shocked that his jaws dropped... In the end, he decided that Yue Yang himself was an extremely abnormal existence, so he shouldn't be surprised by him anymore!

Yue Yang entered the "Human Shrine".

(Shiro: the Three Worlds Shrine consisted of three shrines, Human Shrine, Sky Shrine, Earth Shrine)

This was the first out of the Three Worlds Shrines, like the first Aries temple of the Twelve Zodiac Temples.

However, this Human Shrine, regardless of the place, building, monster defenders or restrictions, was ten times more than the Aries Temple.

There were 500 Bronze-ranked Level 5 Puppet Soldiers, 50 Bronze-ranked Level 6 Puppet Commanders, 5 Bronze-ranked Level 7 Puppet Generals, and 1 Bronze-ranked Level 8 Puppet King. If the challenger wasn't Yue Yang and was another warrior instead, who could only be Level 5 [Grandmaster] at the most, he would probably started crying in shock the moment he saw the army of humanoid puppets.

What could a normal Level 5 [Grandmaster] have? It would already be great if he possessed a Bronze-ranked Level 5 beast.

Fighting against 500 enemies alone?

Furthermore, there were 50 Puppet Commanders, 5 Puppet Generals and 1 Puppet King to boot. This was definitely not something an ordinary warrior could challenge.

If it were only a few hundreds humanoid puppets, it was still fine.

In the sky, there were even Fire Ravens who could shoot long-range attacks. Flying-type beasts really caused despair. There were a few hundreds of Bronze-ranked Level 5 Fire Ravens in the sky.

Along the meandering river in front, there were also Wave Giant who could shoot long-range attacks too, freezing water into shards of icicles.

Similarly, they were Bronze-ranked Level 5 beasts.

“Who the heck can clear this Three Worlds Shrines below Level 6? What a crazy trial!” Yue Yang knew that he was an exception. No one fought without summoning their grimoires like him. He had Xiao Wen Li, Phantom Shadow, Hui Tai Lang, Innate Invisible Sword Qi, Nirvana Flame, World Exterminating Wheel and the others... He didn't need to summon his grimoire's protective shield to defend himself. Other people would definitely be unable to do it.

Without his abilities, Level 5 Grandmasters who tried to clear this trial was equivalent to seeking death!

There was no protected time in the Human Shrine. The enemies immediately charged towards Yue Yang.

Battle starts.

This time, Yue Yang changed his approach, summoning his Advanced Silver Grimoire out.

Xiao Wen Li floated out and summoned the Stone Element Medusa and Storm Mermaid to kill the Wave Giants in the water.

The Bloody Queen and Reaper Mantis killed the Fire Ravens in the sky, while the Barbarian Cow Shadow and Thorny Flower Demoness fought against the humanoid puppets on land. Yue Yang sat relaxedly inside his protective shield, leisurely biting his apple as he watched Xiao Wen Li fight against the gigantic Puppet King.

The battle ended in ten minutes...

Ah Man who was strengthened with two Giant Phantom Shadows smashed the Puppet Soldiers effortlessly to pieces like they were rice crackers. Quantity was not a problem for her, because the difference between their level, strength and wisdom allowed her to massacre the whole Puppet Army easily. Thorny Flower Demoness also leisurely smashed the 5 Puppet Generals, she had even collected the mechanical puppet cores and brought it to Yue Yang. The Fire Ravens in the sky were scrambling in all direction, trying to escape. However, no matter how fast they flew, they were unable to avoid the Reaper Mantis' sickles, let alone the Bloody Queen who was famous for her speed.

With a scream of [Banshee Scream], several Fire Ravens fell to the ground.

Her Gold Dragon Slaying Dagger was an even sharper killing machine!

The Stone Element Medusa and the Storm Mermaid were gods inside water. Forget about them, even the Gold Tiger Shark that the Stone Element Medusa summoned was an unstoppable force in the water.

This really wasn't because the monster defenders of the Human Shrine wasn't strong enough. It's just that Yue Yang's beasts were simply too abnormal.

When Xiao Wen Li freeze the Puppet King with her Dual Icicle Blades and extract its puppet core, Yue Yang's grimoire finally levelled up.

A golden-coloured light pillar shone upon the Gold Grimoire as a unique circular ring of light wrapped itself around the Grimoire. The ring of light seemed to look like a whole new domain, and also like a line of Runes. With the grimoire in the centre, the ring of light spreads out ten metres wide.

Yue Yang stared blankly for a while when he saw this. He never saw a ring of light on anyone's grimoire before. Wasn't his grimoire's ring of light acting too cocky and eye-catching?

What's the use of the ring of light anyway?

He didn't know it now, maybe there would be more information in the grimoire.

When he looked at his grimoire, Yue Yang jumped in shock. There wasn't much difference with regards to his summoning grimoire's appearance when it was Advanced Silver-ranked before, it was only covered with several Runic Circles. Right now, even a blind person could see that Yue Yang's summoning grimoire was a special grimoire... First of all, it was exceptionally big. Other people wouldn't even have a Platinum Grimoire that was as big as half of Yue Yang's Gold Grimoire. It was more than two metres long and one metre wide. As for the thickness, Yue Yang could see clearly, without even needing to count, that it had more than 30 pages.

When his Bronze Grimoire ranked up to Silver Grimoire, he would only get one page addition every sub-rank up from Beginner to Intermediate, Intermediate to Advanced etc.

Right now, the page additions soared to several dozen pages!

Countless Runic Circles appeared on the surface of the grimoire, assembling into arrays continuously, as if they were trying to combine into a whole new array. But Yue Yang couldn't understand it at all.

The amount of knowledge in Ancient Runes that he had was completely not enough.

After waiting for a long time, the brilliant golden pillar of light finally dissipated. However, the ring of light still remained, there were even a few Heaven Runes flickering on the ring of light faintly. They looked extremely pure and holy, wonderful and marvellous.

Yue Yang could recognize some of the Heaven Runes. They represented Wind, Fire, Water, Earth, these four attributes, respectively.

What on earth does this mean?

Opening his new Gold Grimoire to its first page, Yue Yang was immediately dumbstruck...

Chapter 311 – Level Up, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen!

The first page of the Gold Grimoire had changed a lot.

Mysterious-looking Runes had arranged themselves together to form a profound-looking pattern, faintly emitting a mystical kind of energy. The original [Divine Vision] and [Counterfeit] illustration had also changed. There was an additional star-lit background on the [Counterfeit] illustration, and the silhouette in the illustration seemed to be moving forward very slowly. However, when Yue Yang tried to focus on it again, it seemed to not be moving at all. As for the [Divine Vision], the background became darker while the eyes of the silhouette became even brighter, shining like a star. It gave Yue Yang the feeling of looking into a mirror.

Yue Yang saw that his Gemini Inherent Skill had levelled up to Level 4.

The [Spiritual Telepathy] and [Vision Exchange]'s area of effect had expanded, and Yue Yang could faintly feel a new kind of ability that he had not yet identified, but it was not recorded in the grimoire at all.

The thing that surprised Yue Yang was that there was actually another new Guardian Beast below the special-type Phantom Shadow.

Other warriors would only have one Guardian Beast normally.

But Yue Yang had actually acquired 2.

[World]: Special-type, Platinum-ranked Level 1. Formless body, has an area of domain. Guardian Beast, eternally on the state of summoned. Abilities: [Chaotic Beginning] and [Domain Elements].

“Could it be that this ring of light is actually a beast? What the heck?” Yue Yang knew that he had received plenty of rewards in this level up, but he never thought that he would receive so much. Although this ‘World’ has nothing to do with Soaring Dragon Continent or whatsoever and that it was only a special-type beast, one could see how strong it was just by hearing its name.

How could he raise this ‘World’?

It wasn’t an animal or plant, he couldn’t feed it nor teach it.

Moreover, this ‘World’ wasn’t even summoned by Yue Yang, it would always be on the state of summoned. As long as he summoned his grimoire, it would also be summoned. It was completely out of Yue Yang’s control, and it would also not listen to Yue Yang’s wishes.

Just as Yue Yang was thinking about what to do, half of the magic crystals that the Thorny Flower Demoness brought back to him suddenly disappeared.

When he observed carefully, he realized that the ‘World’ which

has an area of effect was absorbing the magic crystals continuously, with an extremely fast speed.

When Yue Yang could finally react, he could only manage to save a few Puppet Generals' magic crystals and the Puppet King's magic crystal. Over hundreds of the magic crystals from the Puppet Soldiers, Fire Ravens and Wave Giants were all absorbed by this 'World'. They quickly shrunk in size and finally turned into ashes, disappearing into nothingness. The Heaven Runes that represented Fire and Water on Yue Yang's grimoire suddenly shined brightly, as if they just acquired an enormous energy... The grimoire flashed with a golden light as 'World', the special-type beast, suddenly levelled up to Platinum-ranked Level 2.

The ring of light, 'World' expanded outwards a little bit more, and there was an additional 'Metal' Rune amongst the four Heaven Runes that were revolving around it.

Seems like after absorbing 500 Puppet Soldiers magic crystals, it had obtained the 'Metal' attribute. It's just that Yue Yang felt that the 'Metal' Heaven Rune was the weakest amongst the Heaven Runes, because it was glowing with the dimmest light.

The Bloody Queen Red shot down like an arrow to the ground. The moment she entered the area of effect of the 'World', she immediately disappeared.

Yue Yang jumped in shock.

This 'World'... Don't tell him, had it also absorbed the Bloody

Queen?

After a moment, the Bloody Queen Red suddenly flew out again, and excitedly told Yue Yang, “Beautiful! It’s a new, a new world... This is a door, a door that connects to the world inside.” After the Bloody Queen’s excited explanation, although Yue Yang had not fully understood, he finally understood some things. Inside this Gold Grimoire, a new world had been created. It was very beautiful inside, suitable for the Bloody Queen and the others to live in. As for the world inside the Divine Grimoire, that was too high-levelled, the Bloody Queen and the others couldn’t enter and exit it as and when they pleased. They could only enter or exit with Xiao Wen Li’s help.

Furthermore, due to her lack of power, the Bloody Queen felt really inferior living inside such a high-levelled place. She would rather move back inside the Gold Grimoire.

A spark of golden light flashed as the Gold Grimoire turned its pages on its own.

The Bloody Queen Red had indeed moved back into the gold Grimoire.

The Reaper Mantis also looked very happy. It didn’t have the qualifications to enter the world inside the Divine Grimoire. Right now, inside the Gold Grimoire, it was extremely satisfied. As for the Thorny Flower Demoness, she also moved back inside. Only Xiao Wen Li didn’t do anything. Seems like it was already contented living inside the world in the Divine Grimoire and was already used to it, so she didn’t have any plans of moving into the

new world.

“Why can’t I go inside?” Yue Yang was quite speechless. He was the owner yet he couldn’t enter the world inside the grimoire. Isn’t he pitiful?

Forget about the Divine Grimoire, he couldn’t even open it yet.

But he could open his Gold Grimoire!

When Yue Yang was mumbling his complaints aloud, saying that he also wanted to enter into the new world inside his grimoire, he suddenly felt that the ring of light, ‘World’ resisting his will, as if it was trying to stop its master from entering.

Could it be that he needed to ask for its permission to enter?

This ring of light has awareness on its own?

Yue Yang couldn’t understand it at all.

“Advanced. It’s fine if you level it up to Advance-ranked, the world inside is still in construction, it’s very chaotic inside.” The Bloody Queen Red explained that the grimoire world was not suitable for Yue Yang to dwell in currently.

“Unn!” Xiao Wen Li also agreed and nodded.

After the explanation, Yue Yang finally understood that the world inside was still not perfect yet. Maybe there was no air or the air was extremely thin, or maybe the world was still a mess. That was the reason why his entry was rejected by the 'World'. This 'World' was like the door leading to the world inside the Gold Grimoire, responsible for the entry and exit of the residents inside the world... It didn't have any awareness, but its existence was like some kind of law, anyone who did not qualify would not be able to enter. Even its master was not an exception.

He just need to level up the Gold Grimoire to Advanced-ranked?

Yue Yang was overjoyed when he heard it.

He had gotten a new beast, levelled up his old skills and even acquired a new world that he could move in into in a while.

If people could live inside the Gold Grimoire World, he could invite the girls in in the future. This way, he wouldn't need to separate from them, he could return anytime and stay with them. He could also ask for their opinions if he encountered problems anytime, unlike their current separated state now.

Most importantly, they would be very safe inside the Gold Grimoire World.

As long as he was alive, they would be safe.

Yue Yang was only puzzled with one thing... Right now, the

‘World’ outside the grimoire was his beast, could it be that the world inside the Gold Grimoire was his beast too? Are they one body or separate? Could the ‘World’ outside be a representation of the world inside? Yue Yang really couldn’t understand, and he was too lazy to think too much into it. He had lots of things that he couldn’t understand anyway.

He saw that his level had also change.

Level 4 [Champion]: Surpassing [Hero], you have taken the next step to the path of the strong. However, you shouldn’t be too conceited, because you have only taken the first step.

This level description was no different than a normal Level 4 [Champion]’s. The only different thing was that Yue Yang had the word ‘Innate’ behind his Level 4 [Champion] title, written in dark golden words.

Compared to last time, the dark golden ‘Innate’ word seemed to be slightly different.

The word was the same, the only different thing was the composition of the Heaven Rune inside the word. The Heaven Rune inside move and formed endless arrangements. However, the appearance of the word ‘Innate’ was still the same.

If one did not look closely, they would only think that the word was merely flickering in dark golden light.

In front of the Human Shrine Teleportation Gate, there was a Giant King Statue.

This Giant King Statue was extremely huge and powerful. It wore a crown on its head and held a sword in one hand. His other hand stretched out, as if he was passing a judgement spiritedly.

Yue Yang took out his Crystal Card and touched it to the Giant King Statue's hands... Yue Yang had only wanted to get the reward for clearing the trial. Unexpectedly, the moment he brushed it to the statue, the whole Giant King Statue suddenly shattered into pieces of rubbles. Yue Yang had to search through the rubbles for a long time before he finally found a black-coloured pearl. Using his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he almost fainted.

Human King's Pearl (Fake): The user would be able to use the Human King's power for ten seconds upon use. Limited to one time use only.

He really wanted to puke blood. Not only was it a consumable item, it was described as 'fake' too.

He had worked hard passing the trial, but the only thing he got was actually a fake consumable item. Yue Yang was really speechless.

Fortunately he had received a nice reward levelling up, or else he would be really depressed. If it were another person who cleared the trial after narrowly escaping death, it would be strange if they didn't cry out loud if the reward for clearing the trial was only a

fake Human King's Pearl... No wonder there were not many challengers of the Three Worlds Shrines. If the reward was so lacking, only masochists would come to challenge this trial!

Had Yue Yang known earlier, he wouldn't have come for sure!

Of course, acquiring the fake Human King's Pearl was not his goal. His main motive was to level up his grimoire and obtain the rewards from the Ancient Code.

As long as he could level up his Gold Grimoire to advanced, he could enter into the new world...

Yue Yang tossed the fake 'Human King's Pearl' up and down as he teleported to the Earth Shrine.

He initially thought that the Human Shrine's Trial was already very abnormal. However, compared to the Earth Shrine, it was really not worth mentioning.

In front of Yue Yang, there were 300 Storm Demon Wolf, 300 Lightning Leopard and 300 Flaming Lion charging straight towards him. They had different sizes and abilities, but they were all Silver-ranked Level 5.

There were even 30 Silver-ranked Level 8 Wolf Kings and 30 Silver-ranked Level 8 Grand Lions.

In the sky, Giant Eagles were circling him. At a far away lake,

Lake Crocodiles floated onto the surface... They were all Silver-ranked Level 5... The Earth Shrine's monsters were not only higher-levelled than the Human Shrine, they were also higher in numbers. Other than Yue Yang, no other warriors under Level 6 [Elders] could possibly handle this kind of situation. Other than being annihilated, there were no other kind of possibility.

Different from Human Shrine, all warriors, regardless of whether they want to escape or had cleared the trial, everyone had to swim underwater the lake to exit the Shrine.

With a thousand over monsters attacking him, even if a warrior managed to reach the lake, would he be able to avoid the Lake Crocodiles attack?

Furthermore, the Giant Eagles in the sky would swoop down for attack at any given moment... Yue Yang cursed in his heart, "Who the heck created such a crazy quest? Forget about the fact that it has such a high difficulty and that the BOSS is super strong, even the reward is a cheapskate, fake Human King Pearl! I demand to lodge a complaint!"

Even with Xiao Wen Li's and the others' help, it was difficult for him to clear the stage.

The monsters weren't puppets.

Puppets had no intelligence. Even if they had good defense, their agility, technical ability and strength was nowhere near a beast's.

Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man fought until her body was covered in blood. The Reaper Mantis was so tired that its sickle were trembling. The Bloody Queen Red panted in exhaustion. Only the super strong Xiao Wen Li remained calm. The Gold Tiger Shark was the first one to get injured. It had courageously killed dozens of Lake Crocodiles, but there were just too many of them. It was almost ganged killed, fortunately its master, the Stone Element Medusa, rescued it in time.

The Storm Mermaid summoned a Storm and flooded the whole of Earth Shrine.

The Thunder Naga summoned lightning and deep fried the Wolf Kings and Grand Lions, defeating the group of wolves and lions.

With the addition of Giant Phantom Shadows, Ah Man trampled through the knee-high waters and massacred the group of wolves and lions that had lost their abilities to run away. The blood from the massacre dyed the flood water in red.

When Ah Man killed the last Storm Demon Wolf with her hands and returned to Yue Yang, Yue Yang's Gold Grimoire levelled up.

From Beginner-ranked Gold Grimoire, it had levelled up to Intermediate-ranked.

The greatest profit he gained, however, was not the level up of his grimoire, but... Yue Yang had finally realized his lifelong wish. After going through countless battles and absorbing countless enemies, the Thorny Flower Demoness finally levelled up and

evolved into the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen that Yue Yang had longed for! Looking at her body that was enveloped in green light rising up to the sky, Yue Yang, who had been raising it single-handedly all this while felt an indescribable sense of accomplishment.

After a year of cultivation, he finally succeeded!

Chapter 312 – We'll Be Together Forever!

A lush green light soared towards the sky.

Vaguely, there were even rainbows in the corners as countless Thorny Flowers sprung up from the ground, raising their heads towards the Thorny Flower Demoness who was floating in the sky. The whole air was filled with an indescribable fragrance that was extremely refreshing, as if one would be immediately purified when one breathed it in.

Flower petals fluttered in the air circling the Thorny Flower Demoness, as if they were alive.

The rainbow on top of the green pillar of light hung down from the sky, forming a rainbow bridge.

There were also firefly-like lights floating all around, like drops of stars.

When the evolution reached the peak and the Thorny Flower floated down, a white light flashed out, illuminating the whole of Earth Shrine, making it looked like daytime.

After the burst of white light dissipated, darkness returned.

An even more potent flower fragrance burst forth, and there seemed to be a heavenly music that resounded for a very long time. The voice resonated deep within Yue Yang's heart.

Yue Yang felt a hot, cosy, fragrant and soft female body in his arms. The skin that he felt with his touch was extremely smooth and flawless like jade, it was an indescribably wonderful feeling. On his face, warm lips as tender as flower petals kissed his cheeks at the same moment he was hugged.

This smooth and fragrant body felt familiar yet unfamiliar to Yue Yang.

Was it Thorny Flower Demoness? No, it should be the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen that had already evolved...

When Yue Yang recovered his sight from the dazzling white light, he saw an extremely alluring, flawless female body. It was different from the other female bodies that he had seen before, but each had their own good points.

‘Snow-white, tender and flawless skin’ could not even begin to describe the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen’s beautiful skin.

As for her looks, Yue Yang felt that this Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen looked a little like Xue Wu Xia, Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Yu and Princess Qian Qian. She looked different from all of them, but her face was a mixture of their best features, resulting in her unique, unrivalled beautiful appearance. That face was so beautiful that Yue Yang felt short of breath, so beautiful that Yue Yang wanted to sigh. Lush, light green hair flowed from her head, decorated with a flower crown made of purple and green coloured vines, emerald green leaves and pink flower buds.

The flower crown glowed with a golden light, as if it was Holy Mother Mary's halo. However, the golden light was not circle-shaped, it simply radiated in all direction.

Yue Yang dare say that this royal crown was the most beautiful, most natural and simplest one that he had ever seen.

Only her, the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, could have such a fresh-looking flower crown.

Below the beautiful flower crown, there was a heart-shaped, lovable face that was filled with smiles. Her face was definitely capable of bringing spring time to everyone. However, her sapphire-like eyes only gazed into Yue Yang's eyes alone.

Her smile was only directed to him alone.

"I, I have now become smarter..." The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen spoke with fluent human language, her voice pleasant to the ear.

"Have you evolved into Holy Beast?" Yue Yang secretly gulped down his saliva. This Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen wasn't wearing anything from head to toe, her body was simply too alluring. If it wasn't for the fact that Xiao Wen Li, Red and Ah Man looking at them, he would probably be unable to resist the temptation of pushing the Thorny Flower Queen down. Her perfect, beautiful swan-like neck and smooth and round shoulders made her look weak and delicate, making Yue Yang felt an impulse

of pulling her into his embrace, wanting to protect and dote on her all his life. However, her womanly peaks below her shoulders did not look weak and delicate at all. The mountains rose up high. When Yue Yang saw her snowy mounds and cherry-red fruits, he felt like he was about to have a nosebleed from excitement.

Her full, perfect mounds give shape to her deep cleavage.

As she floated in front of Yue Yang, those bouncy, plump mounds also bobbed up and down.

This, this, this was definitely the legendary ‘Bouncing Boobs’...! Yue Yang had watched countless romance movies from a certain island and had observed countless women, hence he had some kind of immunity towards girls.

(Shiro: for some reason, I got ‘milk shake’ when I google translate the raws for bouncing boobs (乳颤))

However, those women were nothing compared to the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen!

Her beautiful small stomach and slender waistline developed into a shapely navel. The small patch of green grass below her abdomen semi-covered the secret garden in between her thighs that was soft and tender like pink flower petals. As the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was floating right in front of Yue Yang, the sharp-eyed, perverted guy from another world had stolen a glance at it carelessly, memorizing the beautiful view and engraving it into his heart.

She was too perfect!

On the surface, of course Yue Yang pretended to be a good guy.

The current Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen wasn't like the 15-16 year old young little girl last time; The current her had the body of an 18-19 years old young adult. She was no longer a flower bud, her crown had bloomed. She was a girl waiting for her flower to be plucked.

Whatever things that girls needed to develop, she had developed them.

And they were even more perfect, more enticing than most girls in the world...

"I'm currently a Bronze-ranked Level 1 Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. However, in another perspective, I am a Rank 1 Holy Beast, or a 'One-starred' Holy Beast. I am different from the Bloody Queen, older sister Red. If older sister Ah Man had a wisdom revelation too, she would also become like me." Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen suddenly floated into Yue Yang's arms, her unrivalled body hugging Yue Yang tightly, tears brimming in her eyes as she choked with emotion, "My past memories had disappeared, but I will never forget how you have raised me up so sincerely... You are like a sun that gives me strength... I can't feel the love you have showered me last time, but right now, I can feel an unrivalled warmth from you!"

"Cough cough, I think you should first wear some clothes..." Yue

Yang could feel a piercing stare of jealousy from the Bloody Queen. Xiao Wen Li was completely jealous, she immediately patted the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen's back and took out one of Yue Bing's clothes.

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen's body flickered in a rainbow light.

Large flower petals bloomed at her back and front, softly wrapping her chest and winding around her shoulders. The flower petals also wrapped her secret place and covered her whole body with an unmatched, beautiful flower robe, that only added to her charm and sex appeal. At her back, two rainbow-coloured light spread out and faintly unveiled a 2-metre long wings, that looked similar to the Bloody Queen Red's. They flapped slightly, making the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen looked like a fairy descending on earth.

She turned in a circle, sweetly smiling towards the starstruck Yue Yang, "It's a pity that I am still Bronze-ranked Level 1 right now, so I can't maintain my full grown appearance for long..."

As she finished her words, her body was enveloped in green light and slowly shrunk.

In the end, she actually turned into a little loli of about ten years old. Her appearance didn't change, but she regained the cuteness of a young, unripe little girl.

The cute little loli received the clothes from Yue Yang's hands

and wore Yue Bing's clothes over her body. The clothes, which was a few sizes bigger made her look very cute. Yue Yang couldn't help but to reach out his hands and pinched her cheeks.

After the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen finished wearing her clothes, she suddenly bowed an Innate Bow respectfully towards Xiao Wen Li, as if she wanted to show her respect to Xiao Wen Li.

Xiao Wen Li bowed back.

Although Xiao Wen Li was still young, be it in Yue Yang's heart or the rest of the beasts', she was definitely the oldest/big boss!

(Shiro: 老大 can mean big boss or oldest)

When the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen bowed, the Bloody Queen Red and Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man didn't return the bow nonchalantly like Xiao Wen Li did, they bowed quite seriously to show their mutual respect. Yue Yang didn't understand the meaning behind the bows, but he understood that this was perhaps a designated bow for Holy Beasts or Innates. He remembered that Elder Nan Gong had bowed to him this way before.

“Please give me a drop of blood. In my hibernating state, I would like to imprint your blood into my life. I want to be like older sister Red, becoming your Guardian beast. We will forever be together...” The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen spoke out as she lightly bit at Yue Yang's finger and pricked a drop of blood, gently sucking it in.

Her body glowed with a golden light.

After which, she floated into the grimoire and continued to hibernate and evolve in the new world.

Yue Yang was slightly surprised. He turned around and asked Xiao Wen Li, “Can Guardian Beasts make a contract on its own?”

Xiao Wen Li immediately shook her head, indicating no.

The Bloody Queen Red muttered to herself a little as she said uncertainly, “Maybe your blood is an exception, that’s why it’s possible! There’s an imprint of your blood on my soul. Maybe it’s possible to complete ‘Soul Blood Contract’ with your blood. In legends, that’s only something that gods can do...”

(Shiro: Changing Spirit Blood Contract to Soul Blood Contract. Mentioned in chapter 26 and 196)

Yue Yang had heard Empress Fei Wen Li said Soul Blood Contract before. He had also learnt from the tragic guy’s mom’s diary and knowledge inheritance that Soul Blood Contract is the fifth kind of evolution path that a beast could take.

He knew that his blood was special, maybe because he was a guy from another world or because he had practiced Innate Invisible Sword Qi. Or maybe the Old Daoist Priest had given him this ability when he kicked him here. Or maybe because he was the descendant of the Han Chinese people! However, Yue Yang decided

not to think about the reasons right now. He only wanted to know one thing. Gods, do they truly exist?

The Tong Tian Tower, was it built by a god?

Where do gods live? In the Heaven Realm?

Or in a much higher realm?

Yue Yang asked Xiao Wen Li, “Do god exist?”

Xiao Wen Li shook her head. Yue Yang didn’t know if she meant that she didn’t know the answer or that god didn’t exist.

She suddenly flashed a smile towards Yue Yang.

Although she didn’t speak, she was connected to Yue Yang in her heart. Yue Yang understood what she meant. She was saying that no matter what, even if they were about to fight against gods, she would definitely accompany him in battle forever.

Feeling touched, Yue Yang carried Xiao Wen Li and hugged her in his arms, giving her a big peck on her cheeks.

Red and Ah Man also approached Yue Yang and hugged him.

Their expression were both gentle and reliant... Ah Man only

needed a little more to unlock Holy Beast's wisdom revelation. Although she had high intelligence, her emotional capacity was still low. She wouldn't get jealous nor become resentful. She only followed the Bloody Queen Red and Xiao Wen Li getting intimate with their master. Compared to Bloody Queen Red, she was a little more clumsy like a dull girl who didn't know anything. However, compared to the Reaper Mantis, Ah Man's intelligence was much higher.

The Bloody Queen Red was completely different.

She had already unlocked the Holy Beast's wisdom revelation.

She was even smarter than the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen who had unlocked the Holy Beast's wisdom revelation just now. She was more aware of the relationship between man and woman.

She had watched the intimate interactions between Yue Yang and the sickly beauty, and how he lived with the rest of the girls.

Slowly, with her high intelligence, she understood quite a lot of emotions, and had evolved more and more like a human.

Maybe she would never become a human girl in her life, but close enough, in terms of body, thoughts and emotions. When Yue Yang kissed Xiao Wen Li, she had also secretly quickly kissed Yue Yang's cheek, her face blushing furiously. The feeling of like in her heart had slowly turned into love without her even noticing.

She didn't speak out her inner thoughts like the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, but she also thought the same as her. She wanted to be together with him forever, no matter if it was during battles or normal lives.

Beasts would never be able to turn into human beings.

However, beasts could evolve endlessly to become like human beings... with the premise of the beast's master supporting them and giving them the opportunity to evolve.

"Let's continue to challenge the next Shrine!" Waking up from his happy bubble, Yue Yang realized that all of the magic crystals had been absorbed by the 'World'. He couldn't help but sweat in speechlessness. There were over a thousand magic crystals, and they were gone just like that. The 'World' which had absorbed one thousand magic crystals levelled up to Platinum-ranked Level 3. Its ring of light had also expanded more than half a metre outwards. At the same time, the Heaven Runes revolving around it had also shone even more brightly and radiantly... It's just that it looks like it would be more difficult to evolve it to its ultimate form than fill the ocean with magic crystals...

"Unn, unn!" Xiao Wen Li's face became rosy red after being kissed by Yue Yang. It seemed like the little loli had sort of understood being shy... However, she still obediently listened to Yue Yang's words.

Chapter 313 – Avians? Demons? Kill Them All!

After clearing the Earth Shrine, Yue Yang had acquired a ‘Ground Breaking Pearl’. However, it was still a fake imitation.

Ground Breaking Pearl (Fake): The holder can cause a powerful earthquake within the range of a hundred meters and destroy all constructions on the surface. Limited to one time use only.

After reading it Yue Yang became speechless.

After killing no less than a thousand strong beasts, Yue Yang had only received a piece of ‘rip-off’ Ground Breaking Pearl. Who set up these damned rewards? Even if it was fake, it was fine, however it could only be used once. What the hell is this, such a pain in the ass! If there was a phone, Yue Yang would definitely file a complaint..... Yue Yang reckoned that once he reaches the Sky Shrine, the clearing reward was going to be something like a fake ‘Sky Splitting Pearl’. These Three World Shrines were not only unspeakably hard to challenge, their rewards were also too little. Compared to the Twelve Zodiac Temples, this was simply a penny-pinching challenge.

When Yue Yang was teleported to the third trial, the ‘Sky Shrine’, he almost fell down head first.

The Sky Shrine was not like the Earth Shrine and the Human Shrine that had three kinds of beasts, sky, earth and water.

In there were only two kinds.

There were only beasts from the sky and from the Demon Abyss.

The landscape was the same as the Demon Abyss, filled with swamps and blood pools. Within the blood pools, Demonic Swamp Dragons were roaming about. Their forms were similar to python's, their outward appearance were extremely similar to Nine-Headed Hydras without limbs. They had fins on their backs and were extremely good at swimming. They did not have claws, they have thin bodies and a big head with green eyes. Their bloodied mouths were like snake's. Looking onwards, there were approximately thirty of them, and not a single one was not Gold-ranked Level 5.

Withered and fallen Corrupted Wyverns were occupying the strange rock protruding in the middle of the Demon Abyss blood pool. Their bodies were covered in black miasma, and there were twenty of them. Similarly they were also Gold-ranked Level 5.

On the far end of the blood pool, there were also huge and tall demons. Their height were approximately five meters, and they were carrying a blood scythe in their hands.

They were similar to demon kings, but they were not the same.

They were also Gold-ranked Level 5 and there were six of them.

Among them, a Demon Chief seems to have unlocked its wisdom and had reached Gold-ranked Level 6.

All these demons were only from the Demon Abyss-like ground. In the sky above, a different sight could be seen. The sky was filled with white clouds and brilliant rays of light, but behind the clouds, winged Avians wearing white gowns and carrying a set of bow and arrows, scepters or swords on their hands hovered back and forth.

Commanding them was a white gowned Avian carrying a silver harp. When it played the harp, a beautiful tinkling sound was heard, it was as if there were people singing in the background. However, Yue Yang could not understand what he was hearing.

Besides having wings on their backs, these Avians' faces were no different from humans.

The only different thing was that all of them wore a green laurel wreath on their heads as ornaments... Towards their attire, Yue Yang did not dare to comment. Seeing these white gowned Avians wearing green hats, wearing them very professionally and wearing them very happily, Yue Yang felt cold sweat trickling behind his back. What the hell is going on here? Avians and demons were placed together, why are they not fighting each other?

(Shiro: In China, if a man “wore a green hat” means his wife is cheating on them. This phrase is derived from a customary law during the 13th to 18th century that required husbands with prostitutes as wives to wear a green hat)

Just as Yue Yang became dumbstruck and responseless, the

Demon Chief suddenly came over.

He spoke some gibberish.

Yue Yang knew that it was demonic language, but he could not understand it.

Actually, Yue Yang was capable of understanding three different common languages of the Demon Abyss. He was also capable of recognizing two kinds of writings, and capable of writing one kind. These were the results from learning with his powerful memory. If only he was not limited by time, he would have learned more.

However, he had never heard of this Demon Abyss language before.

Fortunately he has Bloody Queen Red and she was a very qualified translator: “This demon says that they have been sealed within this space for a very long time, and are incapable of leaving this place. If we can help them leave this place, he would give us the treasure ‘Blood Sucking Pearl’ as a reward. He also requests that we join hands together with him to fly to the skies, beat down every single Avian and eliminate them all... If we choose to stay neutral and not join any side in the battle, he would let us go back to the teleportation circle and allow us to leave.”

In the sky, the white gowned Avian carrying the silver harp flew down majestically. Using Soaring Dragon Continent’s language, he spoke in an incomparably arrogant manner: “Indecisive human warrior, I am warning you. You are falling towards an evil

abyss..... Young one, going near demons is not a good thing. Quickly wake up to reality and stay away from demons. Return under our banner of justice.....Eh, your beasts, they seems to be Holy Beasts?”

Seeing that Yue Yang had Holy Beasts, the white gowned Avian’s attitude became slightly better.

However, he was still quite arrogant, looking at Yue Yang as if he was an upstart. It was as if he was a city noble looking at a rich countryside landlord.

In short, he had a deep, aloof and remote kind of arrogance deep within his bones.

“If only our abilities were not sealed, we, noble and divine angels, who came down from the Heaven Realm, would absolutely not be confined in this dirty and small place. Human Warrior, I shall bestow to you an opportunity for glory, a glory that would last through eighteen generations of your sons and grandsons. Assist us in beheading these demons immediately and help us to remove the seals on our bodies. If we can recover our freedom and return to the Heaven Realm, I would grant you an opportunity to receive you as God’s servant, and bring you to the Heaven Realm, where there is eternal happiness and unbounded blessings.” After the white-gowned Avian who was carrying a harp spoke, Yue Yang let out a smile.

His smile was even more brilliant than the sun.

Within the smile, an extremely cold killing intent was hidden. However, his face did not expose it at all.

His level 5 Counterfeit Inherent Skill displayed its maximum power in that instant,. Forget about the white-gowned Avian or the Demon Chief, even Yue Yang was slightly admiring himself. Best Actor Awards or Oscars, they were all nothing much in the face of his all-powerful [Counterfeit] smile!

With a wide smile on his face, Yue Yang asked: “Before I make my decision, I wish to ask you both a question, why don’t you fight between the both of you?”

The white-gowned Avian carrying a harp angrily berated Yue Yang: “Stupid human, actually putting us noble and divine angels in the same level as demons, this is the most ear-piercing, most unacceptable humiliation I have heard.”

On the contrary, the Demon Chief coldly laughed: “Stop acting pretentious like a prostitute you disgusting dog shit. You have already been sealed here for a long time, as for which batch of Avian you were from, I don’t even remember. Over the last thousand year, I have already killed many idiotic Avians like you. Despite killing one of you another new one would pop out, however that disgusting face of yours made me unbearably want to kill you!”

The Demon Chief shot towards him and raised his blood scythe. He chopped down heavily.

Seeing this, the white-gowned Avian carrying a harp immediately flapped its wings and quickly dodged the attack, and flew towards the skies.

He coldly laughed; “Dirty life-form, you want to hit me? A single white feather on my body is a hundred fold more precious than your entire body. If you have the skill then fly up and fight with me!”

“If I was not bound by the restrictions, you damn Avian should not even think of escaping me.....” The Demon Chief stamped his foot on the ground hatefully, that even the blood pond far away shook.

“I have understood more or less about the matters here. It means that no matter which side I join, as long as I defeat the opponent, then I would be able to receive that side’s reward! The reward from the demon’s side is the Blood Sucking Pearl, but from its name, it sounded like a worthless item. On the Avian’s side, I would be received as God’s servant as the reward, but to be honest, I have no interest in becoming a slave.....” Yue Yang had not yet finished speaking when the white-gowned Avian carrying the harp suddenly shrieked and roared angrily at Yue yang: “What? Damned human, stupid as an ant, low life form, you have unexpectedly blabbered carelessly and humiliated us noble and divine angels.... Let me tell you, you stupid human, you will receive the greatest punishment, the same as an awe-inspiring God’s wrath! I command you, immediately crawl under my foot and prostrate yourself before me. Beg for forgiveness, or I would be furious and make use of the divine light to beat you into oblivion.”

“Ok, I had originally thought of letting you live a little bit longer!” Yue Yang had wanted to understand more about the matters of the Heaven Realm, however, it seemed like that white-gowned Avian would not shed tear if he didn’t see a coffin before him.

He even possessed Holy Beasts, how dare he act arrogantly towards him?

Yue Yang truly didn’t know if the Avian was ignorant or a natural airhead.

Bloody Queen Red had already wanted to kill the white-gowned Avian since a while ago. This bastard actually dared to talk crap about her master?

Forget about this Avian who only had the strength of a Gold-ranked Level 6, even if he was Platinum-ranked Level 6 or Diamond-ranked Level 6, she would also kill him without delay! Bloody Queen Red had never seen someone that had the audacity to be this arrogant. He had actually dared to open his mouth to spout bullshit and attack her owner. An almighty, respectable Innate Ranker was actually demeaned as a lowly life form and scorned as a stupid ant. Hearing these curses truly made her unable to suppress the burning anger in her heart.

“Die!!” Bloody Queen Red was so angry that even her eyes were dyed scarlet red. She shot towards him, pulling out both of her Gold Dragon-Slaying Dagger and Eye Destroyer Dagger.

“Summon.....”The white-gowned Avian unhurriedly prepared to summon his grimoire.

However, he was unable to move.

Not knowing when it happened, Xiao Wen Li had flashed behind him.....Xiao Wen Li, who had learned teleportation, used her Binding Inherent Skill and launched a surprise attack on the enemy. Even the Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian, and the Blood Prison Great Demon King Baruth, those strong leveled practitioners, could not let down their guard from Xiao Wen Li, let alone the Avian whose true strength had been sealed and was only Gold-ranked Level 6 currently.

Dual Icicle blades penetrated deep into the Avian’s back. Bloody Queen Red, who had been strengthened by the Giant Phantom Shadow, shot towards the front of the white-gowned Avian like a streak of lightning.

Banshee Scream echoed.

The white-gowned Avian was stunned immediately. The Gold Dragon Slaying Dagger and Eye Destroyer Dagger pierced deeply into his forehead and left eye respectively.

Xiao Wen Li swung her tail as if it was a whip and whipped the back of the white-gowned Avian.

A piece of meteor fell down the ground and sent endless waves of

earthquake!

“KILL!” Ah Man raised Crescent Moon on her left hand and held the Golden Lion Spear on the other as she jumped high into the air. Like thunder, Crescent Moon strongly beheaded the white-gowned Avian’s head. After hitting once and felt that it was not enough, she once again raised the Golden Lion Spear and heavily pounded the white-gowned Avian’s Spine.

“AAAAAAAAAA.....” Even though the Avian’s strength had been sealed, their vitality still remained the same as before they were sealed.

Using his Level 5 Divine Vision, Yue Yang can see that before being sealed, this white-gowned Avian should not be weaker than Moqi Xuling. It was also possible that it had already reached the strength of Innate Rank 5. However, after being sealed, the white-gowned Avian did not even have a thousandth of its battle strength. Forget about fighting against the coalition between Xiao Wen Li, Red and Ah Man, even if he were to fight against Fatty Hai’s Thunder Mammoth, Silver-horned Rhinoceros and Little Hippopotamus, he would also not be able to win against them.

Even though he still hadn’t died, he had already received heavy injuries.

If he was not immediately given assistance, he was bound to die..... In the sky, seeing their leader suffer an attack and fell on the ground, those Gold-ranked Level 5 white-gowned Avian were completely stunned. However, they immediately dived down one after the other, preparing to rescue him.

“Roar!” The Demon Chief was also flabbergasted, he did not expect that Yue Yang would make a move against his mortal enemy.

After his consciousness returned, he immediately loudly roared.

In the middle of the blood pool, the Demonic Swamp Dragon raised their heads one after the other and sprayed their venom toward the sky.

The Corrupted Wyverns soared towards the skies, repelling those white-gowned Avians that dived down. The other five Demons also did everything they can and tossed out their black flying spears, which seemed to be especially created to deal with the white-gowned Avians. Both side fought vigorously, but Yue Yang did not care about them at all. The white-gowned Avians that flew close were intercepted by the Bloody Queen Red, who skewered their hearts and directly massacred towards the sky. One by one, the Avians fell down to the ground.

Any Avian that encountered Xiao Wen Li were much more pitiful. Xiao Wen Li belonged to the type whose hands were like blades. Heads would fly to the sky whenever she slashed.

Without a leader, the Avians were utterly defeated.

Despite the Avian Leader struggling with his all, he still could not get pass Ah Man’s endless power.

Ah Man first kicked the Gold-ranked Harp, then seized the Avian Leader with her hands forcefully, tossing him in front of Yue Yang... Just as he fell into Yue Yang's 'World's' area of effect, the Avian leader miserably howled from the incomparable pain he felt. In this special area of effect inside the beast 'World', his energy was continuously being absorbed. He did not have the capability to struggle at all... In the sky, a sword wielding Avian thought of flying over to save him, however after seeing the situation, it immediately flew high and far to hide.

There was an archer Avian that aimed his bow towards Yue Yang.

Without needing Yue Yang to step in, the Bloody Queen Red had already brought out her "Flame Whip", and whipped angrily at the back of the archer Avian's back. When he fell to the ground, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man's fist exploded upon it.

Suddenly, Ah Man's eyes flashed red. [Doom's Eye] was triggered, killing the Avian in an instant.

After half an hour, the battle ended.

Most of the Avians that fell dead were killed by the Bloody Queen, Xiao Wen Li, and the Barbarian Cow Shadow, while that Demon Chief and his 5 other subordinates came second. The Corrupted Wyverns only killed a few.

As for the Demonic Swamp Dragons, they were only able to

poison two injured Avian to death.

On the demons' side, only 8-9 Demonic Swamp Dragons and 12-13 bruised Corrupted Wyverns were left.

After the death of most of the Avians, those five demons, even the Demon Chief had their seals removed and recovered their original strength.

Turns out that those 5 demons were all originally lesser Innate Rankers... As for the Demon Chief who could speak, he was a Level 5 Innate Ranker. He coldly watched Yue Yang for a while with a towering attitude. Finally, he opened his mouth: "Because of the Ancient Code's limitations, human, I am willing to honor my promise this time. I can give you the Blood Sucking Pearl, however you must immediately bring all the corpses here... Young human, do not covet the materials that do not belong to you. I admit that you are a promising practitioner, who also possess strong beasts. However our strength is not something you can face right now! After receiving the Blood Sucking Pearl and completing the Sky Shrine's trial, leave this place immediately. This place is no longer a place of challenge to you humans!"

"Roar, ROAR!" The rest of the 5 demons who have recovered their Lesser Innate Rankers' strength all roared at Yue Yang, meaning that Yue Yang could get lost.

In front of Yue Yang, a stack of more than thirty Avian corpse was piled up.

From them, Yue Yang had already dug out a white pearl from the Avian leader's head and kept it in his Lich Ring. He had also taken the Gold-ranked harp and stored it inside.

As far as the demons were concerned, Yue Yang's actions were equivalent to embezzling their spoils of war, this was definitely an unforgivable action.

If it was a while ago, the demons would still be Gold-ranked Level 5 and would have no other choice, but now they have recovered their Lesser Innate Ranker's strength, their Demon Chief had even recovered to a Level 5 Innate. This human male, even though he was strong, he was still inadequate... Due to the Ancient Code, they cannot go against the code and kill him. However, there was absolutely no problem in expelling him from this place.

With regards to the the Demon Chief's warning and the 5 demon's intent to expel him, Yue Yang once again showed a smile.

It was similar to the smile he showed the Avian leader a while ago, deep with killing intent.

Cold as ice.

"It's more meaningful like this, right! I do not hold any bit of interest towards the Blood Sucking Pearl, but I am definitely highly interested in your demon hearts!" Yue Yang snapped his fingers and summoned the sleepy and drowsy Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. The loli empress was still slightly half-asleep.

“Eh? Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen?” Seeing this, the Demon Chief’s pupils immediately shrunk. Very evidently, he was well aware of his own nemesis.

Chapter 314 – The Demons' Sad Wails

Compared to the Innate Level 5 Demon Chief, those Demons who were Lesser Innate Rankers were way weaker.

When the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen appeared, they couldn't even identify her at first. It was only when they heard their Demon Chief that they immediately jumped in fright and took their positions, prepared to defend themselves... The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen had always been the nightmare of Demon Abyss. To the demons, her existence was not only of a stronger enemy, it was of a higher-ranked predator. Even though the snake could rampage on the ground unhindered, the moment an eagle preyed on it, it would only end up dead in the end. This was because the eagle was the snake's natural predator!

The Corrupted Wyverns didn't dare to get closer to the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen at all. When they came back to their senses, they immediately flapped their wings and escaped far back.

The Demonic Swamp Dragons in the Blood Pool submerged themselves under one by one.

If they had enough wisdom, they wouldn't do this. This was because hiding under the Blood Pool had no effects on the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen at all. She could straight away drill into the Blood Pool and swallow them easily like a fish on water.

“Don't panic. It is only a Bronze-ranked Level 1 Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen!” The Demon Chief nervously gulped down

his saliva and scolded his subordinates.

Fortunately it was a Queen that had only just evolved. Her appearance still looked like a little girl.

If she had already matured and attained her maximum potential, they wouldn't even need to fight this battle.

Some of the Lesser Innate Ranker Demons looked embarrassed when they came back to their senses.

They roared out furiously.

Although they were scared to death by the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen just now, they realized that she wasn't as frightening as the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen that they had heard in legends. They immediately looked stern and serious again. Of course, they would definitely run away if they were to face the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen alone. They wouldn't even need to fight, they knew that they were not the little Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen's match in a one-on-one battle.

“Roar, roar!” The few Demons roared out one by one, prepared to charge forward and surround the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen.

“Where is this? Have I come to the Demon Abyss after a short sleep? It's not the Blood Prison Demon King... Never mind, these

demons are all good fertilisers too!” The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was still half-asleep. Seeing the Demon Innate Ranker and Lesser Innate Ranker Demons, she even thought that Yue Yang had gone to the Demon Abyss.

“Human warrior... This battle, we would only ended up with heavy losses if we fought to the end! Why don’t we separate the loot? You get the reward on your side, and we get the reward for our side. With regards to the things in the White Clouds Fort in the sky, we can divide it 50-50. After which, you can complete the mission and leave. Before we leave the Sky Shrine, we will also give you the Blood Sucking Pearl as present to you!” The Level 5 Innate Demon Chief took out a beautiful blood red pearl and asked, full of sincerity as he suggested to share the loot. According to him, Yue Yang would even have a slight advantage, because Yue Yang had killed more Avians than them.

“Good idea.” Before the Bloody Queen Red could finish translating, Yue Yang nodded, gladly accepting the suggestion.

“Let’s sign on a Demon Contract, so that we won’t renege!” The Demon Chief took out a piece of blood red Contract Scroll and a pencil made from a demon’s finger bone. It was also decorated with a little skull on its end.

“Of course, signing a contract is the best way to start a business relationship.” Yue Yang suddenly smiled again.

The Demon Chief felt that this brat’s smile was even scarier than his own.

Although this brat's smile was as radiant as the sun, he felt some kind of evil behind it. It was dark and cold, and he felt as if there was some kind of evil aura that runs through his spine all the way to his tailbone, freezing his heart.

The Demon Chief first wrote his name on the Demon Contract, which he handed it over to Yue Yang afterwards.

Yue Yang didn't even look through the details on the Demon Contract. He immediately signed his name carelessly... Titan. Right, this was the name he used to register in the Adventurer's Guild. It was also the name he used to enter Tong Tian Tower. Is this name important? Of course not, the most important thing was to sign the Demon Contract... Once the Demon Contract was signed, the two sides became allies. Since they were allies, they were not restricted to the Sky Shrine's Ancient Code limitations.

Only the challenger could receive the Ancient Code's protection.

Challengers had the authority to start the trial, and after winning, they would also have the Ancient Code's protection to leave the Sky Shrine without injuries.

The Demon Chief thought that this brat only had a few slightly stronger beasts. On his own, he should only be a warrior from the Soaring Dragon Continent that was below Level 6 [Elder]. In other words, he would be able to kill the human boy easily with a flick of a finger.

When the Demon Contract that had been signed by both parties shone with light, the Demon Chief laughed sinisterly.

Betraying allies was an extremely disdainful action.

However, he was a Demon originally. What's wrong with betraying allies? Demons are born evil by nature!

"The Demon Contract is dripping blood." Yue Yang saw that the Demon Contract was burning in the air and was dripping with fiery blood. According to the knowledge inheritance from the tragic guy's mom, Yue Yang understood what this meant perfectly, "You have violated the terms in the Demon Contract on your side. Do you guys want to kill me?"

"That's right!" The Demon Chief did not even finish his sentence before he swung his blood scythe towards Yue Yang's neck.

"I like your honesty and your straightforward methods... Since that's the case, I'll leave your corpse intact as a reward." Yue Yang smiled indifferently. He raised his right hand and the Golden Beast on his wrist turned into a mysterious sword with mystical runes, blocking right in front of Yue Yang's neck. Under the restriction of the Ancient Code, he couldn't attack with his combat skills, but he could defend himself.

The Gold-ranked Blood Scythe was extremely sharp. It swung down mercilessly.

However, that scythe only brushed across Yue Yang's nose, the wind from its swing blowing against Yue Yang's hair. Yue Yang's eyes glinted with a hint of ridicule... The latter half of the Blood Scythe had been cut off, strangely stopping right beside Yue Yang's neck.

The front half dropped soundlessly, and finally thudded on the ground.

The Demon Chief's expression changed greatly.

He couldn't believe that his Bloody Scythe had been broken into two pieces. It was a Gold-ranked item, indestructible.

It had actually been broken by his enemy's sword in one slash. What's happening?

He suddenly realized and pointed at the Golden Beast in Yue Yang's hand that had turned into a mysterious sword, crying out in alarm, "You, are you a Tong Tian Beast?"

Yue Yang leisurely yawned and answered, "Yep, it's the one and only Tong Tian Beast!"

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen tilted her head towards Yue Yang and said, "This fellow is really dumb... Are all demons this dumb? How could he think of launching a surprise attack on you? Isn't it as ridiculous as trying to have an eating competition with me?" Before she finished her sentence, five spears that were

killing the Avians just now shot towards her, each of them was thrown with a power that could pierce straight through her!

“What a boring sneak attack!” The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen waved her hand.

Over a hundred Bronze-ranked Thorny Flowers Minions and Thorny Flower Clusters rose to the sky. Their gigantic bodies were even bigger than the Demonic Swamp Dragons hiding in the Blood Pool.

The Demons with spears charged forward angrily. However, their spears didn't seem to have any effects to the soft and slippery bodies of the Thorny Flowers.

The Thorny Flower Minions plucked out the Demon spears nailed on their bodies easily and passed it to the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. The process was extremely quick, it was executed in less than two seconds. They had even dispelled the demonic qi and miasma in the air at the same time.

(Shiro: Seems like the spears are more like javelins/arrows that are used for long-ranged attacks)

Before the 5 Lesser Innate Demons could cast their spears the second time, more Thorny Flowers started appearing from the ground.

The Thorny Flowers combined together, twining against each other and finally formed a Thorny Flower Giant that was more than thirty metres tall.

All the Thorny Flowers were Bronze-ranked, they ranged from Bronze-ranked Level 1 to Level 9. Mysteriously, the highest level of Bronze-ranked Level 10 was not present. Even so, the appearance of this thirty metres tall Bronze-ranked Thorny Flower Giant was enough to stupefy the five Lesser Innate Demons... How were they supposed to fight such a big monster? The five Demons had not even come back to their senses when suddenly, another two Bronze-ranked Thorny Flower Giants appeared from the ground.

Fortunately, the other two Thorny Flower Giants were slightly shorter. They were only twenty metres tall.

However, the Thorny Flower Giants' goal was not the five demons, it was the Demonic Swamp Dragons hiding in the Blood Pool. They were also attacking the terrified Corrupted Wyverns that were scrambling everywhere in the sky.

The Demon Chief felt an impulse of wailing on the ground in his heart. Who is this human boy actually? They had wanted to kill him at first and hoard all of the spoils of war here for themselves. He never imagined that his ability was something they could not fight against. Had he known earlier, he would have fled this Sky Shrine the moment their seal was unlocked. His greed had truly led him to his demise!

It was fine when they signed the Demon Contract, but the moment they chose to betray the terms of the contract, according to Tong Tian Tower's Law, they would not be able to leave the battlefield before the other party.

This, isn't this equivalent to leading himself to his death?

“Let's stop fighting! If you are willing, I will give you all the treasures here as compensation. Moreover, we can agree on a place to meet in the sixth level of Tong Tian Tower, I will compensate you with one hundred Sky Crystal Coins! We don't have to fight so hard, it would only result in heavy losses for both of our sides. If you are willing, I am willing to compensate you for my rude behaviour just now!” The Demon Chief had secretly schemed in his heart. He would definitely be at a disadvantage in this battle. It would be better for him to endure shame and compensate the human boy right now, he could call for reinforcements to kill this boy in the future after they leave this place!

In order to acquire the Tong Tian Beast who could cut through a Gold-ranked Weapon, many strong rankers would definitely be interested in joining him!

With regards to the Demon Chief's suggestion, Yue Yang shook his hand and smiled, “Clever demon, do you think I will still trust your words? If I wasn't planning on trapping you guys here in this Sky Shrine, I would never have signed the Demon Contract with you. Alright, I won't criticise your clumsy schemes anymore, it's not something that you demons are an expert in anyway. Let's talk about how to kill you. How do you guys want to be killed?”

The Demon Chief felt like Yue Yang had punched him in the face when he heard his words. He staggered a few steps backwards.

Right now, even if he was a fool, he finally understood the situation.

This brat had been scheming from the start.

This human boy was afraid that he would escape from the Sky Shrine at the first moment, hence he pretended to be weak and tricked him to think that it was safe for him to beat him down. He made him believe that he was forcing him to sign the Demon Contract. When he broke the terms on their side, he would be able to fight him even with their alliance status...

He had hidden his true strength.

He only revealed his Tong Tian beast when he (Demon Chief) turned hostile against him!

“Do you think you can defeat me with just the likes of your lamia, Bloody Queen, Barbarian Cow Shadow and a Bronze-ranked Level 1 Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen?” The Demon Chief furiously roared, “I’m an Innate Level 5 Ranker, no matter how many beasts you have, they are all useless against me. I can totally defeat you even by standing still! Do you know what’s my Domain of Power? My Domain of Power is “Dark Shadow”. As long as I don’t show myself, you won’t ever be able to find me in the darkness of my Domain!”

“You left out my Tong Tian beast!” Yue Yang smiled out. He loved watching the agitated looks of his enemies the most, because that would mean that they felt cornered.

“You won’t be able to find me even with your Tong Tian beast...”

The Demon Chief raised both of his hands to the sky, and his surrounding twenty-metres radius immediately became complete darkness. His body slowly became a transparent shadow, “If you enter here, I will immediately attack. You won’t be able to find me here, and you won’t be able to defeat me who is like a shadow! If you agree on my suggestion, stop your attacks immediately. I will even add another 100 Sky Crystal Coins.”

“What if I say that I still have the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice, who can traverse boundaries, traps and domains?” Yue Yang summoned the five puppet mice out.

“You...” The Demon Chief was so angry that no words could flow out of his mouth.

“If you think it’s still not enough, I can still summon more beasts until you are satisfied!” Yue Yang summoned the Spirit of Flame and Smoke who had absorbed the Gold-ranked Level 8 Sandstorm Beast’s magic crystal, “Storm King’s Core”. She was currently a Gold-ranked Level 5 Spirit of Flame and Smoke. Its body was covered with blazing flames and thick smoke. The Storm King’s Core revolved continuously on her forehead. There was a flicker of Nirvana Flame burning on top of her head. That was her most important constitution, the ultimate flame.

“Just how many Guardian Beast do you actually have...?” The Demon Chief was thoroughly frustrated. This Spirit of Flame and Smoke was the nemesis of his Dark Shadow Domain of Power. In his Domain, he actually still existed physically. He was not a shadow nor an element. Would this trick work on a Spirit of Flames and Smoke that had a body of flames, storm and smoke?

That's impossible. The thing that made him despair the most was that the beasts that this brat summoned were all Guardian Beasts. What does this mean? That means they would never die nor betray him... Under this situation, how could he defeat his enemy? Forget about the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, the Holy Beast Bloody Queen and the Lesser Holy Beast Barbarian Cow Shadow, he even had a little lamia girl whose strength was impossible for him to measure.

In the Demon Chief's heart, this little lamia was definitely not weaker than the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. Just now, the Avian Leader who was his enemy for hundreds of years had died because of her.

Once again, Yue Yang summoned another beast, the Reaper Mantis, to kill those Corrupted Wyverns who were completely scared out of their wits, flying in chaos.

At the same time, he revealed a radiant smile towards the Demon Chief who was in despair. However, his smile looked even more sinister than a Demon King's. His elegant face then revealed an evil expression as he said, "If you don't mind, I would like to call a few more reinforcements!"

When Xiao Wen Li heard him, she lightly waved her hand and summoned her Diamond Grimoire.

Raising her protective shield, she summoned Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon all out.

When the Demon Chief saw this, his demon claws trembled as he asked, his voice shaking in terror, “Diamond Grimoire? You, you, your beast has a diamond grimoire? Damn it! Who are you actually? How could someone below the Level 6 [Elder] possess a Mythical Beast that has her own grimoire? This is impossible, this is definitely impossible! You haven’t even reached Level 6 [Elder], how can you possess a Mythical Beast?”

Yue Yang smiled. His smile sent shivers down the six demons’ spines, “Why didn’t you think that she is a Transcending Mythical Beast that I have inherited?”

Transcending Mythical Beast?

The Demon Chief suddenly had difficulty in breathing.

The foolish him had actually started a fight against someone who possessed a Transcending Mythical Beast... Moreover, this human warrior had actually possessed the Holy Beast-ranked Bloody Queen and Lesser Holy Beast Barbarian Cow Shadow, a Reaper Mantis which was the natural predator of dragon-race, puppet mice and Spirit of Flame and Smoke that could render his Domain of Power useless. He also possessed a Tong Tian beast, and even the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen which was legendary for being the nemesis of the demon race.

In this world, is there anyone who is more foolish, more arrogant, more greedy and more tragic than him?

When he saw the gathering of the beasts surrounding him, the threat of death that he never felt for thousands of years suddenly surfaced from the bottom of his heart... This time, seems like it wouldn't be as simple as being sealed in the Sky Shrine. His end was approaching soon!

“No, NO!” The Demon Chief wailed out. His cries echoed through the Sky Shrine for a long time.

Chapter 315 – Reward, Five Colours Of Divine Light

After battling for one hour and fifteen minutes, the Demon Chief who was covered with cuts and bruises tragically collapse to death.

With the power of Innate Level 5, he would be an unstoppable force even in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. However, he was actually defeated in the Second Floor of Tong Tian Tower. Of course, this was an exception that would not happen in ten thousand years. There would definitely no one in this world who would imagine that someone like Yue Yang exist in this world. The Demon Chief who died in Yue Yang's hands didn't die unjusticely, because before him, there were Moqi Xu Ling and Duan Mu Long Cheng who were much stronger than him who also met the same tragic end.

“We shouldn't waste the corpses...” Forget about the white-coloured pearl from the Avians bodies, Yue Yang didn't even spare the feathers on their backs. He ordered his beasts to pluck every single one, then leave the leftovers to be swallowed by the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen.

All parts of the Avians' bodies were treasures. The white-coloured pearl was of a higher quality than magic crystals. Their feathers could be made into arrows. Some of their weapons were even Silver-ranked, and the worst were Bronze-ranked.

As for their corpses, they made quite a good fertiliser.

The Demon race was also the same.

Yue Yang dug out the demon hearts of the five demons who were Lesser Innate Rankers after releasing their seals as reward for Hui Tai Lang, who had contributed a lot in the previous battles. Although it didn't come along this time, Yue Yang would not forget about his watchdog. As for the magic crystals, after refining it using Nirvana's Flame, Yue Yang distributed it to Red, Ah Man, Golden Beast, Spirit of Flame and Smoke and Reaper Mantis. Of course, their corpses ended up as fertiliser. After this battle, Reaper Mantis had levelled up from Gold-ranked Level 4 to Level 5, while the Spirit of Flame and Smoke and Ah Man vaguely showed signs of levelling up. Seems like it won't be long before they can level up.

The Bloody Queen Red was trying to reach "Two Stars" Holy Beast and had almost succeeded. However, it was still not yet shown in the summoning grimoire, seems like she still lacked a little.

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen didn't level up, she was still Bronze-ranked Level 1.

However, the Thorny Flowers she summoned had all levelled up. Many of the Thorny Flowers had even ranked up to Silver-ranked Thorny Flowers, especially the Thorny Flower Minions that had swallowed the Corrupted Wyverns and Demonic Swamp Dragons. Their evolution was obvious.

Yue Yang didn't bother going to the forts of the Avians and the Demons and gather their treasures. He prepared to go into the

world inside his grimoire and look around.

After the great battle, the Intermediate-ranked Gold Grimoire had levelled up to Advance-ranked.

A golden coloured pillar of light shone brightly for a long period of time.

The special-type beast “World” had expanded outwards a little more in the midst of the golden light.

After absorbing the Avians’ and the Demons’ energy, within the ring of light, other than wind, fire, water, earth and metal, there were two other new Heaven Runes, “Light” and “Darkness”. The Runes in the ring of light became richer, as it continue to slowly revolve around the grimoire. Its mysterious energy turned into some kind of special area of effect that increases the status of its master and his beasts. Moreover, it had a weakening effect on its master’s enemies.

Its area of effect wasn’t very big right now, as its level was only Platinum-ranked Level 3. In the future, if it could increase its level and expand its area of effect, it would definitely be a great force to behold.

Of course, to raise such a ‘bottomless pit’, Yue Yang felt that no amount of magic crystals would be enough to satisfy it.

“...” Xiao Wen Li pulled on Yue Yang’s arms.

“Can we go into the Grimoire World now?” Yue Yang was overjoyed when he heard the news. As he gathered his thoughts, he realized that ‘World’ was not resisting his entry anymore. Faintly, he even felt that it was guiding him in. However, he felt more guidance from Xiao Wen Li who was holding onto his arms. A flash of golden light appeared on the grimoire and enveloped Yue Yang’s body. In a flash, Yue Yang disappeared without a trace.

When they were teleporting, Yue Yang felt Xiao Wen Li leading him and flying quickly through an empty space.

They seemed to have traversed thousand miles within the blink of an eye.

His feet finally stepped onto ground after being suspended in the air for a while.

After a burst of light, Yue Yang realized that there was a strange world in front of him... This Grimoire World wasn’t really big, it was only few kilometres wide. Yue Yang could see what may be the end of the Grimoire World, a stretch of mountain range of different heights that surrounded the whole area. Above it, there was a dome-like sky. The sky was extremely bright, there were no stars, moon or even clouds. It really looked dull, and it was probably only 1 km high. Some of the higher mountains on the ground could even almost reach half of the height of the dome.

The ground was mostly filled with water. A big part of the ground was covered with a big lake.

There were small islands of different sizes in the middle of the lake.

On the islands, there were only grasses and flowers, and a small number of vines. There were also a few short fig trees, there were not big trees at all.

The water was extremely clear, there were no fish or prawns at all, only the clear, calm lake water... Accurately speaking, other than Yue Yang, Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man and the other Guardian Beasts, there were no other living thing inside the grimoire world. It was merely a new world that had just been created.

“Let’s work together to create our new home!” Yue Yang was extremely pleased. With this grimoire world, even though it was rather crude and simple, as long as he managed it, it would become more and more perfect step by step. If there were no butterflies, birds, fish, prawns, it wouldn’t be interesting. He would bring them in next time. If there were no flowers or trees, he would plant them continuously, until they grew abundantly. As for houses, they would be able to create it once they bring in the necessary materials.

“Unn!” Xiao Wen Li obediently nodded her head, showing her joy.

“Let’s tear down the White Clouds Fort in the Sky Shrine and move it in. Also, the Demon’s Fort. Those are quite good

materials!” Bloody Queen Red liked to live in high places, hence she was very interested in the White Clouds Fort that the Avians lived in. She would definitely create a Sky Pavilion later on.

(Shiro: Changing Hanging Pavilion to Sky Pavilion)

“Then, what are we waiting for...” The moment Yue Yang mentioned his order, all his beasts started to move.

The Demon’s Fort were torn apart and the Barbarian Cow Shadow and Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen worked together to move the pieces of Obsidian stones inside.

Even the Reaper Mantis also helped.

Only the Spirit of Flame and Smoke who didn’t understanding anything about living and could only fight, stared blankly with nothing to do for a while. Seeing that Yue Yang didn’t have the time to pay attention to her, she continued to absorb the Storm King’s Core inside her body. The Bloody Queen Red and Yue Yang flew together to the floating buildings in the sky, and tore apart the White Clouds Fort that the Avians used to reside in piece by piece. They then moved them inside the grimoire world. Fortunately, the pieces of floating stones would automatically float the moment it entered the domain inside the ring of light. Otherwise, they would have been exhausted to death trying to move them piece by piece inside.

Yue Yang’s responsibilities were to tear apart the walls and collect the treasures. As for the things that he didn’t need, he immediately destroyed them, so that future challengers wouldn’t

know what happened here.

Yue Yang figured that after every certain period of time, a strong ranker from the Tong Tian Tower would come and filled the Three Worlds Shrines with more beasts.

It would be replenished the moment it was consumed.

Of course, those people would probably not care if the Avians' and the Demons' Forts were destroyed.

The Avian Leader's and Demon Chief's storage bracelets were not suitable for Yue Yang's use. Hence, Yue Yang decided to find a time to refine these two items. Maybe he could fuse them together with his Lich Ring and increase its storage space.

With his grimoire world, although item storage was no longer a problem, it was more convenient to use the Lich Ring.

Especially during battles or times when it wasn't convenient for him to summon his grimoire.

When Red, Ah Man and the others were still moving stuff, Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li went to acquire the final reward for clearing the Sky Shrine. Yue Yang hoped there wouldn't be a time limit for clearing the quest, otherwise he would regret it to death if they were kicked out from the Sky Shrine before acquiring the final reward... When Yue Yang swiped his Crystal Card across the Giant Sky King Statue, it broke into pieces. The stone pieces of statue

scattered all over the sky. As Yue Yang dispersed the dust with his Innate Qi, he saw a round green light in front of him. Beside the ball of green light, there was a pearl that was faintly emitting light.

Sky Splitting Pearl (Fake): The holder will be able to split the sky forcefully and open a door to an empty dimension. Limited to one-time usage only.

Yue Yang break out in sweat. The reward for the Sky Shrine was indeed a fake item.

Looking from its effects, this fake Sky Splitting Pearl could not even compare to the Silver-ranked Blood Sucking Pearl. At least the Blood Sucking Pearl could suck blood when it was embedded into a weapon, thus increasing the weapon's power. If a beast swallowed the Blood Sucking Pearl, it could even impart its blood sucking ability to the beast. However, the blood sucking ability was rather dreadful, because it was a skill that depended on chance.

It was similar to Doom's Eyes, but Doom's Eyes could instantly kill, whereas the Blood Sucking Pearl could only suck blood.

However, even a mosquito's leg is meat. Yue Yang had never rejected treasures before, the more the better.

Yue Yang had been severely disappointed with the Three Worlds Shrines rewards, but this time, the Sky Shrine reward of a round ball of green light had completely changed his mind.

Five Colours of Divine Light (Green): One of the Five Colours of Divine Light. The holder of this light can re-arrange all kind of poison. All plant-type beasts will receive ten times boost in power. Those who received the blessings of the light will acquire “Natural Body” temporarily.

Yue Yang’s Heaven Eyes Divine Vision could also see another piece of information: Damaged Divine Light, nine layers of seal.

This also meant that this Green Divine Light was already so powerful even when it was damaged and sealed in nine layers of seal. Yue Yang couldn’t even begin to imagine what kind of power it beholds if he undo the seals... Based on Yue Yang’s previous life’s experience, the Five Colours of Divine Light was the treasure that [Kong Xuan](#) had created after working on it for ten thousand years. It was said that originally, when a drop of energy from [Primal Chaos](#) had enveloped [Mahamayuri](#), it created five strands of peacock feathers. Afterwards, Mahamayuri ordered his disciples to create five Legendary Swords using the five 1-metre long peacock feathers. The refining process took ten thousand years. Although it was made from a peacock feather, the Legendary Swords were as heavy as a mountain... As for its power, when this Five Colours of Divine Light appeared, Huang Fei Hu, Chong Hei Hu, Li Jing and all others were immediately scared off. Even Jiang Zi Ya, who wields the God Beating Whip couldn’t hold a candle to it...

(Shiro: Kong Xuan is a character from Investiture of the Gods/Feng Shen Yan Yi, a chinese classic fantasy tale. He is based on Mahamayuri, a Buddhist God.

Primal Chaos – a formless state before the creation of universe

Mahamayuri – Some buddhist god

Huang Fei Hu, Chong Hei Hu, Li Jing, Jiang Zi Ya – some big shot

characters from the Investiture of the Gods, google their wiki page if you want to know more)

If one were to use a word to describe Five colours of Divine Light, it's "OP"!

(Shiro: forgive me for using a slang due to lack of better words...)

Of course, this Five Colours of Divine Light might not be Kong Xuan's peacock feathers, but since its name was 'Five Colours of Divine Light', it must not be any ordinary treasure.

"Could it be that Kong Xuan's butt was also kicked by the Old Daoist Priest, and one of his feathers had flown here?" Yue Yang carelessly guessed, as he quickly grabbed and stored the precious items away.

He actually acquired Five Colours of Divine Light as a reward for clearing the Three Worlds Shrines.

Yue Yang was so touched!

It was a pity that he couldn't redo the trial again. Otherwise, Yue Yang would have collected all five colours of divine light!

The moment Yue Yang acquired the Sky Splitting Pearl and one of the Five Colours of Divine Light, the Green Divine Light, the Sky Shrine immediately started to crumble. It was similar to what happened in the Twelve Zodiac Temples. The whole trial area would be shifted and re-arranged after it was completed. Yue Yang

saw that there weren't many things left to tidy up, so he quickly ordered his beasts to retreat. Who would know if this shift would attract the attention of some great gods inside the Tong Tian Tower... Although he couldn't be sure, the cautious Yue Yang immediately abandoned moving the last pieces of Obsidian stones. Those things were also available in the Demon Palace in the Demon Abyss. If he need more, he could just give the Great Demon King Baruth a visit again at the most!

Whatever Harp, Blood Scythe and other kind of weapons available had already been collected. Red, Ah Man and the other girls also quickly returned into the grimoire world.

Yue Yang slipped away from the rubbles and rushed out from the teleportation gate, almost crashing into the Gold-armoured Guard Captain outside.

“Eh? You didn't die?” The Gold-armoured Guard Captain was different from the Gold-armoured Guard Captain guarding the Twelve Zodiac Temples, hence he didn't recognize Yue Yang. When he saw the little thief had actually came out alive, he was extremely surprised, “You seemed to have entered for a few hours. How are you still alive?”

“There are too many monsters inside, so I hid myself and slept. In the end, when I saw that it was quiet and there was no movement from the monsters, I stealthily sneaked myself back out. It was so dangerous!” Yue Yang pretended that he was a lucky chap who had just escaped death. When the Golden-armoured Guard Captain heard this, he burst out in laughter and patted Yue Yang's shoulders, “You are so lucky! I have never heard of a team

with lesser than fifty members clearing the Human Shrine. Ninety percent of the teams would be annihilated. It's already a miracle for you to be able to escape from the Human Shrine! Young boy, don't ever do things beyond your capabilities again. You will definitely not be able to clear the trials alone..."

"I won't dare, I won't dare to do it again..." Yue Yang pretended to be afraid and quickly escaped.

"Haha, this little thief escapes pretty fast. Seems like he had some kind of Artifact that makes him invisible, otherwise he would definitely not be able to escape..." The Gold-armoured Guard Captain mumbled to himself, but he dismissed these thoughts to the back of his head very quickly.

Had he possessed a stronger sense of curiosity, entered the Trial Status Display Crystal Pillar Room and used his authority to check the Trial Clearance List, he would probably be shocked to death by the truth.

This was because Yue Yang's Three Worlds Shrines' completion rate was more than 3000%.

In other words, the kid had cleared the trials that exceeded thirty times of the normal difficulty...

Chapter 316 – Forgetting The Situation, Forcing A Kiss

Yue Yang came out from the Second Floor of Tong Tian Tower. He wasn't in a hurry to return to the Little Flower Garden, instead, he went to the Yue Clan Castle first.

His Second Uncle Yue Ling reported the current status of the castle. Without Yue Yang overseeing the management, he didn't feel at peace as a substitute clan master. He had only realized how difficult becoming the clan master was after becoming one. It was extremely stressful. Fortunately there was Yue Yang, the super powerful nephew, overseeing him, hence the other clans had also given him some face. If the Yue Clan was led by a mere Level 6 Junior-[Elder], there would probably no other leaders weaker than him.

“I don't understand castle management at all. Just take care of them as you see fit, I feel assured leaving it to you.” Yue Yang didn't have a major interest towards his clan. Other than the Ghost Genius' Yue Gong's Puppet Palace, there were no other secrets that Yue Yang would want to uncover.

Yue Ling and the two Elders had also allowed Yue Yang access to the secret room that was initially only accessible to the core members of the family, allowing him to browse through the materials recorded there.

Inside, there were many records and recollections about the Three Renaissance Heroes and clan geniuses over the generations. It was a magnificent library.

(Shiro: Three Renaissance Heroes reminder – three geniuses that had lifted the Yue Clan to glory during its difficult times, Ghost Genius Yue Gong is one of them)

The Three Renaissance Heroes' complete secret combat skills manuals, method of raising beasts, battleground military strategies, art of social behaviours and so on were very useful for the normal Yue Clan members. However, towards Yue Yang who had already possessed the knowledge inheritance from the tragic guy's mother, there really weren't much materials he could study in there.

With regards to the battleground military strategies and art of social behaviours, since Yue Yang would never be a court official or a general, it was completely useless to him. He was an Innate, so these things were not very useful to him. The Three Renaissance Heroes didn't write this book for Innates, they wrote this book for their future generations, to teach them how to bring their clan onto greater heights and how to strengthen the position of the Yue Clan amongst the Four Great Clans in Soaring Dragon Continent... It can be said that the only thing that Yue Yang was interested in was the Ghost Genius Yue Gong's Puppet Palace. According to the records, the Yue Clan's secret since a thousand year ago were kept inside. If Elder Yue Hai was here, Yue Yang would have asked to go there. It was a pity that Old Man Yue Hai was not here, and he, as the true clan master, was the only person who knew about the location of the Puppet Palace.

The one located below the Yue Clan Castle was not the real Puppet Palace. It was merely a Puppet Factory.

The Ghost Genius Yue Gong had built the Puppet Factory so that the future generations who were not geniuses could produce low-levelled puppets by learning the simple method.

“Feng-er has been expelled by the Floating Mist Sect... Mr. Ku Ming sends his apologies, but he wasn’t able to defy the Sect Leader’s orders.” Yue Ling’s voice was slightly dejected. The current Yue Clan younger generation was originally full of geniuses. Yue Tian and Yue Yan were once chosen as the world’s top ten young heroes. Yue Feng had contracted a grimoire at the age of six. His talent was discovered at a young age, and the three Great Sects had all come to recruit him as a disciple. In the end, he became a Floating Mist Sect disciple.

Afterwards, Yue Yang arrived, pulling a horse carriage with his stepmother Fourth Mistress and little sister. He turned the whole Yue Clan Castle upside down, shocking the whole world.

The trash who couldn’t do anything before had actually become such an abnormal genius!

Even Yue Bing, who could only possess the weaker plant-type beasts, had shown her wonderful capabilities during the New Year Tournament... At that time, there was no one in the world who didn’t exclaim in admiration for the Yue Clan’s younger generation. However, today, the first son Yue Tian was ruined, the fourth son Yue Yan was disabled, the fifth son Yue Ting had gone missing, the sixth son Yue Bao was faced with judgement from the clan, while the ninth son Yue Feng was expelled by the Floating Mist Sect, becoming a stray disciple.

If it wasn't because of Yue Yang and Yue Bing, the Yue Clan would have really gone downhill.

Yue Yang understood the reason for Yue Feng's expulsion. He had defeated Bai Yun Fei and forced him to kneel in front of the others during the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament. It was an embarrassment that Bai Yun Fei would not be able to forget his whole life. After the Floating Mist Sect Leader, Bai Yun Fei's father, heard about this, it would be strange if the Floating Mist Sect still continued to teach Yue Feng! Yue Yang felt that this matter would happen sooner or later. It was all within his calculation that Yue Feng was expelled. Since Yue Feng didn't have any master now, it's not a bad thing for him to teach Yue Feng and increase the Yue Clan's strength. He would not be able to take care of the Yue Clan and stay in the Soaring Dragon Continent forever after all. If he and the girls decided to go to the Heaven Realm and did not return for a hundred years, it wouldn't do if there were no strong younger generations to support the Yue Clan in the future.

Yue Yang muttered to himself, and made a decision.

"I am busy now, I have to help Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress to become Innates. I don't have time now." Yue Yang's words made the Second Uncle Yue Ling looked really dejected.

"It's okay, your matters are more important." Yue Ling had already guessed that Yue Yang would not care from the beginning. Unexpectedly, Yue Yang's next words made him question the functionality of his own ears.

“I haven’t finished speaking, listen to me first... Second Uncle, with regards to Yue Feng, I will teach him when I have the time. Actually, he is still young now, so laying down the basics is the most important. You don’t have to be so anxious. That Floating Mist Sect, so what if he is expelled from them? Do you think that our Yue clansmen wouldn’t be able to become innates if we don’t become the Four Great Sects disciples?” Yue Yang would definitely not want to teach Yue Feng seriously, but he had no problems if he was asked to provide guidance to him once in awhile.

“Ah, is that so? Then I shall thank you on Feng-er’s behalf!” Yue Ling was overjoyed at the unexpected news, immediately bowing to Yue Yang.

Of course, he knew that the Floating Mist Sect had become hostile to them because their Junior Sect Leader was defeated by Yue Yang.

But he could only keep the bitterness to himself.

Neither Yue Yang nor the Floating Mist Sect Leader was someone that he could afford to offend.

Furthermore, even if Yue Feng wasn’t expelled, he would probably not be able to learn anything there, and would even be bullied by Bai Yun Fei.

Yue Ling mentioned it to Yue Yang because he hoped that Yue Yang would help Yue Feng to unlock any kind of bottleneck that would affect Yue Feng’s growth in the future. He hoped that Yue

Yang could give some pointers to Yue Feng, or give him a Martial Arts Pill or Spirit Pill, so that Yue Feng wouldn't end up like Yue Tian and Yue Yan... He never thought that Yue Yang would actually be willing to teach his son.

How could he not be touched!

As an Innate, even a few pointers from Yue Yang was worth more than studying in the Floating Mist Sect.

All the disciples of Floating Mist Sect must be loyal to the sect, otherwise why would they spend money to cultivate their disciples? However, as a member of the Yue Clan, how could Yue Feng pledge his loyalty to the Floating Mist Sect?

Furthermore, the teacher that was in charge of teaching Yue Feng was only a Level 6 [Elder]. Moreover, the teaching of basic foundations was left to two Level 5 [Grandmasters]. How could they be compared to Yue Yang, who was an Innate Ranker?

Thinking about this, Yue Ling's eyes started to water.

He forced down the emotions in his heart and breathed in a deep breath. He then cupped his hands together and bowed to Yue Yang, saying with a choked voice, "Xiao San, Second Uncle was wrong last time, Second Uncle was ignorant! Please do not hold my thousands of wrongdoings to you in your heart..."

If it was him, Yue Ling thought that he wouldn't be so

magnanimous like Yue Yang, letting bygones be bygones.

If he had become an Innate himself, with regards to his third brother Yue Qiu who always criticised him or his first brother Yue Shan who always bullied him in the past, would he be willing to give them a few pointers, or teach their sons?

Would he be able to be like Yue Yang, his nephew, and be magnanimous in his heart?

Obviously, he wouldn't...

Yue Ling understood it now. His nephew Yue Yang, other than surpassing him so much in terms of strength, he was also far superior to him in terms of temperament and morals.

Yue Ling who was so touched that his heart was feeling all tingly, didn't know that the reason why Yue Yang agreed to teach Yue Feng was because he didn't want things to get complicated. Yue Yang didn't want Yue Ling to sigh and complain to him every time. Yue Yang's way of thinking was as such – if Elder Yue Hai returned, he would also suggest the same thing. At that time, it might not be possible for him to reject Elder Yue Hai anyway. Hence it would be better to agree to it right now, although Yue Feng was still young and didn't actually need to be taught much. Even Yue Ling was capable of teaching his own son the basics.

“Right now, you should first teach your son about the basics. Tall buildings come from strong foundations, the sturdier you lay out his foundation knowledge, the stronger he would grow in the

future.” Yue Yang took out a white pearl that came from the Avian’s body from his Lich Ring and gave it to Yue Ling to motivate him, “I didn’t bring anything because I was in a hurry. Give this Gold-ranked Level 5 magic crystal to Yue Feng. If I’m not mistaken, his guardian beast was quite a good one. Tell him to raise it well!”

“It’s Gold-ranked Level 5?” Second Uncle Yue Ling happily accepted it.

The moment he saw it, he almost jumped in shock.

Was it a light-type magic crystal of Gold-ranked Level 5?

That’s wrong. He had never seen that kind of magic crystal before. This didn’t seem like a beast’s magic crystal, a Giant Dragon’s, nor the Goblin Race’s Inner Dan. What kind of creature had a magic core like this?

It looked extremely clear and pure, it seemed like it would be very good for cultivating Yue Feng’s guardian beast.

It was not that Yue Ling had never seen a Gold-ranked magic crystal before, but he was moved because Yue Yang had given him a Gold-ranked Magic Core straight away... The magic core felt kind of heavy in his hands as he felt an inexplicable shame in his heart. Not only has his nephew forget about his wrongdoings and didn’t take revenge on him, he had even supported him with all he could.

Thinking about how he ignored his nephew before, even to the point of mocking and ridiculing him...

How could he not feel guilty and ashamed of it all?

If Yue Ling knew that all the Avians that Yue Yang killed in the Sky Shrine were all Gold-ranked, and that he had given him the worst one of all, he probably wouldn't feel so guilty anymore.

"I still have a few more of those stuff. When Yue Feng's guardian beast finished absorbing this one, I will give him another one!" Yue Yang didn't explain much and immediately left.

"Did he get these things from the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and above?" Although Yue Ling couldn't recognize it, he knew that this was definitely good stuff. After admiring it for a long time, he suddenly remembered that his son Yue Feng was still in the library waiting for his good news, hence he hurriedly ran back. He simply couldn't wait to tell his son about the good news.

Right now, Yue Ling's only hope was his younger son, Yue Feng.

He didn't hope for Yue Feng to have an abnormal strength like Yue Yang or his unimaginable growth, he only hoped that his son could also become an Innate in the future, rising amongst ten thousand over other practitioners. Even if Yue Feng had to cultivate for two hundred years, it was fine if he could reach Innate in the end. Yue Ling hoped that Yue Feng would fulfil his wish of becoming an Innate that he couldn't realize. As for Yue Tian and Yue Yan, he should just forget about them. Let alone Yue Yang,

even Yue Ling didn't think that they deserve forgiveness!

In the Yue Clan Castle Plaza, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers were practicing their martial arts.

They had not heard that Yue Yang had returned.

Only Hui Tai Lang, whose nose was especially sharp, immediately skipped over with its tails wagging left and right to welcome its master, the moment it smelled its master's unique smell.

Yue Yang waved his hands towards his excited clansmen, and immediately became like a superstar, surrounded by his clansmen all around. He was escorted by the clansmen crowd to the plaza... With regards to the clansmen, of course Yue Yang decided to praise and give them some monetary rewards. He knew they needed those.

Clansmen like Lin Lei and Lin Miao who had took the initiative to join his side at the beginning was rewarded with a Bronze-ranked Weapon each.

This made them so proud that their faces turned red.

They were so excited that they prostrated themselves to show their appreciation!

A Bronze-ranked weapon was not worth their over-reaction, but

they were really thankful for Yue Yang's kind thoughts.

Yue Yang smiled and threw a few pearls towards Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and Li Brothers.

When he received the Gold-ranked Level 5 pearl, Fatty Hai was like a pervert seeing a naked girl, the drool in his mouth flowed out like waterfall.

Hui Tai Lang also surrounded Yue Yang and rubbed itself on him over and over again, looking extremely anxious.

It knew that it definitely had its share, but its mouth was too impatient, wanting to eat. It was the same type as Fatty Hai. If they weren't man and wolf, they might even be mistaken for brothers... When a few demon hearts appeared, it didn't even bother to chew, swallowing them straight into its stomach. The Lightning Mammoth, King Kong Demon Ape, Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle and the others were almost jealous to death. It was a pity that even if there were extras for them, they wouldn't be able to endure the evil demonic qi in the demon hearts. Only Hui Tai Lang, the abnormal wolf, could consume those demon hearts.

"Don't look at me with those starving puppy eyes..." Yue Yang couldn't stand the gazes of those beasts, hence he threw them some Demon Leopards', Storm Wolves' and Flaming Lions' magic cores, all silver-ranked. The King Kong Demon Ape was so happy that it howled out loudly, drumming its chest in excitement to show its joy.

“I am ready. Where are we going to go next? Tong Tian Tower? Demon Abyss? I will go wherever you want me to!” Fatty Hai asked as he smiled.

“It’s not that I don’t have a destination, but anyone below Innate would be instantly killed over there.” When Yue Yang said this, Fatty Hai was so scared that his heart almost exploded.

“Forget I asked.” Fatty Hai shook his hands uselessly.

“Give us a little more time. Although it is a little arrogant for us to say this, sooner or later, we will definitely become Innates!” Ye Kong clenched his fists resolutely. The current Ye Kong was no longer that Ye Kong who almost starved to death in the Tong Tian Tower the other day.

“I will give you a year’s time. No, nine months. If you don’t work hard, I will go to the Heaven Realm first. The gate to Heaven Realm only opens once in a hundred years. See to it yourself!” Yue Yang decided to pressurize Ye Kong and the others. They don’t have much time, so if they don’t put in 200% effort, they wouldn’t be able to make it in time. Ye Kong and the others were dumbstruck when they heard him. However, they revealed an extremely resolute, serious expression afterwards.

“Yes, we will definitely make it!” Ye Kong clenched his fists tight and gave Yue Yang his word. He then shouted out to Fatty Hai and the others, “Come, let’s continue to practice!”

“It won’t do if I’m afraid of you!” Fatty Hai howled out, shutting

his eyes and roaring like an injured animal.

He understood clearly the meaning of Yue Yang's deadline. It was the separation line between an ordinary person and a true warrior.

If they didn't manage to enter the Heaven Realm before the Heaven Realm Gate closes, they would be thrown away by Yue Yang. After a hundred years, even if Yue Yang returned from the Heaven Realm, they would probably have already become a nobody, reaching their maximum capabilities and would not be able to improve anymore... How many more years can they live? If they didn't work hard during their younger years, when their bones and blood channels have matured as they grew older and their fighting spirit had all been burnt out, how much combat power can they give?

Furthermore, if Yue Yang went to Heaven Realm, the difference in strength between them would be far too great.

Yue Yang who cultivated in Heaven Realm for a hundred years would definitely improve to a much higher realm. Even if he returned to the Soaring Dragon Continent, he would only visit his family... At that time, would Yue Yang still be someone they could look up to?

At that time, he would definitely be an existence that they wouldn't hope to catch up to even in their dreams!

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others were pressured by the urgency of time. Princess Qian Qian and the others also felt anxious, maybe

even more than Fatty Hai and the others.

They had to follow him. Separated for a hundred years was something that they would never accept. If they were only friends, they might not follow him to the end. They could still be friends after a hundred years. However, he was their lover. If they couldn't be together, everything would be done for!

More pressingly, Yue Yang was even preparing to attack the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace.

This was the first step to enter the Heaven Realm.

At the same time , this was also a test for Yue Yang. Through the Prison Emperor's test, Yue Yang had to be able to defeat the sealed Heaven Realm's warriors, in order to be able to survive in the Heaven Realm.

When Yue Yang returned to the Little Flower Garden, he started to tell the girls about how he managed to clear the the Three Worlds Shrines Quest. He had not even managed to bring them into the grimoire world to look around when Princess Qian Qian suddenly grabbed his collar and glared at him with her tigress eyes, "There's no more time, let's practice!"

Yue Yang had actually wanted to bathe with the sickly beauty first and enjoy his happy sexual life before he start to practice. He never thought that the tigress girl would be so anxious.

Since it was rare that she took the initiative to request a practice session with him, Yue Yang agreed naturally.

The sickly beauty giggled and pulled at Yue Bing and Yi Nan, “Then we shall go into the grimoire world and built a little house ourselves. There’s nothing inside right? We can take turns to built our new house... When Qian Qian is tired, Luo Hua can go out and practice! Let’s go, let’s not disturb Princess Qian Qian’s practice!”

The ‘let’s not disturb Princess Qian Qian’s practice’ was of course an excuse. Usually, Princess Qian Qian could practice her skills on her own. If she wanted to practice with Yue Yang, she obviously meant the [Body Fusion] cultivation.

This was the way the sickly beauty tried to give privacy to Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yang.

If the girls weren’t there, maybe Princess Qian Qian could relax more.

Seeing the sickly beauty and the others entering into the grimoire world one by one under Xiao Wen Li’s guidance, Princess Qian Qian’s face started to turn red, “Go and bathe first, your body is covered in sweat, so smelly!”

Looking at her cute reaction, Yue Yang was moved and couldn’t help but to reach out and forcefully hug the tigress girl who was pretending to be angry.

Thoroughly enchanted, forgetting the situation, he forced a kiss on the beauty who was still struggling in his arms...

Chapter 317 – Why Do You Need To Look Elsewhere, There's One Right Here!

Princess Qian Qian was flustered and wanted to avoid him, but Yue Yang was extremely quick. Even though she tried to move her face, she was still kissed by him in the end.

Princess Qian Qian couldn't really feel the sensation of being kissed because she immediately struggled free forcefully.

“Are you asking for a beating?!” Princess Qian Qian raised her fist and was about to beat him up, but she felt rather weak. If he hugged her again, she might just give in to him. This is bad, would she really become a princess who became pregnant before marriage? Princess Qian Qian was extremely flustered, her heart was beating very quickly. With a red face, she pushed Yue Yang away and said, “Don't come near me, or I'll be really angry! Go and bathe! I've never really met such a rude brat like you...”

“Ha!” Yue Yang knew that he wouldn't be able to take advantage of her if he was too impatient. This tigress would not be able to run away from him anyway, so he would just take it slow.

Smiling smugly, he turned around and left.

Princess Qian Qian was both angry and flustered at the same time, she really wanted to kick him.

However, she was afraid that the situation would become like

that time in Cloud Peak Lake, where she got her leg caught by him when she was trying to kick him. Then he pushed her down and pressed his body on top of her... Princess Qian Qian thought about how her pants had torn that day. Maybe that brat had even seen her secret place already. She immediately become even more embarrassed, that even her ears turned red.

She only returned to her senses after a long time.

Rubbing her lips, she remembered Yue Yang's sneak kiss just now.

The feeling of being forcefully kissed was kind of strange. It was really an indescribable feeling, it's a pity that it was too fast, she couldn't feel it too clearly then.

When Princess Qian Qian thought about it again, her face immediately turned red again, as she secretly scolded herself.

Idiot, you let that brat took advantage of you, and you even thought it was a pity that you didn't feel it too clearly!

Deciding to forget everything about the kiss, Princess Qian Qian straightened her clothes, afraid that the girls would suddenly come out and found out something amiss about her. After that was done, she rubbed her butt a little. Just now when she was struggling fiercely, she felt some kind of hard thing on her butt... It's definitely that brat's 'thing'! When Princess Qian Qian remembered that she had seen his 'thing' a few times before, her face immediately turned red again.

That brat, he really had strong sexual urges and was bold enough to pursue them. Seems like she was really in danger.

It's just that her old man had not returned yet, otherwise she would have forced Yue Yang to talk with him. They could at least marry secretly. If she didn't have any status, get eaten and become a knocked-up princess, wouldn't it be really embarrassing? The more Princess Qian Qian think, the more worried she become. She really wanted to look for Yue Yang and check whether he had finished bathing, but she was afraid that he would misunderstand and thought that she was trying to peek at him.

When Yue Yang returned from his bath, his body was covered with steam.

But he didn't tease Princess Qian Qian anymore, looking all like 'i'm a perfect gentleman.'

Of course, the more Yue Yang behaved this way, the more worried Princess Qian Qian became...

He already kissed her anyway, why would holding hands matter now?

Luo Hua, Wu Xia and the others were not here anyway, she would just be wasting her strength if she tried to compete with this shameless bastard!

When they started cultivating, Princess Qian Qian slowly calmed down and started to concentrate her mind to cultivation. Princess Qian Qian, who didn't have any further reservations in her heart, also had an unspeakable harmony training with Yue Yang. Their compatibility were only slightly lesser than Yue Yang's compatibility with Xue Wu Xia.

Princess Qian Qian realized that the reason she wasn't able to harmonize with Yue Yang before was because she still had reservations in her heart. Now that the girls were all gone and there were only the two of them here, she had become completely relaxed. Their practice session proceeded very smoothly, as if they were made of one body. Princess Qian Qian was secretly happy when she found out that their compatibility was actually pretty good. If not for Xue Wu Xia, she would probably be Yue Yang's best partner. Since their [Body Fusion] practice started off well, Princess Qian Qian became even more accepting of Yue Yang. She focused her mind on him, allowing his Innate Qi to course through her body and unblock her blood channels.

When her blood channels were unblocked, she felt some kind of pain.

But Princess Qian Qian actually liked the painful sensation. She didn't mind the pain, because she was extremely happy with Yue Yang's gentle soothing afterwards.

That's right, it was indeed a wonderful feeling, just like the time when she was young. She had fallen on the ground during her sword practice and was injured, so she was crying.

Then, her father who saw her slowly patted her head and wiped away her tears... It was that kind of gentleness that made her happy. This bastard was really similar to her father. Both of them would never speak words of love, they were both too proud for that. No matter how much they love her, they would never speak of them. She remembered that her father had said this to her before, "Although you have grown up, you still have not learnt how to take care of yourself, let alone others. You have to find a boy who knows how to take care of you. He might be over-possessive of you, he might not know how to be warm to you and flatter you, but it's okay as long as he has you in his heart, and would always try to protect you secretly."

That bastard Yue Yang, might probably be the kind of man that her father had told her before!

He couldn't say flowery words to flatter her, but she knew he had her in his heart, even though she was clumsy and didn't know how to react to him. Right now, he was even accompanying her by her side, just like how her father had accompanied her in the past.

After she grew up, her father's loving figure had slowly disappeared.

It was replaced by Yue Yang's figure instead. Yue Yang, the thread that she would never be able to cut through and the tangle that she wouldn't be able to undo for her whole life.

When they were practicing, time flew by very quickly. In just a moment, six hours had already passed. Luo Hua City Mistress and the others were starving, so they had come out from the grimoire

world, led by Xiao Wen Li. When Princess Qian Qian saw how Luo Hua City Mistress was looking at her with a weird smile, her face immediately blushed again. At first they had only agreed to practice for three hours and then it would be Luo Hua's turn, but she had completely forgotten the time. But Luo Hua City Mistress didn't mind at all. Instead, she followed Yue Yu to the kitchen to learn cooking from her. Luo Hua was determined to make a delicious dinner for Yue Yang.

Amongst the girls, Yue Yu's cooking was the best. Xue Wu Xia, who could do everything under the sun, was also not bad. The third best was the sickly beauty.

The sickly beauty's cooking skills were only so and so before she became a wife.

However, the moment she become Yue Yang's wife, her cooking skills had grown by leaps and bounds inadvertently. Furthermore, she become more willing to cook. Last time, she would rather eat simple meals and spend more time to study Runes. Now, it was the complete opposite.

Luo Hua City Mistress and Yi Nan could only cook simple meals. It could be eaten, but it was definitely far from sumptuous.

As for Yue Bing, she couldn't cook at all, but she had no problem in helping with washing vegetables and so on.

Amongst the girls, the only one who couldn't cook at all, couldn't even step into the kitchen and could only eat, was Princess Qian

Qian... Since young, Jun Wu You had raised her strictly as if she was a guy. He even thought of raising her to be the next emperor. She had never had to worry about her meals. Even when she went out to train, Yue Yu would always accompany her by her side, so she never had to cook for herself her whole life.

“I’ll go and help out too!” Princess Qian Qian was feeling rather regretful. If the girls hadn’t come out to make dinner because they were starving, she would have still continued to practice [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang. However, in order to show to the girls that she had no feelings whatsoever for Yue Yang at all, she decided to avoid him and go to the kitchen to help.

“Don’t, people will get sick stomach from the food you made.” Yue Yang was shocked when he heard her, hence he quickly stopped her.

“What did you say?!” Princess Qian Qian exploded. Although she can’t cook, her food would definitely not end up as poison. How dare he belittle her?

“Qian Qian, don’t be anxious if you want to learn. How about next time? Let me cook for today.” Yue Yang hurriedly helped her brother to mediate the situation while Luo Hua City Mistress giggled in secret. She also couldn’t cook really well, but she had no problem cooking an edible meal. Even though it was not really delicious, at least the people who ate it wouldn’t get sick. Seeing the giggling Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian became very gloomy. Even though they were all girls... How could her cooking talent be so bad?

It's not that she had not tried before, but her food always ended up burnt black or half-cooked.

She didn't have the talent for it since young, and she didn't have any interest in it too. Princess Qian Qian had already given up on improving her cooking skills from the beginning.

However, she felt kind of annoyed when she heard Yue Yang's comment just now. A wise man once said that "The way to a man's heart is through his stomach.". She shouldn't fail in this aspect.

Princess Qian Qian didn't insist on going to the kitchen to cook personally, but she had changed her perception towards cooking.

She decided to work hard on her own in secret. Someday, she would definitely make something that would make Yue Yang unable to resist eating even though he's stuffed!

After Yue Yang's return, the girls returned to their normal schedule.

Everyone prioritised practicing with Yue Yang everyday. If they have time, they would go into the grimoire world to continue building their house. Everyday, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress takes up most of Yue Yang's time, each of them taking up five hours... This was because the longer they practiced, the better their harmony and the better the effects of [Body Fusion] would be. This made their abilities improve greatly day by day, showing obvious results every single day.

On the fifth day, Princess Qian Qian's Guardian Beast, White Tiger, levelled up. It even faintly showed the potential of ranking up to Diamond-rank from its Platinum-rank.

The moment Qian Qian's White Tiger which had a shared body with her turned into a Holy Beast, she would also turn into an Innate.

Luo Hua City Mistress was slightly slower. On the ninth day, Luo Hua City Mistress' Guardian Beast Light Spirit 'Aurora' had also finally levelled up, with the help of Yue Yang's Innate Qi, God's Dew, Water of Life, Five Colours of Divine Light, all these extremely rare treasures of the world. It levelled up from Gold-ranked Level 5 to Platinum-ranked Level 4. Luo Hua City Mistress' Aurora was different from Princess Qian Qian's White Tiger, it would need at least a month before it could level up again. However, Luo Hua City Mistress still had her Three-tailed Snow Fox, who managed to rank up to Platinum-ranked Level 3 with the help of Yue Yang's Nirvana's Flame, Heaven Rune and the Avian Leader's White Pearl.

Although it had not attained wisdom yet, the Three-tailed Snow Fox had already possessed some kind of intelligence. Amongst all non-humanoid beasts, its intelligence might even be higher than Hui Tai Lang's.

“Will she really become a fox lady in the end?” Yue Yang couldn't be sure, but he realized that the Three-tailed Snow Fox had a different evolution path than Hui Tai Lang.

Hui Tai Lang was like its master, a strange exception that was

always different from the others.

Seems like it would not have a humanoid form even when it had already evolved to Holy Beast.

The Three-tailed Snow Fox, on the other hand, was slowly evolving into a humanoid appearance.

Yue Yang secretly sweated. This Three-tailed Snow Fox wouldn't be like the seductive [Daji](#) who had destroyed the whole kingdom, right?

(Shiro: Daji is the name of a fox spirit famous in chinese classics.)

After ten days of [Body Fusion] cultivation, Yue Yang's compatibility with Luo Hua and Qian Qian had greatly increased. With regards to feelings, they were also growing steadier by each passing day. Inadvertently, they had started to accept his hugs. Although they used the [Body Fusion] as a reason for hugging, sometimes when his 'thing' that doesn't know restraint brushed across their thighs or butt, they would only be embarrassed, but they would not be angry. Mostly, they pretended that nothing happened.

Sometimes, they were too exhausted from training that they decided to sleep in his embrace straight away, instead of returning back to their rooms.

Although Yue Yang didn't take advantage of the situation and push them down, the two girls had already accepted their fate with this man that was their destined natural predator. They didn't

resist him when he suddenly sneaked a kiss or tried to touch them in various places, but they still defended their last fort.

Yue Yang wasn't anxious at all. Rather than forcing them, why not go with the flow?

Someday, maybe not long in the future, there might be some kind of external factors that would enable him to overcome that last hurdle in their heart.

“Your big-boobed lady has given you news. She invited you to meet at the Yue Clan Castle at nine in the morning tomorrow.” Princess Qian Qian had left the Little Flower Garden for two hours in order to ask around for his father's news. Unexpectedly, she didn't find any news about her father, but found the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Tian Fa's reply in the Thief's Guild instead.

“Really?” Yue Yang was overjoyed when he heard her. It's been a long time since he saw the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, he actually missed her a little.

“Look at your happy face... Aren't you just thinking of looking at big boobs?” Princess Qian Qian's voice was filled with jealousy. She had almost said to Yue Yang, if you want to look at boobs, there's a pair right here, it's just that this princess doesn't dress in revealing clothings like that Tian Fa!

Chapter 318 – Snatch Him, I Will Definitely Have This Man!

When he met Phoenix Fairy Beauty again, Yue Yang realized that she was a little thin. Maybe it was because she had just recovered from her injuries, but her beauty was still as charming as ever.

Of course, Yue Yang had charged straight towards her snow-white breasts, preparing to bury his head in it.

“Bad little boy, let’s talk about serious matters, don’t joke around.” Yue Yang’s forehead was stopped by one of the Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s finger. Her ultimately beautiful face revealed a smile that would even blind the sun.

“The ‘serious matter’ is actually quite simple, we’ll attack the Prison Emperor Divine Palace in 2 weeks. That’s all. Hot babe, why don’t we put the important matters aside and busy ourselves with our more personal matters?” When Yue Yang stepped in to hug her, Phoenix Fairy Beauty quickly avoided him. Instead, she snuck behind Yue Yang and hugged him from the back. Her lips moved closer to Yue Yang’s ear and lightly kissed it, “Sorry, I think I won’t be able to help you. Every person who has the right to enter the Heaven Realm have agreed to a peace treaty, so we can’t kill one another due to personal grudges or revenge. Everything is decided by that right... If you want to kill Prison Emperor Divine General, I’m afraid it wouldn’t be easy. Although he has slept for five thousand years, his strength has almost recovered to normal. If he fought with Zhi Zun, they would probably be equally matched. I think killing him will not be an easy feat. Furthermore, he has many helpers. We won’t be able to defeat him with just the

two of us.”

“What if we have another old turtle?” The sensation of having a pair of huge breasts pressed against his back was indescribably wonderful for Yue Yang. Immediately, a certain shameful part of him become hard.

“That old turtle only has high defense, its offense is lacking, so its useless.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty seemed to understand that Yue Yang’s feelings had stirred. Her hands that were on his chest previously slowly descended downwards, rubbing his stomach. Then, she inched downwards a little more, making Yue Yang so aroused that he almost wanted to find a place nearby the Yue Clan Castle Gate and push her down.

“My attack power is quite good!” Yue Yang advertised blatantly.

“What kind of attack power are you talking about? Hmm?” Her cherry lips besides his ears seductively asked, as she panted heavily. Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s hands seductively brushed across and accidentally bumped onto his excited and energetic thing. Yue Yang’s heartbeat sped up a hundred times. Gulping, Yue Yang pretended to be a gentleman and answered: “All of my attack power is pretty good, do you want to try testing them?”

“Where are we going to test it?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty kissed Yue Yang’s ears lightly, her breath heavy.

“Your house!” Yue Yang decided to use the cheaper option. They could go to a hotel, but other than wasting their money for a room,

they would also need to be alert in case the police raided the hotel.

“Why not go to your house instead? I want to test it out on your bed, it will be more exciting that way...” Phoenix Fairy Beauty lifted her thigh slightly, slowly rubbing them across Yue Yang’s thigh while her hand had probed inside his pants, as if she was trying to grab an interesting object.

“Apologies, his bed already has someone on it.”

Xue Wu Xia’s voice suddenly came out from the back. With a book in her hands, she walked past the two people.

Acting as if Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty were not there, she added, “Please continue, I’m only passing by.”

Yue Yang sweated.

Indeed, this girl was worried about him.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty giggled out as she pinched Yue Yang’s cheeks after letting go of her hand from Yue Yang’s front, “Bad little boy, next time, if you want to have an affair, remember to find a deserted place. Don’t let your wife catch you red-handed, you’ll really be pitiful then. Do you need to kneel and grovel yourself to seek forgiveness later at home? Don’t tell me you are a submissive husband!”

Yue Yang had a very rebellious heart, so he also pinched Phoenix

Fairy Beauty's smooth cheeks, "Hot babe, I think I was caught red-handed because you were seducing me just now, isn't that right?"

Phoenix Fairy Beauty shrugged her shoulders elegantly when she heard him. Her ample breasts bounced because of this action.

"Are we still going to my house?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty blew at Yue Yang's ears.

"Yes." Yue Yang thought that anyone who refused her offer was [Dong Fang Bu Bai](#).

(Shiro: Some character in a famous novel who castrated himself in order to learn a martial art skill. His name literally meant 'Undefeated From East to West')

"My bed is very big, soft and comfortable..." Phoenix Fairy Beauty smiled with a smile that could topple a whole kingdom. Yue Yang thought that the phrase 'enchantress won't compensate loss' has perfectly described this girl. No wonder King of Zhou could be seduced by the fox spirit until he was confused. Turns out that seductress who could seduce men completely in body and soul truly existed. They were enchantress that could slowly choke these men with gentleness.

"Really?" Yue Yang's eyes lit up when he heard her. His blissful sexual life was beckoning right at him.

"Why, isn't this our little Yue Yang?" Xue Wu Xia who had disappeared just now suddenly re-appeared in front of Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty. She held her Ancient Book in her hand

and asked Yue Yang curiously, “I seemed to have heard about you planning to go somewhere?”

“I’m going to her house!” Her clear eyes that was staring straight at him made Yue Yang become slightly flustered.

“What are you going to do in her house?” Xue Wu Xia’s smile was as bright as the sun, completely without any clouds, hail, thunder, lightning, rain or storm.

“I’m going to test if her bed was really big and soft and comfortable.” Yue Yang replied, stating his clear motives and logical reason.

“You need tools to measure her bed, have you brought your tools?” Xue Wu Xia continued to smile, her expression was filled with gentleness as she reached out and straightened Yue Yang’s clothes. She even took out her handkerchief and wiped Yue Yang’s face, as if she was a virtuous wife sending her husband out to work.

“I have the tools on my body!” Yue Yang sweated. He definitely wouldn’t leave his ‘tool’ at home, otherwise he would really become Dong Fang Bu Bai.

“That’s good then. Please work hard, I will be waiting for you at home.” Xue Wu Xia’s smile was like morning dawn. In the end, she had even gave Yue Yang a fleeting kiss on his lips, just like how a wife would when she send her husband off to work. Phoenix Fairy Beauty was very jealous when she saw this. Her eyes flickered a little when she suddenly realized that she had met a strong

opponent.

It's not strong opponent in terms of strength, but a strong opponent in terms of love.

Originally, she was only a little interested in Yue Yang.

不是滋味, 非把姐姐看中的男子抢走不可。

She never thought of loving him till death do them part, or to the point that she would marry him and only him. She was only a little upset that her sister had favoured and protected him. She wanted to snatch him away from her sister.

However, afterwards, she went through a life or death situation with Yue Yang. She started to feel that this boy was actually quite to her liking.

Although she hadn't decided to be with him forever, she couldn't help but to want to tease him. She felt really happy especially when he was drooling over her charm. She felt a great satisfaction to her vanity as a woman. She knew that she looked good and sexy, but other men's perverted gaze actually made her feel disgusted. They looked at her as if they wanted to possess, violate and insult her body... This boy's gaze, however, was completely different. He was more of appreciating her beauty and gazing at her in admiration. Although he was also lustful, it wasn't his main feeling towards her. He liked her charm more than her body, more than the two large pieces of flesh on her chest.

Yue Yang's gaze made her felt pleased.

She was pleased with his appreciation, his admiration and his feelings. Seducing him gave her a sense of accomplishment.

However, even though Phoenix Fairy Beauty thought that her charm was unrivalled, she realized that even with her seduction, she wouldn't be able to occupy the number one position in his heart. Although his lust was on fire, his gaze was never lost, especially when this girl who was holding a book appeared. He had immediately changed from a frivolous, perverted boy to an obedient boy.

Maybe he was only pretending to be an obedient boy. However, at least he respected this book-holding girl, that's why he did that.

He pretended to be a gentleman for Xue Wu Xia, but acted frivolously with her.

This was the difference.

This was the difference in treatment because of her position in his heart was lower than that girl's. If he regarded her as the first one in his heart, he would also treat her the same way.

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked at Xue Wu Xia and realized that this girl who was always carrying a book was giving her an extremely dangerous feeling.

This kind of dangerous feeling was really hard to describe.

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty definitely felt it, but she couldn't understand the reason.

Nobody had ever given her such a dangerous feeling before. Nobody. This was not the difference between their strength, but their charms...

As one of the three heads of Demonic Palace, the great Tian Fa, Phoenix Fairy Beauty never thought that a twenty-year old young lady could actually defeat her. Xue Wu Xia could even defeat her completely. Possessing both charms and talents, it was the first time that she felt defeat in terms of attractiveness to another girl. This was the first time it happened for a thousand years. Other than her sister, could there really be a girl that was better than her?

Phoenix Fairy Beauty started to carefully observe Xue Wu Xia, who was smiling brightly like the sun that thawed the cold snow. She realized that Xue Wu Xia was indeed a strong opponent!

"May I ask who is this?" Xue Wu Xia pretended to have just noticed Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

"She, she is the customer whose bed I want to check." Yue Yang introduced her as such.

"Do you want to bring her home to test the bed at home? It's bigger, softer and more comfortable... There are a lot of girls too, and there's definitely space for her to sleep on the bed. Why do you

have to go to her house and trouble her? Just bring her home. Although her chest is slightly big, she won't take up too much space." Xue Wu Xia's words made Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt like she had just been slapped hard on the cheek.

"You're really confident. Aren't you afraid that you're inviting a wolf into the house?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty glared at Xue Wu Xia.

(Shiro: 'inviting wolf into the house' – idiom for asking for trouble)

"In my eyes, a female wolf is actually the same as a female goat, because they are both females." Xue Wu Xia calmly met Phoenix Fairy Beauty's gaze, then smiled slightly, "My confidence depends on whether that female customer would like our Yue Yang's bed. If she doesn't like it, then my confidence will grow bigger. If she likes it, then my confidence will be like my chest, that couldn't grow bigger even though I want them to."

"Interesting young lady. Since it's that way, I should really test out the bed at your house and see whether I like it or not!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty actually didn't want to bother about the Prison Emperor Divine General at first, because she felt that it would be very difficult for Yue Yang to kill the Prison Emperor Divine General.

Prison Emperor Divine General had stayed alive for six thousand years. Although his powers had greatly decreased from last time, after sleeping for a few thousand years, he had recovered most of them.

He was not in the level of Thousand Goblins Sect Leader nor Shun Tian.

Yue Yang wanted to kill the Prison Emperor Divine General. It's not impossible, but at least, it's impossible right now. Because no matter how fast this talented abnormal improve, he wouldn't be able to reach the strength of an immortal who stayed alive for thousands of years. In comparison, the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian, had only lived for 900 years. Compared to the Prison Emperor Divine General who had lived for more than six thousand years, he was practically heavens apart.

Fortunately the Prison Emperor Divine General had been sleeping for thousands of years in order to recover his injuries. Otherwise, no one amongst the younger generations could be his match.

Right now, after being incited by Xue Wu Xia, she kind of have the thought of seeing this through to the end.

Although she was actually only following Yue Yang to play, to see how he was going to defeat the Prison Emperor Divine General... Of course, more importantly, she intended to seduce this boy to come under her pomegranate-dyed skirt, and become the lord over her. Then, she intended to defeat this twenty-year-old young lady who could actually threaten her.

This young lady, if she grew up in the future, she would definitely be a person like her older sister.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty realized that she had really belittled her last time. Seeing her improvement speed, other than Yue Yang, no other people could come close to her. She was even improving faster than her when she was younger...

“Very good, since it’s that way, I shall represent our Yue Yang’s bed and welcome you.” Xue Wu Xia smiled lightly, pulling onto Yue Yang’s arms, as naturally as a newly-wed wife holding his husband’s arms. She also took out a group teleportation golden-coloured teleportation gate. When Yue Yang turned around and looked at Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Xue Wu Xia immediately punished him like a wife punishing her husband, giving him a hard pinch on his butt, “You still dare to look? Your eyeballs are about to drop to the ground!”

“...” Phoenix Fairy Beauty knew that she had been tricked, but in the end she decided to follow through.

She didn’t want the man at all, but since there were people to fight him over with, she shall play with them.

The saying of “unclaimed lands can be fought over” also explained this logic. No matter what, she must defeat this young lady who can make her feel jealous. She would definitely not let this girl, who was like a second older sister, surpass her.

No matter in terms of strength or beauty, she would definitely not allow it.

Furthermore, Yue Yang was quite an interesting boy.

He wasn't like other men that were annoying.

As for handling this perverted, frivolous and bold little scoundrel, it seemed like she had to protect her last defense. She would definitely not let him push her for more and be eaten up by him.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty watched Xue Wu Xia and Yue Yang backs as they disappeared through the teleportation gate. She then looked up to the sky, and a thought suddenly crossed her mind: Elder sister, I must have that man. I will definitely snatch him away, do you mind?

Oh-so-mighty Zhi Zun, what would you say when you see your younger sister snatching the boy that you treasure?

Your expression, it would definitely be very interesting, right?

Chapter 319 – Body Fusion, Level Up, Stepping Into A New Realm

The arrival of Phoenix Fairy Beauty increased the girl's competitiveness.

Only the Sickly Beauty had welcomed her. Forget about Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian, even Yue Bing had a treated her as an enemy, as if her brother was about to be snatched away by this Great Sky Demoness.

However, her arrival also had benefits, and that was to provoke the girls into cultivating harder.

Because of the disparity in strength and also the threat of a rival in love, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress would stay with Yue Yang whenever he had free time. On one hand it was to keep watch of Phoenix Fairy Beauty and prevent her from seducing Yue Yang; on the other hand it was also to show their own charms so that Yue Yang would not forget about them because of a new person... As for Xue Wu Xia who had invited Phoenix Fairy Beauty, she appeared to still be the same as before, completely not caring about her. Other than practicing [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang, she would normally read a book.

From the very beginning, Phoenix Fairy Beauty had never placed these girls in her eyes. In her eyes, even if these young ladies cultivated for another two hundred years they would still not reach half her own strength.

She felt that her only opponent is the usually quiet Xue Wu Xia. However, before two days had even passed, Phoenix Fairy Beauty greatly changed her point of view.

These young ladies' cultivation speed was very fast. Forget about comparing them to normal people, their speed was even faster than exceptional geniuses by a hundred times. In those days, even under her sister's careful guidance, she had not reached this kind of speed..... If they continued at this kind of speed, forget about two hundred years, maybe twenty years would be enough for them to overtake her!

Above all, Yue Yang's [Body Fusion] simply made her gasp in amazement.

In the past she had never seen this kind of cultivation method before. This brat Yue Yang, not only could improve himself, he could also improve together with his sweethearts. Also, the more people this brat cultivated with, the more his cultivation speed increased. This.... What kind of ability was this? This wasn't the first time Phoenix Fairy Beauty had seen the ability where two people cultivate together, but it required the two people to either be twin brothers and twin sisters who have a deep understanding of each other. How could there be an ability where you pull a random young lady and start cultivating together?

If a person could randomly find someone and cultivate together, would the words 'Recoil of Madness' still exist?

Forget about normal warriors, even Innate Rankers, when they recklessly cultivate together, would suffer Recoil of Madness and

in the end be reduced to a cripple.

The strangest thing was when Phoenix Fairy Beauty saw Yue Yang use Nirvana Flames to purify the girls' bodies, yet they were not burned to death. Even her body would not be able to withstand the Nirvana's Flame. How was he capable of controlling it and using it to purify the their bodies?

Also, what kind of ability could have produced the pure energy circulating inside these girls? Furthermore, not only could this brat actually understand Ancient Runes, he seemed to have mastered more Ancient Runes than her. As for Heaven Runes, Phoenix Fairy Beauty noticed that the girl called Yue Bing was able to recite ten of them.

On the fifth day, Phoenix Fairy Beauty was extremely surprised. She saw that Yue Yang had helped Princess Qian Qian to level up to the realm of Lesser Innates.

For normal warriors, becoming a Lesser Innate would require at least fifty years of cultivation, even for geniuses it would take at least ten years. However, under this brat's assistance, Princess Qian Qian had only used five days to reach what others would need fifty years to achieve. This speed was simply too hard to believe.

However, Princess Qian Qian was not the only person who levelled up within these five days, Luo Hua City Mistress, Yi Nan and Yue Bing had also received a level up.

Because of Phoenix Fairy Beauty's arrival, Yue Yu stopped

practicing [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang and gave her time with him to Yi Nan and Yue Bing.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty believes that if they continuously cultivated at this kind of speed, these young ladies would only need three years to catch up to her; They would even surpass her if they cultivated for five years. She now understood why Yue Yang could fight against Shun Tian, the Thousand Goblins Sect and Great Demon King Baruth at the age of twenty. The reason was because this brat was able to grasp cultivating methods that no one in the world could use. Under this kind of cultivating speed, forget about Holy Beast's Guidance, being well prepared, accumulating Spirit Qi or eating Spirit Pills. In Yue Yang's words, those are all 'fleeting clouds'.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty mumbled: The reason sister treats him favorably must be because she saw his capabilities right?

Otherwise, based on her disregard towards men generally due to her arrogant temperament, how could she have become his Introducer?

It's also not surprising that Xue Wu Xia would openly challenge her. The answer had already shown itself, and it was because she was his fiancée. As they cultivated together everyday, it would be hard for her to not level up even if she wanted to.

Another two days went by and Luo Hua City Mistress' Three-tailed Snow Fox had levelled up from Platinum-ranked Level 4 to Platinum-ranked Level 5. Yue Yang also begun to think of how to make it rank up.

Once the rank up succeeds, the Three-tailed Snow Fox would unlock its intelligence and truly become a Holy Beast.....

Seeing this, Phoenix Fairy Beauty could not bear it anymore. “I also want to train [Body Fusion] with him. Also, we can exchange and share the mysteries of the Ancient Runes and the Heaven Runes.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty stated her request. She could not bear her own turtle-paced cultivation speed. Before she saw the girls’ improvements, she felt that her cultivation speed was not slow. Other than Sister Zhi Zun, no one could surpass her, not even the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian nor the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader. However, after coming to the Little Flower Garden, within seven days, she felt that she urgently needed to change her thoughts.

“With regards to sharing Heaven Runes and Ancient Runes, we can exchange them one to one. As for training in [Body Fusion], I do not oppose to it, but if you wish to listen to each of our experiences, you need to exchange it with yours.” Xue Wu Xia had already discussed this with the others and had also predicted that Phoenix Fairy Beauty would suggest to practice [Body Fusion].

“Also, when you cultivate with him, we must also be present. You cannot privately cultivate with Yue Yang.” Princess Qian Qian added a condition.

She was afraid that as Phoenix Fairy Beauty cultivated, she would end up doing that certain thing with Yue Yang.

Although Phoenix Fairy Beauty was currently an ally, there was no guarantee that it would be the same in the future. Princess Qian Qian felt that Yue Yang had best not be too intimate with her.

Regarding Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian's conditions, Phoenix Fairy Beauty smiled and did not immediately answer. Instead, she asked Luo Hua City Mistress: "How about you? Is there anything you wish to add?"

Luo Hua City Mistress shrugged her shoulder: "Of course I do. You cannot enjoy any privileges, and only two hours everyday."

Yue Yang had just returned from linking up Yue Bing and Yi Nan's blood channels and only heard the last sentence: "What are you talking about? What two hours?" He was a little curious. Originally, this Phoenix Fairy Beauty could not see eye to eye with the girls. How could she have a secret discussion with them today?

Seeing that Yue Yang had returned, Phoenix Fairy Beauty immediately used her [Charm] Inherent Skill. Her voice became sweet like honey as she sweetly smiled: "I also want your 'that'!"

Yue Yang was slightly startled, but immediately reacted. This girl apparently wants to practice [Body Fusion] with him. However, he immediately refused: "No!"

"Why?" His response truly made Phoenix Fairy Beauty astonished. How could he refuse her?

“.....” Forget about her, even the other girls did not imagine it would become like this.

“Cough, think for a moment, you and me, we are not in any kind of relationship. You are not my fiancée nor my sibling. You are still a woman, having an intimate body contact with men is harmful to your pure reputation.” Yue Yang did not dare say that he was afraid that Phoenix Fairy Beauty would see through his skills and stealthily learnt his Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

Without the Innate Invisible Sword Qi as a foundation, no matter how miraculous [Body Fusion] was, it would not result in leveling up after just a few days of training.

Everything was because Yue Yang possessed the Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

Yue Yang himself was aware that the most special thing he had was the Sword Goddess in his dreams, teaching him the Innate Invisible Sword Qi. Without this, no matter how much effort he put, he would only be on par with Xue Tan Lang and the Prince of Tian Luo. He would not be able to become an Innate at the age of twenty and would still be a weak newbie.

Without the Innate Invisible Sword Qi, Yue Yang would not be able to link up the girls' blood channels, nor would he be able to help them break through to Innate Rank.

[Body Fusion] was only the best bridge. But, in the end, the most important thing was still the Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

Yue Yang did not know what special skills Phoenix Fairy Beauty had. If by any chance she had a mind reading skill that would allow her to slowly explore his secrets, wouldn't he be done for then?

"I have already killed ten thousands of people, how could I be pure? Furthermore, always paying attention to reputation is too tiring!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty smiled.

"Who do you want to fool, you are obviously a virgin, let alone killing ten thousand people, even eight year olds will not believe you." In the course of these few days of interaction, Yue Yang had already made preparation. This Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body would produce an peculiar smell just like the other girls. He believed that that kind of smell was the smell of a virgin. Originally the Sickly Beauty's body also had it, however it had already changed into an extremely fragrant smell, which was more soft and more fragrant. The faintly distinctive smell of unripeness disappeared.

"How did you know?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty was slightly dumbstruck. She had deeply concealed her odor, other than her sister who possessed Divine Eyes, she would never have guessed that this brat could actually see through it. He...how was he able to see through it?

"That can't be... you were actually a virgin?" Princess Qian Qian and the others were also stupefied, only Xue Wu Xia and the Sickly Beauty remained unperturbed.

"Ah!" The Sickly Beauty and Xue Wu Xia had already compared

their bodies because originally their bodies were almost similar. However, they now discovered that there were many different changes between their bodies. The Sickly Beauty's body and skin had become more moisturized. Her breasts, waist, butt, both legs and other parts of the body all had slight changes. These were all the mature characteristics of someone who had become a wife and was different from a virgin like Xue Wu Xia. As for Phoenix Fairy Beauty, although she had dressed up like a lustful Sky Demon, her young eyebrows still remained, her pelvis had not opened, her waist remained soft, her butt was still raised not smooth and round, her skin was still glossy not glowing with the radiance of spring. Compared to the Sickly Beauty, she still had a lot of differences. The only enviable thing was her breasts which were towering tall and straight. She was still a virgin yet had these kind of breasts, if she became a wife, wouldn't it become more exaggerated?

"I guessed it." Yue Yang had accidentally leaked it.

"You had already done it with me, and already broke my important thing. You must take responsibility! Only you had touched me, and also injured my place. If you do not take responsibility, I will fight with you desperately, you heartless thief!" Once Phoenix Fairy Beauty finished, Luo Hua City Mistress sprayed out the water she was drinking.

"Where were you injured?" Yue Yang curiously asked.

"It was that delicate place, very soft and very thin....." Phoenix Fairy Beauty had prepared to explain to Yue Yang in detail.

Yue Yang quickly waved his hand: “That’s baseless accusation, I can guarantee that I did not do such a thing.”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty did not stop: “You had even made it bleed, how could you say there is none? If you say there is none then I will cry to death in front of you!”

When Yue Yang heard it, he patted his chest to express fear and cried for help from the girls: “At that time you were also there, if there was or not you should at least say it. If not why don’t you inspect if I had penetrated it. She is still a virgin, tell me am I wronged or not!”

Xue Wu Xia slightly smiled: “Bouncing Boobs Lady, whether he had broken it or not, I am not too clear about it. However, I can assure that once you train [Body Fusion] with him, it will definitely break. You must think about it clearly! We are all his fiancée, that step will sooner or later happen. If you are an outsider, then you would have suffered losses. Our Xiao San is very skillful in unfaithfulness. We do not dare guarantee that he is well-behaved.....Carefully consider this for a bit!”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty muttered to herself and thought for a bit.

In the end, she smiled: “Don’t try to scare me off. Even his sisters could all cultivate too, it should not matter even if I am not the fiancée! I will cultivate in what Yue Bing and Yi Nan are cultivating in, little thief, if you have the ability then come and try it, maybe you could even gain something from this!”

Yue Yang did not answer and only secretly gulp on his saliva.

If he said that he was not tempted to practice [Body Fusion] with him, he would be lying.

Princess Qian Qian mumbled quietly: Who would push over who, it can't be said for sure....

In the beginning, Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty did not dare use their Innate Qi in practicing [Body Fusion]. They only drew support from the Five Colours of Divine Light and Nirvana Flames, giving the Great Sky Demoness increased control and purified her body.

Yue Yu, who knew what could happen, dragged Yue Bing and Yi Nan inside the Grimoire World to build Yue Yang's new house.

The other girls resisted blushing and remained to monitor Phoenix Fairy Beauty, afraid that this Great Sky Demoness would push Yue Yang down. At the same time, there is still the Sickly Beauty, just in case Yue Yang could not hold back being in heat. The Sickly Beauty, who was already Yue Yang's wife, could wait upon him and vent off the excess heat inside him.

However, the moment they started cultivated, Yue Yang gradually focused into his mind. In the end, he used his instincts to make full use of [Body Fusion], completely forgetting to be on guard.

Of course his vigilance was a bit excessive, because Phoenix Fairy Beauty did not have that kind of thief master ability.

Even if there was, she had never thought about prying his secrets open.

The most important thing that Yue Yang did not know was that, if the Sword Goddess did not pour the Sword Qi, nobody could learn the Innate Invisible Sword Qi. Even if Yue Yang had transcribed it from his memories, compiled them into a book, and distributed it to everyone to learn, this Innate Skill would not be any better than ordinary adventurer's skill [Steel Chopping] or the [Crushing Stone Hammer Technique]. Without Sword Qi, nobody could learn the true Innate Skill, let alone be like Yue Yang, who could release his Sword Qi through his fingers or any part of his body where his blood channels had already been linked.

“Oh my God, I am dying!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was being burned and purified under the Nirvana Flames. She felt both pain and pleasure, as her mouth continued to moan endlessly.

“So noisy!” Yue Yang could not resist the [Charm] Inherent Skill she naturally exuded. In the end, his rationality gradually disappeared.

He pushed Phoenix Fairy Beauty down and looked at her face. Then, he sealed her moaning lips with his.

Limitless amount of Innate Qi flowed into Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who was being burned and purified by the Nirvana Flames. Being

attacked from two sides by the Nirvana Flames and Yue Yang's body on top of her, Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body shuddered... She was still clearly conscious and even felt an indescribable pain, but she could not refuse the process of the Nirvana Rebirth.

If she could persevere to the last moment, her body would be successfully purified. She would shed her feathers and become the a new Great Sky Demoness.

Originally she stagnated at Innate Rank 9, and it was extremely probable that she would make a breakthrough.

Actually her body had already been purified once when she was at the Demon's Palace..... However, that kind of Purification Ritual was too short and only lasted for ten seconds. Based on her Innate Rank 9 strength, she would quickly recover from it. But, with the Nirvana Flame she would be burned continuously. She might need to burn continuously for an hour, or maybe a few hours or longer.

If it were not for the pure energy inside her body providing moisture and recovering from the damage of opening her blood channels, Phoenix Fairy Beauty would have already fainted from the pain.

Inside her body, her blood channels slowly become unobstructed and became wider. Even the blood channels that she did not knew she had were linking up, becoming a new channel.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was in extreme pain, and originally thought of struggling.

However she knew it was the process of Nirvana Rebirth, a miraculous process that she might not have a chance to go through even in a thousand years. It was something others would yearn for in their dreams but would never be able to obtain. She strengthened her resolve to endure, and did not resist Yue Yang's Innate Qi's invasion.

No matter where his two hands burning with Nirvana Flame touched, she could only endure with great effort.

Her clothes had already disappeared, beads of sweat continuously evaporated.

Her smooth skin was burned away and was continuously renewed. The pain from that kind of process was simply too hard to imagine.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty knew there were impurities in her energy, unlike the other girls which were extremely pure. As a result, the pain she needed to endure was more than them and the purification time is longer as well.

“If I die, then I die!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty opened her jade-like arms and firmly hugged Yue Yang. This was the only method she could do in order to endure not to struggle and escape.

In the middle of the Nirvana Flame, countless runes came out from Yue Yang's body and merged with the runes on Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body, forming a new pattern.

Heaven Runes, Ancient Runes continuously merged and shone on Phoenix Fairy Beauty's skin. The runes on their bodies continued to exchange as if they had life. In the end, the runes drifted on the sky, forming a Milky Way-like starry sky made of runes. When the runes touched Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo City Mistress, the runes in their bodies were also roused. As a result, their runes also joined the small ocean of runes.

The Nirvana Flame Pillar soared to the sky.

Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress were different from Phoenix Fairy Beauty. They had already went through many purifications and did not feel any pain from the Nirvana Flames anymore. On the contrary, they felt pleasure from being bathed in the flames of rebirth, just like Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man and the sleepy Thorny Flower Demoness. They were also capable of standing in the Nirvana Flame Pillar and bathe together in Nirvana Flames. Those that could not bear the flames could only remain on the edge of the ocean of runes, but they could still enjoy the evolution process of the runes merging into their bodies.

This process was very long, and could last for more than an hour.

When the Nirvana Flames disappeared, the ocean of runes gradually dulled, and one by one returned to Yue Yang's body. Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Diamond Grimoire suddenly floated out.

It automatically opened to the page where the Inherent Skill and

Guardian Beast was located. Afterwards, a golden light pillar rose to the sky as the [Charm] Inherent Skill, the Guardian Beast and even Phoenix Fairy Beauty herself levelled up in an instant...

Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who was red all over, floated towards the sky about a hundred meter high, from under Yue Yang's body.

Her Qi exploded like a gigantic tsunami, sending strong shock waves everywhere.

Her body unified with the Guardian Beast. Purple-colored wings quickly appeared on her back, extending more than ten meters. A thorned tail appeared on her snow white butt. Small and cute demonic horns appeared on her head. Her ten fingernails gradually became longer, and turned into purple-colored demonic claws. The most obvious of all was her eyes that became purple as if a Demon King's eyes.

A perfect yet beautiful light disk made of deep purple, red-purple, and light purple light revolved around Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body.

These unique signs shows that Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Guardian Beast, the Charm Demon, had levelled up to Platinum-ranked Level 10, which was at the level of a Great Demon King.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty let out a shriek that caused the whole ground to shake.

Her energy spun crazily around her body as if it was a tornado. Even the Golden Light Pillar from the Grimoire seems to have been distorted. Phoenix Fairy Beauty had been stuck in this bottleneck for a hundred year, incapable of breaking through Innate Level 10. But now, in an instant she had successfully broken through and steadily stepped on a new realm.

Chapter 320 – Corrosive Ghost-Faced Crab

After she levelled up to Innate Level 10, Phoenix Fairy Beauty's attitude changed a lot.

Right now, Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who was initially at odds with the girls, would give a welcoming smile to Princess Qian Qian even when her face was as stiff as a wooden plank. Everyday, she would either study Heaven Runes with the sickly beauty or talk about the [Body Fusion] experience with Xue Wu Xia. Otherwise, she would coach Yue Yu and Yi Nan on behalf of Yue Yang. Of course, she treated Yue Yang the best. She would call him with her special nickname for him, 'little thief', with her uniquely clear voice, enhanced with her [Charm] Inherent Skill and a honeyed tone. She was so sweet that even Yue Bing who didn't know anything about the relationship between men and women felt goosebumps when she heard Phoenix Fairy Beauty's voice.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who was originally a little lazy, only eating or sleeping everyday, suddenly became very diligent now.

She cultivated as if she was obsessed.

As long as Yue Yang was free, she would immediately drag him to practice [Body Fusion].

She, who had now broken through her bottleneck and levelled up to Innate Level 10, had a new goal now.

And that was to become an Innate Elder!

According to Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Innate Elder was another kind of Innate Realm. It was higher than Innate Realm and was similarly separated to ten levels. Of course, Innate Level 10 was equivalent to Innate Elder Level 1. With this new starting point, Phoenix Fairy Beauty would obviously not give up the opportunity to catch up to her elder sister.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty didn't tell Yue Yang what was Zhi Zun's Innate Elder Level, and she also did not mention that she was Zhi Zun's younger sister.

However, Yue Yang had already suspected it long ago.

This was because Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked a lot like Zhi Zun, especially those bouncing boobs of hers that were as high as mountain peaks. Other than these pair of sisters, Yue Yang had never seen anyone else with such beautiful breasts. Furthermore, the two people had similar histories. Zhi Zun ever told Yue Yang that she had a rebellious younger sister, which resulted in her giving Yue Yang unlimited freedom.

Of course, the Bouncing Boobs Lady did not say anything. Yue Yang and the other girls also did not mention anything.

Everyday, Yue Yang would channel some Innate Qi to Phoenix Fairy Beauty to purify the energy in her body. He would also use Nirvana Flame sometimes.

However, the focus on [Body Fusion] cultivation was not on

Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who had levelled up to Innate Level 10. It was on Princess Qian Qian, who was preparing to break into the Innate Realm.

With Yue Yang's assistance and the influence from her love rival, Princess Qian Qian had improved by leaps and bounds these few days. She had originally needed a month to become an Innate, but she was thinking of breaking through the Innate Realm in 22 days now. If not for Yue Yang who advised her to wait two more days in case over hastiness led to unnecessary injuries, Princess Qian Qian had even wanted to break through the Innate Realm 2 days ago.

In the end, under Yue Yang's assistance, Princess Qian Qian decided to break through the Innate Realm on the 25th day.

Just as she was filled with confidence and was thinking of fulfilling her dreams, something suddenly happened and messed up her whole plan.

The Old Fox had suddenly arrived into the Little Flower Garden, bringing along a happy yet surprising news. Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai, as well as other Rankers from Da Xia and Tian Luo had been released by the Dragon Emperor of the Eastern Goblin Tribe. They were escorted by two Heavenly Imperial Guardians, and had entered one of the Ancient Passage of God's Ruins because the Fallen Warriors and Eastern Goblin Tribe Rebel Army had suddenly ambushed them. The State Grandmaster of Da Xia was forced to open an emergency teleportation portal to send Jun Wu You and the others into another Ancient Passage that no one had stepped on for a long time.

In the end, when the Heavenly Imperial Guardians could finally push the enemies back, they realized that they couldn't enter into the teleportation gate leading to the Ancient Passage as an Innate Ranker, due to the restrictions imposed by the place.

The Old Fox had also levelled up to an Innate, hence he was powerless.

The only idea he had was to come here and see if the abnormal boy Yue Yang had a great idea to share. Maybe Yue Yang, the abnormal Innate, could enter. His level was still recorded as a Level 4 Champion in his grimoire after all. He was not even a Level 5 Grandmaster.

If Yue Yang could not enter the Ancient Passage, then the Old Fox wanted Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia to try entering and rescue Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the others out.

“Can we enter into the grimoire world and sneak inside the Ancient Passage?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was a little unwilling to part with Yue Yang, who could help her purify the energy in her body everyday.

“No, some of the Heavenly Imperial Guardians have tried that. Innates are restricted from entering.” The Old Fox shook his head and sighed.

“Then I shall return first and prepare. Yue Yang, let's meet here again three days later.” Right now, Phoenix Fairy Beauty didn't object to attacking the Prison Emperor Divine Palace anymore.

After levelling up to Innate Level 10, her confidence had greatly increased. Since Yue Yang was not be able to bring her along and enter the Ancient Passage, she decided to first return to the Demonic Palace and prepare for the battle. The Prison Emperor Divine Palace was not an easy place after all, she must be adequately prepared.

“Then let’s go!” Princess Qian Qian was extremely relieved. Fortunately she had not levelled up to an Innate yet. Otherwise she might not be able to enter and rescue her father.

“Yes!” Luo Hua City Mistress was also thinking the same thing.

“Brother...” Yue Bing was afraid that Yue Yang would not be able to enter. In that case, she wouldn’t be able to fight together with her brother and rescue grandfather together.

“It’s okay, let’s set off!” Yue Yang brought the sickly beauty, Yue Yu and Yi Nan into the grimoire world, as he carried Yue Bing on his back. Then, together with Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and Xue Wu Xia, they followed the old fox towards the Ancient Passage in God’s Ruins.

This Ancient Passage was completely different from the one they passed through when they chased after the Eastern Goblin Tribe.

It was similarly grand and humongous, but the passage was extremely damp. Drops of water continued to drip from the cracks in the ceiling. Some parts of the ground had even turned into a river.

The ground was mostly covered with water.

In front of a teleportation circle, Da Xia, Tian Luo Heavenly Imperial Guardians were pacing back and forth helplessly.

No one had imagined that there would actually be restrictions that restricted them from going inside and rescue Jun Wu You and the others. The thing that worried them the most was that the teleportation circle had never been opened by anyone before. No one had ever set foot on it before. They had no way of knowing how dangerous it was inside. Meanwhile, the Fallen Warriors and the Eastern Goblin Tribe Rebel Army would definitely not give up, there might even be a second wave of attack anytime. The Heavenly Imperial Guardians were unable to leave. Before they managed to save the victims, they had to protect the teleportation circle, so as to prevent Fallen Warriors and the Rebel Army from destroying it. They hoped that Yue Yang would be able to perform a miracle, or at least, they hoped that Princess Qian Qian could go inside and check the situation, so that they may rescue Jun Wu You and the two other important figures out.

“Try it out, maybe you can do it!” The Ascetic Practice Saint actually didn’t dare to hope for much. Everyone also thought the same way, they thought that the restriction would not be an exception to Yue Yang. They only hoped that he could try it out first.

“Don’t worry, I will definitely rescue everyone!” Yue Yang was afraid that they would be ambushed the moment he enter, hence he also asked Luo Hua City Mistress and Yue Bing to enter the

grimoire world too. Holding Princess Qian Qian's hand and Xue Wu Xia's hand on his right and left hand respectively, under the watch of several Heavenly Imperial Guardians, State Grandmaster and the old fox, he took a big step forward and entered the teleportation circle. The State Grandmaster quickly started the teleportation process and with a bright, blinding light, Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia's figure all disappeared from their sight.

“Ah! That boy is really an abnormality!” The Ascetic Practice Saint and the others were all dumbstruck.

The restriction restricted anyone above the Innate rank from entering, but against all odds, Yue Yang was still an exception.

Maybe it was because that boy was still a Level 4 [Champion] but had already attained Innate, unlike other Innates who would have already reached Level 9 [Saint].

The laws here might be restricting Level 9 [Saint] and above, not Innates... Of course, nobody would ever know the truth. Anything could happen in God's Ruins, and since Yue Yang could enter, that was the best case scenario.

The Ascetic Practice Saint was extremely happy.

Coming out from the teleportation circle, Yue Yang realized that he had fallen into a body of water.

Fortunately he had held Qian Qian and Wu Xia in his hands. Otherwise, it would be terrible if he lost them.

This had also proved one point. The people who entered would not be scattered away and would be teleported into the same place. Right now, he could simply look for traces and track down Jun Wu You and the others. Xiao Wen Li quietly floated out and secretly summoned the Stone-element Medusa and Storm Mermaid. In the water, the two beasts' power would increase by multiple times. Stone-element Medusa had also summoned her Golden Tiger Shark and ordered it to find Jun Wu You and the others' tracks.

The Tiger Shark had an extremely sharp nose to smell fresh blood. If one of them had been injured, it would definitely be able to sniff them out.

“Look around the surrounding. This should be a karst cave.” Xue Wu Xia floated onto the water surface and observed the surrounding for a while. Afterwards, when Yue Yang who was looking for tracks underwater surfaced, she told him her thoughts.

“It's so big!” Princess Qian Qian rubbed the water on her face. She realized that there were countless stalactites hanging above her head. The larger ones were as big as a house, over dozens of metres in length. The smaller ones were around ten-metre long, looking like a pike. The ceiling of the karst cave was extremely tall. Countless drops of water dripped down to the ground, forming a stormy rain. Yue Yang rode on top of the Golden Tiger Shark's back and shouted out, “Is there anyone here?”

His voice echoed for a long time in the cave, but even after

waiting for a long while, there was no answer at all. Seems like Jun Wu You and the others had already walked far.

The two girls stayed by Yue Yang's side, hugging his arms on both sides.

The Golden Tiger Shark swam forward, following a weak, remaining scent that would not last very long. Actually, it couldn't identify the exact direction either. This forward direction was mainly decided by Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li's intuition, especially Xiao Wen Li, who possess a much sharper sense than Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia and Luo Hua City Mistress.

After swimming for a while, the Golden Tiger Shark suddenly become excited.

This was because it had smelled blood, a fresh one at that, as if people had just battled here. Was this the blood of Jun Wu You and the other two warriors? Without a strong enemy, how could they be injured when they were all strong experts? Could it be that there was a terrifying monster inside this cave? Yue Yang frowned his brows when he thought about this.

The Stone Element Medusa and Storm Mermaid both pointed to one direction, indicating that there was a strong existence in front.

Was it Jun Wu You and the others, or was it the guardian of this cave?

After thinking for a while, Yue Yang decided to check it out.

After swimming for a few kilometres in front, an underground, lake-like environment suddenly appeared. There were many strange fish and countless different types of water plants. A plant that looked like a man-eating vine floated on the surface, capturing fishes that swam near to it. The Golden Tiger Shark was also almost eaten. Fortunately it was considered a great force in water, hence it managed to struggle free and escape on its own without needing Yue Yang's help.

On the shores of the lake at the bottom of the cave, there was a sandy, muddy beach that was emitting a strange, unpleasant smell.

The Storm Mermaid scrunched her face in disgust.

The Stone Element Medusa had already pulled out her bow and arrow. Seemed like she had noticed an enemy.

“Ancient Giant Crab? No, this should be a Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab!” Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision could see that a cunning enemy was hiding beneath the sandy and muddy beach. It was extremely big, as big as the hill-sized Ancient Giant Crab that he met in Cancer Temple. Furthermore, this fellow's level was also a high Gold-ranked Level 6.

“I'll fight it!” Princess Qian Qian thought that Yue Yang didn't need to step in for this Ghost-faced Crab. She could finish it on her own.

“Careful, this crab is not easy to deal with. Furthermore, crabs usually live in groups, I don’t think there’s only one.” Xue Wu Xia thought that there would at least be a male and female crab.

“Yes, there’s not only one crab, there’s a whole nest of it!” Yue Yang’s Heaven Eyes Divine Vision had seen that deeper inside the sandy beach, there were deep underground tunnels where a few more crabs were hiding. There might even be more Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab even deeper underground. The most terrible thing was that there seemed to be a few human footprints near the entrance into the tunnel that they were hiding in. Those footprints were most likely left behind by Jun Wu You and the others.

“Why don’t we fly to the sky? It will be hard engaging all of them, it is more important for us to find the missing people!” Xue Wu Xia felt that it would be troublesome to fight all the crabs. Not only were these Ghost-faced Carbs high in level, their shells were also hard and they could drill into mud. It would be very difficult to fight them in mud.

“Boom!” Before Xue Wu Xia could finish speaking, two Corrosive Ghost-faced Crabs suddenly drilled out to the surface from the mud, revealing its hill-sized body.

Although they looked slow and clumsy, their speed was actually very fast.

Aggressively, they charged towards Yue Yang and the others...

Chapter 321 – A Meteor With Fire And Ice

How could there suddenly be Gold-ranked Level 6 Corrosive Ghost-faced Crabs surfacing here?

This kind of situation would never be seen in Soaring Dragon Continent. In Soaring Dragon Continent or lower levels of Tong Tian Tower, the moment a Gold-ranked beast appeared, it would usually be a King Beast.

However, Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision could see that neither of these Corrosive Ghost-faced Crabs were King Beasts. Only their levels were high.

In other words, they were merely useless troops, yet they were already so powerful.

If a Demon King Beast suddenly appeared here, Yue Yang might not have a problem dealing with it, but Jun Wu You and the others would probably have a hard time fighting it!

“Hah!”

Princess Qian Qian brandished her great sword and released her White Tiger's ability as she slashed right at the Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab's eyes. Usually, crabs' weakness would be their eyes. Warriors would usually aim and damage this part heavily, cutting it deep with a sharp blade. The moment their blades caused damages to the Giant Crab's eyes, it would be destined on a path of defeat. Of course, not only Giant Crabs, almost all beasts' weakness

would be their eyes. The only exception was those scary-looking insects which possessed hundreds of eyes on their face.

With regards to the hard shell of the Giant Crabs, it would be useless to attack the crab's back or its two claws. They would only make scratches.

A warrior should first attack their eyes and remove their sense of sight. This was the most effort saving method.

Princess Qian Qian unleashed her combo attack, enforced with her White Tiger Ability and Emperor's Sword, attacking the Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab incessantly.

However, with its quick reaction, strong outer shell and shrinking ability, it could easily shrink its eyes to its socket, rendering Princess Qian Qian's attack useless.

The Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab's eyes was different from other beasts. Its eyes looked like a snail's, but they were not soft. Even the stem of their eyes were enforced with strong armor, making it look like a long hammer. It could shrink its eyes inside its shell and protrude it outwards. Its eye sockets were also covered by eyelids that made it very difficult for warriors to cut its 'only weakness' with a sword.

If Princess Qian Qian's blow wasn't that strong, it would not even pull its eyes back into its sockets.

“Be more careful!” Yue Yang couldn’t help but to warn her. This darkness-type Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab beast was a little cunning, one shouldn’t assume anything when fighting it.

“I know.” Princess Qian Qian was fully confident, she felt that she would have no problem at all defeating the crab alone.

The current Princess Qian Qian was no longer the Princess Qian Qian that Yue Yang had first met.

On the water surface on the other side, Xue Wu Xia, Storm Mermaid and Stone-element Medusa were fighting against two crabs.

Xue Wu Xia and the others had adopted a different strategy than Princess Qian Qian... They didn’t attack often, but when they did, they would unleash a deadly surprise attack, a combination of thunder and ice. The moment they attacked, their enemies would be heavily injured and die on the spot. The Stone-element Medusa were also waiting for the right opportunity. The moment the giant crab open its mouth, it would shoot a fiery arrow that had petrification effect into its mouth.

Storm Mermaid was taunting the crabs in front, it could swim ten times faster than the crabs.

If needed, she could summon a whirlpool that could throw the crabs into the sky or sink them to the bottom of the water at any time.

Other than being responsible for providing support in case of emergency, Yue Yang was also secretly monitoring the movements of the rest of the Corrosive Ghost-faced Crabs. This was a battle opportunity that was hard to come by, so he decided to let Princess Qian Qian fight on her own as a warm-up practice before entering the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

He had already flown to the place where there were human-like footprints the moment Princess Qian Qian waved her sword. When he observed them closely, he realized that those weren't Jun Wu You and the others' tracks. It was actually holes made from emission of methane gas. It looked like human footprints from the outside. Of course, these holes might also be the masterpiece left by the Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab's bubbles... Yue Yang didn't feel any human presence at all, and he decided not to explore the Corrosive Ghost-faced Crabs' underground tunnel to see if there were any treasures hidden inside. At this moment, rescuing Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the others were their most important priority. When he saw the rest of the Corrosive Ghost-faced Crabs all coming out of their tunnel, intending to surround him, he immediately took out his new Crescent Moon Blade and ignited it with his purple flames, creating a fiery dragon with his Yang Ability.

Fire was the best method to deal with beasts.

Of course, with the exception of fire-type monsters.

Those few Ghost-faced Crabs immediately spouted out a wave of disgusting mud, in an attempt to stop the fiery dragon.

They were extremely quick. Two crabs immediately moved to the sides, while the other one drilled into the sand and came out from the water, slashing its giant claws as it ruthlessly attacked Yue Yang.

If these giant crab's claws managed to capture its enemy, it looked like it could even break a Giant Mammoth's leg. However, the enemy it had met was Yue Yang. Amongst the younger generation, Yue Yang was definitely worthy of the nickname "Gold-ranked Beasts Killer". The number Gold-ranked monsters that had fallen under Yue Yang's hands was uncountable.

"I'll give you a taste of fire and ice!" Yue Yang waved his blade and activated his Yin Ability. In an instant, the surrounding air around him turned freezing cold.

The giant crab had been frozen to ice before it could manage to reach Yue Yang's body.

Its movements became extremely slow.

The Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab that was trying to attack Yue Yang immediately tried to escape, afraid of the purple flames that was coming down at it from the sky... Yue Yang took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade with his other hand and ruthlessly cut through the frozen giant crab. Flames crackled as the giant crab's body was immediately burnt by Yue Yang's fire. As its body was enveloped in ice, its claws that were covered with hairs were also burning. The Ghost-faced Crab immediately tried to open its mouth to spout mud to put out the fire in its claws, but Yue Yang shot the fiery dragon into its mouth when it opened it.

It was like that Ghost-faced Crab had fallen into a pot of boiling water. It struggled with all its might.

“I’ll let you die ‘cooly’!” He activated his Yin Ability on his Crescent Moon Blade and ruthlessly slashed at the crab’s mouth which was burning in flames.

In an instant, the Ghost-faced Crab’s mouth become frozen. Even its eyes were also frozen.

Within 10 seconds, the collision between Yue Yang’s Fire and Ice ability had caused a great explosion within the Ghost-faced Crab’s mouth. All of its innards, meat and other things exploded all over the ground.

Seeing its comrade die tragically, the two other Ghost-faced Crab reacted quickly and immediately drilled into the mud with their claws, running far away from Yue Yang, their nemesis.

On the other side, Xue Wu Xia had already frozen the Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab in front of her.

Although that Ghost-faced Crab wasn’t dead yet, it would definitely not be able to escape into the mud alive. Meanwhile, with the other Ghost-faced Crab, the Stone Element Medusa shot her gold arrow to its eyes. It started to change in colour into grey, slowly turning into stone. The Ghost-faced Crab wanted to escape underwater, but the Storm Mermaid was a master controller of water underwater. A gigantic water pillar shot the Ghost-faced

Crab huge body up to the water surface, and Xue Wu Xia finished it with a thunder attack.

In an instant, that Gold-ranked Level 6 Ghost-faced Crab had become a completely charred roasted crab.

However, this Ghost-faced Crab was actually still alive.

Its vitality was extremely strong, it was simply out of Xue Wu Xia's imagination.

The Stone-element Medusa possess the fake Nirvana Flame in her snake hair that Yue Yang gave her in the Gemini Temple. Although it couldn't compare to the real Nirvana Flame, its power was still something that a normal monster could never defend against.

The Stone Element Medusa's snake hair open their mouths, and fiery arrows were shot out towards the frozen Ghost-faced Crab's mouth and eyes...

This was a little different from the 'Fire and Ice Collision' that Yue Yang had created, but the effect was close.

The energy between ice and fire collided and created a huge explosion.

The explosion caused a huge wave, splashing water to the sky. The Ghost-faced Crab's jaw and eyes exploded into far distance.

The Ghost-faced Crab was still not dead yet, but the Ghost-faced Crab, which was on the verge of death, had no more strength to struggle. Its body and claws crumbled to the ground. Storm Mermaid summoned a wave to push it back to the shores, breaking its two claws in the process.

Seeing that Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia had both defeated their opponents, Princess Qian Qian was anxious.

She had completely mutilated the Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab in front of her, but she was still unable to give it the finishing blow.

Of course, it wasn't because her strength was lacking. It was because the great sword in her hands was not a good weapon, it was just a Bronze-ranked Heavy Sword... Previously, her great sword had broken countless times, and in the end it was even destroyed when the fake Yue Qiu demon had spouted his deadly light attack on her. She had no weapon to call her own. Even though the Da Xia Kingdom Treasury possess a lot of high-levelled weapons, they don't have great swords, which she was used to using.

Yue Yang had wanted to make her a great sword before, however, these few days, she had been forcing him to train with her so that she could become an Innate quickly. He didn't have time to make the sword for her.

A mere Bronze-ranked Weapon wouldn't be able to fully showcase Princess Qian Qian's power.

“Hit!”

Seeing that the Ghost-faced Crab was trying to escape, Princess Qian Qian immediately pursued it, leaping high up to the ground. When her body landed to the ground, she activated her Emperor’s Sword Qi on her Bronze-ranked Great Sword again and unleashed her White Tiger Ability, shooting right into the crab’s mouth.

Her great sword which was almost two-metres long pierced all the way into the crab until its handle.

Just as Princess Qian Qian thought that she had defeated her enemy, that Ghost-faced Crab whose vitality was extremely strong, suddenly sprouted a black-coloured corrosive substance from its injured mouth.

Princess Qian Qian protected her face with her arms, retreating quickly.

Her whole body was covered with Silver-ranked Heavy Armour, hence a normal corrosive substance wouldn’t be able to injure her body.

However, this corrosive substance had actually corroded her Silver Armour away, producing a crackling sound as it melted her armour into green liquid. Yue Yang was extremely shocked and quickly teleported to her side. He quickly slashed his Crescent Moon Blade and cut away her heavy armour piece by piece. He also recklessly removed the corroded armour with his right hand, so as

to avoid her body getting corroded away.

In less than 2 seconds, Yue Yang had stripped away Princess Qian Qian's armour and turn her into a freshly shaven sheep.

“Careful!” Xue Wu Xia warned loudly.

“Woosh, woosh...” The stems of the eyes of the Ghost-faced Crab suddenly exploded, shooting two green-coloured water arrows towards Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian.

Princess Qian Qian didn't care about herself, her natural reaction was to hug Yue Yang tight and jump to the back.

She held Yue Yang as they avoided the two water arrows ambush.

When she finally returned to her senses, she realized that their current position was extremely misleading. As she had hugged Yue Yang's head in her chest, Yue Yang's face was buried between her breast which was completely bare. Princess Qian Qian was extremely embarrassed, she had wanted to say something, but Yue Yang pretended that he did not see anything. He simply examined Princess Qian Qian's body from head to toe closely, and finally sighed a breath of relief when he saw that there were no injuries on her body. It was completely flawless and did not have any traces of corrosion at all.

Princess Qian Qian covered her breasts with one hand and punched Yue Yang with her other hand as she shouted, “What are

you doing?!”

Yue Yang finally came back to his senses. He understood that the tigress girl was embarrassed.

Actually, her clothes would be destroyed whenever they practiced [Body Fusion]. It was not like she had never seen her snow white breasts before, he just pretended not to see anything. Of course, the tigress girl still cared about her reputation, so he laughed out awkwardly, “I thought you were injured just now. Fortunately you are not injured at all!”

Princess Qian Qian felt both embarrassed and touched. She glared at him and said, “You are the one who will get injured. You don’t even know how to avoid water arrow when it was shot towards you. Fool! Blockhead!”

“I have Five Colours of Divine Light. Furthermore, it was only a little poisonous water arrow, it won’t have any effect on me.” Yue Yang laughed out.

“Annoying. You are an idiot!” Princess Qian Qian had just remembered that he possessed the Five Colours of Divine Light, all kinds of poison was like tonic to him. She was simply too anxious just now, her natural reflex was to protect him. Then, had she actually allowed him to take advantage of her? When she thought about it that way, her face immediately blushed red. She saw the clothes that Yue Yang had brought to her was actually hers, not Yue Bing’s, she felt a sweet taste in her heart. However, her mouth still blamed him, “Who asks you to take off other people’s clothes so casually? What? You even have my underwear? You pervert!”

She was completely embarrassed when she saw that Yue Yang had even kept her panties and bras. She immediately raised her hands and swore to never forgive him.

Xue Wu Xia pretended not to see anything.

As for Stone-element Medusa and Storm Mermaid, they watched the show very interestedly. At the same time, they learnt different types of human behaviours. To them, these kind of intimate human interactions and feelings were something that they lacked in their lives. If they wanted to become a Holy Beast, they would first need to learn from their master.

Putting on her clothes in lightning speed, Princess Qian Qian continued to bombard Yue Yang's chest with punches because she simply couldn't bear the shame.

At the same time, this would stop that brat from looking at her with pervy eyes.

After they dug the crab's Magic Crystals, Yue Yang didn't continue to pursue the remaining Corrosive Ghost-faced Crabs in the underground tunnel.

As for the corpses of the Ghost-faced Crabs, he only took a few of their giant pincers. He gave up the crab shell and other parts. Originally, those would make a very good armor material.

However, their priority right now was to find the missing people, so they decided to let go of shells and whatsoever.

They went back to their path just now and continued to follow the flow.

The reason why they couldn't find any trace of them in the water could only be because Jun Wu You and the other warriors had followed down the stream, hence the water flow had washed their smell away. Their remaining smell was extremely faint, and it was also mixed with the smell of the monsters in the water. Even the Golden Tiger Shark who had a very sensitive sense of smell couldn't differentiate them. Following the stream, they met various different weird looking water monsters. They were at least Bronze-ranked, but were mostly Silver-ranked. A small number of Gold-ranked beasts could also be seen from time to time.

In this Ancient Passage, the monsters were at least at the level of Tong Tian Tower Fifth Floor.

Princess Qian Qian was a little anxious, afraid that something had happened to her father.

It wasn't easy for them to be released by the Eastern Goblin Tribe, yet now they had to go through so many twists and turns.

"There seemed to be new leads? It's blood traces!" The Golden Tiger Shark suddenly smelled a fresh scent of blood and started swimming as fast as an arrow. When it arrived to the place, Yue Yang realized that there were some blood traces on a rock surface

in front of them. The blood had not congealed yet, hence proving that the injured person had not left that place for very long.

The appearance of the blood trace made Princess Qian Qian really worried that her father and the other warriors had met with a strong monster. She was afraid that their lives were in danger. Her heart was beating very quickly.

Yue Yang comforted her as they continued to search forward.

In front, the river suddenly turned into a cliff with a gigantic waterfall. The Golden Tiger Shark which was swimming at full speed wasn't able to stop in time, hence it jumped down the waterfall with Yue Yang and the others on its back. The bottom of the waterfall couldn't be seen, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia held Yue Yang tightly as they felt the excitement of falling from a high place, screaming their lungs out.

Before falling into the water below, Yue Yang held the two girls as he resisted air with his Innate Qi. They floated in the air and descended slowly.

However, the Golden Tiger Shark was left to shoot into the water below like an artillery shell, inciting a ten-metre tall water splash.

Xiao Wen Li re-appeared with a rainbow light and pointed at the direction in front.

She finally sensed an accurate location. There were people in

front!

Yue Yang couldn't wait for the disoriented Golden Tiger Shark to get his bearings and swim forward. He carried the two girls as they traversed the water, flying forward.

The more they advanced, the thicker the smell of blood was. In the end, even Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia could feel it too. After advancing for a few kilometres, there was another gigantic sandy beach. Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia saw Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the other warriors fighting desperately against a huge monster. That monster looked grotesque, but it was extremely strong. It didn't even mind being surrounded, instead, it was pushing the warriors back. The younger generations, Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha, had fainted due to their injuries. Even the Eagle-eyed man who was quite strong, was covered with blood all over his body.

Seems like the smell of blood that they smelled through the way was his.

When Yue Yang saw the critical situation, he didn't even bother to greet Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai anymore. He immediately shouted out and took out his Crescent Moon and Hui Jin Magic Blade. Activating his Yin and Yang Abilities, he shot forward and slashed at the gigantic monster...

"It's fine now, that boy finally come." When Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai saw Yue Yang shooting towards them like a meteor with fire and ice in his two blades, they finally let out a sigh of relief.

Chapter 322 – Gold-Ranked Level 8? Instant Kill!

The monster that Yue Yang was attacking looked extremely grotesque. It looked like a fish with horns and a worm with claws.

The monster had ten octopus' tentacles-like limbs that were filled with thorns and suction pads of different sizes. The tentacles also had a big bloody mouth on its ends, which was equipped with pike-like venomous stings. Its body was as huge as a mountain, and it had the ability to change its shape. It could split its skin any time and reveal a terrifying mouth with shark's teeth, like an amoeba.

Its eyes were at the top of its head, buried within its flesh.

There were countless of eyes on both of its sides.

The monster had horns on its head. It had dozens of sharp horns covering the whole top part of its head.

Seems like it wasn't only a mean to protect itself, it was also an attacking weapon.

Yue Yang's Fire and Ice Ability smashed down to the ground. If it were the Corrosive Ghost-faced Crab, it would have definitely exploded and died.

However, this strange monster had become berserk instead when it received Yue Yang's Fire and Ice Ability. It wasn't injured very seriously... Strictly speaking, it had only received the sharp cut of Yue Yang's Crescent Moon Blade and Hui Jin Magic Blade, the Fire and Ice Ability didn't have a huge effect on it. Its smooth skin seemed to have a resistance to fire and ice. Yue Yang saw that even though its skin caught fire, it would very quickly be put out. As for ice, it would only freeze its body a little and slow down its movements, but the effects would be greatly reduced after a while and it recovered completely.

Yue Yang was extremely surprised with this result. It was actually resistant towards fire and ice?

What kind of monster is this actually?

There were a lot of monsters with resistance to fire, but there were very few monsters with resistance to both fire and ice, two colliding elements.

"Careful, this fellow is resistant to fire and physical attacks, it's extremely hard to deal with!" Feng Kuang, Feng Shao Yun, Xue Wen Dao, Yan Qian Zhong, Eastern Sky King, Western Sky King and the others were initially fighting the monster, but they immediately retreated when they saw Yue Yang, leaving the battle to the Innate Ranker. Feng Kuang shouted to Yue Yang to warn him, "It can heal itself, so it's resistant to cuts and wounds. You have to think of another way!"

"..." Of course Yue Yang had a way to deal with this monster. Even if it was resistant to fire, Nirvana's Flame would definitely

burn it to death.

As long as it wasn't a pure lifeform, Nirvana Flame would definitely burn every life forms and objects. Even souls and spirit would not be able to defend against its purifying ability. If it was powerful and had a strong will, the purifying process would take a long time, but it would still be effective. There was no existence in the world that could resist the Nirvana's Flame.

Even Phoenix Fairy Beauty was burnt to the point that she wanted to die.

If it weren't for Yue Yang, she wouldn't be able to withstand the power of Nirvana's Flame Pillar on her own.

Because Nirvana's Flame was an existence that was completely pure, it could destroy anything in the world that had even a little of impurity in it. However, it also had the special ability of rebirth, which was why people revered it as the number one flame in the world. There was no competition for this first place, because no other flames or willpower could affect the Nirvana Flame. The Nirvana Flame could burn and purify everything, even fire.

Yue Yang might the only warrior in history who had full control of Nirvana's Flame.

Of course this had something to do with the two phoenixes.

Other than Nirvana's Flame, Yue Yang also had the World

Exterminating Wheel.

He had the World Exterminating Wheel which was imbued with Immemorial, Ancient and Heaven Runes. This also made him an existence that had never existed before. If Yue Yang used this ability, even Shun Tian, the extremely strong ranker would also have a hard time dealing with it.

The reason that Yue Yang wasn't able to fully showcase the World Exterminating Wheel's power was not because he didn't have enough power, it was because Yue Yang wasn't able to fully control its movements yet.

Other than these two skills, Yue Yang still had a lot of ultimate moves to kill his enemies.

Forget about the Innate Invisible Sword Qi, even the fire bow and ice arrow that Yue yang created was extremely formidable.

However, Yue Yang didn't use all these.

Instead, he started condensing his Star Explosion quietly.

Just as the grotesque and greedy monster was about to swallow Yue Yang whole with its huge bloody mouth, Yue Yang threw his Star Explosion into its mouth and quickly teleported away.

However, the monster didn't seem to be affected by this kind of attack. Seems like its internal organs also had high defensive

power.

“It can also swallow shock waves!” Master Golden Blade warned Yue Yang loudly. He had also used the opportunity to unleash his sword slash wave when the monster was opening its mouth, but unexpectedly, it was completely uninjured.

(Shiro: Master Golden Blade is from chapter 38, the building owner of the inn that was destroyed because of Demon King Ha Xin)

“Boom!”

Yue Yang clenched his fist. This was him trying to activate his Domain of Power.

His Domain of Power, the ‘Star Explosion’, which was as small as a ball right now suddenly exploded within the ugly monster’s stomach.

The ugly monster could indeed swallow shock waves and energy.

But it also depends on what kind of energy.

For example, an ant had the ability to move a grain of rice. This was within its range of power. To the ant, easily lifting a grain of rice was already a big deal, but if it was asked to move a boulder instead, no matter how strong the little ant was, it wouldn’t be able to move the boulder at all.

If Master Golden Blade’s sword shock wave was as big as a grain

of rice, then Yue Yang's condensed Domain of Power 'Star Explosion' was like a five thousand kilograms boulder.

A big, bloodied hole immediately burst open in that greedy ugly monster's stomach.

Its tentacle like limbs, the sharp horns on its head, its ugly eyes and internal organs all exploded out like a fountain.

With Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he had even seen a black-coloured pearly flying out of its body

Eh?

That must be a good item!

Yue Yang quietly took it and stored it inside the Lich Ring. He then looked back at the monster whose body had already been halfway destroyed. That monster was actually still alive...

Jun Wu You and the others were very agitated.

They had fought against that monster for more than half a day, but not only were they not able to kill this ugly and greedy monster, they were even almost killed by it. However, Yue Yang destroyed half of its body with just one attack. Seems like Innate Rankers were really different. Feng Kuang and Feng Shao Yun, Xue Wen Dao and the others could only look at each other and smiled bitterly. They all thought that Yue Yang, whom they had not seen

for a few months had become even stronger than before. Right now, he even had a 'Domain'. This kind of improvement was practically lightning fast... It was a pity that Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun, who were at the same generation as him was still a Level 6 [Elder], even after having gone through so much, almost dying by the hands of the Eastern Goblin Tribe.

Level 7 [Overlord] was like a huge mountain that was blocking the way of these two genius youngsters.

How could they be compared to Yue Yang, whom had not only reached Innate, but even mastered his Domain of Power, which only an Innate of at least Level 5 and above could possess.

It was really frustrating to compare themselves to another person!

"Eh?" Yue Yang realized that the monster whose half body had already been destroyed would slowly recover from its injuries. Although its body had already been mostly destroyed, new flesh and skin had actually grew again. Within five minutes, it had returned back to its original condition.

Of course, its power was greatly reduced. It looked a little different from its aggressive appearance just now.

Other than requiring a lot of energy to recover its destroyed body, Yue Yang thought that the reason for this monster's weakening must be because it had lost the pearl that he had already stored inside his Lich Ring. Seems like there was some kind

of hidden power inside that black-coloured pearl!

Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian talked a few words with Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the others. The moment they saw that the monster had recovered, they immediately came over to Yue Yang to help.

Seeing that her daughter had thrown her father aside and chased after her lover, Jun Wu You couldn't help but to look at Elder Yue Hai, smiling bitterly and shaking his head.

Seems like he couldn't run away from this ill-fated relationship anymore.

In the future, titles and seniority must be separated, otherwise it would become a mess.

If he pretended not to care, it would be a selfish of him. They definitely hoped to get the approval from both families before they could get married happily. It's just that the moment he approved, the seniority between their families would become awkward. Jun Wu You had seen a lot of things after returning from the Eastern Goblin Tribe. He thought that his daughter wouldn't be at a disadvantage with Yue Yang. No matter what, he was still an Innate son-in-law after all. If it were another person, they might even fought each other to marry their daughters off to Yue Yang. For example, that coarse Eastern Sky King. He didn't even think about his reputation or anything else, he had straight away visit Yue Yang and immediately helped his daughter to attain her lifetime happiness.

That fellow was truly a qualified father!

Xue Wu Xia held Yue Yang's hand and started to condense her Ice Ability.

The temperature of the whole area suddenly plunged.

With Yue Yang's Innate Qi's help, how terrifying would the blizzard created from Yue Yang's and Xue Wu Xia's combined Yin Ability be, given that they had the most compatibility for their [Body Fusion]?

The answer could be seen on Jun Wu You's and the other's faces.

Jun Wu You and the others realized that ten seconds ago, the temperature was still normal. However, the breaths that they breathed out had suddenly turned into fog. The lake surface was turbulent due to the shock waves from the battles. However, the lake was very quickly freezing into ice with a speed that can be seen with naked eyes.

Snow floated down to the ground as the ice on the lake surface continued to thicken. In the end, even when the White Stone City master's Beast stepped onto the ice surface, it was able to bear its weight which was more than a ton and did not even crack. When Feng Kuang and the others saw this, they were overwhelmed with shock. Turns out not only Yue Yang was the abnormal one, Xue Wu Xia was also terrifying... She might not be an Innate yet, but she was really close. As long as she improved a little more, she

would definitely become an Innate.

The Eagle-eyed man thought that even the Vice Principal, the old fox, had never made him felt so much pressure when he unleashed his energy before.

Is there going to be another 20 year old Innate?

Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai looked at each other, showing happiness and excitement.

They knew that she was definitely helped by Yue Yang. Otherwise, no matter how talented Xue Wu Xia was, she wouldn't be able to become an Innate at twenty years old.

They didn't care about those little couple or lovers things, they only knew that Da Xia Kingdom would have a new Innate Ranker soon. The two people, who hoped that Da Xia could last thousands of years and surviving many generations was of course happy that a new Innate would appear and help to protect the younger generations.

“Hah!”

Yue Yang suddenly pointed his ten fingers towards Princess Qian Qian, who was standing on Yue Yang's right, as she shouted loudly.

Her Qi which was like a gust of hurricane released from her body.

The impact from shock wave that was released almost unbalanced Yan Qian Zhong, Feng Shao Yun, Xue Wen Dao and the other strong warriors. The Eagle-eyed man had almost fell down from the gust of wind. As for Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha who was unconscious, they were almost blown ten metres away. Fortunately the White Stone City Master and Master Golden Blade had caught them in time. With regards to Princess Qian Qian's explosion of power, the senior generations had received another shock.

She, she was also a Lesser Innate?

Since when did becoming an Innate become so easy?

"..." Jun Wu You's eyes became unbelievably big. He didn't even dare to recognize his own daughter now.

"Good, good job!" Elder Yue Hai stroked his beard happily. Isn't this a good thing? He had gained another Lesser Innate daughter-in-law. Yue Yang was simply too capable. He not only had a lot of wives, everyone of them was also competing with each other. He didn't see Luo Hua and Yi Nan, so he didn't know, but Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia were already Lesser Innates. If all of them joined the Yue Household, wouldn't the Yue Clan have three Innates then?

Yue Yang led Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian as they flew in the sky.

Xue Wu Xia was charging her Yin Ability and was preparing to completely freeze the monster which was initially moving very slowly into an ice statue... Yue Yang carried Princess Qian Qian forward.

In the sky, there seemed to be a white tiger's roar.

A Sword Qi that was a few metres long extended out from Princess Qian Qian's sword.

As Princess Qian Qian waved her sword, the Sword Qi cut through the air and quickly slashed through the monster which had been frozen into an ice statue.

Through the process of swinging the sword, Princess Qian Qian's left hand had held Yue Yang's right hand tightly all the while. With the help of his Innate Qi and her White Tiger's ability, her Emperor's Sword Qi released a slash that was more than ten metres long.

That slash's seemed to have the power to split the sky and the earth.

With one slash, the ice statue was cut to half.

“Tiger attack!”

Princess Qian Qian's voice sent a shockwave through the ground the moment she shouted. This was the Tiger's Roar that Yue Yang

had meticulously improved for her.

At the sound of this roar, the ice statue that had been slashed into two crumbled.

It suddenly break into millions of ice blocks.

Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and other senior generations were completely dumbstruck watching the scene before them. They simply couldn't believe what they had seen. This, this was still a Gold-ranked Level 8 King Beast. Was it really killed by Yue Yang and the two girls with one move, just like that?

Could an Innate kill a Gold-ranked Level 8 monster in an instant?

This, isn't this quite impossible?

Furthermore, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia were still Lesser Innates!

Yue Yang didn't care about their reaction. He was fully occupied with looking for the ugly monster's magic crystal. In his heart, what does a Gold-ranked Level 8 monster even matter? He had killed a lot of Holy Beasts and Innate Rankers anyway.

Chapter 323 – Rescue Mission Success, New Target!

Yue Yang kept the ugly monster's magic crystal. He was interested in studying the monster's pike-like poisonous thorns, strange-looking horns and even its flesh and skin which had automatic quick recovery power. Hence, he stuff all of them the monster's parts into his Lich Ring.

The water pressure from the water flowing from the waterfall slowly break away the layer of ice.

The frozen lake slowly disintegrated into pieces.

Without the Yin Ability to maintain it, the ice slowly melted into water.

The Golden Tiger Shark was the happiest. There was another Gold-ranked Level 8 monster for it to feast upon. Furthermore, it wasn't small like the Fishing Net Spider. Although this ugly monster had been exploded into pieces, there was enough meat for the Golden Tiger Shark to eat until it almost burst. Not only it, Feng Shao Yun's, Yan Qian Zhong's and all the others' beasts were also feasting upon the pieces of the monster's meat. In order to improve their son's power, Yan Qian Zhong and Feng Shao Yun had even kept the hard horns that originally was on the monster's head for their son. They wanted to make a weapon from it for their sons.

These horns were resistant to blades, fire and ice, and was

extremely hard. If they could turn it into a weapon, it would be a treasure for Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun.

Yue Yang was also preparing to give Ye Kong and Fatty Hai a few horns.

Although Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were not used to using weapons made from these monster's horns, at least, they would have a choice to use it.

Maybe they would need it during some battles.

There's nothing wrong in being well-prepared!

As for those poisonous thorns, Yue Yang had kept them all for himself. He could use them as poisonous spears to throw at a long distance in the future...

He might not need it to attack the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, because there were only souls there. However, attacking the Level 6 of Tong Tian Tower with just his fire bow and ice arrow would not be enough. He wouldn't have enough ice arrow. Yue Yang heard from the Phoenix Fairy Beauty before that the monsters would come at them like tidal waves at Tong Tian Tower Level 6 and above. They were endless even though they keep killing the monsters.

These poisonous thorns can be turned into flying spears for long-ranged attack. Maybe it would be useful to push the enemies back.

“Son-in-law, where’s my precious daughter? My little Luo Hua?” The Eastern Sky King immediately asked Yue Yang when he returned.

“I left her in the world inside my grimoire. It’s too dangerous here, and there are a lot of water. What if she got drenched in water and catch a cold? If you want to meet her, I can call her out!” Yue Yang pretended to act like a good husband, as if he was very considerate towards Luo Hua City Mistress.

“No, no need. Let her rest well. I have came out from that damned Eastern Goblin Tribe’s place anyway, I can meet her any time, it’s not too late to meet her after we escape from this place! I have managed to come out of this alive, this time when I return, I have decided to pick a good day to marry you guys off. I don’t want any regrets.” The Eastern Sky King was a father that truly doted on his daughter. Although he missed his precious daughter, he immediately beamed with joy when he heard Yue Yang’s words. He felt that he had found a good son-in-law. Although this boy was a little unfaithful, he was very considerate and protective to his daughter.

“...” Jun Wu You strained his ears to eavesdrop, secretly thinking that this wasn’t good.

If the Eastern Sky King really married his daughter off in a grand way, everyone in the Soaring Dragon Continent would know about it.

If little Luo Hua would become the official first wife, then wouldn't his daughter be a concubine?

In this polygamy, his daughter would probably not get the first wife's position. It might not even be little Luo Hua. It would most probably be Xue Wu Xia, who was originally Yue Yang's fiancée. There were Luo Hua and Yi Nan as rivals for the second wife's position, if he was too slow, the highly respected, beautiful Princess Qian Qian of Da Xia Kingdom, who will become an Innate in the future, would end up becoming the Yue Clan Third Young Master's concubine...

Although Jun Wu You was relatives and bosom friends with the Eastern Sky King, he would definitely not let this happen. He was still a father after all.

However, he had no authority to stop the Eastern Sky King's urgent will to marry her daughter off.

Jun Wu You became extremely anxious.

Of course, Elder Yue Hai understood Jun Wu You's thoughts. He chuckled, "We'll definitely hold the marriage ceremony. However, we have not escaped danger right now, why don't we all talk about this when we get out of here, so that everything will be resolved well?"

Jun Wu You understood that Elder Yue Hai wanted to help him. Postponing this matter was good enough as a buffer time.

He must not let Yue Yang agree to Eastern Sky King's suggestion immediately. Otherwise, his daughter would really become a concubine.

He also knew that Yue Yang would not let her daughter down. Wu Xia, Luo Hua and Yi Nan would also not make things difficult for her precious daughter. But in the normal people's eyes, his daughter's value would really drop.

Qian Qian was still a princess after all!

As a highly respected Da Xia Princess, even though she couldn't become an official wife, she must not become a concubine!

When Jun Wu You thought about this, he immediately decided. When they came out from this place, he must mention this matter to Yue Yang. He must not be careless anymore, otherwise his daughter would really lose her place.

The warriors from the two countries all gathered together. Feng Kuang, Eagle-eyed man, White Stone City master, Master Golden Blade and the others all started to ask about the things that happened in the few months they left the Soaring Dragon Continent. When they heard about how the fake Yue Qiu had joined together with the Goblin Tribe, Demon Abyss, Thousand Goblins Sect, Green Summit Sect, Zi Jin Kingdom, Seven Great Bears Alliance, Great Emperor of Zi Wei Shun Tian and other great powers in order to take control of the Yue Clan, topple Da Xia and destroy the whole Soaring Dragon Continent, they were extremely shocked. When Yue Yang told them how he had killed the Green Summit Sect Leader Duan Mu Long Cheng and the Vice Sect

Leader Moqi Xu Ling, and how the fake Yue Qiu and Demoon Innate Ranker Chi Liao was killed by Princess Qian Qian, Xue Wu Xia and the others, everyone was completely dumbstruck.

“You can kill the Seven Great Bears Alliance in one move?” Elder Yue Hai was exhilarated. This boy was really too powerful!

“That’s because they are Fake Innates. They levelled up through quick methods, hence they were not that powerful. The current Wu Xia and Qian Qian could even kill them right now.” Yue Yang nodded.

“...” Feng Shao Yun, Xue Wen Dao, Yan Qian Zhong and the others felt kind of embarrassed. As a part of the older generation, they felt a big pressure from the younger generation. Although they were Fake Innates, they were definitely not a match for the Seven Great Bear Alliance. Even if the for Clan Masters joined hands together to fight Yao Guang, they might not be able to defeat him. They never thought that Yue Yang could kill him instantly.

“Where’s Dong Liu? Why isn’t he here?” Master Golden Blade, White Stone City Master, Eastern Sky King and Western Sky King asked about the old fox, their old friend. They thought that it was weird not seeing him, who was a master in space manipulation.

(Shiro: Finally the old fox has a name!)

“Innates are prohibited from entering this space. He had already become an Innate, hence he wasn’t able to enter.” When Yue Yang explained, the Eastern Sky King and the others started spurring their saliva and coughed non-stop.

It was the first time Yue Yang heard the old fox's name. Turns out that his name was "Shui Dong Liu".

(Shiro: Name literally meant water that flows from the east)

Shui Dong Liu?

Could this name come from a river that flowed from the east?

With regards to the old fox's name, Yue Yang guessed mischievously that the reason the old fox never told him his name was because his name sounded so wretched and lewd!

(Shiro: Sorry guys, I don't get the joke at all... But basically there's a verse from a poem titled "Oh When Will Autumn Moon and Spring Flowers End" by Li Yu that contains with Shui Dong Liu. If you guys understand the joke, do tell me... Here are the raws: 水东流？难道这名字出自一春江水向东流？对于老狐狸的名字，岳阳恶意地猜想，心想难怪老狐狸从来不自报家门说他叫什么，原来名字那么猥琐淫荡！)

As to how Yue Yang, who was an Innate, was able to enter the space, Eastern Sky King and the others were not wondering about it at all, because Yue Yang was an abnormality to begin with. However, the Eastern Sky King and the others were truly curious as to how the old fox who had encountered a bottleneck for decades and was unable to become an Innate, had suddenly become an Innate.

When Princess Qian Qian told them it was because of a Martial Spirit Pill, they immediately understood.

It was no wonder that the old fox had become an Innate. Turns out that Yue Yang had created a Martial Spirit Pill.

“I won’t mind not becoming an Innate, but you have to give me one Martial Spirit Pill!” Eastern Sky King patted Yue Yang’s shoulders, “Son-in-law, let’s count it as your betrothal gift!”

“I don’t have the materials right now. When I have the materials, I can give you one...” Yue Yang was actually reminding these few important people from the Soaring Dragon Continent to own up if they have some good herbs inside their treasury. They could give them to him to create pills instead of letting them collect dust.

To Yue Yang, the Martial Spirit Pill wasn’t difficult to make. The difficult one was Martial God Pill and Rebirth Pill.

However, with the Qilin girl, Yue Yang felt that those pills wouldn’t be a problem.

The most difficult thing would be to gather the materials.

Yue Yang’s words immediately ignited the senior generation’s ambitious hearts.

Everyone’s talents were limited. Amongst the four great clans and the two royal households like Feng Shao Yun, Eastern Sky King and the others, were unable to level up to Level 7 Overlord, getting stuck at their Level 6 Advanced-Elder. The only one who

could level up was Jun Wu You. The others could only store up their energy and continued to practice at Level 6 Advanced Elder. Some people weren't able to improve even after practicing for decades, they had almost given up on their goals. Most of them turned towards raising their younger generations and manage their clan matters instead, working hard to raise a competent younger generation. For example, Yan Qian Zhong and Feng Shao Yun had already given up on levelling to Level 7 Overlord. Instead, they put their hopes onto Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha.

Right now, if they could eat a Martial Spirit Pill, although they might not become an Innate, there would be a possibility for them to level up and become a Level 7 Overlord or a Level 8 Emperor.

They had enough strength, it's just that they didn't have the opportunity of breakthrough.

Martial Spirit Pill was the key to breaking through their bottleneck. As long as it was not an adventurer with no talent at all, he would definitely be able to level up.

“We'll think of a way to gather the materials, but please make the Martial Spirit Pill!” As an emperor, Jun Wu You was kidnapped by the Eastern Goblin Tribe. Although he had returned safely, he still felt embarrassed.

He knew that the prime time for him to improve had passed, he might not get a chance to be an Innate, but he still needed to eat the Martial Spirit Pill.

He would definitely not be satisfied with Level 7 Overlord, he must become stronger.

In this Soaring Dragon Continent where the strong preys on the weak, the stronger the Emperor was, the more confident the citizens would be. Furthermore, other countries would also be deterred to attack them.

After the little gathering was over, they decided to continue swimming through the river in the cave and look for an exit.

With Yue Yang, the abnormal expert as their bodyguard. No matter what kind of strong monster they met on the way, they wouldn't need to be afraid. Forget about the Eastern Sky King who loves to fight, even the elderly Elder Yue Hai and the emperor Jun Wu You would participate in the fight. The most excited ones would obviously be Feng Kuang and Eagle-eyed Man. They were both older than Yue Yang by one generation, so the difference between their ages weren't that big. They still have potential in their career, hence they hoped to improve themselves even further.

Hence, they were the most hardworking ones, taking these battles as if it was their training.

Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha who was unconscious due to their injuries, woke up after being healed by their fathers.

They were not able to fight against a Gold-ranked monster, they even had difficulties fighting against Silver-ranked monsters.

In this underground river in the Ancient Passage, there were only high-levelled monsters. There were not only Gold-ranked Level 6, there were even Silver-ranked Level 7, Bronze-ranked Level 8. Monsters below Bronze-ranked Level 6 was almost nowhere to be seen.

The group of people continued swimming down the river.

They avoided battles if they could and fight if they couldn't, killing all the monsters blocking their way.

Three days later, they finally found the teleportation exit.

If Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia were not there, they would not be able to leave this place unscathed with just their abilities alone.

“This was still the outskirts of God's Ruin. I think, right now, we are at the bottom of the Death Canyon. There were so many terrifying monsters in this sealed space, I really can't imagine what kind of strong monsters would there be inside the God's Ruins. The difficulty level of the God's Ruins Inner Area would probably as difficult as the Heaven Realm!” Jun Wu You let out a sigh of relief when they finally found a way to leave.

Yue Yang discovered many different teleportation point in front of the teleportation gate.

He thought that other than the exit, this underground karst cave would probably lead to various other areas.

For example, this karst cave was filled with water, so, there must be other passages that were filled with fire, earth, wind and others.

Furthermore, he had also not finished exploring the whole water karst cave. Yue Yang had avoided any areas that he sensed danger in, hence he had not truly explored the water karst cave. He had only entered from the entrance, followed the flow of water and found the exit...

How big was the water karst cave exactly, what kind of secrets does it holds?

Yue Yang and the others haven't got a clue. Furthermore, neither of the monsters they met along the way were King Beasts.

There was definitely a King Beast in here.

It's just that Yue Yang was in a hurry to rescue Jun Wu You and the others out, hence he didn't have any time to explore the water karst cave and look for the Gold King Beast. He didn't have the time to look for the king of the area.

Inside the water karst cave, would there be a secret treasure?

Yue Yang thought that a treasure would definitely exist here, but he didn't have the time to look for it carefully. After finishing the

Prison Emperor Divine Palace, his new target was to enter the Death Canyon and search for the mysterious God's Ruins. Of course, when Princess Qian Qian and the others had the ability to protect themselves, Yue Yang would also want to go to Tong Tian Tower Level 6 and look around. In order to get to the Heaven Realm, he should first try to fight in the front lines of Level 6 Tong Tian Tower!

When they exited from the water karst cave, Yue Yang realized that they did not exit at the teleportation portal where the Ascetic Practice Saint and the others were protecting.

Of course, right now, it was not the time to worry about whether they can meet up again.

Yue Yang was worried that the Fallen Warriors and Eastern Goblin Tribe would ambush them, hence he decided to bring Jun Wu You and the others to his Yue Clan Castle after teleporting out from the Ancient Passage. He then personally looked for the old fox and the Ascetic Practice Saint, telling them the good news about how Jun Wu You and the others had escaped danger.

This was the correct move.

Yue Yang's careful thoughts helped Jun Wu You and the others escape danger.

When Yue Yang returned to the Ancient Passage alone, he realized that a large amount of Eastern Goblin Tribe Rebel Army was fighting against the Ascetic Practice Saint and the others.

The rebel army's power was not able to match up to the few Heavenly Imperial Guardians, but they were superior in numbers. The Ascetic Practice Saint and the others would definitely not be able to protect the safety of Jun Wu You and the others if they were there. There were simply too many Eastern Goblin Tribe soldiers!

“Go away!”

Yue Yang ignited Nirvana's Flame in one hand and condensed a World Exterminating Wheel in the other, shooting them towards the Eastern Goblin Tribe Rebel Army.

With regards to Yue Yang's terrifying abilities, the three commanders of the Eastern Goblin Tribe Rebel Army were rather worried.

When they saw how Yue Yang had rescued Jun Wu You and the others, rendering them unable to continue with their plan, they decided to give up surrounding them, retreating their whole forces. They decided to give up on their plans of kidnapping the Soaring Dragon Continent warriors. Originally, they thought that with the human warriors in their hands, they would be able to stop the humans from joining forces with Dragon Emperor. However, their chance to do that had disappeared, it was not worthwhile to fight to their deaths with these Heavenly Imperial Guardians. Furthermore, there was also that strong enemy, Yue Yang...

The three commanders of the Rebel Army looked at Yue Yang

closely before they left, as if they were trying to memorise his appearance. In the end, they led their forces to leave the Ancient Passage and return to the Outer Realms.

The only one that stayed behind was the Pipa Goblin General that Yue Yang had met before.

She smiled towards Yue Yang and said, “You have improved once again. It has only been a few months since we last seen each other, but you have improved so much. I really envied the human race!”

The seductive girl walked away gracefully while playing a soft melody on her Pipa.

Slowly, she disappeared from Yue Yang’s sight.

Yue Yang breathed a sigh of relief.

That Pipa Goblin General was definitely not a simple person. Although she wasn’t famous in the Soaring Dragon Continent at all, she might be a terrifying existence like the Phoenix Fairy beauty in the Outer Realms or within the Eastern Goblin Tribesmen... Right now, it would not be easy to make an enemy out of her, because Yue Yang would still need to attack the Prison Emperor Divine Palace in his top condition. He had to challenge the Heaven Realm warriors that had been sealed for thousands of years and might even need to fight with their two strongest warriors.

Although they were only souls, they were once the two strongest warriors of the Heaven Realm!

These two souls which had been sealed for six thousand years would become the strongest enemies that Yue Yang had ever met. They were also his new targets in this short-term period.

Chapter 324 – Key, White Dragon Pearl, Demon Suppressing Pagoda

Yue Ling was not disappointed by Elder Yue Hai's return, on the contrary, he sighed a breath of relief.

The pressure of being a Substitute Clan Master was truly too huge. If it was not for Yue Yang's support, Yue Ling thought that he would have already collapsed. Now that his father had returned, the pressure was greatly lowered.

For the first time in his entire life, his father's praise, more than anything, made him felt satisfied.

It was not satisfaction from power, but satisfaction from familial affection that he hadn't felt in a long time.

Under the pressure of his incomparably outstanding brothers Yue Shan and Yue Qiu, Yue Ling had never been valued and recognized by his father until today. Although Elder Yue Hai had returned, he had brought back Yue Ting whom he had hid in a secret place. However, the position of Substitute Clan Master still remained with Yue Ling.

Elder Yue Hai had even promised Yue Ling, that if Yue Feng wished to become the Clan Master, he would give him an equal opportunity and educate him.

Regarding this matter , Yue Ling became so moved that he cried.

Because of Yue Ting's physique, beasts and character, his father and the Elders had chosen him to become the Clan Master. Yue Ling also knew that they had educated him to be a Clan Master ever since he was a child. He even knows that his own son Yue Feng was simply not suitable to become the Clan Master. However, this promise displayed his father's impartiality. Yue Feng was not Clan Master material, but at the very least, father will not neglect his education. Yue Feng would be valued by father. With Yue Yang's guidance in the future, in addition to the fact that his potential was not bad, Yue Ling believes that it would not be impossible for his son to be promoted to an Innate Ranker in a hundred years.

"Xiao San, Since you do not want to become the Clan Master and you are very busy, Grandfather will not force you. Take this. The Yue Clan has been hoping to produce an Innate Ranker, we have been hoping for hundreds of years. This thing was entrusted to the Clan Master for hundreds of years to be given to an Innate Ranker, but there was always no opportunity...Today, Grandfather passes it to you."

In front of everybody, Elder Yue Hai passed a Rune Crystal to Yue Yang.

This was the real key to the Puppet Palace.

The Puppet Palace was constructed by Ghost Genius Yue Gong. The Three Renaissance Heroes hoped to produce an Innate Ranker in the younger generations, who will inherit the Clan's biggest treasury. As a result, they had stored all the treasures from

thousands of years ago inside the Puppet Palace. Originally, Yue Hai thought that his own son Yue Qiu had the biggest chance of inheriting the Puppet Palace's key. He did not expect him to have an untimely death, and instead, the one who inherited the Puppet Palace's key was his good-for-nothing grandson, Yue Yang, who had greatly exceeded his expectations. Elder Yue Hai had wanted to give Yue Yang this key to the Puppet Palace since long ago, but with this grandson's bad temper, he did not know if he would accept it or not. However, when his Clan was almost destroyed by the hands of the fake Yue Qiu, he had stepped forward bravely and fought with all his might against the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian, beheading two Sect Elders from their arch-enemy, the Green Summit Sect and even killed the Seven Great Bears Alliance. He had used his own strength to reverse the tides of battle, and even pulled strongly against the tide to strongly increase the Clan's morale. This battle had really reassured Elder Yue Hai of Yue Yang's loyalty.

Although this grandson's temper was bad and his murderous intent was big, when all's said and done, he was still his own grandson. The blood circulating inside his body was still the Yue family's blood.

Besides, the disturbance he created in the past was simply because everyone placing him in contempt.

In truth, everybody knows that this brat was extremely filial... That day when he and Bing-er had pulled the horse carriage together and turned the Yue Clan Castle upside down, it was all done in order to restore their Fourth Mother's name. Having this kind of grandson, what could you regret in life?

“If there is something that anybody can use, I will bring it back.” Yue Yang did not act modestly towards him and immediately took the Rune Crystal.

On Elder Yue Hai’s hand the Rune Crystal was like an ordinary crystal, and only had a few tiny Heaven Runes.

However, once the Rune Crystal was placed on Yue Yang’s hands, it immediately burst out into an extremely dazzling brilliance, bathing the entire study room with light. It only dissipated after a very long time.

Could it be that this was the Divine Artifact’s Master Selection spoken in legends?

Elder Yue Hai and the others looked at the shining crystal astonishedly. Yue Yang was secretly laughing inside....this was not the Divine Artifact’s Master Selection. This Rune Crystal only needed to be in contact with Innate Qi and it would slowly undo the seal. If it was a normal Level 1 Innate Ranker, it would need at least 10 days before the seal was completely undone. However, Yue Yang, whose Innate Qi was clear and pure and also had an understanding of Heaven Runes, had only needed one minute to undo its seal. Yue Yang injected Innate Qi and made the Heaven Rune Seal completely undone. This Ghost Genius Yue Gong created this Rune Crystal not only as a key but also an instrument to test an Innate Rankers’ strength. Once the crystal confirmed that Yue Yang was an Innate Ranker, it would immediately emit bright rays of light and transmit the stored information of the palace map and the mechanical traps into Yue Yang’s mind.

With regards to this, Yue Yang discovered that this Ghost Genius Yue Gong was truly a strong person.

He was not an Innate Ranker, yet he could create a device that could evaluate Innate Rankers.....

How many more treasures filled with the life and blood of the Ghost Genius Yue Gong that were similar to the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice and the Rune Crystal were inside the Puppet Palace?

Now, Yue Yang's heart was filled with expectation.

“Gp, I also want to know what kind of treasure our ancestors left behind!” Elder Yue Hai gratifyingly smiled. In his eyes, the treasure passed down by their ancestors had recognized Yue Yang. This information not only shows that the secret treasures of their ancestors truly existed, but also shows that Yue Yang's identity was unquestionable.

If this brat was not the Yue Clan's offspring, how could he obtain their ancestors' remnant recognition?

The fake Yue Qiu had brought a few doubts inside Elder Yue Hai's heart. However, under the radiance emitted by the Rune Crystal, these doubts had completely disappeared from his heart.

Elder Yue Hai and the others had firmly believed Yue Yang's identity, that he was not an adopted fake brought back by the fourth daughter-in-law, Ah Xian. Those people who did not believe

the relative that what was in front of them and instead believed a demon's instigations were idiots. The fake Yue Qiu's appearance had also forced Yue Shan to leave, and now everybody felt that Yue Shan definitely had secrets. Otherwise, he would not have been suppressed by the fake Yue Qiu, which resulted in him leaving home.

If Yue Shan was a real demon, wouldn't it mean that he and the fake Yue Qiu were allies? And it just so happened that they had joined hands to obtain the Yue Clan!

Since he wanted to escape, it proved that he had something else to hide.....

Coming out from the study room, Yue Yang saw Princess Qian Qian waiting outside.

“That old man seems like he has something he wants to say to you. I'm warning you, don't talk about our situation in your conversation, otherwise I'll ignore you forever!” Princess Qian Qian was clever, she naturally knew that the conversation between Yue Yang and his father would definitely be about her marriage with him.

“Don't worry, if his majesty mentions about marriage, I would tactfully decline.” Yue Yang naturally knows that the Tigress was shy and that she was actually willing to marry him, so he intentionally teased her.

“You.....” Princess Qian Qian became angry, and ruthlessly

punched Yue Yang.

“Looking at you right now, it’s as if you are really afraid of not being able to get married. You are too pitiful... Tigress, don’t be anxious, I will reluctantly agree to marry you.” Once Yue Yang said this, Princess Qian Qian was thoroughly embarrassed. She raised up the great sword behind her wanting to hack this brat to death, but Yue Yang had already scampered away, screaming out loud.

When Yue Yang went to see Jun Wu You, everybody waited outside.

Each of them held their breaths and calmly waited for the good news.

After a long time, seeing that there was not a single movement, everybody became slightly worried that with Yue Yang’s bad temper, he had entered into a big argument with Jun Wu You.

Just as everybody became so nervous as if their throats were being choked, Yue Yang suddenly came out.

Nobody knew what they spoke about, but seeing that Yue Yang was chuckling with a happy expression as if he had just struck gold, everybody knew that his and Princess Qian Qian’s matter was successful.

Feng Kuang, Eagle-eyed Man, White-stone City Master, Master Golden Blade and the others congratulated Elder Yue Hai.

Elder Yue Hai and the others did not mention about celebrating. Yue Yang made a slight greeting to them and returned inside his Grimoire World.

Although the construction had just started and was far from completion, the girls already used the White Cloud Floating Stone and the Demon Abyss Obsidian to create a few small rooms, and also brought in goods for daily life use. It was a bit simple and crude, but the people living inside did not have any objections.

Regarding the construction of the house, Yue Yang did not have to help.

It wasn't that he didn't want to help, but because his tastes were completely in conflict with the girls. At the same time, Yue Yang's bad behavior of excessively wasting materials were denounced by the girls. With the help of Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen and the Reaper Mantis', the pace of the girls' construction was extremely fast. In addition, the constructed house were not the ugly square apartment house that Yue Yang was good at. Instead, it had the appearance of a miniature castle.

If it wasn't because time was short, the girls had even thought of using the Floating Stones and the Obsidians to make delicate engravings on the castle, decorating the house inside and out.

The only result that they wanted was one thing and that was perfection.

In constructing the house, Yue Yang only helped in inscribing Heaven Runes on the walls with his Sword Qi.

“Brother, did the Emperor grant the marriage?” Just as Yue Yang returned, Yue Bing was the first one to welcome him. She wanted to know if Princess Qian Qian will become her sister-in-law or not.

“Look, this is the dowry.” Yue Yang brought out a pearl, and delightedly introduced: “Behold, the White Dragon Pearl, the treasure of the Da Xia Kingdom is now given to me!”

“In your dreams! Who would actually marry you!” Princess Qian Qian’s lovable face blushed as she snatched the pearl.

“I also received this “Demon Suppressing Pagoda”. It is said that it could confine a Demon King. This was a treasure brought back from the Heaven Realm by the Jun Family Ancestor. However, nobody could use it, so it was given to me, Hahaha!” Yue Yang was joyfully satisfied. This “Demon Suppressing Pagoda” was stored inside the Jun Family warehouse for a thousand years gathering dust and no one could use it. Even though the Ancestor had said that this object can only be passed on to the Jun Family’s children, Jun Wu You felt that passing it to Yue Yang was not a problem. If Yue Yang married Qian Qian, then he would be his son-in-law and would count as half-family.

Moreover, the Demon Suppressing Pagoda can indeed confine a Demon King, but unfortunately the Jun Family could not produce an Innate Ranker that could catch a Demon King.

Besides Yue Yang this abnormal brat, other people would say that this Demon Suppressing Pagoda is not worth much.

Sparkling light flowed and swirled numerous times from the crystal clear Demon Suppressing Pagoda placed in front of the girls. Seeing this, everybody sighed in admiration...Especially when Yue Yang placed the White Jade Beetle and the mysterious pearl dropped by the Dark Golden Sceptre together. The Demon Suppressing Pagoda's light increased, however, the light was not dazzling. Instead, it was soft and magnificent.

This light was like a halo and was exceptionally soft.

Yue Yang noticed that the mysterious pearl on the Demon Suppressing Pagoda, emitted a soft white light and a strange wave of thought.

The wave of thought had died down immediately, but Yue Yang had sharply captured it in his head.

That wave of thought might be fear or some other thoughts... However, Yue Yang was capable of determining it in a split second, that Dark Golden Specter definitely had not yet truly died. Possibly, its consciousness had already disappeared, but its survival instinct still remained. It believed it could revive again once it had sufficient energy. This was similar to some beasts' death, where the owner can go to the Tong Tian Tower's Summoning Temple and revive their beasts again. This Dark Golden Specter must also be waiting for an opportunity to revive

once again...

Previously, Why were the remnant consciousness of Flame Lord's Molten Core and Demon Dragon's Crystal afraid of the mysterious pearl?

The reason was extremely simple, it was because the Dark Golden Specter inside the mysterious pearl had not yet truly died. It was an extremely dangerous existence that frightened the Flame Lord's Molten Core and Demon Dragon's Crystal.

“Wait until I have time and I would slowly refine you! After refining, I would install you onto the Hui Jin Magic Blade. Let's see if the blade would upgrade or not.” Yue Yang had thrown the mysterious pearl inside a small space in the Demon Suppressing Pagoda. With the Demon Suppressing Pagoda on hand, Yue Yang now felt that if he attacked the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace, maybe he would receive huge gains.

Yue Yang reckoned that the Heaven Realm warriors inside the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace were similar to the Dark Golden Specter. They would not truly die but would leave behind a mysterious item like the mysterious pearl.

Now that he has the Demon Suppressing Pagoda, he did not fear those kind of things. He could just pick and wrap all of them up, and slowly study them later.

Another thought flashed in Yue Yang's head. Could the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace actually be an enlarged Demon

Suppressing Pagoda?

Could it be a treasure that the Prison Emperor used to seal his enemies?

Of course, simply thinking about these matter was useless...Yue Yang had decided that before he attacked the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace, it would be best if he first entered the Puppet Palace and take a look at what treasures the Ghost Genius Yue Gong had left behind... For every additional treasure he had, the assurance of successfully conquering the Divine Palace would increase by a fold!

Chapter 325 – Puppet Palace, Three Hidden Treasures

What kind of treasure would there be inside the Puppet Palace? Everyone was extremely curious.

However, it was Yue Clan's secret. Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress and the others tampered down their curiosity and waited for Yue Yang inside the grimoire world quietly.

Yue Yu and Yue Bing had also stayed behind willingly.

Especially Yue Bing, although she obviously wanted to go, she knew that she would just be a burden for her brother if she stayed by his side. Without her, it would be easier for her brother to move. The day that they had promised the old Dragon Turtle to come and attack the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace was coming soon, but neither Princess Qian Qian nor Luo Hua City Mistress had become an Innate. Yue Bing didn't dare to slow her brother down. With regards to the girls' thoughts of staying behind, Yue Yang didn't comment much. It was indeed easier for him to explore on his own without Yue Bing and the others, it would just be a little boring by himself.

Xue Wu Xia and the others could now exit and enter the current grimoire world on their own. It was so much more convenient than fighting alone on his own. With the teleportation scroll that Elder Yue Hai gave him, Yue Yang teleported to the mysterious Puppet Palace.

When the teleportation was completed and Yue Yang landed on the ground, he realized that he had arrived at an extremely dark place, where he couldn't even see her five fingers.

If it were another person, he would definitely be a blind person.

However, to Yue Yang, who possess the power of Night Vision, it wasn't a problem at all.

Yue Yang summoned the Five Quintet Puppet Mice and ordered them to find a path. Although Yue Yang had understood about 80-90% of the traps en-route to the Puppet Palace, and that he only didn't know about the location of the secret Inner Hall, Yue Yang still passed the job of exploring in front to the Five Quintet Puppet Mice. He wanted to search if there were any treasures along the way.

The Puppet Palace was built underground. It was a little like Ancient Passage, the road was extremely wide.

It's just that this road wasn't constructed by people, it was actually a cave. The Ghost Genius Yue Gong had ingeniously hidden the Puppet Palace inside.

Because he already had the route map to move forward, Yue Yang purposely walked through various small passages that was like a maze, avoiding all kinds of traps and mechanisms. After walking for an hour, he finally arrived in front of a great door, the entrance to the Puppet Palace.

The great door was built with metal. It was ten metres tall and 5 metres wide.

There was a monster like head decoration in front of the door. This was also one of the door protection mechanisms for the Puppet Palace.

Without the key, if someone touched this door carelessly, the monster head would spout flames. The door would also release poisonous arrows, causing the intruder to die on the spot.

If the intruder had a puppet beast, the monster's eyes and the Heaven Runes 'Lose Control', 'Devour', 'Perish' and the others would join together to form a Rune Circle, making it very difficult for the mr.know-it-all intruder to escape. When Yue Yang saw all these, he couldn't help but sigh in admiration to Ghost Genius Yue Gong's design. This fellow, it was no wonder that he was the one and only Ghost Genius. He was simply too awesome. Yue Yang never thought that he would design a trap for puppet beasts with Heaven Runes. Ghost Genius Yue Gong was definitely more than someone who was an expert with Dwarf Runes and Puppet Beasts. From the arrangement of these Heaven Runes Rune Circle, the Ghost Genius Yue Gong was at least a master in the knowledge of Heaven Runes.

Yue Yang know quite a lot about Heaven Runes, but looking at the arrangement that Yue Gong had used, Yue Yang really never thought that it can be used that way. It can be said that this kind of arrangement gave Yue Yang a new enlightenment, immediately broadening Yue Yang's knowledge.

Yue Yang didn't have any speciality, but he was passionate in learning new skills from others to improve himself.

Yue Yang etched the anti-puppet Rune Circle arrangement deeply in his heart.

He believed that this arrangement would be useful in the future.

Yue Yang had already gained the Anti-Puppet Rune Circle just by coming to the entrance of the puppet palace, to his happy surprise. What awaits him inside? He wondered excitedly.

Yue Yang couldn't wait, he really wanted to go inside and see.

He took out the Rune Crystal key and carefully placed it inside the hole on the monster's head.

The Rune Crystal and the hole in the monster's head combined together and released a 'click' sound. Afterwards, everything proceeded naturally.

As Yue Yang channelled a little Innate Qi into it, the whole Rune Crystal suddenly shone radiantly. The soft glow enveloped everything around it. The Rune Crystal's energy flowed out, triggering the gear inside the monster head statue. That gear moved the monster's eyes, and it instantly shone radiantly in green. The door produced a sound as if the gear mechanism inside was moving.

It was extremely soft, but if one listens carefully, he would be able to sense a subtle yet intense sound.

Yue Yang reached out and felt the changes in the door with his Innate Qi. He realized that if the monster head checked that the key was fake, the green light would not have lighted up. Instead, the colour red, which was the colour of death, would light up.

It would spout out an attack that was similar to a Dragon's Breath and annihilate everything!

The moment it was spouted out, the intruders that were targeted would definitely meet their miserable end!

However, with the real key, the great door would slowly open soundlessly, pulling back into the cave.

This great metal door was a full metre thick. Between the door, there were empty spaces at every short distance, which was connected to the various different mechanisms underground. Yue Yang took note that the traps underground were joined seamlessly. It was even more high-tech than those movies that he had watched before in his previous world. Yue Yang couldn't help but to praise Yue Gong in admiration. He felt that making a big metal door wasn't a difficult thing to do, the difficult thing was to install the sensors on the door. Machines aren't living beings, no matter how accurate a machine was, it would never be able to compare to a human's brain. It was also not flexible. Yue Yang was really marvelled at how the Ghost Genius was able to design a huge metal

door that was still so sensitive and effective after hundreds of years.

He reckoned that even if hundreds of years passed, this door would still be working fine. From this, one could see how great the Ghost Genius' abilities were.

Yue Yang entered the Puppet Palace.

Walking through a long passage way, he suddenly found steep cliff.

Yue Yang couldn't see the bottom of the cliff. The passageway was not below, instead, every one hundred metres, there would be a special floating platform made from magical magnets that moved around. This kind of floating platform was called the "Floating Bridge". Innate Rankers who entered would have to step onto the footprints on the magical magnets in succession.

Yue Yang must pass the magical magnets detection, only then would the door to the Inner Palace slowly open... If one forces his way and flew over using a flying beast, the invader would be bombarded with endless traps and mechanisms the moment he landed. Yue Yang relaxedly stepped onto the stone surface of the magical magnets. Every time he stepped on one, the magical magnet stone surface would shine, showing that he passed the verification as the new owner of the Puppet Palace, and would be allowed to continue advancing.

After Yue Yang finished jumping across the magical magnets

floating stone, there was another big door made of metal that opened automatically.

Inside, there was a long hallway.

Crystal Stones that gives out light had been illuminating the hallway for hundreds of years.

Under the soft glow of light, two rows of mechanical beasts arranged from low-ranked to high-ranked, from low-levelled to high-levelled extended backwards, in order.

The ones in front were Normal-ranked Level 1, Normal-ranked Level 2 Iron-skinned monsters. Following that, there were Stone Goblins and Stone Giant. Behind them were Bronze-ranked War Wolf and Silver-ranked War Leopards, War Tigers and War Eagles. There were rows and rows of dazzling line-up, so much that there were no war beasts that Yue Yang had ever seen before but not within the collection.

Walking 2 kilometres forward, the number of monsters in ocean, land and air decreased gradually, while the number of humanoid monsters or puppet beasts increased.

Similarly, they were also arranged by their ranks and levels, from low to high.

Humanoid Stone Doll, Iron-skinned Man, Chopping Slaughterer, Sawtooth Killer, Iron-clawed Follower, every kind of beast was

there. There was even a humanoid mechanical war doll that Yue Yang had never seen before. Looking at this magnificent collection, Yue Yang who had seen many types of beast before felt dizzy looking at them... Gold-ranked Level 5 Earth War Soldier, Gold-ranked Level 6 Earth War General, Gold-ranked Level 7 Earth War Marshal, Gold-ranked Level 8 Earth War Emperor... Yue Yang almost drooled looking at them.

If it weren't for the fact that these puppets didn't have their core, hence unable to move at all, Yue Yang would have moved them all out.

Were this Ghost Genius Yue Gong's masterpieces?

No!

Yue Yang felt that all these were merely the superficial knowledge that the Ghost Genius Yue Gong had displayed.

It could be seen that these puppets were more or less faulty. Of course, only Yue Yang who had the Heaven Eyes Divine Vision could see it clearly.

In the eyes of a normal warrior, these puppet beasts were perfections. Yue Yang suddenly thought something in his heart, why are they arranged in that way? Those puppet beasts, could they possibly be the Ghost Genius Yue Gong's puppet making skill growth?

At the beginning, the beasts that he created were rather low-levelled. The handwork, design, composition and others were rather crude.

However, along with the process of making puppets, the Ghost Genius Yue Gong's improvement could be clearly seen. The problems and weak points in the first few puppets disappeared. No matter if it was in terms of handwork, design or composition, there were evidence of great improvements. Furthermore, these kind of improvements were separated to different layers. From the animal-type puppet beast to human-shaped puppet beasts, there was a huge leap of improvement. From human-shaped puppet beasts to humanoid puppet beasts, there was another huge leap of improvement... With regards to Bronze, Silver, and Gold-rank, Yue Gong's improvement could also be seen. Last but not least, the ghost Genius Yue Gong could actually make a Gold-ranked Level 8 Earth War Emperor.

Yue Gong's improvement, was it only up to this point?

No!

Yue Yang walked towards the Gold-ranked Level 8 Earth War Emperor and realized that on the manual of the puppet beast, Yue Gong had written a lot of assessment, and most of them were the weaknesses of the puppet beast.

For example, there was a problem with allocating the power from the core to the rest of the body. Its combat skills were also unable to perform up to standard. Furthermore, the Earth War Emperor was unable to adapt to various land terrain battles, it was difficult

for it to fully show its power on certain topographies, and etc... Yue Yang was dumbstruck when he read all these.

It was already incredible for the Ghost Genius Yue Gong to be able to create Gold-ranked Level 8 Puppets, but he was still gravely dissatisfied.

From this, it could be seen that he was definitely a perfectionist.

“I thought of a way to solve the problem of adapting to various topographies. The puppet must be able to transform. Being able to execute all of its combat skills would never be enough. The humanoid puppet must be able to transform and recombine itself, turning into some kind of beast that could fight in water, land, air, sand, ice, fire and other kinds of special area. It has to have more accurate weapons and strong propelling force! Maybe I am going in the wrong way, but I think it is possible to use the Heaven Runes to create the propelling force. To humans, this is something new, but to the dwellers of the Outer Realms, this might have been something that has already been invented, something that is commonplace or household items. If I have fifty more years, no, ten more years, I believe I can perfect this puppet. It’s a pity that I have not much time left!” Ghost Genius Yue Gong recorded his analyses on his record book.

Yue Yang became more shocked as he read on. He was completely shaken by Yue Gong’s ‘crazy’ idea.

The Ghost Genius Yue Gong wrote in the end: “Puppet research has captivated me, and the more I research, the more I realized that I have gotten closer to uncovering the secrets of the puppet’s

core... In the last one year of my life, I have decided to research on things that requires to be solved immediately. If it is successful, I will be able to leave my descendant Three Hidden Treasures. Before locking the Puppet Palace, I hope that an excellent Yue Clan descendant would be able to come to the Inner Palace and receive the fruits of my studies... If, if I did not manage to finish and died first, please continue the research that I have laid foundation on on my behalf...”

Three Hidden Treasures?

There were still Three Hidden Treasures inside the Inner Palace?

Yue Yang couldn't help but to be shocked. What kind of treasure would the Three Hidden Treasures be?

Chapter 326 – Ghost Genius Yue Gong

Entering the Inner Palace was not as easy as entering the Outer Palace.

It required a proof that you were an Innate Ranker.

Throughout the years, maybe some Yue Clan ancestors had entered the Outer Palace before, but Yue Yang was certain that no one had entered the Inner Palace before him. The Three Hidden Treasures had never appeared in the world before, no one even knew whether the Ghost Genius Yue Gong had completed making them. Yue Yang summoned his grimoire and channeled his Innate Qi into the Heaven Runes at the entrance of the Inner Palace.

In an instant, a bright light flashed as the verification crystal succeeded in verifying the energy and immediately started the mechanisms to open the door to the Inner Palace.

The passage into the Inner Palace was accessed by a magical floating stone platform.

When Yue Yang gently stepped onto the platform, the magical stone platform slowly descended. After descending around a hundred metres, a new Palace Hall appeared before Yue Yang.

There were various types of equipments and apparatus scattered all over the hall. In the middle, there was a Crystal Pillar that looked familiar to Yue Yang. It was ten-metres tall and filled with energy. The Heaven Rune Seal on top of the pillar slowly emanated

a glowing white light.

This Crystal Pillar was similar to the Teleportation Crystal Pillar that Yue Yang saw at Tong Tian Tower. It was also similar to the Crystal Pillar that sealed the Qilin girl in the Demonic Palace.

However, this crystal pillar was neither of the two.

Yue Yang realized that the energy in this Crystal Pillar was neither teleportation nor sealing, instead, it had a similar energy to a magic crystal cores. The thing that bewildered Yue Yang the most was that this crystal pillar was lacking a significant piece, as if someone had cut it using some kind of weapon. Could it be that the Ghost Genius Yue Gong had used a piece of this crystal as the puppets' crystal core?

Yue Yang who had fought in the Demon Palace before knew how strong a Crystal Pillar was.

Even the Demon King's Light Rays attack or the Qilin girl's explosive power as she struggled to break free could not damage it at all.

How did the Ghost Genius Yue Gong cut this Crystal Pillar?

Furthermore, puppets did not need additional moving power to move, as long as one could arrange Dwarf Runes accurately in the correct combination, one could create a low-levelled Stone Puppet easily... The fact that Yue Gong needed to use a piece of the Crystal

Pillar for additional moving power, what kind of machinery would that be?

Suddenly, the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice ran past Yue Yang and towards the Crystal Pillar.

Eh?

The pages on Yue Yang's grimoire suddenly turned on its own.

On the Quintet Puppet Mice's page, a line of words appeared: "Power source found, filling the energy reserves..."

The Quintet Golden Puppet Mice all moved closer to the hole in the Crystal Pillar. They joined their tails on the Heaven Rune inscription at the base of the Crystal Pillar. Bright light of energy shone out and flowed into their tails, entering their bodies wave by wave. At this time, the ordinary, unremarkable Quintet Puppet Mice's bodies turned sparkling and translucent, as if they were turning into crystals too. Yue Yang was extremely bewildered. Puppets couldn't level up, but could these Quintet Golden Puppet Mice that was created by Yue Gong actually level up automatically?

Could it be that this Crystal Pillar with a hole was actually one of the Three Hidden Treasures?

The five little mice might need more time to finish filling up their energies.

Yue Yang decided to look for the other hidden treasures first.

The Palace Hall was extremely big. The ceiling was dome-shaped, and rows of pillars created many rows and columns of divided spaces. Each space was filled with different beasts. There were human-shaped puppet dolls and humanoid puppet beasts. There were even beast-shaped mechanical beasts.

Here, the only type of puppet beast that wasn't present was the Rogk Giant Puppets and other puppets that did not require additional moving power.

The Inner Palace was filled metal puppets of various types and shapes.

As Yue Yang approached a Silver-ranked Level 5 'Storm Soldier', Yue Yang picked up the bottle that was placed at its legs. He then gently pour out a smooth, polished crystal ball inside the bottle. That crystal ball was the size of a ping pong ball and was filled with plenty of energy. The crystal ball was inscribed with the Heaven Rune 'Wind Eagle'. Yue Yang experimented and placed the Wind Eagle crystal ball into the hole on the Storm Soldier's forehead.

The mechanical doll's eyes suddenly flashed with blue light. It gave off the feeling as if it had just woken up from its sleep.

Its eyes shone with a blue light as it scanned through Yue Yang's body.

Faster than a lightning, the Storm Soldier pulled out the longsword attached at its waist and slashed it towards Yue Yang. Fortunately, Yue Yang was already on guard when he saw its eyes flashing with light just now. He immediately disappeared and flew in the sky, dodging the Storm Soldier's attack.

That Storm Soldier then jumped twice and tried to attack Yue Yang. However, seeing that it was still unable to do so, it immediately changed its appearance.

Yue Yang was dumbstruck.

What the hell? Ghost Genius Yue Gong was indeed an extraordinary person. He could even make a metal puppet that could change its shape. That Storm Soldier quickly transformed into a mechanical Wind Eagle. When it flapped its giant wings, it immediately soared to the sky, slashing its claws at Yue Yang's body. If it was another person, seeing such a strange phenomenon and receiving this kind of attack, he would have definitely died on the spot... Would a Silver-ranked Level 5 Puppet Beast pose as a threat to Yue Yang? Even if it could change its shape, Yue Yang could finish it in one move.

Yue Yang expertly avoided the attack, and in the instant that he moved, he reached out and took out the small crystal ball embed on the Wind Eagle's forehead.

The mechanical Wind Eagle immediately fell to the ground and quickly reverted back to its original Storm Soldier's appearance.

The blue light in its eyes dissipated and it became quiet once again.

Of course, it was not standing at its original position anymore. Instead, it was standing at one corner of the Palace Hall, about 10 metres from its original position. If Yue Yang had not seen it with his own eyes, he wouldn't believe that Yue Gong could make such an extraordinary metal puppet that could transform. Its only weakness was that it was uncontrollable, it was unable to distinguish its friends or foes. This was rather problematic. How good would it be if there was a way to control this mechanical puppet!

Yue Yang searched through the palace hall for a long time before finally finding a wrist guard that had a slot that could be embedded by the crystal ball.

This was definitely a master-distinguishing equipment. When Yue Yang equipped it and tried to operate the Storm Soldier again, as expected, it didn't try to attack him again. Yue Yang tried to lead the Storm Soldier with his will, and it obediently walked towards its original position.

It didn't even resist when Yue Yang took out the crystal ball again.

“Wow, I never thought that Yue Gong would really solve the problem of controlling these transforming puppets.” Yue Yang respected Yue Gong deeply. He had also created a puppet beast before, so he knew how difficult it was to make one. Being able to make a puppet that can move was already very good. However,

Yue Gong's creations were not only able to use combat skills, they were also able to transform and adapt to various kinds of battlefield. Compared to Yue Yang who was a jack of all trades, Yue Gong was way more knowledgeable. Even though Yue Yang received the pitiful guy's knowledge inheritance and had studied the puppet encyclopedia that Yue Gong left behind, with regards to making puppet beasts, he couldn't even be compared to Yue Gong.

In the hall, there was a bottle at the leg of every puppet beasts. Those was their cores.

Silver-ranked Level 5 puppet beasts like the Storm Soldier just now only had slots on their forehead.

The Silver-ranked Level 6 and above had their slot inside their heart so that their cores would not be exposed. Puppets which were Gold-ranked Level 5 and below, for example the Gold Mammoth, had their core slots on their skulls. Seems like they wouldn't be able to stopped unless their skull was crushed open. Moreover, the skulls of these kind of beasts had the highest defense. Puppets which were Gold-ranked Level 5 and above such as Gold Titan, these kind of giant puppets, had two core slots on their heart and skull respectively. If either of one was destroyed, it would still be able to move.

The strangest thing was that for these kind of titan puppets, if they lost their limbs, they were still able to exchange their head and arms.

The moment they lost their battle power, they would automatically start the recovery process.

If they had spare parts, they would immediately exchange and use it. If they didn't have any spare parts, they could also exchange the destroyed part with their comrades'.

Yue Yang couldn't understand the Ghost Genius Yue Gong's design at all. How did he design the puppets to be able to do these?

It was practically artificial intelligence!

He was indeed the Ghost Genius. That fellow was really extraordinary, there's no arguing that.

"My time, there's not much of it left. However, my research has only started to make progress. I really wished that I could live for another hundred years, even ten years is also good enough. It's a pity that my body has reached its limits... Heaven Runes are really good stuff. Learning it feels like I have become a toddler, who is able to learn something new everyday. This kind of feeling is the best... It's a pity that I couldn't tell anyone about this, there's no one I could share it with. The Heaven Runes combination feels like human's language, but it is much more complex and perfect, just like a human's poem, no, it's more like a summoning method. It is actually some kind of special summoning technique, as long as one could learn this summoning technique, he would be able to solve difficult arrangement problems easily... My research has just started. God has given me a thinker brain, but he didn't give me a long life. Sigh, this is all heaven's will..."

"The real Puppet Encyclopedia?" Yue Yang realized that the

treasure that Yue Gong had left behind was a Puppet Encyclopedia that was similar to Yue Yang's Lich Ring.

When he turned over the pages of this Puppet Encyclopedia, he realized that the knowledge recorded inside was too complex, making him dizzy.

Compared to the Puppet Encyclopedia he had in his ring, it was like it was a primary school textbook.

Inside this real Puppet Encyclopedia, there were no basic knowledge at all. Everything that was recorded was the crystallization of the Ghost Genius Yue Gong's last research. It contained the research and manufacturing process of each and every puppet beast, the arrangement of runes, the distribution of power, the transformation design, battle capabilities and combat skills etc... Yue Yang was very excited when he read it. With this Puppet Encyclopedia, he would not need to worry about lacking in puppet beasts!

Inside the Puppet Encyclopedia, Yue Gong recorded his regrets at the end, "In my whole life, I have created countless puppet beasts, but none of them is a successful product. Each of them contains different regrets, they are all failed products in certain aspects. I wanted to create a perfect puppet beast. If I have another ten years, or even three years, I could have walked a few more steps away from this regret... Right now, I am only filled with regrets, I will never rest in peace... If my future descendant ever saw this book, I hope that you could continue my research and create a perfect puppet beast... I hope that in another thousand years or ten thousand years, a talented younger generation will appear and

complete my wish of creating a puppet that could speak, learn and feel emotions. If you could create this kind of human-like puppet beast, bring it to my crystal coffin, and tell me this piece of good news, I would be smiling even in the underworld...”

After reading that, Yue Yang muttered to himself for a long time.

In the end, he slowly nodded, “Although I think that your wish is a mission impossible, I will try my best to fulfil it.”

Before keeping the Puppet Encyclopedia into his Lich Ring, Yue Yang discovered another conspicuous Rune Diagram. If one didn’t have the ability to recognize Heaven Rune, they wouldn’t know its uses at all. However, Yue Yang recognized this Heaven Rune, and its meaning was ‘Secret Door’. When Yue Yang discovered its existence, his heartbeat quickened. Could it be that there was still another secret door?

Yue Yang pressed his hand onto the Heaven Rune and channeled Innate Qi.

The Heaven Rune shone and at the same time, behind the Crystal Pillar, on a wall, a secret door was suddenly revealed. It opened and showed the secret room inside.

Other than the Power Source Crystal Pillar and the real Puppet Encyclopedia, the third treasure was inside this secret room.

When Yue Yang entered the secret room and saw clearly what the

third treasure was, he was completely shocked speechless.

Yue Yang then vowed sincerely with a sincerity that he never had before, “Elder Yue Gong, I take back the words I said just now. Your will, I will definitely complete it for you. I will not only try, but I will complete it for sure! No matter if I have to spend a thousand years or ten thousand years, I will definitely help you realize your goal!”

Coming out from the Puppet Palace, Yue Yang returned to the Little Flower Garden. When he was telling the girls about what he found, he told her about the Power Source Crystal Pillar and the real Puppet Encyclopedia.

However, he didn’t mention the third treasure to them.

The girls had no problem with that.

They knew that if they needed to know, he would definitely tell them...

Ghost Genius Yue Gong’s will was definitely related to the third treasure! This was Yue Gong’s secret. Yue Yang must protect his secret on his behalf.

Until he realized Yue Gong’s will!

After he finished exploring the Puppet Palace, Yue Yang felt that no matter it was in his knowledge and experience or his mental

state, he had grown a lot. Faintly, he could sense that he would be able to break through the sixth layer of Innate Invisible Sword Qi soon!

Would he be able to do it before attacking the Prison Emperor Divine Palace?

Yue Yang hoped for the best. After all, every additional strength he gained would increase their chances of winning!

Chapter 327 – Goal: Push Down Luo Hua City Mistress

The promised day with the Old Dragon Turtle approached slowly day by day.

Yue Yang improved everyday, but the more anxious he was, the harder it was for him to break through the sixth level of Innate Invisible Sword Qi. Breaking through the sixth level didn't only need an improvement in abilities, the most important thing was improvement in mental state. This required a deep understanding on the heaven and earth. Phoenix Fairy Beauty who had finished her preparation had also returned. She personally trained Yue Yang for two days. In the end, Yue Yang felt that he was only a breadth away from his break through, yet he was always unable to step over to it. This made him feel extremely regretful... Breaking through required the right timing, one couldn't simply rely on diligent training. Otherwise, the old fox wouldn't be trapped for decades when he was only an inch away from Innate.

“Anxiety is a warrior's greatest stumbling block. Be more relaxed!” Xue Wu Xia comforted Yue Yang, which was very rare for her to do.

“Xiao San, even if you don't have a breakthrough, we will definitely be able to succeed!” Yue Yu, the second sister, had prepared sumptuous meals in order to support her brother. She had even planted many vegetables and fruits in the grimoire world. Under Yue Bing's Green Light Tree Demoness “Green Rush” ability, vegetables and fruits will grow very quickly. Yue Yu thought that if Yue Yang really couldn't beat the Prison Emperor

Divine Palace, he could bring everyone along and hide inside the grimoire world. After recovering from his injuries and had a good rest, he could battle his enemies again.

Yue Yu hoped that even if he had to live inside the grimoire world and trained for a few months or even a few years, he must defeat the Prison Emperor Divine Palace without losing anything.

No one must lose their lives in completing this quest, not even one!

Luo Hua City Mistress who especially loved to grow flowers was especially supportive towards Yue Yu's idea.

She had also planted many flowers and herbs in the grimoire world. If her time was not limited, she had even wanted to move her flower garden in the fourth level of Tong Tian Tower to the grimoire world!

If they really couldn't beat their strong enemies in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, those who participated in the battle could hide inside the grimoire world, recovering as they fight. This was an extremely good idea, in any case, if they kill the strong enemies in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace one by one, they would be able to fight a war of attrition with them.

Of course, this was the worst scenario.

If the Qilin girl and the Phoenix sisters were willing to lend them

a helping hand when they were attacking the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, all the problems would have been solved.

It was just that the Qilin girl had not come out anymore after that last time, it seemed like she had no interest in attacking the Prison Emperor Divine Palace at all... Yue Yang reckoned that unless his life was in danger, the Qilin girl and Phoenix sisters would not help him fight his battle at all.

This, could the Heavenly Sword Goddess ordered them to do so secretly?

Yue Yang would sometimes thought of that.

Although the difficulty was very difficult for Yue Yang, he viewed it as an opportunity to train and level up. If the Heavenly Sword Goddess was willing to fight, Yue Yang believed she would be able to sweep across the whole Soaring Dragon Continent, unrivalled at all. However, she never did that, and she had also never joined in Yue Yang's battles before. She had left everything to Yue Yang.

She only forced Yue Yang to train and improve in the Dream Realm.

All of Yue Yang's weaknesses and areas that needed to be improved would be pointed out by the big loli that the Heavenly Sword Goddess created with her Sword Qi. She would force Yue Yang to fix them.

The Heavenly Sword Goddess, could she come out from the Dream Realm? With regards to this fact, Yue Yang had always been suspicious about it. The reason why the Phoenix sisters would not care about Yue Yang's battles, other than the fact that they were peaceful and kind beasts that would never initiate an attack, could it be because they were listening to the Heavenly Sword Goddess' orders?

Why would the Phoenix sisters come out at the Demon Palace? Why would they reveal their appearance, pushed the three Great Demon Kings and two Lich Kings back and made them afraid to pursue Yue Yang?

Recalling that moment, Yue Yang was indeed at a precarious situation then.

A moment of carelessness would end up with him being killed in an instant by the three Great Demon Kings.

Hence, the Phoenix sisters had to appear, otherwise Yue Yang would not be able to leave the Demon Palace. He would not be able to leave even with the help of the Qilin girl and Phoenix Fairy Beauty who had recovered... Heavenly Sword Goddess, Phoenix sisters, and even the airheaded, disoriented Qilin girl had all stopped caring about him, but they still helped him in secret. At normal times, they would not care about the battles in his life, but the moment his life was in danger, they would immediately make their move...

"I'm not going to rush my level up anymore. Anxiousness will just lead to failure. Breaking through requires a turning point, this

is something that can't be rushed." Yue Yang put down the big burden in his heart and didn't force himself to rush his level up anymore. Instead, he helped Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress to become Innates.

"Why don't you train with Sister Luo Hua?" Princess Qian Qian pulled Yue Yang to one side and said, "Wu Xia and I had decided to become Innate during our battle in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace!"

"What?" Yue Yang was shocked by their way of thinking.

"Actually, I am very close to levelling. With you there, there would be no problem for me to level up and become an Innate. On the other hand, Sister Luo Hua is still way behind. If you spend all of your effort helping me to become Innate, she wouldn't make it for sure. How about I slow down a little, so you can first help sister Luo Hua become an Innate. I will work very hard these few days, there would definitely be no problems!" Princess Qian Qian's face suddenly blushed a little, "By the way, what my old man said to you, I'm not going to care at all. You definitely can't treat me like how you treat sister Wu Hen. I still haven't agreed to anything yet! Little rogue, for the time being, I can only give you a chance to pursue me. Without my approval, even if you force me, you can forget about me treating you nicely like sister Wu Hen..."

In the end, this tigress girl who always say things she didn't mean waved her fist at Yue Yang, showing that she was not easily bullied.

Yue Yang laughed.

He really want to watch how long this tigress girl would last. Having a personality on her own is a good thing, he could just teach her slowly. Wouldn't he feel more sense of accomplishment that way?

Princess Qian Qian realized that Yue Yang's laughter sounded a little wrong and her heart faltered. She felt her body weakening, so she quickly escaped. Xue Wu Xia who was quietly reading a book in the corridor closed her book slowly and disappeared.

Xue Wu Xia had telepathical mutual understanding with Yue Yang. Even though they did not speak, they would know each others' thoughts.

Furthermore, Yue Yang, Yi Nan, Yue Bing and her had shared the 'Heart Mirror' that they received as a reward for clearing the Virgo Temple. If they really focused their minds on each other, they would be able to share each other's minds and link their hearts!

The strength of this 'Heart Mirror' ability depended on the physical distance and the level of mutual understanding between them. The feeling that was transmitted was also fuzzy, there was no way it could be translated into words. However, one would be able to understand the main gist of the telepathy. For example, before Xue Wu Xia closed her book and left, she sent a message 'Push her down boldly', secretly signalling to Yue Yang the way to help Luo Hua City Mistress reach Innate rank. Even though it would require him forcing her own, he needed to do it... Although Luo Hua City Mistress did not have good combat abilities, the power of her Aurora Light was extremely strong. Furthermore, her

attack was the nemesis of darkness, undead, ghost-type enemies. It would definitely be useful in Prison Emperor Divine Palace, even more so than Princess Qian Qian. Hence, Yue Yang had to make his move boldly, he shouldn't let Luo Hua off!

There was not much time left, only three days.

Although Luo Hua City Mistress improved quickly, if they did not complete the last step, which was using [Body Fusion] in a married couple's way, they would really not make it in time.

Maybe because of this, Princess Qian Qian said that she would level up at Prison Emperor Divine Palace instead, and told Yue Yang to help Luo Hua City Mistress first.

"Little friend, do you want me to teach you some moves?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty suddenly appeared behind Yue Yang, her red lips whispering at Yue Yang's ears. She lightly kissed his ears and blew him an enticing, fragrant breath.

"Tsk, who will be the one teaching!" Yue Yang immediately laughed out loud. As a virgin, how was she going to teach him moves to push down others? What a joke!

"You are not modest at all..." Phoenix Fairy Beauty shrugged her shoulders slowly, making her breasts bounce, and turned around, walking away slowly, shaking her sexy butt. Yue Yang's eyes almost dropped ogling at her. If it weren't for the fact that she was stronger than him by so much, Yue Yang would have pushed this seductive Phoenix Fairy Beauty down long ago. It was not like he

had never seen a G-cup before, he just never seen a perfect one like hers!

Forget about Zhi Zun's, Yue Yang had not seen hers very clearly. Hers was not like Phoenix Fairy Beauty's, who was on full display...

Such beautiful breasts... Even if he choked to death burying his head inside them, he wouldn't have regrets.

Yue Yang slowly gulped down his saliva.

Forget it, Phoenix Fairy Beauty would be his sooner or later. He shouldn't be anxious right now, she wouldn't run away anyway!

After dinner, Xue Wu Xai and the others entered the grimoire world early to rest, leaving the shy Luo Hua City Mistress alone.

Of course, she understood what the others had meant, but she was completely embarrassed. Furthermore, being with Yue Yang alone, just the two of them, was also her wish for a very long time. Luo Hua City Mistress tried to calm her wildly beating heart and tried to act cool and composed, "This City Mistress has not patrolled her castle for quite a long time, so I shall order you, the incompetent bodyguard to lead in the front as I patrol the vicinity. Otherwise, I'll cut your salary!"

Recalling how he met Yue Yang for the first time, Luo Hua City Mistress couldn't help but to laugh.

Who would know that they would have such a fate with that first meeting? Could it be that there were really red threads of fate binding them together in secret?

This fate, was it really decided by the heavens?

Yue Yang was extremely quick-witted. With one move, he carried Luo Hua City Mistress, just like how he had carried her down from the mountains when they went to the Sky Pavilions.

Luo Hua City Mistress twisted her body slightly, not used with the feeling at the start. However, she calmed down very quickly as she also remembered when she passed out after their battle and was carried on his back down the mountain. It was also then she found the Beautiful Demonic Flower's seed that she had wished for so long.

"Little scoundrel, that time, did you touch me?" Luo Hua City Mistress faintly remembered that his hands were not very polite at that time.

"What do you mean? I'm such a polite boy, I would not touch even when I see." Yue Yang immediately denied.

"Who are you kidding!" Luo Hua City Mistress would have believed his words last time, but right now, she knew that he was a scoundrel. He carried her all the way down the mountain, how could he be so obedient, not touching her even once? That's impossible! Luo Hua City Mistress blushed a little, but she thought that sooner or later he would probably take advantage of her, so

touching a little didn't matter much at all. She had almost gotten used to being taken advantage of during their practices. However, no matter how she felt in her heart, she must deny it with her mouth!

“I'm really a good boy! As your personal bodyguard, I am definitely qualified. I can even work overtime and warm your bed at night!” Yue Yang offered his services tactfully like how Mao Sui recommends himself, selling his body with a huge discount.

(Shiro: 毛遂自荐 mao sui zi jian – Mao Sui is the name of a bold guy who nominates himself to become one of the twenty selected retainers for the Prince, although he had no achievements at all. From then on, his name was used in an idiom to describe someone who recommended himself)

However, his dishonest hands continued to creep up slowly.

They slowly circled Luo Hua City Mistress' luxurious, plump butt, testing her reaction, getting more restless with each second.

As a sensitive girl, Luo Hua City Mistress obviously understood this scoundrel's tricks. She started to swat his mischievous hands away lightly, but before 2 seconds passed, those mischievous hands had already returned back, leaving her with no other way. In the end, Luo Hua City Mistress decided to use her ultimate weapon, her sharp, white, shiny teeth and bit Yue Yang's ear.

As she lightly bit on Yue Yang's ear, she released her hot breath, “I'll allow you to be bad, I'll allow you to pretend that you are an obedient boy... I want to punish you, follow me to my Sky Garden.

You are not allowed to rest on the way!” With a beauty carried on his back, Yue Yang would not be so foolish and rest. He immediately agreed, “I’ll do as you will, your highness the City Mistress. I will definitely listen to your orders and flatter you!”

Meanwhile, his naughty hands continued to rub on her butt, making her moan.

Yue Yang teleported out of the Little Flower Garden and carried Luo Hua City Mistress all the way to Tong Tian Tower. His goal was the Sky Garden in the Fourth Floor of Tong Tiang Tower. Of course, his other goal was to push down Luo Hua.

Chapter 328 – Bending Down

Please do not host these chapters elsewhere without permission.

Crossing over Shang Wu Camp, Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress teleported to the Tong Tian Tower.

Carrying a beauty on his back, Yue Yang felt extremely proud. Luo Hua City Mistress on the other hand, afraid that there would be people who could recognize her, quickly struggled to get herself down. She unnaturally looked around her surrounding, different from her usual easy-going, outspoken personality. Looking at her right now, she really looked like a lover on a rendezvous.

When Yue Yang and Luo Hua teleported inside, a Silver-armoured guard scratched his head in confusion, “Isn’t Luo Hua City Mistress engaged to the Third Young Master of Yue Clan? Why is she walking so closely with that Titan?”

The Silver-armoured guard captain that was in charge of guarding the Tong Tian Tower immediately slapped his subordinates face, “Who are you to talk about your superior’s business? Furthermore, are you blind? That person is the Yue Clan Third Young Master, did you really think he was her personal bodyguard? Titan is the Yue Clan Third Young Master’s alias in Tong Tian Tower. Don’t talk nonsense if you don’t know anything. Someone with a loose mouth is hated, do you know that?”

The slap made the Silver-armoured guard tremble in fright. He immediately smiled awkwardly, “Head, I was wrong. Don’t be

angry... Is that person really the Yue Clan Third Young Master? I was scared to death!”

In the Tong Tian Tower Fourth Floor.

This was the first time Yue Yang came to the Fourth Floor. Luo Hua City Mistress had also brought him when he came to the second and third floor.

There were procedures involved every time they go to another level. Without Luo Hua City Mistress, a well-known person, as the guide, according to the strict adventurer’s rules, Yue Yang would have to waste time to complete about a hundred adventurer’s quest to pass through each level. Although the difficulty wasn’t high for him, it was extremely tedious.

The Sky Garden was located in the Fourth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. This Tong Tian Tower was extremely weird. The space of the Tong Tian Tower would be ten times bigger every level up.

After the Third Floor, the demons from Demon Abyss and the warriors from the Soaring Dragon Continent shared the same space.

And thus, the two races’ deathly war started.

The two sides were fighting over the precious resources in Tong Tian Tower, it had always been that way since thousands of years ago. It’s just that thousands of years ago, mankind was dominant.

Right now, mankind was losing.

There were a few continents in the Fourth and Fifth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, such as the Strange Orchid Continent, White Clouds Continent, Desolate Barbarian Continent and the others. With regards to these continents, the warriors from the Soaring Dragon Continent called them the Outer Realms. The sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower was an even wider space. There were many other Outer Realms there. Legends said that there was Dragon Island, Secret Fairy Realm, Dwarf Continent and even the Eastern Goblin Tribe...

Of course, the battles fought in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower almost have nothing to do with the Soaring Dragon Continent at all.

That place was for Innates and Lesser Innates to live. If a Level 6 [Elder] from the Soaring Dragon Continent went there, they would more or less be at the level of normal adventurers in the first floor of Tong Tian Tower. It would be very difficult for them to live. Other than young [Elders] with a lot of potential who went there to train, older [Elders] would mostly train below the Sixth Floor.

Luo Hua City Mistress had a Sky Garden in Tong Tian Tower Level 4.

With her abilities last time, it was actually quite difficult for her to stay there for a long time. A lot of warriors from the Demon Abyss and continents would actually covet for her land.

However, this Sky Garden was Night Empress' residence last time. Only fools such as low-levelled warriors or demons from the Demon Abyss who had not stayed for a long time and did not know what was going on would have ideas about this place. After being beaten half to death by Luo Hua City Mistress, they had become fearful of this place. At the same time, as Luo Hua City Mistress' fame started to grow, low-levelled warriors did not dare to have any ideas about the Sky Garden anymore.

It was the same with the warriors from the Demon Abyss.

Demon Marshals, Demon Kings and other strong existences did not visit the lower levels at all, and Demon Generals weren't a match for Luo Hua City Mistress. At that time, only Demon Commanders were able to fight against Luo Hua. Since attacking the Sky Garden would anger Night Empress easily, the Demon Abyss warriors would never do such a troublesome thing.

Night Empress' protection was famous throughout Tong Tian Tower!

Since Luo Hua City Mistress was her descendant, those who coveted the Sky Garden gave up their thoughts of forcing an attack on it. If they killed Luo Hua City Mistress, Night Empress would definitely not let them go.

This was the same when Yue Yang went to the Demon Palace to stir up trouble. If it weren't for the fact that the appearance of the Phoenix Sisters that put pressure on Baruth, Ha Xin, Gu Lun and others, they would definitely not let Yue Yang go, even with Phoenix Fairy Beauty's protection. This was because attacking the

Demon Palace was equivalent to slapping their face. As a Demon King, they would definitely not put up with it... Of course, the Phoenix Sisters were extremely strong. Since they were afraid that they would get killed in an instant, they let Yue Yang go!

They almost arrived at the Sky Garden. Yue Yang remembered about the Beautiful Demonic Flower Seed and asked, “The Beautiful Demonic Flower that we got last time, have they flowered?”

“You can’t smell it, it’s not meant for guys to smell!” Luo Hua City Mistress immediately scolded him, telling him not to act recklessly.

“Haha!” Yue Yang, who was well-versed with the Herbs Encyclopedia, obviously understood what the effects of the Beautiful Demonic Flower was. It was a miracle flower used by humans to evolve fox beasts, but when a man smelled its scent, they will lose their sexual desire if they smelled too long. If they eat them, they would become impotent. If it was mixed with other herbs and given to a man, he would even become a transvestite. It was truly frightening. Five thousand years ago, a queen discovered the effects of this plant. As she was hateful with her unfortunate marriage, she placed a vase of blooming Beautiful Demonic Flower by the king’s window. The king loved it very much, so much that he would water and smell the flowers everyday. He even turned the flower petals into tea. In the end, his life became completely miserable.

However, the most miserable one was the Kingdom’s princes. Because the current crown prince was not the birth son of the

Queen, the Queen who was a master in using the herb turned it into a medicine and secretly made the crown prince eat it.

In the end, all of the princes, other than the Queen's own son, became transvestites.

However, she had gone too far, and soon after, her deeds were found out by the imperial doctors. The queen was then killed by the furious king, but even after five thousand years, this story was still passed down to the next generation. The Beautiful Demonic Flower's fame was not any less than the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass.

It had always been feared amongst men.

However, no matter how deadly a herb was, it would definitely have a special use. Three thousand years ago, an expert doctor called Jing Bo discovered another use for the Beautiful Demonic Flower.

And that was to cultivate fox-type beast.

If it was in Yue Yang's words, the herb was used to cultivate a vixen/fox-spirit!

(Shiro: I'm using vixen/fox-spirit because the raws has double meaning. Fox-spirit in the sense that fox-type beasts will turn humanoid when they evolve, so they sort of become a gumiho that loves to seduce men)

However, the herb was not effective for all fox-type beasts. The Beautiful Demonic Flower was only effective to spirit foxes or devil foxes that had the potential to evolve into a humanoid form... It was said that spirit foxes and devil foxes that absorbed the Beautiful Demonic Flower's energy would turn into an unrivalled beauty once it evolved into its humanoid version. Furthermore, its body would emit a scent that would make males sexually aroused, which was so powerful that it could even make an impotent man healthy again... In these three thousand years, many kingdoms tried to cultivate that kind of beautiful fox spirit, but as the expert doctor Jing Bo refused to divulge the secret to cultivating it, no one in the world succeeded in creating a beautiful vixen. Moreover, the number of spirit foxes and devil foxes that had the potential of evolving into a humanoid was extremely few.

However, Luo Hua City Mistress was an exception. The secret of cultivating the fox was given to her by the Night Empress.

The Tian Luo Kingdom was the only one who controlled the secret of cultivation. It had never been revealed to anyone other than the royal family members.

To other people, the Beautiful Demonic Flower was a harmful herb, which was especially poisonous to men. Luo Hua City Mistress who understood its full effects had obviously acquired it to cultivate her Three-tailed Snow Fox, so that it could evolve into a humanoid and become a Holy Beast soon.

Although she knew that Yue Yang was an expert in the Herb Encyclopedia, she still warned him repeatedly. She didn't want the Beautiful Demonic Flower to have any effect on Yue Yang's body.

In reality, if Yue Yang did not smell the flower for long period of time or eat it, a slight smell of Beautiful Demonic Flower would not harm his body at all.

Furthermore, Yue Yang possessed such an abnormal body. Why would he be afraid of the flower's poison?

Yue Yang understood that Luo Hua was worried about him. He turned around and pinched at her nose, laughing out loud.

“You are not allowed to laugh! Annoying!” Luo Hua City Mistress glared at Yue Yang angrily. Remembering that time when they went to the Sky Pavilion to acquire the Beautiful Demonic Flower but unluckily met the Demon Commander Ma Li Ang instead, if it weren't for Yue Yang, Luo Hua City Mistress would have suffered great losses. After the big battle, the mountains were split, and his miserable figure trying to escape while carrying her on his back were vividly etched on her mind. She couldn't help but to laugh too, laughing to the point that her whole body shook.

Yue Yang finally saw Luo Hua City Mistress' free-spirited laughter again. He couldn't help but to feel moved. Luo Hua's laughter was simply too sexy, Yue Yang really liked the way Luo Hua City Mistress' was right then!

He immediately reached out his hand and pulled her into his embrace.

Bending his head, he kissed her deeply...

Luo Hua City Mistress struggled a little, but when his hot tongue caressed her lips, she felt like a bolt of lightning had just struck her body. She felt weak and soft all over as she shyly closed her eyes, giving in to this scoundrel's philandering. When he pried open her cherry lips and took the kiss deeper, Luo Hua City Mistress felt like she was about to lose her consciousness. It was as if she had entered a hazy, dreamy world... It was not the first time that he kissed her, but this kiss felt especially different from before.

Maybe it was because she had accepted this fellow and had put down all the reservations in her heart, hence she was able to relax herself and feel wonderful.

Her pair of smooth hands had already twined themselves around Yue Yang's head without her realizing it.

Under his merciless sucking, she clumsily tried to respond to him, nibbling at his tongue. Then, her instincts took over as she reached out her tongue and intertwine it with his...

When Luo Hua City Mistress finally came back to her senses, she realized her lips had already become swollen, it was even a little painful.

She raised her fists and lightly punched him.

That brat had kissed her for too long without stopping. What if she suffocate from his kiss?

Yue Yang's mischievous hands slid inside her clothes and slowly kneaded at her stomach and waist, making Luo Hua City Mistress feel relaxed. Yue Yang knew that if he had boldly explored her woman's peaks, touching or pinching her snow white mounds and red plums, she would definitely pull his hand out. However, she felt extremely comfortable with his hands massaging her stomach and back right now, it gave her an indescribable feeling of gentleness and comfort...

She didn't refuse him, and was even loving the way he was flirting with her, sneaking here and there.

She liked him this way the most. She didn't like him peeling off his clothes anxiously and touching her sensitive parts immediately. This was because although she loves him, she was still a girl, she would feel embarrassed.

She was very happy that Yue Yang did not hurry in taking her, instead, he carefully loved her body. This made her feel relaxed and safe.

"Scoundrel, let's go, I'm feeling a little sleepy now!" Luo Hua City Mistress was not sleepy, but she wanted to hug Yue Yang and sleep within his embrace. As for whether his hands would take advantage of the opportunity, she had long accepted whatever that would happen.

Chapter 329 – Luo Hua, Beautiful As Dream

The Sky Garden which was located in midair was considered to be a type of Sky Island.

There were mountain peaks that looked a bit like the Flying Mountain. However, the mountain peaks were linked together, forming a mountainous range of different heights. Furthermore, they were also bigger in size compared to the Flying Mountain. On the precipice of the mountain, there were more than ten waterfalls of different sizes that looked like white silk hanging from the mountains' sides.

Between the mountains was a valley. In the valley, there was a garden where hundreds of flowers bloomed and butterflies fluttered about.

Normally no one lives here, but every so often, the Night Empress' servants would come down from the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower. They would tidy up the place and safeguard it well as if Night Empress was living there. Other than that, the flowers and plants in the garden were personally planted by Luo Hua City Mistress.

Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress were not in the mood to appreciate the beautiful scenery. Holding hands, they both flew up the Sky Island, passing through the beautiful garden and entering into the house.

Just as they both set foot on the floor, they impatiently hugged

and kissed each other, demanding more of the other's sweet affection.

After a long while, their lips parted.

Luo Hua City Mistress became embarrassed and lightly hit Yue Yang. This brat is too impatient, immediately playing tricks on her after arriving!

Her eyes became aroused as if intoxicated from rich and fine wine.

Yue Yang knew that her emotions were stirred.

Very tenderly, Yue Yan softened his movements, gently laying Luo Hua on the bed. He did not pervertedly pounce and press down on her. Instead, he sat on the bedside and softly hugged her. Then, he softly kissed her.

Sure enough, this technique greatly removed Luo Hua's vigilance and shyness. With this move acting as a buffer, she did not resist his tricks anymore.

So much that, she was totally unaware as to when he had quietly laid on the bed and hugged her.

Her entire mind and body was engrossed in his kiss. Their lips and tongue touching.

The sweet, sweet kiss melted her body, making her as soft as silk.

His naughty hands lightly entered her clothes. Her body trembled from nervousness and expectation. Very softly... very softly he reached her womanly peaks... She bit his lips as she produced an extremely alluring yet suppressed moan from her throat. The sounds seemed to be full of pleasure, discomfort, resistance, endurance, pain, and happiness. Just as he bent his head down, she gasped continuously and powerlessly pushed him, trying to resist his next demand. However, she was unable to stop his slow and unstoppable kiss landing on her sensitive flower bud. Yet, she still tightly embraced him and emotionally wrapped him in her bosom.

She had already forgotten about everything else, not even the current year or month.

“Bastard, bastard, you big bastard. Don’t do that again, it’s too painful... Enough, you greedy bastard, you cannot bite it, it hurts ... and too embarrassing, you are too aggressive!”

The beauty’s clothes were half removed, and she gasped for breath.

That bright gown was ruffled from his hands’ invasion.

Her rushed breathing, burning red cheeks, warm breath, intoxicated eyes and soft body; all of these show the beauty’s stirred up emotions.

His hands explored her body, overbearingly holding her twin peaks and proclaiming this virgin ground under his name. When his hands were mischievously making her body tremble, her small hands were sliding on his back, at a loss of what to do. She didn't know if she should pull him closer or loosen a bit to allow his movements to become smoother.

It was the first time she had flirted like lovers with someone. She simply did not know how to react properly.

His kiss, oppressively robbing and sucking kiss, made her felt suffocated.

Practicing many time with Wu Hen's body, Yue Yang's flirting techniques was now definitely at the Grand Master Rank. Forget about Luo Hua City Mistress, who was still an unknowledgeable virgin, even the Sickly Beauty, Wu Hen, who had been pleased by him many times now, could not resist it.

"S-stop, I can't breathe....." Luo Hua City Mistress felt a kind of fire igniting inside her body. Her body was reacting peculiarly, as if something was quickly accumulating inside her, a pleasing and strange feeling. Especially when his naughty hands rubbed the two round meat on her chest, she felt an indescribable mind numbing feeling as if her body was thirsting for his oppression.

She felt that the more his hands moved down, the more the strange feeling inside her body become stronger.

She almost opened her mouth and begged him to quickly play his tricks on her so that she may break away from this situation that she made her feel edgy and restless.

However, just as Yue Yang's hands begun invading her lower abdomen, her virgin's sensitivity immediately made her body trembled slightly. She felt her own legs convulsing softly, from her thighs to her toes.

Subconsciously, Luo Hua City Mistress sandwiched his warm hands with her legs tightly, preventing him from advancing.

Luo Hua City Mistress looked at Yue Yang and knew that her most important moment had arrived.

Resisting the blushing shame in her heart, she lightly kissed him: "Scoundrel, you... you should take a bath first. I am a bit scared, let me recover a bit!"

Yue Yang quickly withdrew his hands and gently kissed her, until she shook her head and say that she was alright.

Maybe she truly needed to relax a bit.

Being too anxious for quick results was not good, it might leave a shadow in her heart.

Yue Yang decided to leave for a while, giving Luo Hua City Mistress time to first untie the knots in her heart. After all, this

was a true union and not just kissing and hugging like before. Moreover, when a virgin offers her chastity, they would definitely have worries in their hearts. Even if it was their beloved person, she would still worry about her own body, whether it would hurt or not, whether it would be injured or not ... She can only overcome these fears all by herself!

After Yue Yang finished taking a bath and returned, he discovered that Luo Hua City Mistress had tidied up the entire bed as if it was new.

On the window hung a lucky red silk. Even the silver hooks in front of the canopy was tied with a red rope. A wedding dress was placed on the headboard. Also, a few brilliant red flowers were placed on the table in front, just at the right time when the flowers were in full bloom.

“It’s a pity there is no wine. Otherwise, I would have been able to share a nuptial cup with you. Even though this is not a wedding.....” Luo Hua City Mistress had a bit of regret.

In fact she had a little longing for a marriage that was bustling with noise and excitement.

Sickly Beauty and the others were indifferent towards this. In any case, marriage was simply held to fulfill their elder’s wishes and to complete a social tradition. From the bride’s and groom’s point of view, most would say that it was a foolish waste of money. Looking at Princess Qian Qian’s attitude, she hated marriage the most, because the Royal Family’s marriage was extremely troublesome. From childhood to now, she had witnessed her

brothers' and sisters' marriages and noticed that complete etiquette was necessary. As for those sister-in-laws that had married into her family, although they looked well-off from the outside, they secretly complained to her and felt that there were too many rules. It was truly too tormenting.

Only the youngest of them, Yi Nan, and the tender and virtuous Yue Yu were longing for marriage. Yi Nan longed that she would be able to sit on a big marriage sedan following Yue Yang, who was riding a big horse, and happily go to their new home with him. She would marry into the Yue Clan. After paying respects to the heavens and the earth, paying respects to each other, they would enter the bridal room and in the end she would become his new wife, his small lovable wife.

On the other hand, Yue Yu was a pure and traditional woman. She felt that marriage was one of life's major events. It was not right if it was not grand.

Luo Hua City Mistress does not place importance in marriage ceremonies. She only thought that during her marriage ceremony, her father would be present, drinking wine with his friends or possibly picking a fight with someone.

Never mind that kind of big banquet to entertain everybody for a marriage ceremony. Luo Hua City Mistress felt that the most important thing was to complete the ceremony between husband and wife with her beloved.

Unfortunately she did not prepare in advance. Otherwise, she would have wished to exchange cups with him and share a nuptial

cup of wine with him.

“Who said there’s no wine? Look!” Yue Yang brought out wine, cups and other things from inside the Lich Ring. Luo Hua City Mistress was so happy that she kissed him. At this moment, cuddling in her beloved’s arms, sharing a nuptial cup of wine with him, mutually blessing each other and promising to stay together forever, Luo Hua City Mistress felt so happy, as if happiness were gushing out from the depths of her heart. She raised her tearful eyes and shyly looked at her beloved. She noticed that he was especially heroic today. His handsome face glowed with a distinct radiance, making other’s hearts unable to endure trembling.

Above all, his electrifying eyes made others’ heartbeat thump. Looking at him face to face made her heart race, pounding fiercely within her chest.

In Yue Yang’s eyes, his lover had also become the most beautiful woman in the world.

Luo Hua, in his arms, was as beautiful as a dream.

Her snow white face glowed and her cheeks flushed red. It was as if she could not bear the strength of the alcohol and was filled to the brim with happiness.

Yue Yang bent his head and kissed her everywhere. Regardless of whether it was that glossy and fair forehead, her long eyebrows, small exquisite nose, scarlet cheeks, or swollen lips, they were all branded with a hot kiss from his deep love.

In the end, he carried the shy beauty who was covering her face and did not dare to look at him. Arriving at the bath side with scattered petals, he lightly took off her dress and underwear exposing her snow white body. He lightly poured fresh water on her, gently washing her delicate and powerless body. He washed away her worries, her fears, and also her shyness and reservation...

Luo Hua City Mistress trembled slightly. She closed her eyes tightly and did not dare look at him.

Her snow white body complied with his movements, granting him control.

Yue Yang carried the clean and flawless beauty up and used a silk towel to lightly wipe off the water droplets from her body. His heart sighed at her perfect, snow white body. This was truly the convergence of spirit energy from the heavens and earth, truly one of nature's most finely crafted masterpiece.

The beauty had reached a perfect realm, not too thin nor too fat.

Her entire body can be compared to the most pure of gold...

Yue Yang couldn't help bending his head and kissed the snow white beauty's delicate skin, marking it and announcing that she would always belong to him. At the same time, he was leaving a new mark on her life.

After today, she would change and possess a new identity as his wife!

Luo Hua City Mistress was both proud and embarrassed. She loved to see his infatuated and foolish expression, loved to feel his gentle kiss and his attentive care.

“Scoundrel, be gentler!” Just as she was about to be put down on the bed by Yue Yang, she knew that her most important time had arrived. Although she had long ago prepared her heart, she was still nervous.

“Good girl, don’t be afraid!”

Yue Yang had first used the snow white quilt and lightly covered her nervously trembling body. Afterwards, he slowly crawl inside together with her, reached out his hands and lightly embraced her. As she felt their heart beat simultaneously, her nervous heart calmed down. His hands, burning hot like flames, gently explored her body, spreading the flames of desire everywhere. Her nervous body begun to gradually relax and grow softer, slowly burning up.

Yue Yang kissed her cherry lips for a long time.

And continued to kiss downwards.

He kissed her sensitive earlobes, kissed her ticklish neck, kissed her smooth and round shoulders, kissed her shallow collar bone, kissed her snow white skin, kissed her most beautiful jade peaks,

kissed her white and tender flower bud... Luo Hua City Mistress could only gasp in short breaths and did not know how to do anything else. Even her reasoning had disappeared. She completely soaked in the pleasure that Yue Yang brought to her... Yue Yang continued downwards and kissed her abdomen. When he moved to her cute navel, he mischievously explored it with his tongue, making Luo Hua City Mistress tremble from head to toe.

In the middle of her stirred up emotions and bashful expectations, Yue Yang had softly opened her legs.

He left warm kisses on both of her slender thighs.

Her body trembled every time he kissed her. Until he naughtily kissed her most sensitive, most beautiful petal. Her flower was already flooded. When he kissed it, Luo Hua City Mistress' ten fingers passed through his black hair as if resisting yet detaining him. The pleasure she had accumulated to the brim had now overflowed, along with an unsuppressible cry...

This kind of climax was unfamiliar to her yet also unimaginably wonderful.

She had never imagined her lover's tricks would bring about this big wave of comfortable pleasure. It was truly unspeakably pleasing!

At this instant, her mind had become blank and she had lost all reasoning. It was as if her soul have followed the huge explosion from her climax and flew out of her body. As she continued to rise

beyond the clouds, she became so elated that she did not know whether the world still existed or not.

Even after the tide had retreated, just as the remnant of her pleasure was slowly disappearing, she noticed that he was playing his tricks again, quickly bringing her another tide of pleasure.

At the moment before the tide had completely disappeared, another new tide quickly formed.

Her soul which almost returned once more flew up higher, and farther.

This scoundrel was too evil and simply wanted her life, she would certainly die...

After Luo Hua City Mistress' second tide ended, some reason had returned to her. She hurriedly strived to pull up her beloved scoundrel, and did not allow him to continue his tricks. Otherwise she would definitely die, and happily suffocate! Despite the fact that his mouth was full of her nectar, Luo Hua City Mistress still kissed him emotionally. She gave him her small sweet tongue, showing that she was truly happy. Giving him this satisfying reward.

Not knowing when, many rune symbols floated up from their bodies.

The more intimate and more happily indifferent they were, the

more the runes assemble abundantly and mysteriously.

Yue Yang's Innate Qi came out from his mouth and entered Luo Hua City Mistress' cherry lips. The runes circulated inside her body as they simultaneously performed [Double Body Fusion]. Luo Hua City Mistress was totally unaware of this and only cared about wrapping her body around him. She was unaware that her own body's blood channels were being linked up. Her female private parts that Yue Yang couldn't touch before, did not pose as a cultivation hindrance now that Yue Yang could pour Innate Qi from there... Now, she was about to become his little wife, her body and mind had completely been released, no matter what he tells her to do, she wouldn't mind at all. Luo Hua City Mistress did not feel the slight pain from linking up her blood channels at all, on the contrary, the Innate Qi had stimulated her pleasure even further. His naughty hands also triggered her lust, making her feel restless.

A kind of thirst, a kind of natural instinct, emerged from her heart. It was an instinct that every mature living being, who thirst for their other half, feels.

Yue Yang knew what the beauty's heart thirsted for. In fact, he also similarly thirsted for her.

Their union formally begun at this moment.

His high-spirited, burning hot and big lance proudly raised up high. As the knight's charging signal echoed, it pointed towards that mysterious castle gate. The knight begun to advance and no force in this world could stop it.

Her life gate was as frail as flower petals. In the midst of the virgin's cry of pain, she finally welcomed her new owner.

Red drops spilled out, witnessing the new owner's subjugation.

Despite Yue Yang's gentle movements, Luo Hua City Mistress still felt it hard to bear. Because his naughty thing was truly too big. Also her soft and delicate place was truly too small. At the moment he forcefully broke the barrier protecting her chastity, she could not endure it, and couldn't help shouting that it hurts. Two crystal clear teardrops seeped out and slide down her face. Her lips couldn't help but search for his comfort and kissed him... Although the pain was difficult to endure, she had long knew that she would have to go through this once. Only by saying good bye to her girlhood, saying goodbye to her chastity, could she truly link with him, truly become his inseparable partner and become his wife!

"Bastard. It's so painful!" She weakly complained and acted like a spoiled child. She had the complete qualifications to do so because she had completely offered to her beloved her most precious thing. She belonged to him, body and mind, past, present and future.

"Don't cry, don't cry, good girl, don't cry!" Yue Yang gently kissed her tears. Greatly comforting her pain of saying goodbye to her virginity.

After completing the fusion, Luo Hua City Mistress' blood channels completely linked up with the help of his Innate Qi. Just

as the Innate Qi returned to his body, Luo Hua City Mistress' Grimoire suddenly appeared. A brilliant light cast itself onto her body, momentarily aroused her hidden potential. In an instant, the amassed energy burst out, and continuously leveled up with the assistance from Yue Yang's Innate Qi. Rapidly breaking through Innate Rank... "bang", a golden pillar dozen of metres high shot up straight up the sky from her Grimoire.

Luo Hua City Mistress finally successfully reached Innate Rank with the assistance of [Double Body Fusion].

Her Guardian Beast also shone and leveled up.

The Three-tailed Snow fox also bathed under the Golden Light Pillar and continuously absorbed the energy. Its body gradually transformed. It looked like a human form, like a Holy Beast, rapidly changed...

Chapter 330 – Onslaught, Meeting Enemies, Slashing Into Half

Despair Abyss.

When Yue Yang stood in front of the old Dragon Turtle again, the one that accompanied him by his side was not Yue Bing and Yi Nan. Instead, it was Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

The Old Dragon Turtle obviously recognized Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty also recognized it, but she didn't greet it, as if it didn't even exist in her eyes. Yue Yang felt that there must be some kind of old grudge between Phoenix Fairy Beauty and the Old Dragon Turtle, maybe they had fought in the higher levels of Tong Tian Tower. In any case, they were definitely not friends.

The Old Dragon Turtle's asked in his ancient voice, "Young man, have you truly decided on attacking the Prison Emperor Divine Palace?"

Yue Yang only rolled his eyes in response.

If he hadn't decided on attacking the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, why would he come to this damned place? Did he truly have nothing to do? Of course, he could also hear that the Old Dragon Turtle was worrying about him. Even with Phoenix Fairy Beauty's help, this Old Dragon Turtle still thought that he was not

capable enough. It was warning him not to be reckless, so it was giving him a chance to back out... Looks like simply Phoenix Fairy Beauty alone wasn't enough. However, the more difficult it was, the more interested Yue Yang was in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace. The only thing Yue Yang was not afraid of is battling. If the enemy was simply too strong, at the most, he would do what Yue Yu said, hide inside the grimoire world to recover when he was injured, then continue to fight!

If his life was in danger, the Phoenix Sisters and Qilin girl would definitely save him.

With this battle, he should be able to break through the Sixth Level of Innate Invisible Sword Qi. How could he pass on with such an opportunity, such a battle?

A black light flashed.

The Old Dragon Turtle was fully bathed in the black light. Its body slowly transformed.

After a long time, it finally transformed into an old man carrying a turtle shell on his back. However, it didn't look like a turtle immortal at all, it didn't have any vitality. Instead, it was weak and tired, as if it was very old and was about to die. The Old Dragon Turtle who had become an old man had a white, long beard and hair. His face was filled with spots, even his body was emitting a dying scent.

“Let's go!” The Old Dragon Turtle supported himself with a

dragon-headed staff as he slowly lead forward with trembling steps.

“You can’t be fighting with us too, right?” Yue Yang was speechless. If thi old fellow wanted to attack the Prison Emperor Divine Palace together, wouldn’t he be a huge burden?

“I will try my best to help you through the first palace hall. You would have to depends on your own strength for the other two palace halls.” The Old Dragon Turtle mumbled. Although his whole body was injured, it seemed like he was still full of confidence.

On a huge stone, the Old Dragon Turtle drew a mysterious Runic Circle with his hands.

At the same time, he rotated it continuously with his Spirit Qi.

The Runic Circle shone with a bright light, and a strange-looking teleportation gate appeared in front of Yue Yang.

There was a seal on the Runic Circle on top of the teleportation gate. Outsiders couldn’t enter, but it could be opened from the inside. The Old Dragon Turtle squeezed his weak body into the teleportation gate, step by step, before finally teleporting and disappeared.

Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty quickly followed him. Behind the dark light of the teleportation gate, Yue Yang found himself

inside a dark world.

It was pitch black, there was a deathly stillness everywhere.

With his Night Vision, Yue Yang could see that at a far distance, there were a few pillars that soared up high to the sky. The pillars were big tall beyond imagination, every pillar was at least a hundred metres in radius. Other than Tong Tian Tower, Yue Yang had really never seen pillars that were bigger than this. Furthermore, these pillars were perfectly round, it had the same width from top to bottom. It was obvious that these pillars were manmade. In the sky, there was a huge island which was supported by four pillars. It looked like a Sky Island, but Yue Yang realized that this island was at least ten times bigger than Luo Hua City Mistress' Sky Garden.

On top of a small mountain, there was a road that looked like Heaven Stairway, coiling like a snake, zigzagging upwards towards the Sky island.

That was the only passageway!

“This was originally the Prison Emperor's Palace. There are three levels in total, and is around one kilometre tall. In order to seal the Heaven Realm's warriors, the Prison Emperor turned the most magnificent, most beautiful palace in the world into his enemies' grave.” The Old Dragon Turtle sighed proudly, but became a little sad in the end, as if coming back to this place made him remember a lot of memories.

“Are the enemies waiting up there?” Yue Yang didn’t have time to bother with the Old Dragon Turtle’s sentimental time, he wanted to pay more attention to the enemies’ movements.

“The number of broken Sealing Tablet outside would show how many enemies had struggled free from their Sleeping Seal.” The Old Dragon Turtle didn’t need to say it, Yue Yang could somewhat guess it. Fortunately, the number of broken sealing tablet was not much, only around 20. As long as he was not suddenly swarmed by twenty over Heaven Realm Warriors’ spirit, he would have a chance to break through. Yue Yang guessed that the two big shots of Heaven Realm should have been able to struggle free from the seal, but they were still affected by the Prison Emperor’s seal and was unable to move freely, trapped in the third level.

“This battle will be hard...” Phoenix Fairy Beauty nodded with a serious expression, “I don’t have a good feeling. At least half of the spirits had woken up from their sleep, it’s not the same number as the number of destroyed tablets.”

“Haha, there’s a reason for that. In order to hide it from the outer world, we purposely continue to pretend to be sealed. Heheh, look at our guests, there is an old fart and two young sprouts!”

A voice suddenly descended from the island in the sky.

Following that, three figures whose body was illuminated in golden light flew down, gracefully landing in front of Yue Yang, Phoenix Fairy Beauty and the Old Dragon Turtle.

They were headed by a birdman with long wings and a golden hair like a lion's mane. He wore a royal head ornament and looked extremely majestic. His body was covered in a silver armour, and there was a treasure sword hanging at his golden belt. The other two people were different from the first one. One looked like human, but he had horns on his head and wings like a bat's. When he open his mouth, it was filled with sharp teeth, terrifying others. The other figure didn't have horns on its head, but it wore a beetle shell-like helmet. Its arms were thick with muscles like a bear's, and it had a sharp claws that was shaped like hooks. His face and body was covered in golden leopard spots-like pattern. There was even a long tail on his butt that was continuously lashing around.

Yue Yang was immediately bewildered when he saw this. Weren't they sealed for six thousand years?

Even if they didn't die of old age, wouldn't they die of starvation already? These people who didn't have any chance to live at all, who didn't have anything to eat, how could they live for six thousand years?

When Phoenix Fairy Beauty saw them, her expression immediately changed. She showed a spiteful look on her eyes, as if she was looking at the most shameless person in the world. Her words to them were also ruthless as she said, "You guys are worse than beasts!"

The Old Dragon Turtle's staff trembled as he looked both angry and sad facing this strange situation.

"What's happening? How could these people have a physical

body? Aren't they supposed to be spirits?" Yue Yang felt that something was really wrong. The things that they had prepared were prepared to fight against spirits and souls. Now it seemed like they wouldn't be able to use them. Their enemies were not only not souls, they were living beasts to boot. They were not even zombies or undead who had been sleeping for thousands of years.

"Little boy, do you think I'm a spirit? Look at me, what part of me looks like a spirit?" In the sky, another three enemies appeared.

These three enemies were all women. They wore nothing at all, and their appearances were completely different from each other.

The left one had horse hooves, goat horns and lion's tail. The middle one had fish scales, bird's wings and cat claws, while the right one had beetle's horns, rabbit ears and snake's body.

It's not that Yue Yang had never seen monsters before, but he really never saw monsters that looked so strange. When he saw these enemies who looked both like monsters and humans, he couldn't help but to be gravely shocked.

What kind of crazy scientist had the horrible idea of creating these weird crossbreeds?

Phoenix Fairy Beauty seemed to know the reason.

Her black brows stirred slightly as she said in a cold tone,

“Rubbish!”

Hearing her words, the three enemies who looked like women on the outside immediately became like cats whose tail was on fire, they were so angry that they started to scream out.

“Ah! I hate whores like you who deserves death the most. Whore, we’ll tear you to shreds!”

“Bitch, no matter how pretty you look, you are still a bitch that is saddled by everyone!”

“Let’s eat this prostitute and split her meat...” Amongst the curses, the last monster girl suggested the idea.

With regards to the enemies’ angry curses, Phoenix Fairy Beauty didn’t seem to mind at all. She only cursed back full of contempt, “Trash, you guys are not even worth it for me to kill you. You have to be grateful to me for bestowing you the favour of looking at your lowly skin and flesh for a few minutes!”

Those three monster girls went completely berserk, charging forward to attack immediately.

Without waiting for Phoenix Fairy Beauty to make her move, Yue Yang decided to attack them first, so that he could show off in front of the Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Of course, this was also one of their tactics of attack that they had already planned before coming. Phoenix Fairy Beauty must save her strength, because she would be

fighting the last bosses, the two big shots of the Heaven Realm. That would be the time when she would give it her all.

The two big shots of Heaven Realm, they were definitely the ones who ordered these few soldiers to test their strength.

To these Heaven Realm warriors who have been sealed for more than six thousand years, they definitely understood one point. If there was someone coming to attack them, they would definitely be confident enough of their power to do so.

Furthermore, they were sealed under the Prison Emperor's seal. They might not even be able to successfully leave the third floor of the palace.

If they could move freely, they would have laid in ambush at the entrance, so that they could injure their enemies critically.

The fact that they didn't do that proved that they were trying to test out their attacker's strength first. Secondly, it also proved that they were not able to move freely.

Yue Yang took out his Crescent Moon and waved a gush of cold air.

He didn't care how these women became crossbreed monsters. Yue Yang would never pity his enemy, nor would he have mercy on them. Towards his enemies, Yue Yang's kindness was mostly equivalent to zero!

The three monster girls didn't seem to be afraid of the coldness, they only flew back a little.

And then they started to attack.

Their mouths were even assailing Yue Yang with curses, "Little boy, you don't have what it takes to beat us, don't attack us recklessly like a blockhead! Why don't you join us instead? Sister will make you feel really comfortable, we guarantee that we are much better than that whore beside you!"

One of the monster girls, the one with beetle horns, rabbit ears and snake body had even shamelessly open up her thighs, sending a stream of smelly water towards Yue Yang.

The three monster guys in the sky observed the old Dragon Turtle intently. At this moment, their face showed an expression saying that this brat would definitely die.

Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty hid their true abilities, making it seem that they were not an Innate Ranker. Other than the two big shots of Heaven Realm, who might be powerful enough to see through them hiding their abilities, ordinary Heaven Realm warriors would definitely not know that Phoenix Fairy Beauty was actually a terrifying warrior of Innate Level 10. Of course, they would also not know that Yue Yang, who had the [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill, was also a terrifying enemy that was not any weaker than the Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Possessing the Counterfeit Inherent Skill, even the two big shots of the Heaven Realm would not be able to see through Yue Yang's true abilities.

The three monster guys and monster girls had all mistakenly thought that Yue Yang and the Phoenix Fairy Beauty were Lesser Innates. They thought that the Old Dragon Turtle they were familiar with was their true, strong enemy.

When the three monster girls surrounded Yue Yang, the three monster guys all thought that they would be enough to kill Yue Yang, the young human.

Especially when Yue Yang hid his abilities when he waved the first slash using his Crescent Moon, the enemies were all full of confidence.

No wonder that monster girl with beetle's horn, rabbit's ear and snake body would be so arrogant and peed on Yue Yang. They all thought that Yue Yang had already become their trapped prey... The stream of smelly water suddenly spread out like a spider net, turning into a cage and trapping Yue Yang in the middle.

Yue Yang didn't know what ability that was, but it was extremely weird.

It's a pity that her opponent was Yue Yang.

“First Slash: Depriving Mountains and Rivers!”

Purple flames engulfed Yue Yang's body and rose up to the sky as Yue Yang whipped up his Hui Jin Magic Blade.

Under Yue Yang's powerful purple flames, the spider net cage immediately burn into nothingness. His Hui Jin Magic Blade had also turned into a dragon-shaped purple flame that shot forward fiercely as if it was a living thing towards the monster girl who peed, with a speed that was ten times faster than her. That monster girl cried miserably as her lower body turned into ashes. Her two ignited legs fell down to the ground as her upper body escaped in fright.

However, in the sky, Yue Yang's First Slash: Depriving Mountains and Rivers was silently waiting for her.

She was slashed into half!

Instant kill!

Chapter 331 – The Enemy's Present!

When Yue Yang killed the monster girl with beetle horn, rabbit ears and snake body in one move, the enemies on the other side immediately became dumbstruck.

Especially the three monster guys who thought that the Old Dragon Turtle was the strongest enemy. They were completely speechless and in shock. They knew their comrade's abilities, they never thought that she would be killed by a young human in an instant.

Did this boy possess a godly weapon?

The three monster guys didn't have time to come to rescue when Yue Yang suddenly shot towards the remaining two monster girls.

The monster girl with horse hooves, goat's horns and lion's tail immediately escaped. On the other hand, the monster girl with fish scales, bird wings and cat claws, who was nearer to Yue Yang, suddenly felt that her body was completely bound by her enemy, unable to move at all. She, who realized that she couldn't escape in time, became fierce instead, brandishing her claws ruthlessly. She slashed at Yue Yang's head with her swift claws, emitting a fishy smell that make others want to vomit. It looked like her cat claws which were black coloured with a tint of green were infused with poison, which was why it was emitting a fishy smell.

Her claws slashed down on Yue Yang's head.

However, Yue Yang disappeared, and the monster girl's claws slashed empty air. The rocks beneath Yue Yang just now were slashed hard, leaving a deep engraving on them.

"I'll send you back to hell!" Yue Yang appeared behind the monster girl's back, his new Crescent Moon blade cutting through her head like it was cutting through tofu. With the momentum from the cat claws monster girl trying to attack

"Ah..." watching her comrades being killed instantly one by one, the lion-tailed monster girl screamed in fright, as if her soul had flown out of her body.

She hurriedly flew towards her monster guys friends, hoping that she would obtain their protection.

Her three friends had also swooped down quickly to help.

However, a big sword beam appeared in front of their eyes, like a huge tidal wave... They could almost touch their comrade, almost saved her successfully, but in that instant, the sword beam split the air and engulfed her whole body.

When those sword beam disappeared, the three monster guys saw that their comrade had been cut into countless pieces of flesh.

"Grr, kill, I'm going to kill you!" One of the monster guys with arms like a bear's turned red in fury as he charged towards Yue Yang like a madman. He wanted to tear Yue Yang into shreds. The

other monster guy who looked like a vampire held him back tightly. He had seen it clearly now, the human boy with this huge killing intent was not someone they could take lightly. Even if they want to attack him, they should only do it in a certain situation. Being impulsive would only make everything worse.

The monster guy leader with golden hair like lion, bird wings and a treasure sword on his waist gave Yue Yang a deathly stare.

He looked at his face intently.

He slowly observed Yue Yang's slaughtering hands, and at the same time, he observed the Hui Jin Magic Blade and Crescent Moon Blade in his hands.

With regards to Yue Yang killing the three monster girls in an instant, forget about the enemies, even the Old Dragon Turtle was surprised. Possessing abilities and being able to insta-kill enemies were two separate matters.

Under the state where he didn't unseal his Innate powers, this brat could actually kill his opponent so easily. Furthermore, he insta-killed three enemies in a row.

This was not merely the problem with his power.

He was also full of killing intent!

The Old Dragon Turtle didn't know how many strong enemies

Yue Yang had killed to have such a strong confidence and cold killing intent.

Immediately, the Old Dragon Turtle's evaluation of Yue Yang increased. In his heart, even the Prison Emperor was not as strong as this brat when he was twenty years old! The Prison Emperor was not just an ordinary talented warrior, he was an existence that had always been the number one, unrivalled genius in the Old Dragon Turtle's heart, for six thousand years. Who else could fight against three Heaven Realm's big shots and sealed two of them, other than him? Hence, in the Old Dragon Turtle's heart, there was no one else other than the Prison Emperor.

With regards to Yue Yang's ruthlessness and efficient insta-kill, the Old Dragon Turtle greatly admired him secretly. If this boy didn't die today, seems like he would be able to chase after the Prison Emperor's footsteps in the future, becoming a dominating existence.

This was because he was the same as the Prison Emperor, he had a true warrior's heart.

A real warrior would strive for self-improvement relentlessly. He would kill all of his enemies without mercy and rule over everyone!

“Don't think that you can be arrogant just because you killed some crossbreed monsters! Boy, you are still a young'un!” That monster guy with golden hair like lion's glared at Yue Yang as he laughed coldly.

“What actually happened here? Isn’t this supposed to be a graveyard?” Yue Yang asked the Phoenix Fairy Beauty bewilderedly. He couldn’t understand why these strange-looking monster people would be here.

“The real Heaven Realm Warriors would have all died out, only their souls would have been left. Otherwise, it would be impossible for them to be sealed in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace at that time. Prison Emperor exchanged his life and used his utmost willpower to destroy all lives in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace. Regardless of whether they were the enemies or himself, as long as they were within the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, they would definitely die.” The Old Dragon Turtle coughed a little and continued, “These monster people in front of us has blood and flesh, looks like they were monsters that they created using their secret arts... Then, they made use of possessing art or parasitic skills to transfer their soul into these bodies. Hence, you would be fighting against living monster people, not their souls!”

“So these were only some mix breeds!” When Yue Yang said this, the three monster guys immediately turn red in anger.

“They are not truly Heaven Realm Warriors. Looks like they were the offsprings of the Heaven Realm Warriors with some beasts after they took possession of some other beasts’ bodies. Otherwise, their abilities would have been Innate-ranked and above. Also, I would have been able to recognize them.” The Old Dragon Turtle coughed as he spoke.

“...” Yue Yang felt that these fellows were too weak. A real

Heaven Realm warrior wouldn't be insta-killed by him so easily, right?

“Parasitic Skill, Possessing Art, Reincarnating in corpses, these are all despicable skills that would not only reduce the original user's powers by a lot, they would also inflict a curse on the user. There were some people in the Thousand Goblins Sect and Demonic Palace that tested out these skills, but they discovered that the failure rate, resulting in death, was extremely high. There was also a high chance that they would lose all their memories and were brainwashed into beasts. Even if they were originally Heaven Realm Warriors, they have probably forgotten the past and had become half human, half beasts monsters. They seem to be living quite well, what am I seeing... Haha, they really looked like fat maggots who are happily twisting their bodies inside a dung!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty Really detested these monsters.

In reality, the act of possessing body or parasitic skill were extremely despicable.

It had been a taboo since the ancient times.

The moment a master tried to possess its beast's bodies, they would immediately be cursed.

Other than death from failure, lost of memories, turning into beasts, reduced powers and getting cursed, there was also the curse from the contract. No matter if it were beasts that were possessed or parasitic, they would never be able to become contracted beasts in the future. Even the grimoire's guardian beast was not an exception.

In the sky, a strong pressure suddenly appeared.

The pressure was as heavy as a mountain.

Even Yue Yang felt a suffocating presence.

This presence was able to pressurized him even at such a far distance. Could this presence be one of the two big shots in Heaven Realm? Yue Yang's heart trembled a little, thinking that the two big shots of Heaven Realm were really not easy to deal with!

A ray of light that looked like meteor streak split through the dark sky, descending down from high up in the sky.

Before the presence even arrived, his Qi charged down like a gust of storm.

The gust of Qi through the three monster guys who were close to become Innates more than ten metres away, making them looked extremely miserable. Other than Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty who didn't move from their spot, even the old and weak Old Dragon Turtle couldn't stand straight on his trembling feet. He looked like he could fall anytime. That streak of meteor arrived in a blink of an eye, landing right in front of the Old Dragon Turtle. He stopped in an instant, sending shock waves all around the surrounding, making the ground shake as if there was an earthquake... However, the movements of the person who came was soft and gentle, calm and unperturbed as he floated 2 metres away from the ground in front of the Old Dragon Turtle. From his

high position, he looked down upon the old Dragon Turtle.

He was an extremely beautiful man, and his appearance looked like the birdman that Yue Yang killed in the Sky Hall. Similarly, he also wear a green hat made from bay leaves.

The only difference was that the beautiful birdman's wings were gold-coloured.

The gold colour shone brightly.

Faintly, there was an invisible pressure that made others feel pressurized, that even made their willpower weaker. The pressure made others have the urge to bow and worship that pressure.

Of course, this kind of pressurizing Qi was nothing much to Yue Yang. Other than feeling that this fellow was pretentious, Yue Yang didn't feel any bit inferior to him. How could a chosen guy from another world not compare to a mere birdman? What a joke!

“Yuan Long, my dearest friend, long time no see. Please forgive this child for not being sensible, there's nothing we can do about it, because there hadn't been any guests in our house for a long time. That's why my children acted a little recklessly. Actually, I should introduce you guys. This one is An Ge, he is my old friend last time, it's just that his memories are a little problematic.” The beautiful birdman courteously bowed the Innate Greeting towards the Old Dragon Turtle and pointed towards the monster guy leader, explaining that they were all old friends. In the end, he had even smiled towards Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty. He

looked at Phoenix Fairy Beauty's face especially long, as a kind of greedy desire appeared in his pupils. However, he quickly hid it under his smile.

"You are actually alive?" Seeing the visitor, the Old Dragon Turtle was shocked.

"This person is not a crossbreed between human and beast, how could he stay alive?" Yue Yang was also slightly surprised.

"Little friend, if you know that there is this thing called the Resurrection Crystal stone in the Heaven Realm, you wouldn't be that surprised. I admit that the Prison Emperor's Spatial Destruction at that time was extremely scary, but I didn't die immediately. I escaped into my Grimoire Space with my destroyed body, and after a long period of recovery, with the help of the power of the Resurrection Crystal, my wounds were finally completely healed. Furthermore, I had also improved. It's a pity that the Prison Emperor's Godly Weapon's restriction was still present, the Spatial Destruction and his willpower still continued to injure my body. I am really sorry, Yuan Long, although I am greeting my old friend, I can't stay in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace for long. Furthermore, I dislike this damned place! In order to show my greeting, I will give some presents to you!" The beautiful birdman released a blinding light like a sun's brilliance as his grimoire shone and summoned countless illusions that looked exactly like him.

The illusions moved as one as they attacked Yue Yang, Phoenix Fairy Beauty and the Old Dragon Turtle at the same time.

Chapter 332 – The Good Show Is Just Starting

Yue Yang and the Phoenix Fairy Beauty chose to dodge the attacks. They immediately disappeared by teleporting thirty metres away, dodging the onslaught of swords.

The Old Dragon Turtle leaned on his staff and mumbled to himself, and a black light shone from his body.

The black light spread out rapidly and turned into a gigantic turtle-shaped cage of light. Mysterious runes appeared on the cage of light. Yue Yang recognized those Heaven Runes as “Defense”, seems like the Old Dragon Turtle was preparing to receive the illusions’ attacks head-on.

The illusions raised their swords and slashed down with all of their strength, attacking the turtle-shaped protective shield head-on.

Boom!

A huge sound resounded.

The whole of heaven and earth shook.

Most of the sword slashes were deflected by the turtle-shaped protective shield to the sky above. A small number of sword

slashes were deflected into the ground, destroying rocks and turning muds into ashes. However, the Old Dragon Turtle's turtle-shaped protective shield did not move an inch. Under the powerful barrage of attack that was capable of shaking the whole heaven and earth, the Old Dragon Turtle's withered, tottering, weakly body was not injured at all. Yue Yang secretly praised him. It was no wonder that this fellow was an old dragon turtle that had lived for six thousand years. His defense was really powerful!

Yue Yang felt that this turtle-shaped protective shield was stronger than his Gold Grimoire Protective Shield. This was the Old Dragon Turtle's protective shield that he created after getting heavily injured.

If he had summoned his protective shield at his peak condition, other than Phoenix Fairy Beauty, an exceptional Innate Ranker, no other Innates would be able to fight against him.

“Yuan Long, your turtle shell is still as hard as ever! I thought you won't be able to receive my simple attack anymore after turning old and frail. I kind of feel a little disappointed. I never thought that my old friend is still the same. Although you are about to die, your turtle shell is still very hard, haha!” The beautiful birdman swept a glance at Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Yue Yang again, “Little friend, aren't you a fast runner... All we have is time, I'll play with you once you get into the first hall! I'll let An Ge entertain you guys now, my time's up. Apologies, I need to rest now!”

The golden light shining from the beautiful birdman's body slowly dissipated. Where the golden light protection was the

weakest in his legs, it was turning a little black.

Seems like the Prison Emperor's willpower sealing and destructive ability were still effective.

Yue Yang prepared to intercept and kill this arrogant fellow on the spot, but the Phoenix Fairy Beauty actually shot him a glance, signalling that he should let this fellow go so that he could report to his bosses. They would be able to confuse more Heaven Realm Warriors that way. If they killed him on the spot, their enemies would probably mobilise all their forces to kill them.

There were unforeseen circumstances in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace. Since they weren't clear about them yet, it wasn't convenient for them to reveal their true strengths.

The Old Dragon Turtle coughed slowly.

He didn't say anything, but his expression showed that he agreed with the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's plan.

Six thousand years have passed. There were changes in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace that even the Old Dragon Turtle didn't know about. He didn't know if the Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Divine Seal was still effective. If both of them had lost their effectiveness, the two big shots of the Heaven Realm would be able to move about freely. Then, their ambush would be ten times harder than they had originally expected. Although he didn't see Phoenix Fairy Beauty as his comrade, he still agreed with her plan of hiding their abilities at the moment, because it was

necessary to do that. Even the Old Dragon Turtle himself did not display his full power just now.

The beautiful birdman courteously bowed at the Old Dragon Turtle and turned into a golden light, flying back to the Sky Island above.

At the same time, around ten over silver stars fell to the ground.

All of them were human-beast crossbreeds.

With Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he could see that none of these human beast hybrids were Heaven Realm Warriors who were hiding their strengths. The strongest one was the monster guy leader An Ge, who had golden hair like a lion's mane. Other than the monster guy leader An Gen who possessed an Innate Level 1 strength, none of the other monster people were Innates.

The weakest monster girls were even only as strong as Level 6 [Elders] at the most.

Facing against a bunch of human beast crossbreeds whose strength were only Level 7 [Overlord]s, Yue Yang really have no interest in fighting them.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty also shook her head slightly. She was too lazy to attack them.

“Old Turtle, take your time fighting them alone. We’ll be going to the first hall to look around!” Yue Yang actually wanted to let Luo Hua City Mistress or Princess Qian Qian gain fighting experience for a while, but the unforeseen circumstances in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace had peaked his curiosity. He wanted to know what truly happened.

Are the two big shots of Heaven Realms still alive?

Have they broken free of the seals? Are the Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Divine Seal still effective to them?

The most important point was whether this Prison Emperor Divine Palace still had the ability to seal their enemies. Six thousand years have passed, maybe their enemies had found a way out... Originally, according to the Old Dragon Turtle’s words, this place should be a graveyard of sealed beings. Other than acquiring the Prison Emperor’s Divine Staff or Divine Seal and break the seal, the two big shots of Heaven Realm would never acquire freedom. According to the original plan, as long as they could clear those Heaven Realm warriors who had managed to break the seal, there was still a high possibility in acquiring the Prison Emperor Divine Staff. However, the change in situation right now was also beyond the Old Dragon Turtle’s expectation.

In the case that the Prison Emperor’s Divine Staff and Divine Seal had lost their effectiveness, the two big shots of Heaven Realm would be able to move freely. That would at least increase the difficulty of this quest by ten times.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty whispered a few words to Yue Yang.

Then, she turned into a flash of light and flew straight to the sky.

Her speed was too quick, the human beast crossbreeds were unable to stop her at all.

Yue Yang was different from her. He decided to move forward slowly and steadily through the little pathway on the mountain, which was a natural stronghold against flying enemies. Five human beast crossbreeds quickly pursued Yue Yang, but his avoiding skills were far too powerful and mysterious. Although the five human beast crossbreeds tried to stop him with all their might, they couldn't touch even the hem of Yue Yang's clothes.

"Don't chase him, he will die sooner that way!" The golden-haired monster guy leader An Ge waved his hand and signalled his five subordinates to return.

"Let's tear this old dragon turtle to shreds... Roar!" All of the human beast crossbreeds exerted all of their power, sharp claws, giant punch, iron palm, snake tail, wolf teeth, beetle horn and other kinds of attack to attack the protective shield.

The Old Dragon Turtle stayed silent as he mumbled to himself, maintaining the power of the protective shield.

He was defending all the way, not attacking at all.

Although he was attacked by more than ten human beast

crossbreeds, the protective shield's defense was simply too powerful. The human beast crossbreeds attacked until they were exhausted, gasping for breath, but the power of the protective shield had not diminished at all. The golden-haired monster guy leader An Ge continued to observe the Old Dragon Turtle, and realized that his body was trembling harder and harder as time passed by, as if he was about to fall to the ground any time. An Ge immediately recovered his confidence and shouted loudly, "This fellow won't last much longer, continue the attack!"

Yue Yang who was not hindered much ran through the pathway and straight towards the Sky Island.

In the Sky Island, similarly, four pillars rose up high to the sky, supporting the second smaller Sky Island.

Seems like the second and third hall were located above.

Between the pillars, there was an enormous, majestic, grand palace hall.

Six thousand years had passed. Although the lighting had completely broken down, the fences were still there. Amongst dying plantations and complete darkness, the atmosphere was extremely sorrowful and dismal. It was really amazing thinking about how a hero called the Prison Emperor had built this palace. He was respected by everyone in the world, and even managed to bury Heaven Realm warriors at this place. However, six thousand years had passed, and no one in the world knew about the great battle between the Prison Emperor and the three big shots of Heaven Realm. There was not even a trace of them in historical

books. Right now, walking into the this incomparably majestic Prison Emperor Divine Palace, Yue Yang felt extremely thankful. In reality, time is the biggest enemy to strong warriors... Other than immortals, no one could escape death from the force of time.

No matter how strong an existence was, with the passing time, they would be rendered meaningless.

If he was not an immortal, who would remember him six thousand years later?

In an instant, Yue Yang had a thought that he had never thought of before, and that was to pursue immortality... No matter if it was a hundred years, a thousand years or ten thousand years, time is valuable. Although the excitement of life comes from the process not the results, if he could possess immortality and had an unlimited life, wouldn't he be able to experience more excitement in his life?

If there was the possibility of it, he would definitely pursue immortality.

Furthermore, he would not only pursue immortality for himself. He would also give it to his beloved, so that they may be together forever.

He would never allow time to get the better of him, he would definitely not let his descendents pay respects to him in his graveyard. Just like how he was paying respect to the Prison Emperor who was buried in this Prison Emperor Divine Palace...

He would definitely, definitely not let that happen!

Yue Yang was lost in the midst of his tide of thoughts.

Two figures suddenly appeared on his left and right side.

One of them chuckled with a hoarse voice, “Sha Fei returned and said that there are two strange man and woman who make him feel unsafe. Turns out that he’s an airhead! Look at him, this brat is too frightened to move! He is actually daydreaming when his enemy is right in front of him? Had I known earlier, I would have gone to kill the woman first. That woman seemed to be quite good, she would make a nice plaything.”

“So that birdman just now was called Sha Fei. Sigh, forget it, his name is not important.” Yue Yang took out his White Jade Beetle, and immediately, the palace was filled with a clear light. Slowly, the light illuminated the whole palace hall that was originally dark.

“I hate light!” A few figures twisted their bodies. One of the figures who possessed a disgusting body had even groaned in pain.

“Although we can’t absorb this kind of light couldn’t be immediately, if we modify it a little, it would be useful to heal our bodies. That’s a good stuff, I want it!” The figure with a hoarse voice appeared. His upper body looked similar to a Demon King, but Yue Yang had seen many types of Demon Kings before. This fellow had a concentrated amount of power in his body, and his body was only two-metres tall... His upper body looked like flesh

and blood but his waist and below was thick smoke. He had not become flesh and blood completely.

Even though he had lost his original body, the new body he created from scratch was still incomplete and his power had been greatly reduced, this demon still possessed the strength of Innate level 5.

When he appeared, inside the great hall, the rune on a Crystal Pillar-shaped tombstone immediately lighted up.

The Runic Pattern on the tombstone flashed quickly.

Slowly, that Runic Circle revolved as if it was a living thing.

The demon with a hoarse voice howled in pain as the thick smoke below his waist dissipated into air, as if it were pulled by an invisible force.

Yue Yang confirmed that the Prison Emperor Divine Palace's seal was still effective. Moreover, its strength was still as strong as before.

Although these Heaven Realm warriors used various kind of secret methods to wake up from their eternal slumber and escape the seal, they could only hide their bodies usually and deceive the Prison Emperor's Seal. However, the moment their bodies were revealed, they would immediately be restricted by the Seal's power.

This news was a very good one to Yue Yang who was launching an attack on the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

“Still can’t do it, damn that Prison Emperor’s Will and Seal! It’s really disgusting, I hate humans! Human, don’t be arrogant. Although I only have three minutes, I only need ten seconds to slaughter you, airheaded idiot! Go and die!” The hoarse-voiced demon arrogantly pointed at Yue Yang as he coldly ridiculed him and released his Qi. His exploding Qi shook the whole of Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

“Hey, hey, don’t be too excited. We don’t want to be implicated because of you, don’t move the sealing circles too much...” A few shadows protested one by one.

“Don’t worry, I will end this battle with one move!” The hoarse-voiced demon was full of confidence.

“You think you are Ultraman? In three minutes, other than proving that you are incompetent, could you even amount to anything else?” Yue Yang shamelessly shrugged his shoulders.

“Die!” The hoarse-voiced demon was enraged.

His sharp claws pierced the air and slashed straight towards Yue Yang’s head.

Even the space seemed to be torn apart by his claws.

When the demon's comrades saw this, they started laughing at Yue Yang evilly. They believed with full confidence that this Lesser Innate, little human boy would definitely die. How could he survive an Innate Level 5's attack?

The answer was he definitely couldn't!

A loud exploding sound resounded.

Five deep, ten-metre long claw marks appeared on the stone slate on the ground of the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, as crushed rock scattered around the surrounding.

Six thousand year old limestone scattered all over the air, filling the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

It didn't settle down for a long time.

"That's enough. Gu Ya, how long are you going to pose until?" Seeing that their comrade didn't move from his ending pose after slashing his claws, those few shadows all felt that this fellow loved to show off too much. He only killed a little Lesser Innate human, why do he need to show off about that?

"Is it because you haven't killed human for a long time, that's why you want to enjoy the excitement after killing humans? Are you high?" The figure that looked disgusting started laughing at his comrade.

“Boom...”

The hoarse-voiced demon didn't reply, he simply dropped to the ground suddenly.

His head rolled ten metres away like a ball.

And rolled towards a person's leg.

Yue Yang, smiling brightly like a sun, stepped on the demon's head, whose eyes were still with remaining grievance. The shadows could hardly believe what they were seeing. How did this little human survive, and killed their comrade instead? This was impossible. Although their comrade had not recovered his true strength yet, he was already Innate Level 5 right now. How could he be instantly killed by a Lesser Innate human?

Who would believe this outcome?

Just now, what actually happened? What kind of force killed their comrade?

Without allowing the shadows to figure out what happen, the Rune Circles on the crystal pillar started to shine even more brightly. A flash of light shot out and turn into a white vortex of light. The demon's head and body was sucked into the white vortex of light and turned into a black smoke, being absorbed into the crystal pillar. In thirty seconds, other than the black pearl that

Yue Yang stepped on below his feet, it was as if the hoarse-voiced demon never existed before.

His comrades, those few shadows, started to panic.

That disgusting shadow's voice was filled with fright as he screamed, "We're doomed, that is not being sealed, that is a real death! Dammit, this fucking human has a soul destroying ability. Gu Ya's soul has been destroyed, did you guys see it? This won't do, I will not fight against an enemy who possess a soul destroying ability. I don't want, I had just escaped from the seal after much difficulty. I don't want to be killed..."

"Calm down, what happened here?" The beautiful birdman called Sha Fei spread out his golden wings and floated down from the sky above.

"It's all because of you, Sha Fei. There's a mistake in your report. This human boy possess a soul destroying ability. He's as terrifying as the judge that is responsible for Soul Trials in Heaven realm. You caused Gu Ya to die, he was killed in an instant!" The disgusting shadow howled furiously and terrifyingly.

"What?" That beautiful birdman called Sha Fei stared at Yue Yang with unbelieving eyes. How could a Lesser Innate killed an Innate Level 5 in an instant?

"The real good show is just starting right now..." Yue Yang picked up the black pearl below his foot and stored it inside his Lich Ring.

His face revealed a smile as warm as spring.

However, when his enemies saw it, they couldn't help feeling as cold as winter.

Chapter 333 – Continuing Instant-Kill Streak, Re-Enacting The Tragedy!

“Sha Fei, you have a body, fight this battle! I hate fighting against an enemy with Soul Destroying ability. Even if the chances of losing is only one in ten thousand, I will not fight him. Everyone, I will go back to sleep. Do whatever you want, but don’t disturb me!” The disgusting shadow suddenly started to disappear slowly. His frightened voice echoed throughout the Prison Emperor Divine Palace for a long time.

“...” The rest of the shadows seemed to be hesitant, but they didn’t disappear and go back to sleep.

“Hehe, what a coward. You will be a failure for the rest of your lives!” The beautiful birdman Sha Fei smirked at his comrade, but did not stop him from escaping.

“This fight was indeed started by you, Sha Fei. Furthermore, it is your turn to guard the first hall for a hundred years. As the Hall Guardian, you have the responsibility to capture our enemies. Furthermore, you have a complete body, different from us. We could only appear for five minutes at the most, we can’t even leave the first hall. Regardless of time or freedom of movement, you are better than us. So, Sha Fei, you should go and fight, we will help you from the sides. This young human is not an easy enemy, you shouldn’t look down on him. Although we don’t know how he killed Gu Ya, the fact that he had killed him is indisputable.” A big and tall shadow appeared and spoke out.

“I understand. I only have one sentence, you guys are all

cowards... Just a while ago, Lu De, you were the bravest warrior in the Heaven Realm. Who would have thought that after you lose your physical body, you become a timid warrior who is afraid of death! It's really shocking!" Sha Fei chuckled lightly.

"Those are two different matters. If I were the Hall Guardian, I would fight the enemy without a second word." The big and tall shadow harrumphed coldly, but didn't refute too much.

"This human is good in hiding his abilities... But even if he could hide his abilities, he would probably be Innate Level 3 at the most. Gu Ya died probably because he looked down on the enemy, and his enemy had used a Godly Weapon or some kind of treasure artifact. Do you think that he could continue using a Godly Weapon or treasure artifact that could kill an Innate Level 5 instantly continuously? With his mere level, the Godly Weapon would definitely rebound. The stronger the Godly Weapon, the stronger its rebound would be. The Prison Emperor was the perfect example of that." Sha Fei swept a glance to Yue Yang as he flapped the golden wings at his back. His body suddenly shone with millions of light rays, as brilliant and blazing as the sun.

The first hall became as bright as day.

The light was dazzling, even if one was to block it with their hands, they wouldn't be able to open their eyes. It was impossible to see anything.

A burning heat spread out in the first hall quickly. In the end, it engulfed the whole place like a Sun Rays Storm.

Sha Fei who was in the middle of the Sun Rays Storm spoke out with an arrogant voice, “If you think I’ll be afraid of you because you killed Gu Ya, you are completely wrong.”

Yue Yang chuckled and summoned his Gold Grimoire.

He erected his protective shield.

He also started charging his energy, his Yin and Yang ability span inside his body, just like water storage that was filled to the brim, just waiting to explode.

“Save, Save me....”

A frightened cry came from outside the Palace Halls.

Starting from the golden-haired monster guy leader An Ge, several blood-drenched human beast crossbreeds rushed into the Great Hall as if they were being hunted down by someone. Each of their faces were panic-stricken. Except for the golden-haired monster guy leader An Ge, whose body was not damaged, the rest of the human-beast crossbreeds were drenched in blood. Two of them were already on the brink of dying and required the support of their comrade to escape.

Seeing this, Sha Fei’s gaze flashed.

He reached out his left hand into an empty space and countless arrows of light shot forth.

Momentarily, those human beast crossbreeds were killed on the spot. The burning hot Sun Rays Storm easily burnt their corpses to ashes and in the end nothing remained.

Apart from the golden-haired monster guy leader An Ge, who quickly hid behind a large pillar, all the retreating human beast crossbreeds were vaporized before they even let out a scream.

The golden-haired monster guy leader An Ge was scared to the point that his face lost all color and his entire body trembled.

“An Ge, do not worry. Although you have already become a crossbreed from parasitizing a beast, you are trash to begin with, without one good point nor use. However, I will spare you because of our friendship from those years ago.” Sha Fei’s arrogant voice echoed inside the First Hall. Hearing this, An Ge’s entire body trembled. His lips seemed to have something to say, but nothing came out.

“Cough, cough...”

Inside the Main Hall, the Old Dragon Turtle leaned on his staff and hunched his body like an old senile man. He walked inside with unstable footsteps.

He walked very slowly as if he could stop breathing anytime and fall to his death.

————— that's one page

Including Yue Yang, no one thought that the old fellow would finish his battle so quickly. He had even pursued the human beast crossbreeds all the way here, scaring them until they pissed their pants.

But Yue Yang felt that the old fellow shouldn't be arrogant just because of this thing.

He would definitely make a mistake the moment he become arrogant.

A flash of killing intent crossed Sha Fei's eyes, but a gentle smile decorated his lips, "Lu De, Du Di and Bao Wen, look who has come. Look at him, it's our old friend Yuan Long. Six thousand years has passed, yet the Prison Emperor's old general is still alive. He's still powerful as ever, doesn't he deserve our applause? Especially when an old friend tried to come for revenge although he is heavily injured. Shouldn't we fulfil his wish and let him die here, so that he may serve the Prison Emperor he respected the most forever? We welcome you, my dear friend. How would you like to die? I guarantee that we will make your wish come true!"

The Old Dragon Turtle coughed a little and looked at Yue Yang, mumbling as if he had dementia, "I'm already old and useless, if I could die here, my life is also worth something. This old fellow is already so old, so what if I die? I won't lose anything!"

Yue Yang quickly waved his hand, “Old Turtle, it’s not yet time for you to die as a hero. You should go to the side, now is the young people’s time to show off their skills, you shouldn’t enter into fights blindly.”

“Although i’m old and useless, I can still kill one or two if I stake my life.” The Old Dragon Turtle didn’t listen to Yue Yang’s advice. He leaned on his staff and walked towards Sha Fei with unsteady footsteps.

With regards to this stubborn old man, Yue Yang simply could not do anything.

He thought of bashing the old fellow’s head with a brick a few times, so that he would faint, and Yue Yang could drag him outside.

This Old Dragon Turtle was not only old, he was also heavily injured. Who is he showing off to? He didn’t rely on him, the younger one, when there was a problem. Could it be that he wanted him to rely on him, the old turtle?

In the end, looking at his determined figure, Yue Yang couldn’t bear to stop him. He calmly watched him fight against Sha Fei.

In any case, there would be no problems if he couldn’t defeat Sha Fei. This old fellow’s turtle shell was extremely hard, there shouldn’t be any problem for him to stay alive.

Seeing that the Old Dragon Turtle dared to challenge him, Sha Fei laughed coldly. He reached out his right hand to the front just like a while ago, and released countless arrows of light, his Sun Rays Storm was ten times stronger than just now.

The overpowering arrows of light flooded towards the Old Dragon Turtle.

The whole Palace Hall became bright as day again.

It only vanish gradually after a long time.

When the first hall returned to normal, Sha Fei's gaze turned cold. That was because he discovered that his ultimate move, the [Solar Arrow], had not injure the Old Dragon Turtle at all. At this time, on the Old Dragon Turtle's body, his Dragon Turtle Protective Shield had become very small, only big enough to cover his short and frail body. The outer form of the turtle-shaped protective shield had been smashed to pieces after receiving the powerful attack and it was on the verge of crumbling down.

However, as long as the protective shield exist, the Old Dragon Turtle would be alright.

“Yuan Long, don't think I can't do anything to you!” Seeing that the turtle-shaped protective shield was about to break apart, Sha Fei put down the feeling of anger in his heart and charged a gigantic energy ball in his hands. He then throw the energy ball which was as hot as a sun to the Old Dragon Turtle, preparing to

kill him in one move.

“Boom...”

A loud explosion that could shake the heaven and earth shook the whole palace hall.

Even though Yue Yang had summoned his Gold Grimoire and erected his shield, he could still feel the powerful blast from the impact of the collision seeping into his shield, pressurizing him.

He felt uncomfortable although he only received a little of the impact and the aftershock from the attack.

When the shock waves of the big explosion subsided, the light rays also dissipated.

The Old Dragon Turtle who was as dried up as a tree, his frail body which was trembling, was actually still standing on his original spot... This old fellow's defense was simply too powerful. Although he was suffering from a grievous injury, he was still able to endure such a terrifying attack. He was really an old turtle who was worthy of the legendary title Ultimate Defense!

Yue Yang couldn't even compare his defense against the old dragon turtle's.

“One more time!” When Sha Fei saw this, his eyes twitched a little as he humphed coldly.

He discovered that the old dragon turtle's turtle-shaped protective shield had completely shattered.

Only his old, frail and heavily injured body was left. Would he still be able to receive his third attack? He would definitely be able to kill this old turtle in one move with his third attack, definitely!

That big and tall shadow called Lu De suddenly stood up and stopped the fight, "Stop!"

When Sha Fei heard him, he furiously retorted, "My dear friend, my dear upright, courageous Mr. Lu De, what now? Is your kindness getting the better of you again? You want to protect your enemy because you are moved by his stubbornness, loyalty and determination, is that it? My dear friend, please allow me, before I explode in anger, to remind you again. This is our enemy, our common enemy... Six thousand years ago, he had slaughtered our soldiers and even murdered our comrades. Your younger cousin died by his hands, have you forgotten it because it was too long ago? Do you want me to list down more names to jolt your memory?"

That Lu De shook his hand, "Don't let your anger cloud your brain. Sha Fei, I stopped you not because I wanted to help our enemy, I wanted to help you! Haven't you realized what Yuan Long's ultimate goal is? He wants you to use up all of your strength! In this Prison Emperor Divine Palace, it's difficult to get energy. The moment you use it all up, you won't be able to restore your energy in a short period of time... Even if you don't kill Yuan Long now, he will not live much longer... However, you have

already wasted a lot of energy on him!”

“What?” Of course, Sha Fei was not an idiot. He immediately reacted when he heard his comrade’s explanation. Was this old fellow trying to play tricks on him?

“I, could only do this much. I’ll leave the rest to you, boy!” The old dragon turtle vomited out blood, falling down to the ground weakly. His breathing was extremely weak, as if he was about to stop breathing completely. However, he was still alive.

“Bullshit, even if you don’t receive a few attacks for me, I will still be able to defeat him.” Yue Yang shoved the White Jade Beetle into the Old Dragon Turtle’s hand and scolded him, “If you are injured, you should have stayed at home and recover. You are already so old, yet you run around everywhere recklessly and love to stick out for others. Did you think you are still the all-powerful boss last time? There are many ways to kill your enemy, yours is the dumbest method, do you know that? However, since you wanted to stay honorable until the end, I will leave you some credits after I win the battle... I’m only lending you this White Jade Beetle for now, return me after you have finished healing your wounds. Don’t lose it!”

“Stop talking nonsense, quickly attack him, now is the time when his power is the weakest... You are such a slowpoke, do you want to frustrate me to death?” Seeing Yue Yang’s careless attitude, the Old Dragon Turtle almost wanted to beat him up with his staff.

“Be careful, Sha Fei, this young human is really a little strange.”

Seeing Yue Yang's smiling yet un-smiling expression, Lu De hurriedly warned his comrade.

“Humph.” Of course, Sha Fei also felt some kind of bad premonition, but he really couldn't believe that a mere Innate Level 3 human could defeat him.

“Your real strength is around Innate Level 6, huh? You won't be easy to instant-kill!” Yue Yang sighed slowly.

He suddenly disappeared as he teleported right behind Sha Fei, whose body was covered with bright sun-like rays of light.

He reached out one of his hand.

A World Exterminating Wheel promptly appeared on his hand!

Sha Fei had only turned around and was preparing to release his biggest Sun Rays Storm shock wave to instantly kill his enemy on the spot, but when he saw the terrifying World Exterminating Wheel only inches apart from him, his face immediately lost colour in fright. He wanted to escape, but a little lamia loli suddenly appeared. Her eyes that seemed to be able to speak was glaring at him powerfully...

Binding?

He's done for!

Sha Fei discovered that his body couldn't move at all. The shadow of death was hanging right above his head.

A thought suddenly flashed in his head. He finally found out how Gu Ya was instantly killed, he was killed by this World Exterminating Wheel and binding attack combo. However, must the tragedy that happened ten minutes ago repeat itself again on him?

Chapter 334 – Strong Enemies Everywhere!

Sha Fei howled and summoned his Platinum Grimoire quickly, erecting his protective shield.

The Platinum Grimoire protective shield that could withstand attacks of Innate Level 5 was as weak as paper in front of the World Exterminating Wheel. The World Exterminating Wheel slashed through the protective shield and straight towards Sha Fei's head soundlessly. If the World Exterminating Wheel reached Sha Fei, it would really be the end for him... Sha Fei discovered that the binding on him had loosened, and his comrades were rushing to him from the sky to save him. Lu De, Du Di and Bao Wen released their strongest attack all at the same time. They brought forth their 'stake-it-all' attitude and attacked this terrifying young human enemy with their strongest attacks. The little lamia loli had turned around and shifted her binding eyes to sha Fei's three comrades instead, thus breaking the binding on him. This made Sha Fei really happy, he was finally free from the binding!

In a tenth of a second, Sha Fei almost broke his neck bending his head to the extreme right in order to avoid the trajectory of the World Exterminating Wheel.

He never felt so close to death before.

If his comrades had saved him a second later.

He would probably be already instant-killed.

Yue Yang understood that he still needed more improvement to control the World Exterminating Wheel. Previously, when he attacked the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei Shun Tian and the Great Demon King Baruth, he had allowed his enemies to avoid the attack easily. With regards to Sha Fei dodging his attack, Yue Yang had already expected it. He tried to force his control and crooked the trajectory of the World Exterminating Wheel a little, letting it continue to pursue Sha Fei's head which was swerving to the right.

Sha Fei was alarmed and immediately twisted his head onto another direction, successfully avoiding the World Exterminating Wheel the second time.

However, Yue Yeng had already prepared his real killing move, the Sword Qi.

Yue Yang whose finger was pressing against Sha Fei's protective shield, released a shot of Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

With a hiss, the Innate Invisible Sword Qi shot through the protective shield, creating a small hole, and shot straight towards Sha Fei's forehead.

It was another similarly deadly attack!

Sha Fei desperately tried to live by reaching out his right hand, however, the Sword Qi pierced through his palm and his arm effortlessly, continuing to fly straight to Sha Fei's forehead. Sha Fei kicked the Platinum Grimoire in front of him and used the momentum to retreat backwards... The World Exterminating

Wheel and the Innate Invisible Sword Qi immediately pursued him from the right and left, surrounding Sha Fei. Sha Fei could only howled in pain before collapsed on the ground, splashing fresh blood all over the air!

Yue Yang's ambush had succeeded. In that instant, he also summoned his grimoire and used his protective shield to defend against Lu De, Du Di and Bao Wen's join attack.

Their attack shook the whole protective shield and produced an exploding shock wave impact that shook the whole Palace Hall.

The Old Dragon Turtle was still alright, he didn't move while using his staff as support.

The monster guy leader An Ge who was only Innate Level 1, was immediately blown away by the shock wave produced from the collision impact and fell outside the Palace Hall. It was unknown whether he survived the fall.

"Pity..." Yue Yang realized that Sha Fei who was attacked with two deadly attacks was actually still alive. He tried to stand up drenched in blood. Sha Fei's right arm had been split open by the World Exterminating Wheel, half of his upper harm had been rendered useless, hanging down lifelessly. Fresh blood smeared his whole body, a river of blood was even flowing from his arm down to the ground. The golden wings on his back had been torn down by the World Exterminating Wheel, its golden feathers scattered all over the ground. There was a small hole left by the Sword Qi on the left side of his forehead, making a hole straight through to the back of his head. Blood gush out from the wound, making Sha Fei's

beautiful face looked extremely terrifying instead.

Sha Fei was completely crippled. He had suffered a grievous injury from the World Exterminating Wheel and the Innate Invisible Sword Qi!

However, he was still alive.

Yue Yang felt regretful in his heart. If Sha Fei's three comrades had come half a second later, Sha Fei would have been dead. It was a pity, it was only half a second...

Xiao Wen Li who had used her Binding Inherent Skill to stop the three strong enemies in the air tried to protect Yue Yang who was ambushing Sha Fei with all her might. Although it was only for a second, it put a huge strain on her mental strength. Her face was pale, and she was gasping for breath. Yue Yang rubbed her little head. He had tried his best, she had also tried her best. Although they didn't succeed in instant-killing their enemy, it wasn't because they didn't plan it well or did not have enough abilities to do so, it was because Sha Fei was too lucky!

Sha Fei's first luck was having three comrades who would risk their lives to help him.

If it wasn't because they gave it their all attacking him, Xiao Wen Li would not need to cover for Yue Yang. With her Binding, Sha Fei would still die even if he had ten lives.

The second luck was that when Sha Fei was slashed by the World Exterminating Wheel, his body had twitched momentarily in pain by reflex, making his forehead move by an inch. That was how he managed to avoid getting mortally wounded by the Innate Invisible Sword Qi...

Originally, Yue Yang had aimed at the middle of his Soul Pearl.

However, with the slight deviation in trajectory, he didn't manage to hit the pearl.

Although the Sword Qi had bored a hole into Sha Fei's head, it wasn't enough to kill him.

Sha Fei was not a human, although the wound was deep, he could still survive. Previously, when Yue Yang and Marquis of Zhi Jin was fighting against each other, he had also shot him through his forehead. As a prince of the Demon Abyss, Marquis of Zhi Jin had also managed to survive.

“Let's kill him together!” The Heaven Realm Warrior shadow called Lu De revealed his true self. He had a human-like body that was three-metres tall. His waist below was smoke, but the rest of his body was complete. His body was illuminated in a golden light, looking extremely majestic and powerful... In the instant before he make his appearance, a crystal tablet lighted up as the Heaven Rune Circle on it started to activate. It showed exactly the same signs as the tablet beforehand when it absorbed Gu Ya just now.

“There's no need to talk nonsense, I only have three minutes.

Everyone attack, we'll go on full offense!" Another Heaven Realm Warrior called Du Di shouted out.

"Sha Fei, move back and heal your wounds first, quick!" The third Heaven Realm Warrior called Bao Wen threw out a ball of light filled with energy towards Sha Fei who was wounded grievously, as if wanting to help him to recover as quickly as possible. After all, Sha Fei who possessed a full body was the only one who could move freely. Their bodies were half spirit half flesh and blood, and they were still under the crystal tablet's seal. Even Lu De, who was the strongest amongst them, could only stay outside for five minutes.

"Die!" How could Yue Yang give Sha Fei the opportunity to move back and heal his wounds?

When he saw Sha Fei receiving the energy ball, Yue Yang immediately teleported and appeared in front of Sha Fei.

He swung his Hui Jin Magic Blade furiously.

Sha Fei desperately flapped his wings and flew high to avoid the attack. Lu De, Du Di and Bao Wen, the three Heaven Realm Warriors immediately attacked Yue yang altogether, helping their comrade to escape the battlefield.

Yue Yang summoned his grimoire and first trapped the energy ball inside his protective shield. Then, he used his 'World' beast which was in domain state to absorb the energy. Afterwards, he jumped high up to the sky, and used his Crescent Moon and Hui

Jin Magic Blade in both of his hands to receive the incoming attacks from Lu De and Bao wen. As for Du Di who was coming at him from above, he left it to Xiao Wen Li who had was tightly hugging onto Yue Yang's waist.

Her eyes flashed as she activated her Binding Inherent Skill.

In the instant when Du Di descended from the sky and almost reached Yue Yang, he suddenly stopped in mid-air, unable to move even an inch.

Boom!

Yue Yang was just waiting for this chance. His Nirvana Flame Pillar rose up high to the sky and erupted right at Du Di's fist, face and body... Lu De and Bao Wen didn't care about the Nirvana Flame and hurriedly pulled their comrade back. However, the explosion of Yue Yang's Nirvana Flame Pillar had shot Du Di up towards the ceiling of the Palace Hall.

Du Di cried out endlessly.

Amongst the four people, his body was the least recovered, hence his power was the weakest.

His body which was made of smoke waist and below, after enduring the Nirvana Flame attack, had almost melted and turned into smoke completely. With the addition of the absorption from the Crystal Tablet Rune Circle, he howled out in pain endlessly.

His mournful voice echoed throughout the Palace Hall. Without waiting for him to slowly die, Yue Yang pierced his Hui Jin Magic Blade through his flesh. Yue Yang left the blade stuck inside his body and activated his Sword Qi again. A shot of Innate Invisible Sword Qi immediately pierced through Du Di's forehead, boring a hole through and through as blood splattered all over the air.

Du Di desperately tried to punch Yue Yang, but Xiao Wen Li's Dual Icicle Blade had ruthlessly pierced into his back in that instant.

The Old Dragon Turtle who was about to breathe his last just now suddenly shot forward like a meteor.

His hard turtle back knock onto Du Di's chest with a meteor-like force, making Du Di collide into the Palace Hall dome-shaped ceiling the second time...

With a loud boom, a spider net-shaped crack appeared on the surface of the dome-shaped ceiling which was made of stone plates.

Dust rained down on the Palace Hall continuously.

Just as Du Di tried to struggle, the Old Dragon Turtle opened his arms and restrained his waist tightly while he pushed his head on Du Di's chin. Du Di was unable to break free no matter how much he struggle or attack.

The Old Dragon Turtle restrained his enemy while he shouted

out to Yue Yang, “What are you waiting for? Continue using the Nirvana Flame!”

Lu De and Bao Wen watched as Yue Yang ignited Nirvana Flames in both of his hands. They couldn't help but to feel a shiver down their spine. This time, they did not come forward to save Du Di anymore. This was because other than discovering that there was no hope to save their comrade, they were also frightened to the core by this young human boy with a terrifying ability. World Exterminating Wheel, Nirvana Flame and a Sword Qi which was able to kill his enemies instantly. Not any one of these attacks were easy to deal with.

The moment they got hit with one of them, Sha Fei and Du Di were perfect examples of what would happen to them.

Also, another example was Gu Ya who was instantly killed just now.

Yue Yang pressed his hand on Du Di's head.

Under the Nirvana Flame, Du Di very quickly met his death. His body turned into black smoke and he was absorbed back into the Crystal Tablet Runic Circle, disappearing into nothingness.

The only thing left of him was his Soul Pearl... Du Di's Pearl had been refined by the Nirvana Flame, his soul had completely disappeared. Furthermore, the black-coloured Soul Pearl had turned into a slightly scarlet red-coloured pearl.

Watching this scene, Lu De and Bao Wen immediately looked at each other. They suddenly thought that returning back to their Crystal Tablet Seal and enter their deep slumber once again was not a bad idea.

At least, they wouldn't truly die!

Just as they were about to escape and return to their slumber, outside the Palace, a figure suddenly crashed down like a meteor.

A loud boom exploded.

The whole Prison Emperor Divine Palace was shaking non-stop. What was happening?

Could it be that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty had met a strong foe?

A bad premonition suddenly crossed Yue Yang's heart. He quickly charged towards the Palace Hallentrance and discovered that Phoenix Fairy beauty was indeed there. Her fall had destroyed the stone plates on the Palace Hall entrance into rubbles, creating a huge crater, as if a hammer weighing a million tons had smashed the surface. She, who was Innate Level 10, was actually shot down from the Third Hall!

"Cough cough..." Phoenix Fairy Beauty stood up with a trembling and looked at Yue Yang a little miserably. Blood dripped down from the corner of her mouth as she revealed a wry smile, "You always see my miserable state!"

“What happened?” Yue Yang couldn’t imagine what kind of enemy it was that even the Innate Level 10 Phoenix Fairy Beauty wasn’t able to defeat them.

“I didn’t see the two big shots of Heaven Realm, looks like they were still sealed. On top, there are five Heaven Realm warriors guarding the place, I was discovered by them accidentally... Cough cough, i took advantage of it and succeeded in ambushing them. I managed to kill one, but amongst the remaining four, two have more or less the same strength as me, one is an Innate Level 9 while the other is Innate Level 8. I couldn’t defeat them. This Prison Emperor Divine Palace, which is a place filled with sealed Heaven Realm warriors, is definitely not an easy one... I’m tired, let me rest for a while...” Phoenix Fairy Beauty staggered a little as she approached Yue Yang, blood continuing to trickle down the corner of her mouth. This showed that she had suffered a serious internal injury.

“You still have things to do, so rest up for now!” Yue Yang hurriedly supported her and channeled his Innate Qi into her without sparing anything.

He looked and spoke relaxedly on the surface, but in his heart, he was greatly alarmed.

These Heaven Realm warriors had been sealed for six thousand years, and their abilities had been reduced to one tenth of their original strength. They were not even the two big shots of Heaven Realm, but they possessed a power that could injure Phoenix Fairy Beauty so seriously.

If he hadn't seen it with his own eyes, he wouldn't believe it at all.

Among the remaining four, two were Innate Level 10, one was Innate Level 9 while the other was Innate Level 8. How was he supposed to fight the next battle? These four fellows were not even the two big shots of the Heaven Realm. If the two big shots of Heaven Realm awakened, what kind of terrifying existence would they be? When Yue Yang thought this way, he suddenly felt numb. The Old Dragon Turtle's worries were not unfounded. Phoenix Fairy Beauty's help alone was not enough to defeat this challenge.

Fortunately, the enemies didn't pursue Phoenix Fairy Beauty. This proved that they were not able to leave the Third Hall, that they were still in sealed state.

Yue Yang decided that no matter what, he would let Phoenix Fairy Beauty recover from her wounds first.

She was their strongest force, it won't be possible without her!

"Careful!" The Old Dragon Turtle suddenly flew over and knocked Yue Yang who was carrying Phoenix Fairy Beauty dozens of metres away. A golden giant palm suddenly crashed down from the sky, ruthlessly smashing the place where Yue Yang was originally at. The Old Dragon Turtle tried to defend with his turtle-shaped protective shield, but it immediately shattered. The giant palm smashed half of the Old Dragon Turtle's body into the ground, making him spurt out blood for his mouth.

“So there are still rats here, die, all of you!” From the sky, a ten-metre tall golden giant who was emitting blazing light from his body descended slowly.

He pointed with his finger, and a Sun Ray Beam shot out, splitting the air.

With a loud piercing sound, it pierced through the Old Dragon Turtle’s shoulders.

The Old Dragon Turtle had dodged very quickly and managed to save his life. Otherwise, the shot would have bored a hole through his heart. Yue Yang saw the Old Dragon Turtle’s impregnable turtle back was also pierced through by the Sun Ray Beam. He immediately felt a shiver through his heart. This damned beam was even more powerful than his Innate Invisible Sword Qi. Furthermore, it could travel through a far distance. This battle would be difficult to fight...

This fellow was Innate Level 9. If Phoenix Fairy Beauty was not injured all over, there wouldn’t be any problem if he fight him together with Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

However, Phoenix Fairy Beauty was unconscious right now, she didn’t have any strength to fight.

Yue Yang looked at the golden giant who was shining like the sun, then looked at Sha Fei, Lu De and Bao Wen. he even looked at the monster guy leader An Ge who was watching them from afar.

In the end, Yue Yang shook his head.

Strong enemies everywhere!

This battle, he really had no confidence at all.

“Don’t look anymore, go back into the grimoire world quickly...” The Old Dragon Turtle exasperatedly waved his staff at Yue Yang and croaked out in his hoarse voice.

“Old Turtle, let’s return together. We’ll fight again after we recover!” Yue Yang felt that abandoning the Old Turtle here and returning to the grimoire world alone was simply too disloyal.

“Nonsense, if I hadn’t block the attack for you, do you think you can escape into the grimoire world so easily? Furthermore, the moment you escape inside, the location coordinates and traces of this place would be erased by the enemy. How will you come back out? When you come out, the enemies will surround you in a trap! Under the Prison Emperor’s Will, my turtle shell wouldn’t be destroyed completely. No matter how much the enemies try to destroy, it would still exist. You can use it as the teleportation point...” The Old Dragon Turtle’s frail, ancient body tottered towards Yue Yang. His wrinkled, old face revealed a wry smile, “Although you are rude and annoying, I’m very happy to have met you, boy. It was like I was seeing the young Prison Emperor once again... Go, this old man has really had enough of life. If you are overly sensitive, you might ruin our plan!”

“So touching!” That golden giant humphed coldly, “If you dare to

hide inside your grimoire world, I will torture this old turtle for a hundred years and make him want to die. Try me!”

“Try your ass! Aren’t you just an Innate Level 9? It’s not like I’ve never fight against one before!” Yue Yang stormed towards him in fury.

Chapter 335 – Going All Out, Fight The Bloody Battle Until The End!

Xiao Wen Li took Phoenix Fairy Beauty back into the grimoire world. Yue Yang ignited Nirvana Flame all over his body as he revolve his hands, charging his Yang Ability to the maximum.

“Insignificant insect.” The golden giant didn’t care about Yue Yang’s explosion of energy at all.

He threw out an energy stream and healed Sha Fei who was heavily injured and was about to die in an instant. Although Sha Fei’s abilities was greatly reduced, he wouldn’t have a problem fighting against the Old Dragon Turtle. Furthermore, there were still Lu De, Bao Wen and the other two Heaven Realm Warriors watching the Old Dragon Turtle like he was a prey.

Yue Yang charged towards the golden giant furiously, like a fire dragon.

Previously, Yue Yang had also fought with strong enemies with gigantic figures, such as the Great Demon King Baruth, Demon King Ha Xin and the others.

Enemies with gigantic figures had a huge advantage over him in terms of power and overwhelming abilities. If they were the same level, a human ranker would need to surpass his giant enemy in terms of agility and battle power by a far margin. This would render the enemy’s brute power useless and foil their plans. Only then would he have a chance of victory. If the enemy was on par

with him in terms of speed, agility and battle power, there would be no chance of winning at all... Yue Yang felt that he had challenged the Great Demon King Baruth, Demon King Ha Xin and the others a little too early. However, there was no other choice but to fight the battle in the Demon Palace at that time.

Of course, having to fight this Innate Level 9 golden giant, Yue Yang was also left with no other choice.

Yue Yang had no information about the golden giant at all.

He didn't think that a fellow who could escape from the Prison Emperor Seal without losing anything was an ordinary being.

The most important thing was that Yue Yang had also felt a kind of feeling in his heart, some kind of premonition that made his skin crawl. Since being transported to this world, Yue Yang had only felt that kind of feeling three times.

The first time was when he met Demon King Ha Xin. At that time, he had almost been instantly killed. Yue Yang would break out in cold sweat whenever he remembered the incident. The second time was when he fought against Marquis of Zi Jin. At that time, his ability was lacking. Fortunately, the Marquis of Zi Jin was in an exhausted state after fighting against Grandma Chi, and Yue Yang also had the help from Xue Wu Xia who had risked her life to save him. Only then could Yue Yang defeat Marquis of Zi Jin. It was a battle surrounded with perils, a battle he would never forget his whole life.

The third time he felt this feeling was today, when he was about to challenge this golden giant from the Heaven Realm.

Previously, Yue Yang had actually fought with the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian, for a bit. He had even fought against the Great Demon King Baruth, Demon King Ha Xin and was surrounded by many other strong Demon Abyss warriors. However, he never felt so threatened as he did today. This Heaven Realm Warrior who had been sealed for six thousand years was definitely not someone to be provoked. Yue Yang felt that the battle this time shouldn't be a fight where he go all out, but a battle to test out their strength...

In the chance that his abilities were not strong enough to defeat the enemy, they must quickly retreat back into the grimoire world. They couldn't throw away their lives just like that.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was unconscious. It would be difficult for him to win the battle alone.

With regards to this battle, the most important thing was to scout the enemy. He would lure the enemy to use his ultimate move, then return to the grimoire world. While waiting for Phoenix Fairy Beauty to recover, they will analyse his weakness and think of a way to kill their enemy!

"You want to battle in terms of skills? I can do that too!" The golden giant drew a circle with his arm and send a punch towards Yue Yang's body. When Yue Yang agilely avoided the punch, the golden giant did a backflip nimbly and turned his body upside down. He swung his legs down, like sharp, long, terrifying axes

slashing down towards Yue Yang from the sky. Yue Yang break out in sweat and felt a chill down his spine. A ten metre-tall giant could actually perform agile and flexible movement on par as him. How could he fight this battle?

Yue Yang teleported in an instant.

Away from the battlefield, escaping tens of metres away.

The golden giant pressed both of his hands onto the ground, and his body disappeared without a trace... Was he a shadow?

Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision was unable to see the trace of movement from the enemy. Hence, Yue Yang could only leap forward, relying only the instinct in his heart and his own abilities.

Behind him, a gold-coloured giant fist suddenly appeared and bashed Yue Yang's spine hard. The golden giant had suddenly revealed his body as he pursued and attacked Yue Yang with his punch. He laughed maniacally, "You have quite a good reaction speed, but you are still too slow!"

The punch was extremely powerful, causing Yue Yang's internal organs to break into pieces.

Fortunately he had protected his body with Innate Qi and neutralized the damage. Otherwise, Yue Yang would have been instantly killed by the golden giant's punch.

Using his Mysterious Three Styles – Elegant Sword Dance, Yue Yang avoided the golden giant’s pursuit. Fortunately Yue Yang had cultivated his Innate Invisible Sword Qi and possess the purest of Innate Qi. Furthermore, he had also learnt the extremely difficult Innate Battle Skills through the Heavenly Sword Goddess’ help. Otherwise, he would have died long ago. This golden giant was an Innate Level 9, but the strength he showed was definitely not as simple as an Innate Level 9. Even worse, his sealed abilities would definitely surpass Innate level 9. Be it in terms of realm of power, vision, sense and skills, he was far superior to Yue Yang... Yue Yang had only just realized something. With regards to this golden giant who was originally a whole realm stronger than him, even his remaining Innate Level 9 power was enough to defeat him easily!

Especially because this golden giant was an expert in battle skills!

“[Judgement]!”

When the golden giant saw that Yue Yang had escaped far away using his Mysterious Three Styles skills, his gaze turn cold and unleashed a powerful attack with his fists. Countless of giant fists appeared, charged with his energy as they cut through the air and flew straight towards Yue Yang’s back.

Yue Yang hurriedly activated his Flame Shield and increase his defenses.

Nirvana Shield could indeed burn through every object, but it couldn’t immediately burn through all the giant fists that the golden giant had unleashed.

It needed time to burn.

The golden giant's Heaven Rune collided with Yue Yang's Heaven Rune and both shattered to pieces, causing a world-shaking blast of shock wave... In the midst of the shockwave, those golden giant fists were burnt into streams of light the size of ping pong streams, but they penetrated through Yue Yang's Flame Shield, and collided with Yue Yang's body. Yue Yang pushed both of his arms forward and released the second wave of Nirvana Flame Shield powerfully out of his body. As he resisted the streams of light, he also defended against the shock wave from the explosion.

This was already Yue Yang's limit.

He successfully released the second Nirvana Flame Shield in time, but he couldn't avoid getting a few ribs broken from the impact of the streams of light.

If it wasn't for the Flame Shield that saved his life, this golden giant's punches that turned into streams of light would have penetrated through his body...

An unstoppable giant punch suddenly descended down amongst the huge shockwave explosion. Its target was Yue Yang's head. The golden giant had actually recklessly entered the centre of the shockwave, to forcefully kill Yue Yang.

Under the situation where Yue Yang couldn't defend himself, he

suddenly remembered the 'Royal Dragon Sword' that the big loli used in the Dream Realm.

Normally, he couldn't use it.

However, in a life or death situation, in that instant, Yue Yang succeeded in unleashing the attack.

Yue Yang shot to the sky like a rotating bullet. As he avoided the enemy's powerful punch, Yue Yang flew high with his two legs stepping on air, ferocious like a dragon. A ray of Innate Sword Qi shot out from his legs, counter-attacking at the golden giant's head. That golden giant didn't retreat, but threw out his other hand punch instead. Unleashing two punches back to back, he prepared to destroy Yue Yang's body forcibly and foil Yue Yang's counter-attack plan.

Yue Yang's Innate Sword Qi pierced deep into the golden giant's palm, but it was unable to pierce through the back of his hand and continue to inflict damage on the golden giant.

If the big loli was to unleash the Royal Dragon Sword instead, it wouldn't be effective too. Although Yue Yang had just learnt the skill and did not use enough power, this counter attack was not effective enough.

Before the giant's punch reach Yue Yang's body, Xiao Wen Li appeared.

And unleashed her Binding Inherent Skill!

The punch was stopped only for an instant, only a tenth of a second.

However, it was already more than enough for Yue Yang to prepare another counter attack.

Jumping over the giant's punch, Yue Yang ignited Nirvana Flame in both of his hands and punched the golden giant's face.

The golden giant still did not retreat and continued to advance instead. He gave a headbutt to Yue Yang and sent him flying. In the air, he then turned his body and tried to sweep Yue Yang's side with his arm. Yue Yang avoided the dangerous situation, but the golden giant started spraying a light beam from his mouth that was as intense as a sun across the air... Yue Yang was left with no escape, he could only teleport away. However, his teleportation target was instantly read by the golden giant. Before Yue Yang could even turn around, he was immediately knocked down from behind. The giant had barbarically punched Yue Yang's body, sending him flying away.

Boom!

Yue Yang's body shot forward like a cannon, smashing right into the flight of stairs in the First Hall.

"Die!" In the next second, the golden giant had caught up with

Yue Yang again. His right punch shot towards the pile of crushed stones that Yue Yang was in with an incredible force.

A Rune suddenly flashed.

World Exterminating Wheel suddenly shot out from the pile of stones, cutting through the golden giant's arms, flying straight towards his face.

The golden giant immediately took back his hand and avoided the attack.

On his face, a thin smile suddenly appeared, "This seven thousand years, other than the Prison Emperor, you are the only human warrior to hurt my face..." There was a burnt mark from the Nirvana Flame on the left side of his face. On his right, there was a wound from the World Exterminating Wheel. His left palm was injured from Yue Yang's Innate Sword Qi. Other than those, Yue Yang who had not spared any effort attacking him didn't make any more damages towards him.

A golden light flashes and the golden giant's wounds were healed in an instant.

On the other hand, in front of him, Yue Yang who was crawling out from the pieces of stone rubbles looked extremely miserable and wounded..

Yue Yang couldn't stop his cough as fresh blood spurt out from

his mouth. His internal organs had bled from taking the damages just now, and the blood was expelled out of Yue Yang's body with his Innate Qi. If Yue Yang had not learnt the Mysterious Innate Qi Healing Method from the big loli, he would have died from all the serious injuries he suffered.

“Admit defeat!” The golden giant glared at Yue Yang, “I have killed countless human warriors. Today, I shall give you a chance!”

“Under Master Ming Ri Hao's [Interlink] Domain of Power, you can forget about escaping. Even if you escape into your grimoire world, Master Ming Ri Hao will be able to chase after you and kill you immediately... The laws of the grimoire will not be able to protect you. Admit defeat immediately and kneel in front of the Master!” Even without Sha Fei's threat, Yue Yang had long realized that this golden giant called Master Ming Ri Hao possessed a special kind of Domain of Power. It was like bounded chains and ribbon knots, tying across his body invisibly and preventing him to return to the grimoire world smoothly. He was forced to fight against him to the end.

“This, I'm afraid I can only disappoint you with my answer.” Yue Yang slowly congealed Nirvana Flame and turned it into a Flaming Armour. At the same time, he chanted Heaven Runes and continued to increase his status and buffs, his strength and agility.

Even when fighting against a strong enemy, Yue Yang had never given up his battles. He never admitted defeat before.

The phrase admitting defeat did not exist in Yue Yang's dictionary...

He would rather die in his battle than admit defeat!

Maybe he could have stayed alive by admitting defeat, but a man of character, if he kneeled, beg for pity, and exchange his dignity for his life, wouldn't it be better to die honorably in battles instead? Yue Yang looked down on traitors who admit defeat quickly the most. Before he was transported to this world, he really despised those people who could only talk, and would run at first sign of danger even though they acted honorably on the outside... There was a famous saying, 'Confucian scholars fight each other to side with the enemy, widows remain faithful and pursue justice.'. This could be used to describe hypocrites.

Instead of living as a coward his whole life, Yue Yang would rather be a hero, even though it would only last a few minutes!

If he must choose, Yue Yang would choose to escape.

Because escaping was merely avoiding the enemy's sword, it's not completely giving up the battle. It's not admitting defeat.

That kind of abandoning all dignity to kneel and beg for mercy, Yue Yang would never choose to do it even if he die.

Due to the existence of the golden giant, Ming Ri Hao's [Interlink] Domain of Power, he gave up thinking about escaping into the grimoire world. Instead, he steeled his determination to fight to the end.

“If you don’t admit defeat, you’ll die immediately!” the golden giant was different from Sha Fei. Although he had the upper hand, he was still cautious towards Yue Yang. He even had the feeling that if this boy did not die, when he grew in the future, he would become the terrifying new generation of ‘Prison Emperor’. Human warriors grew at a fast speed. He would definitely not let this young human escape the Prison Emperor Divine Palace alive.

“...” The Old Dragon Turtle shook his head with all his might as he watched Yue Yang.

Chapter 336 – Nirvana State, Physical And Spiritual Self-Detonation!

That golden giant realized that not only the brat in front of him did not lose his confidence, he was even releasing an increasing amount of power from his body.

A crazy amount of fighting spirit mixed together with blazing flames, soundlessly creating a mountain of flames.

The enemy which was inferior to him just now had gradually made him feel that he was catching up to him. The worse thing was that the boy's face was illuminated in light. He was showing signs of breaking through to a new realm....

He must definitely not let the boy continue to level up. He must kill him before he grew stronger.

The golden giant crossed his arms on his chest and let out a loud shout, releasing a shockwave that was hotter than sun exploding through the surrounding. Even Sha Fei, who was completely healed from his wounds, frantically escaped when he saw the attack. Lu De, Bao Wen who were still on their half human half spirit state had also quickly taken cover, afraid to be exposed to the destructive power directly. In this instant, the golden giant's strength exploded ten times more powerful. Behind him, a giant Totem of Heaven Rune appeared, bathed in a brilliant light like the sun. A gold-coloured tiger suddenly appeared in the middle. It let out a soundless roar that shook the whole ground.

The golden giant then waved his fist.

His meteor-like fist aimed straight towards Yue Yang.

The Old Dragon Turtle risked his life and erected his turtle-shaped protective shield, blocking right in front of Yue Yang.

Boom!

A loud explosion resounded.

The turtle-shaped protective shield was destroyed immediately by the golden giant's punch. Not only that, even the Old Dragon Turtle's turtle back that was extremely hard had also broke from the punch, leaving a gaping hole. The golden giant's fist emerged from the Old Dragon Turtle's chest, grazed Yue Yang's face, and left a deep mark on one of the stone pillars ten metres away.

“You are seeking death!” The golden giant Ming Ri Hao turned around and kicked the Old Dragon Turtle who was spouting blood from his mouth continuously away.

The Old Dragon Turtle's body smashed into piles of rubbles, it was unknown whether he was dead or alive.

The fist that had grazed Yue Yang's face carved a shallow wound.

Fresh blood oozed out unstoppably...

The second punch followed through immediately, the golden giant Ming Ri Hao would definitely not let Yue Yang have the chance to catch his breath. He must definitely kill this young human who gave him a bad feeling inside.

No matter what, he would not let the human race gain a second Prison Emperor!

Roarr.....

Yue Yang who had been silent the whole time amidst the storm suddenly released an earth-shattering cry. His eyes turned red like a demon! When the golden giant who was coming at him with a destructive punch appeared in front of him, Yue Yang didn't avoid him, but chose to attack him back with his punch! The two punches, which was unlike a normal punch be it in terms of strength or size, knocked hard against each other.

After two seconds of clash, the golden giant Ming Ri Hao's punch finally succeeded in defeating Yue Yang's punch, blowing Yue Yang away.

Yue Yang who had been blown away from the shock impact of the punch shot inside the First Hall like a meteor. After flying for a hundred metres and smashing into a big pillar, Yue Yang still had not stopped. In the end, he smashed into the walls of the Palace Hall and was buried deep inside... The whole First Hall shook turbulently as the terrifying sound of smash echoed throughout the whole place. The super strong golden giant Ming Ri Hao , on

the other hand, was pushed a step back by Yue Yang's attack. This was really astonishing for him. How could an Innate Level 3 human warrior be able to push an Innate Level 9 back?

"You guys, kill him immediately!" Ming Ri Hao flexed his punch a little. After exchanging blows with Yue Yang just now, it seemed that his hand was feeling a little uncomfortable. Fortunately that brat had not grown stronger yet, otherwise, he would definitely be on par with the Prison Emperor!

"Master Ming Ri Hao, is that boy still alive?" Sha Fei was astounded. How could an Innate Level 3 human warrior survive such a terrifying punch?

"..." Ming Ri Hao's face that was glimmering in golden light was unreadable. However, a turbulent wave was brewing in his heart.

"One more time!" From far away, an angry cry resounded.

With more than ten times the speed of a meteor, Yue Yang shot forward.

Sha Fei who was Innate Level 6 could not even see the figure of the person flying straight towards them.

The golden giant Ming Ri Hao could react on time, but he was unable to avoid the speed of this attack. Relying on his extremely strong battle sense, he placed his left hand over his face and counter-attacked with his right. A punch blazing with Nirvana

Flame smashed onto his left palm ruthlessly. If he did not block in time, that punch would have ruthlessly smash onto Ming Ri Hao's left eyes... Ming Ri Hao felt a shiver in his heart. However, his punch had blasted his enemy back to the rubbles with a flying speed that was faster than before.

Sha Fei only managed to react at this time. He cried out in shock, "That boy is really still alive. He didn't die!"

Ming Ri Hao humphed, "Rubbish."

His left hand was ablaze in Nirvana Flame which did not extinguish for a long time.

This was something that Yue Yang couldn't do before. Although Yue Yang could control Nirvana Flame, it was limited when used against an enemy who was much stronger than him. However, in the punch this time, his Nirvana Flame seemed to be able to show its true power.

Even Ming Ri Hao's hand was burnt continuously, unlike the superficial burn that he had last time.

This Nirvana Flame, which was so powerful and unstoppable, could only be used by the Phoenix Sisters. Could the Phoenix Sisters have come out to help him?

Inside the First Palace Hall, amongst bits of rubbles and stones, a blood-soaked young man with tattered clothes stood up.

It was Yue yang.

He tore out his clothes which had been completely destroyed and spit out the blood in his mouth.

On his body, dark golden Ancient Runes appeared. Gold-coloured and silver-coloured Heaven Runes surrounded his body in a circle, forming a new Rune Circle. A Rune Armor faintly formed on Yue Yang's body. The most formidable thing was, of course, the Nirvana Flame that was burning on both of Yue Yang's arms. Those Nirvana Flame looked like it had just been reborn, becoming even redder and more powerful. Raging powerfully in Yue Yang's body, it burned from the inside to the outside, completely becoming one body with Yue Yang... Seeing that his opponent did not die but realized the true power of the Nirvana Flame during the battle instead, Ming Ri Hao's expression immediately changed.

This kind of opponent was the kind that he thirsted yet hated.

As a warrior, he thirsted for a formidable opponent.

A formidable opponent could spur him on, making him grow stronger in battles. However, an enemy with growth potential that was much stronger than him was the most hateful one!

“One more time!” The Nirvana Flame on Yue Yang's body exploded once again, making his body looked like a fiery qilin as he charged towards his enemy.

He learnt this from the Qilin girl.

Yue Yang didn't know if this would be effective. Right now, he was only fighting relying on his instinct and the unyielding determination in his heart.

The golden giant Ming Ri Hao didn't dare to block against his enemy's attack with his left hand again, which had just extinguished the Nirvana Flame burning on it. The wound from the Nirvana Flame had not healed yet. He reached out his right hand and blocked Yue Yang's punch. His leg then sinisterly kicked forward, sending Yue Yang flying away the third time.

Sha Fei was really dumbstruck watching the whole battle.

A human that did not die after so many attacks? He really never saw one before!

If it was another human warrior instead, forget about Innate Level 3, even an Innate Level 6 or an Innate Level 7 would have died instantly if they received one of Master Ming Ri Hao's attacks.

This brat could retaliate time and again...

When Sha Fei saw the Nirvana Flame that was burning unstopably on Ming Ri Hao's hand, he couldn't help but to shiver in fright.

Could it be that even Master Ming Ri Hao couldn't resist the damage from the Nirvana Flame?

“You are really a hateful human being!” The golden giant Ming Ri Hao realized that from within the First Hall, Yue Yang whose body was burning in Nirvana Flame had walked out step by step once again. His critical injuries had been healed from the Nirvana Flame's rebirth power. He knew that this boy had just mastered Nirvana's Heart and had completely become one with Nirvana Flame. It was obvious that his body was in Nirvana State. Before his power had been completely exhausted, physical attacks would never kill him, because he had now possessed the rebirth ability of the pure flame.

The golden giant Ming Ri Hao turned around and was about to leave.

Sha Fei was shocked when he saw this, “Master, are you returning to the Third Palace Hall to sleep again?”

Ming Ri Hao humphed coldly, “Physical attacks will not be effective on his current state. Continuing this fight is a waste of energy. However, it will not be easy to maintain the Nirvana State, where his body become one with the Nirvana Flame. He is only persisting on because of his fighting spirit and anger, and because his body has just synchronised with the Nirvana Flame. When he released his Nirvana State, you can kill him easily. Without me, his target, to spur on his fight, his fighting spirit and anger will disappear. I shall leave him to you!”

His body started to flash with a light that was even more blinding

than the sun.

The giant Rune Totem flickered under his feet.

Yue Yang shot towards him like a meteor, his fist that was burning in Nirvana Flame turned into a long fire dragon, aiming straight towards Ming Ri Hao's head.

Woosh.

His punch landed on empty air.

Ming Ri Hao had disappeared.

A second later, he reappeared at the third Palace Hall that was high up in the sky. With a flash of light, he then disappeared.

It was indeed just as he said. After losing his attack target, fighting spirit and anger, Yue Yang was unable to maintain his Nirvana State. His over-exhausted mind was unable to support his similarly exhausted body. He fell to the ground with a loud thud.

When Sha Fei saw Yue Yang, he suddenly gulped his saliva.

It was his chance right now.

Kill the boy? Achieving the magnificent feat that even Master

Ming Ri Hao was unable to complete?

If Yue Yang wasn't unconscious, Sha Fei would not dare to provoke him so easily. After all, even Ming Ri Hao was unable to defeat him. However, the current Yue Yang was completely defenseless. He had completely fell unconscious after an arduous battle... Sha Fei clenched his fist. This kind of chance, it won't happen a second time!

"I suggest you take back the idea of attacking him." The Old Dragon Turtle suddenly sat down on the ground. He was actually still alive!

"With just the likes of an old dragon turtle?" Sha Fei was shocked at first, but he immediately laughed out loud.

"If you haven't heard of 'Physical and Spiritual Self-Detonation' before, you can give it a try!" The Old Dragon Turtle wiped the blood at the corner of his mouth. Leaning on his staff for support, his trembling body stood up once again. If Yue Yang wasn't unconscious, he would have shouted at the Old Dragon Turtle, "Your Chinese Zodiac must be Cockroach, right?". Otherwise, he would say, "This fellow is not a Dragon Turtle, he is a cockroach. He really is a cockroach."

"..." Of course, Sha Fei had heard about Physical and Spiritual Self-Detonation before. That terrifying self-detonating art was a taboo skill in the Heaven Realm.

Physical and Spiritual Self-Detonation was a skill that sacrificed

one's body and soul to release an explosion to an enemy with a power that was a hundred times more powerful than one's strength.

During the process, external force would not be able to stop it. Even if the self-detonator's body was completely destroyed, it would not be able to stop the self-detonating process.

The most terrifying point was that the moment this self-detonating process succeeded, both the self-detonator and his detonation target would completely disappear from the world, unable to resurrect through any method. They would not even be able to sleep and recover in a spirit state. This kind of self-detonation would bring forth eternal destruction, it had the same killing power as World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame. However, it would need someone to sacrifice himself to self-detonate.

Sha Fei didn't think that he possessed the ability to resist the Old Dragon Turtle's self-detonation power.

However, he was a little suspicious. How could this Old Dragoon Turtle, who had never gone to the Heaven Realm before, knew about this kind of Heaven Realm taboo skill?

The Old Dragon Turtle's expression was, however, completely unquestionable, "I have said before, I have lived long enough!"

When Sha Fei saw the old fellow's hands starting to draw the Physical and Spiritual Self-Detonation Rune Circle, he immediately

flew to the sky with a record speed to escape. Physical and Spiritual Self-Detonation? Only fools would accompany him in his self-detonation. At the most, the two big shots would break the Prison Emperor's Divine Seal in another hundred years and return to the Heaven Realm. Who would risk his life with a self-detonator at this kind of time?

Chapter 337 – Yue Yang, Nirvana Rebirth!

The Old Dragon Turtle did not truly execute Physical and Spiritual Self-Detonation. Instead, he reverted to his original body, turning into a huge Dragon Turtle. He pulled back his head and four limbs inside his shell and turned quiet, not making a single movement.

That Runic Circle that would start the Physical and Spiritual Self-Detonation was still faintly shining on his back.

As the Old Dragon Turtle entered into his rest, the Runic Circle also faded and disappear slowly.

Sha Fei looked down from the sky and really wanted to throw an energy ball at the Old Dragon Turtle to roast him alive, but in the end, thinking that the Physical and Spiritual Self-detonation would activate because of that, he changed his mind and quickly flew to the Second Palace Hall, maintaining his distance away from the suicidal Old Dragon Turtle. In any case, the two great leaders would break the Prison Emperor's Divine Seal in another hundred years at the most. They would be able to return to the Heaven Realm peacefully afterwards, so why should he risk his life here? They had already endured for six thousand years, wouldn't they be able to wait for another hundred years?

Yue Yang who had collapsed on the ground had been brought back inside the grimoire world by Xiao Wen Li.

When the girls saw that he had returned safely, they heaved sighs

of relief.

Previously, Phoenix Fairy Beauty had returned defeated and unconscious, the girls were extremely nervous because of that. However, Yue Yang refused to let them come out to battle.

Yue Bing had almost cried from fright, her eyes were red as she tried hard not to cry, afraid that crying would bring bad luck to them. Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress were forcing themselves to stay calm as they comforted Yue Bing. Right now, seeing that Yue Yang had returned safely, even the strong Xue Wu Xia was secretly wiping away the tears that had fallen down her cheeks.

Since his return to the grimoire world, Yue Yang continued to sleep.

At first, the girls thought that he was just mentally drained. It was only when the Phoenix Fairy Beauty woke up that they found out that he was actually in the midst of Nirvana State Meditation.

They did not know when he would wake up from this Nirvana State and become reborn...

Inside the Dream Realm, the big loli was sitting right in front of Yue Yang.

This was her first time sitting quietly with Yue Yang, instead of forcing him to train.

The big loli seemed to want to comfort Yue Yang, but it also seemed that she wanted to teach him, hinting that doing this would result in something. Just like that, she quietly sat in front of him, not speaking at all. Yue Yang felt a little strange. What was the big loli trying to hint at him? Was it the way to enlighten himself on the Sixth Level of Innate Invisible Sword Qi? Or did she want to teach him a new skill?

However, the big loli didn't say anything. She only sat quietly, so Yue Yang also couldn't do anything about it. He could only sit and looked at her, forcing his urgency down and quietly observing her movements.

After sitting quietly for a long, long time, when Yue Yang's mental state had turned from chaos to quiet, the big loli nodded at him.

Yue Yang was slightly dazed, what did the big loli mean?

Suddenly, thousand rays of light flashed.

The Heavenly Sword Goddess had appeared...

Her appearance was really surprising for Yue Yang.

It was a fact that the Sword Goddess rarely made her appearance, and even when when she did, she would never speak. She would only appear for a moment and disappear in the next.

With a move of the Sword Goddess' hand, a cry resounded from the sky. A bright, Colourful Phoenix shining in golden light suddenly appeared in the Dream World. A Nirvana Flame Pillar rose high up to the sky, scattering countless droplets of fire, before condensing together to form a huge Fire Phoenix that descended upon the ground. The Colourful Phoenix flew in spiral before it flew down towards the Fire Phoenix that came from the Nirvana Flame Pillar... Slowly, the two phoenixes turned into two cute, lovable little girls, who looked even younger than Yue Shuang. There were little bells on their left and right snow-white hands respectively. They were wearing a bright red [Dudou](#) hung on their neck, there was even a Phoenix embroidered on the Dudous.

(Shiro: Dudou is an undergarment covering the chest and abdomen commonly used by toddlers in Ancient China)

The little Phoenix Sisters' barefoot feet floated in the air. They were extremely well-behaved, just like adults as they bowed towards the Sword Goddess respectfully.

Yue Yang came into realization when he saw this. Indeed, the Phoenix Sisters knew the Sword Goddess.

Maybe there really were Phoenix eggs inside the Universal Pouch, and the Sword Goddess had hatched them using some kind of way. Looking at it this way, there must be other treasures inside the Universal Pouch... It was a pity that he still couldn't use it!

The Sword Goddess pointed her finger at Yue Yang, and a colourful light beam shot towards him.

Yue Yang couldn't react at all, and was hit straight by the colourful light beam.

Although he couldn't move his body, his mind was completely awake. He realized that the two Phoenix sisters were riding on a Fire Phoenix, and did not enter into his body. In the next moment, a new kind of Nirvana realization surfaced in his mind...

Not knowing how much time passed, Yue Yang finally came to full realization in his Nirvana State. His body felt like it was reborn, like a cocoon breaking out from its larva.

His body felt completely relaxed and refreshed.

Yue Yang finally understand what he did wrong.

He had always thought that he should train himself to be stronger in order to pursue a higher realm. However, after his new realization, he understood that his knowledge was severely lacking. This way was no different than normal warriors. A true expert would start from the bottom and work his way to the top, start small and grew big. He would be omnipotent, learning everything and having control of everything.

If one forgot the things he learnt before because he was pursuing a higher and stronger realm, it would be equivalent to him abandoning the foundation that he had built painstakingly.

Just like a giant who only looked at the far distance, but did not look below his feet.

A true expert should be a giant when he wanted to see into the far distance, and be a normal person when he wanted to see below his feet. If he wanted to see even smaller, he could become an ant or an even smaller existence. Only then would he be able to control everything.

Yue Yang realized his inadequacy, and felt really small.

Compared to the Old Daoist Priest and the Heavenly Sword Goddess, he was such an insignificant existence. However, both the Old Daoist Priest and the Sword Goddess had not neglected him all this while. Instead, they put themselves in the same level as him, spoke to him, exchange ideas with him and even guide his improvement... This was how a true expert would act! When he became as strong as the Old Daoist Priest and the Sword Goddess, would he be able to do this too? If he couldn't, then did he really reached the kind of realm that the Old Daoist Priest did? Obviously, that is impossible!

It was precisely because the Old Daoist Priest's mind was omnipotent, he was able to retain everything from low to high, small to big, weak to strong. Everything, including the whole world was within his grasp. This was the kind of special existence that the Old Daoist Priest had.

Only when he reached that point would he reach the realm of the Old Daoist Priest!

“Thank you, I understand now. I will train from the beginning in the future!” Yue Yang bowed respectfully towards the Sword Goddess who had guided him. This was the first time he bowed to her. It was also the first time that he felt a kind of reverence towards someone... The Sword Goddess seemed to reveal a smile but did not speak at all. However, her expression looked like a happy child as she quietly disappeared.

“...” The big loli and the Phoenix Sisters bowed neatly.

Yue Yang also bowed towards the three big and small lolis. After waiting for them to return, Yue Yang changed his posture and slowly trained the First Level of his Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

Right now, as he retrained the First Level, Yue Yang felt some kind of a completely new revelation.

The revelation from retraining was like opening a new door. Yue Yang felt like he had stepped outside of his house. Before, he felt like he was trapped inside his house looking at the garden outside the window. Although he had seen a lot of scenery, it was different from going outside himself. Walking out to the garden and to the road outside, he was able to see completely different things... The big loli had then appeared and practiced together with Yue Yang. The phoenix sisters had also appeared, riding on a big Fire Phoenix as they flew in circles around Yue Yang.

First Level, Second Level, Third Level...

The more Yue Yang trained, the more he felt that the Innate Invisible Sword Qi technique was simply too mysterious and profound. He would discover new revelations from time to time.

The Sword Qi that he cultivated started to change qualitatively. The power stayed the same, but in the end, after Yue Yang's revelation, the whole Sword Qi was granted a new Nirvana Rebirth!

Slowly, Yue Yang had also managed to use the colourful Sword Qi that the big loli used.

The golden-coloured Sword Qi became even richer in colour, turning fiery red, emerald green and ocean blue. In the end, red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo and violet, all kinds of colours were present at Yue Yang's wish. As the Sword Qi style and energy changed, the colour of the Sword Qi had also changed. The Sword Qi of different colours had different amount of energy.

Yue Yang, who could only created a one-metre long Sword Qi at the most, could produce a two-metre long Sword Qi now.

He even still had strength left after doing that.

Yue Yang could even control the shape of the Sword Qi extending from his body to curve-shaped, snake-shaped and spiral-shaped. When he cultivated the Fifth Level again, he could shape it in any shape he wanted... The big loli didn't seem to have the desire to help Yue Yang break through the Sixth Level immediately. After Yue Yang finished retraining the Fifth Level, she slowly stopped

and bowed towards Yue Yang, then disappeared. The Phoenix Sisters riding on the big Fire Phoenix had also descended down and entered Yue Yang's body, returning to their home...

Inside the grimoire world, Yue Yang who had slept for three days and night started to shine brightly with a multitude of colours.

After the girls understood that Yue Yang was in the midst of breakthrough and would wake up shortly after, they did not feel anxious at all, they only waited patiently.

Then, Yue Bing discovered that a Nirvana Flame Pillar suddenly ignited on her brother's body. A cry that sounded like nature resounded, shaking the whole grimoire world. Only then did Yue Bing realized that Yue Yang had just completed his Nirvana State cultivation, and was about to wake up.

Before Yue Bing even cried out, the girls had all burst into the room.

When Yue Yang opened his eyes, the whole grimoire world was shaking violently.

Following its master's levelling up to a new realm, the grimoire world started to change continuously. The sky seemed to become higher and wider, while the earth seemed to become bigger. There was no much difference to the mountain range, but the surface of the earth such as the flowers, herbs and trees, had all started to grow at a surprising speed. The ground which was previously bare without grass was covered with lush green grass. Unknown wild

flowers also sprouted out at record speed. The plants that had been planted grew even more lavishly, some had even sprouted flowers and bore fruits... The girls were too busy to pay attention to these changes. All of them surrounded Yue Yang and watched him intently, looking at the most important man in their lives.

When Yue Yang opened his eyes, they were colourful like a kaleidoscope. His eyes stayed that way for a long time.

A dream-like ray of light shone out and absorbed the colours in his eyes.

In the end, he finally recovered the original colours of his eyes.

It was clear like last time.

However, the girls all felt that the current Yue Yang had changed a lot compared to last time. The current Yue Yang gave out the feeling that he was someone that could be relied upon. Even the Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt this kind of feeling in her heart.

Fortunately Yue Yang didn't maintain this state for too long, it quickly vanished.

Yue Yang's eyes reverted to the original. He looked at the features of the girls as he tried to focus his fuzzy vision. Then, he asked a little embarrassedly, "I, how long have I slept? My whole body feels numb, as if I slept for a few years. I couldn't have slept for years, right?"

“Of course not, it has only been 3 days.” Princess Qian Qian heaved a sigh of relief.

“Has your body completed the Nirvana Rebirth?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty had good eyes, she could immediately tell that Yue Yang had completely changed.

“I, I only slept for a while.” Yue Yang would obviously not tell them about the Sword Goddess. He felt a little uncomfortable because he had slept for so long. He felt some kind of soreness as if he had just overexerted himself, and wanted to move his bones and muscles. However, when he stood up, his whole body suddenly shot up to the sky, bursting through the roof and jumping over tens of metres high. When he thought that he wanted to descend, his body immediately shot down to the ground like a meteor, crushing the obsidian floor that the girls had built painstakingly.

The girls were speechless.

Had this madman turn into a crazy bull after waking up from his sleep?

Phoenix Fairy Beauty frowned her brows. She felt that Yue Yang’s change was not that simple, because he looked like he was losing control just like when he first become Innate Level 1.

The current him was already used to the power of Innate Level 1... So what does this mean? Did he retrain the Innate Realm again? Did he reverted back to Innate Level 1?

“Try to punch me once!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty decided to test out the hunch in her mind.

“Real punch?” Yue Yang condense his power like he usually did last time and sent a punch towards Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

A loud boom resounded. Phoenix Fairy Beauty who originally could receive Yue Yang’s all-out punch easily single-handedly, was actually sent flying even after receiving his punch with both hands and a defensive stance. Phoenix Fairy Beauty simply couldn’t believe this. She raise her two hands and found out to her surprise that the fingers on her left hand had been broken by the impact of Yue Yang’s punch... The strength of an Innate Level 1 would definitely not be able to do this to her! Even an Innate Level 6 warrior would not be able to break her fingers if he did not attack her with all of his strength.

Furthermore, she was not Innate Level 9 anymore. She had become an Innate Level 10.

How could an Innate Level 10 be injured by an Innate Level 1?

If this goes out, no one in this world would believe it. But this was the truth!

Could it be that Yue Yang’s Innate Level 1 after Nirvana Rebirth was equivalent to a normal person’s Innate Level 6? When he level up in the future and reached his original Innate Level 3, wouldn’t he be as strong as an Innate Level 9, or even herself, an Innate

Level 10?

“Did you get injured?” Yue Yang’s reaction was even more unbelieving than Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s. Did he really injure the Phoenix Fairy Beauty? If he used Innate Sword Qi, Nirvana Flame or World Exterminating Wheel, it would still make sense, but he merely used his strength just now, and he managed to break the bones of her fingers... Could it be that after being taught by the Sword Goddess, he had reached an abnormal realm in his cultivation?

If that was so, when he meet Ming Ri Hao that fellow and fought with him again, the result would be completely different, no?

Phoenix Fairy Beauty didn’t care about her injury. She reached out, quick as lightning, and held Yue Yang’s arms. She glared at him with fierce eyes, “Tell me what revelations you have discovered right now. I want to learn!”

She suddenly realized that ranks and levels are all superficial. Only when she could become like Yue Yang, possessing a strength that far surpassed the others, would she be able to call herself a true expert.

Just think about it, if she could be as strong as an Innate Level 6 at Innate Level 1, or as strong as an Innate Level 9 at Innate Level 3... When she reached Innate Level 9, Innate Level 10, what kind of strength would she had? Even if she couldn’t be as strong as Yue Yang the abnormal brat, she would still be a terrifying existence if she was just a little bit weaker than him! Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt that Yue Yang’s attack power had been different from others since

long ago, but she never thought that after going through Nirvana Rebirth, he would ascend into such a terrifying realm... If this continues, he would catch up to her easily, or even surpass her.

“Rubbish, why would I tell you!” Yue Yang was happy because the Phoenix Fairy Beauty was finally shaken by him. However, he put on an act as if he was saying that “I’m not that close to you”.

“Just wait and see!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty obviously understood that this brat was trying to take advantage of her. If Xue Wu Xia, Yue Bing and the others were not there, she would have used her [Charm] Inherent Skill and all kinds of schemes of a beauty to take down the brat. However, Xue Wu Xia and all the others were all present, so Phoenix Fairy Beauty decided to wait for the moment. In any case, this brat won’t be able to escape from her palm. Just look at that perverted face, how could she not be able to defeat him?

“I’m not dreaming, am I?” Princess Qian Qian still couldn’t believe that Yue Yang could send Phoenix Fairy Beauty flying with a punch.

“We have heard about the situation in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace. Right now, the thing that we need to do is to train ourselves!” Xue Wu Xia saw that after Yue Yang went through Nirvana Rebirth, his vitality and strength had greatly increased. He was completely different from before. Xue Wu Xia couldn’t help but to feel hopeful in her heart.

Seems like they still had hope to clear the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

The only problem was trying to get the Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Divine Seal before the two Great Leaders of Heaven Realm woke up.

Although Phoenix Fairy Beauty did not find a trace of the two Great Leaders, Xue Wu Xia believed that they would definitely make their move in near time. If they were still sealed, they would be able to awaken shortly. What Yue Yang and the others should do right now was to race against time with time!

Right now, Yue Yang who had went through Nirvana Rebirth and improved in terms of body, mental state and strength, would he be able to stop the awakening of the two Great Leaders of Heaven Realm?

When Xue Wu Xia saw Yue Yang's glowing face, her confidence increased by a hundredfold.

He would definitely be able to do it.

Because he was Yue Yang, the abnormal brat!

Chapter 338 – Collaboration?

Xue Wu Xia and the others had diligently trained inside the Grimoire World for a month. Each of them had upgraded to different levels.

However, the person who reaped the most benefits was none other than Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

She was originally an Innate Level 10, but with Yue Yang's [Body Fusion], she had actually dropped to Innate Level 9 mystically.

When she downgraded, her strength did not decrease at all. Instead, it increased.

This meant that if she levelled up to Innate Level 10 once again, she would have reached a whole new realm... Although they only did [Body Fusion] for a short while and Phoenix Fairy Beauty was still far away from the strength that she hoped for, if other Innates knew about this, they would probably be jealous of Phoenix Fairy Beauty to death. Phoenix Fairy Beauty was also secretly very happy. She thought that it would be better if she downgraded to Innate Level 8, or even Innate Level 7. Then she would become a more terrifying existence once she levelled up again.

Of course, re-cultivation was not something that could be done overnight.

If Yue Yang did not help her, her re-cultivation would never be as effective as Nirvana Rebirth!

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was originally strong and had understood more knowledge than the others. Hence, she derived the most benefit from the [Body Fusion] training with Yue Yang.

Furthermore, other than the sickly beauty and Luo Hua City Mistress, she was also one of the most compatible partners for [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang. During their training, other than the very last step, she had tried all kind of positions and methods with Yue Yang. They were practically husband and wife.

If the girls had not monitored them secretly, Yue Yang would probably have no problem pushing her down forcefully.

It was a pity that Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and the others were all there. Yue Yang obviously pretended to be a good child on the outside and tampered down the lust in his heart. He didn't try to play any tricks, but he would extend his perverted hands and take advantage of Phoenix Fairy Beauty's sexy body most of the time, pretending not to know anything... With regards to this point, if they were in the midst of training, Phoenix Fairy Beauty would pretend not to know. However, if they were not training, she would purposely moan seductively. Yue Yang was thick-skinned, so he wouldn't feel guilty because of this. Even when Princess Qian Qian and the others purposely watched them intently, Yue Yang wouldn't take his hand back that easily. Of course, his face would still be decorated with a sincere expression of 'I'm a perfect gentleman that will not take advantage of others'.

Actually, not only Phoenix Fairy Beauty, the other girls had all gotten accustomed to Yue Yang's perverted ways.

Only Yue Yu, who cared about her position as his sister, did not allow Yue Yang to touch her.

She had already known from the start that [Body Fusion] was a skill that only lovers or married couples would be able to train for, so she didn't really reject it at first, simply acting as if she didn't know anything. However, as Phoenix Fairy Beauty would frequently ask Yue Yang to train in public and had almost done everything, she slowly started to disallow Yue Yang to touch her hands, let alone her body.

Because of this, Yue Yu had the slowest progress compared to other girls.

Yue Bing was different from the others. She did not have other thoughts in her mind at all.

She also didn't feel that there was something wrong with the way she and her brother trained. On the contrary, she felt that it was quite normal since everyone trained with her brother that way. She didn't know anything about the relationship between men and women, and had never thought of his brother in that way before. Hence, she became one of the most compatible partners when she trained with Yue Yang. She was naturally inclined to be the most compatible with her brother, because when they trained, she would completely surrender her body to her brother. She merely moved along in a daze with the flow of Innate Qi, not thinking about anything else. Other than being obedient, Yue Bing was also the person that Yue Yang spent the most effort to cultivate. She was always his priority no matter what they did. At first, Yue Yang

wanted to help her become an Innate as fast as he could, but after listening to the Sword Goddess' guidance, Yue Yang had realized the true meaning of Innate. Hence, he was not in a hurry to rush Yue Bing to the Innate Realm. He decided to build her foundation slowly and steadily. The deeper he built her foundation, the better it would be for her growth in the future.

Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian was also the same. They could have reached Innate any time, but they re-cultivated instead. They were not in a hurry to reach Innate at all.

Luo Hua City Mistress who was about to reach Innate Level 2 also continued to train at Innate Level 1.

The girls did not level up, but their strength soared to the sky.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty were quite surprised at the speed of their growth. If this continues, the human race would probably have low-levelled but super strong Innates in less than ten years!

This kind of complete, fundamental change of their strength far surpassed other methods of training.

Furthermore, the fundamental change and improvement that [Body Fusion] brought about was a hundred times faster than other people's... Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt that the lower levels of Tong Tian Tower or the Innate Alliance on the Tong Tian Tower Level 6 and above would not be strong enough for Yue Yang, this abnormal boy, to train in. Only a place with higher skies and wider world would be enough for him.

Other than Yue Bing, Yi Nan had also improved quickly.

Previously, Yue Yang wasn't able to help her much in terms of her mental state.

However, Yue Yang who had mastered the true meaning of Innate after Nirvana Rebirth understood much more in terms of mental state. Hence, Yi Nan had also received a lot of enlightenment. She didn't even need to take things slowly, she could simply follow Yue Yang's footprints and train...

One day, after Xue Wu Xia finished training, she asked Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress whether they should continue to fight against the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

Yue Yang was also calmly thinking about it. He felt that the current him would be strong enough to go out and fight against Ming Ri Hao.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty gladly agreed. She even thought of a combo attack with Yue Yang to ambush their enemy. Their target was Ming Ri Hao, because the person who had wounded her that day was Ming Ri Hao.

※ ※ ※

Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

“We finally come back out...” After coming out of the grimoire world, Yue Yang discovered that the Old Dragon Turtle had gone into hibernation. There was a Heaven Rune glowing slightly on top of his turtle back. When Yue Yang observed it closely, he jumped in shock.

Fortunately the Old Dragon Turtle didn't truly self-detonate. Otherwise he would really owe him his life.

Yue Yang returned to the First Hall and discovered that the crystal tablets that the Heaven Realm Warriors were sealed in was glowing in a dark light. Some had even disappeared.

Just what had happened here?

Just as he was wondering what had happened, suddenly, a golden star descended from the sky.

The person who arrived relaxedly stopped in front of Yue Yang. He was the ten metre tall golden giant, Ming Ri Hao!

“It's good that you came. Let's fight again!” Yue Yang who had gone through Nirvana Rebirth now had the confidence to pick a fight with Ming Ri Hao. Maybe he would still not be able to defeat him, but he wouldn't be defeated so miserably like that day again. There was also Phoenix Fairy Beauty who could ambush him in secret. Maybe this fellow could really be defeated. If he didn't have any friends to help him, they might even be able to kill him on the spot.

“Wait a minute...” However, Ming Ri Hao shook his hand, “I don’t want to fight with you.”

“Eh?” Yue Yang was bewildered. He didn’t want to fight? Does it mean that he wanted to admit defeat?

“There’s no meaning to us fighting against each other. You are not the Prison Emperor’s descendant, nor his inheritor. As for me, I have no grudges against Prison Emperor, I was just tricked by my comrade. I thought that the human race were preparing to invade the Heaven Realm, so I agreed to descend the Heaven Realm to annihilate the enemy. I was simply too young at that time. Possessing a huge amount of power, I have too much righteousness in my bones. When I came down from the Heaven Realm and fought with the Prison Emperor, I fought to the death even when I didn’t know him at all... Now that I think about it, I was really foolish at that time. These six thousand years, I have thought about it a lot, especially after I met you. I have been thinking, why should I continue the mistake I made six thousand years ago? If the human race never thought of invading the Heaven Realm at all, why should I fight against them?” Ming Ri Hao’s words astounded Yue Yang. Did this fellow eat the wrong medicine?

“You mean you are not fighting anymore? Are you allowing us to acquire the Prison Emperor Divine Staff just like that? Don’t say that you didn’t know we came here for the Prison Emperor Divine Staff!” Yue Yang thought that he would definitely find out what this fellow was scheming.

“Of course I know. However, if you want to acquire the Prison Emperor Divine Staff, it will be very difficult. Firstly, once you get

it, it will not be of any use to you, because you are not the descendant of the Prison Emperor, so you will not be able to inherit his treasure; Secondly, you know that the Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Prison Emperor Divine Seal are used to seal the two Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm, right? The moment you touch it, they would immediately come out. Even if they did not come out, there are still two Innate Level 10 warriors, Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi. How are you going to pass through the Third Hall?” Ming Ri Hao shook his head slightly.

(Shiro: Feng Shen Shi means Wind God Envoy while Lei Shen Shi means Thunder God Envoy)

“If you think we couldn’t do it, why did you look for us?” Yue Yang didn’t think that this fellow came to him because he had nothing better to do.

“Offering a collaboration.” Ming Ri Hao’s answer was very simple.

“Collaboration? I didn’t hear wrongly, did I?” Yue Yang’s expression was extremely ‘shaken’.

Would a collaboration between a human and a tiger work well to solve their problems? Bullshit, unless the human is dumb, only fools would believe the tiger.

The fact that Ming Ri Hao suggested collaboration was really beyond Yue Yang’s expectation. However, Yue Yang didn’t reject him immediately. Instead, he decided to listen to what this man-eating tiger had to say.

Yue Yang was one hundred percent sure that no matter what Ming Ri Hao said, he would never believe him.

However, his curiosity got the better of him. He wanted to hear this fellow's reason for offering his help.

With regards to persuading Yue Yang, Ming Ri Hao seemed to be full of confidence, "Before you came, the two Great Leaders would only need a hundred years before they can break their seal. Because we came from three different factions, other than their own people, people like myself who came from the third faction would probably be used as sacrifice for them to recover their strength."

Yue Yang heard it and nodded, "Alright, please allow me to represent the human race to extend our sympathy and condolences for the unfortunate things that will happen to you guys in the future."

Ming Ri Hao was almost struck speechless by Yue Yang's words. Fortunately, he was calm enough as he continued with his explanation. "Actually, not only us, you guys are also facing this predicament. When you came here, the two Great Leaders felt threatened because of your appearances. Amidst their slumber, they ordered Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi to move all the Heaven Warriors who couldn't defend themselves because they were still in their slumber to the Third Hall. Then, they absorbed all of their energy with Soul Sucking Pearl. Haven't you realized that many Heaven Realm Warriors have died in the short span of one month? Look, there are a lot of Crystal Tablets Seals that are

not glowing anymore. This shows that the sealed being inside the tablets have disappeared.”

Yue Yang nodded again, and said in a sincere tone, “With regards to the two Great Leader’s barbaric actions, we humans express our strong disapproval and protest!”

Ming Ri Hao almost smashed his head on the ground. His head ached as he shook his hand, “Can you be more serious? If the two Great Leaders awaken, I might be fine, but you guys will definitely die. Even if you hide inside the grimoire world and the Prison Emperor Divine Palace is destroyed, you guys will still be sealed inside, unable to escape from here forever.”

“Since you are going to be fine, why are you worried about our lives then?” Yue Yang asked curiously.

“No, because I have a sister...” Ming Ri Hao’s expression became slightly dark. “She is still sleeping. Although she has not been absorbed yet, she would probably not last a month before she disappear completely.”

“Is your sister called Ming Ri Hua?” Yue Yang was shocked. He thought that having been transported to another world, could it be possible that he would meet a ‘familiar face’ here?

(Shiro: Ming Ri Hua is the Chinese name for Kirara Asuka, an JAV actress. -.-’)

“... She is called Ming Ri Guang!” Ming Ri Hao could tell by looking at this brat’s expression that the name ‘Ming Ri Hua’ must

not mean a good thing. However, no matter how clever he was, he would never think that ‘Ming Ri Hua’ was an outstanding porn actress from some island somewhere. Other than knowing Maria Ozawa, Yu Aoi, Kaede Matsushima and other famous actresses, Yue Yang would obviously know about Ming Ri Hua, the ferocious F-cup female warrior!

“Alright then, since a precious F-cup female warrior is in trouble, as a gentleman, I will obviously not just sit still and watch.” Yue Yang had decided to work together with Ming Ri Hao, all for the sake of the legendary Ming Ri Hua, no, Ming Ri Guang!

“With regards to Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi, I can only fight against one of them. I’ll leave the other one to you guys. You guys should prepare yourself first, tomorrow at this time, I will wait for you guys here and tell you guys the weaknesses of Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi... If we are successful, my sister and I, and the rest of the Heaven Realm warriors will leave this place forever and will never start a war against the human race anymore. Furthermore, we will also help you guys to renew the seal of the two Great Leaders. Only my sister knew how to do that, because she is the Sealing Heavenly Girl from Heaven Realm!” After he finished speaking, Ming Ri Hao didn’t give Yue Yang a chance to reject him. He immediately turned into a golden star and shot straight to the sky.

In the end, he disappeared without a trace.

Yue Yang’s expression turned dark the moment he left. This situation was practically beyond his expectations.

What should they do next? Should they really work together with Ming Ri Hao? They might even end up being eaten alive until not a single of their bones were left by this fellow who was even scarier than a man-eating tiger... However, working together with that fellow would really be a good opportunity.

When Yue Yang was thinking about it strenuously, a shadow suddenly appeared in the First Hall.

It quietly inched closer...

Chapter 339 – Weakness?

Yue Yang turned around to look. He discovered that the fellow that was approaching him was actually that monster guy leader An Ge.

Right now, he was not as mighty as before.

An Ge appeared in quite a sorry state. His back was badly damaged and only a few of his feathers remained. His golden hair was scorched and his once mighty face was filled with ghastly scars. The most significant change was his drop in level. His strength was originally at Innate Rank 1, but now his strength had dropped far from the Innate Realm. From human's standards, An Ge was currently a Rank 7 [Overlord].

Only a month had passed, yet this fellow had become like this.

When Yue Yang saw him, he couldn't help feeling slightly astonished.

Since the person that arrived was an enemy, Yue Yang naturally raised his hands. Whether he was Innate Rank 1 or Rank 7 [Overlord], Yue Yang would still kill his enemies regardless of level.

“Do, don't kill me... I, I'm called An Ge. I have already recovered my memories. Believe me. My information...will be beneficial to you...” monster guy leader An Ge introduced himself fearfully. He was clear what kind of person Yue Yang was. He was a ruthless

killing machine who never blinks when killing.

Afterwards, he said something that shook Yue Yang secretly.

An Ge's information was truly too astonishing.

Yue Yang appeared to be indifferent. However, his heart received a big shock.

To Yue Yang, An Ge's information was very timely. With this information, he could turn around his passive position in his collaboration with Ming Ri Hao into an active one.

Monster Guy Leader An Ge's wish was to rely on Yue Yang, this enemy, before the battle.

Right now there was no more guarantee on his life.

In the end, an ant like him could only become a sacrifice in order for the two great leaders to recover their true bodies.

An Ge naturally did not want to become a sacrifice. Above all, after he recovered his memories, he longed to return to Heaven Realm. However, other than Yue Yang, this enemy, he did not have a second option.

Monster Guy Leader An Ge's secretly asking for help was extremely likely to be part of the enemies plot and trap.

However, Yue Yang's heart reacted mysteriously. He felt that this was all true! This kind of mysterious sixth sense had originally existed previously, but it was very weak. After experiencing Nirvana Rebirth, this mysterious sixth sense was greatly strengthened... As a result, even though he did not have the [Six Records] Inherent Skill, the mysterious sixth sense could easily determine that An Ge's words were undoubtedly true.

Having no other alternative, An Ge's move was to ask for help just before the battle.

Because, inside the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace, he was like a small shrimp. Let alone the big fishes, even small fishes could eat him up.

If An Ge wanted to defend himself, he must choose between the powerhouses. However, regardless of how he chose, he might still die in the end... An Ge wished to live, as a result he made a decision that no one could have imagined.

He chose to rely on the enemy, Yue Yang!

Having no other choices, this way of thinking was extremely bold yet it was sufficiently clever.

Regarding An Ge secretly asking for help, Yue Yang did not suspect his hidden agenda very much. This was because An Ge's only demand was to survive and return to Heaven Realm. However, the intelligence information that he offered was

something that Yue Yang needed right now. In any case, even if this bastard was a spy sent by the two great leaders, Yue Yang did not care because it was impossible for An Ge to succeed and he would definitely not trust An Ge.

A chess piece!

This was how Yue Yang treated An Ge!

“If the situation is like what you said, then I will believe you for now. From your information, I will create several plans. You should return first and calmly wait for my news!” Yue Yang faintly muttered. Yue Yang did not ignore the monster guy leader An Ge’s existence just because his strength had fallen from Innate Rank 1 to Rank 7 [Overlord]. Inside the Prison Emperor’s Divine Palace, An Ge was indeed an insignificant existence. However, no matter how low his status was, he still had his uses. Even if he was useless right now, after Yue Yang advanced to Heaven Realm, maybe he would become a good chess piece.

From Yue Yang’s viewpoint, it would be best if he could maximize An Ge’s use.

Returning to the Grimoire World, Yue Yang told the girls about Ming Ri Hao’s and An Ge’s words. At first the girls were startled and did not believe it. In the end, Princess Qian Qian happily laughed out loud.

Hearing this, Luo Hua City Mistress also kept shaking her head: “It seems that Heaven Realm and Soaring Dragon Continent are

similarly filled with war everywhere. This is truly a good news. I approve of collaborating with Ming Ri Hao to first seal off the two great leaders. As for other things, we can slowly talk about them. Only when the Prison Emperor's Divine Staff and Divine Seal are at hand can we be in a dominant position.”

Princess Qian Qian positively clapped her hands: “With An Ge's information, then we can rest at ease. It's good that the situation did not exceed our predictions too much!”

Xue Wuxia pondered for a bit and in the end nodded her head.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty, on the other hand, did not gave any objections. She was like a robot.

If it was some other matter, Phoenix Fairy Beauty would definitely join in planning. However, inside Yue Yang's Grimoire World, she seemed to not give any suggestions and steal the other's spotlight. She continuously sat there silently.

With An Ge's information, Yue Yang and the girls revised their plans.

Now, with the collaboration with Ming Ri Hao, that man-eating tiger, Yue Yang became more confident.

On the second day, Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty had appeared inside the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace. When Ming Ri Hao saw them, he looked at Phoenix Fairy Beauty astonishedly. He

felt that she had become stronger but her level went down. This mystified him. In the end, he guessed that she must have been heavily injured and had just recovered from leveling down, as a result be in this kind of situation. He suppressed the doubts in his heart and explained to Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty: “In the third hall, there is a small sealed space. The sealed space was the place where the Prison Emperor was laid to eternal rest and also the place where the Two Great leaders are sealed. Aside from the two Level 10 Innates Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi, only the Level 8 Innate Huang Sha could enter that sealed space. I will try to enter it and offer a sacrifice to the Prison Emperor’s Staff and Seal. This would re-activate their seals. Because of this, the Two Great Leaders would order Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi to enter and stop my sacrificial offering... At this moment you must quickly kill Huang Sha and then come in to assist me.”

Yue Yang nodded, showing that he understood. Afterwards, he asked: “What are their weaknesses?”

Ming Ri Hao lowered his voice: “Huang Sha’s weakness is water. Aside from water nothing else could kill him. Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi do not have a clear weakness. Their bodies could completely transform and could only be injured by attacking their nucleus. Their nucleus would continuously move around inside their bodies without a fixed position. Attacking their nucleus is extremely hard...”

Hearing this, Phoenix Fairy Beauty sneered: “If I were to choose an opponent, I would rather choose from the other two and not you.”

Ming Ri Hao's expression changed slightly before he started to speak frankly, "I understand your wariness towards me. In fact, if it was me, I will not trust my enemy easily. However, we must work together in the current situation, otherwise, we will be reduced to sacrifices that will help the enemy to escape. If you want to know my weakness, I am not afraid to tell you, because you are my ally. At the very least, we are currently allies... My energy attribute is light. In places where there is light you would not be able to truly kill me. In the darkness of the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace, I am extremely weak... My original strength had already reached Heaven Level 3. This Heaven Level 3 is how the Heaven Realm classify levels. In the Soaring Dragon Continent, you guys called it the 'Supreme Innate Level 3'. The two of them are actually the same."

In Yue Yang's heart, a trace of understanding appeared. Soon after, he understood the bigger picture.

Ming Ri Hao was an expert with the light attribute, he would be as fierce as the sun and unkillable in places with light. If it was like this, then the other expert, the Dark Golden Specter hiding inside the mysterious pearl... That bastard must have a dark attribute. He could also be an expert from the Heaven Realm who had been sealed inside the White Jade Beetle's body.

These Heaven Realm Experts were all very strong. However, they were not immortal. It's just that humans have not found the way to defeat them.

If a dark attribute was used on Ming Ri Hao or a light attribute was used on the Dark Golden Specter, how could they not lose?

For the same reason, if water was used on Huang Sha; if ‘vacuum’ was used on Feng Shen Shi; if insulation was used on Lei Shen Shi, how could they not lose? As for the Two Great Leaders from Heaven Realm, Yue Yang felt that he would temporarily not think about attacking them. With the Prison Emperor’s Staff and Seal sealing them here, it was already good enough.

“We will use all our strength to surround and kill Huang Sha, how much time can you give us?” Yue Yang recovered from his reflective state and asked.

“At most half an hour. If it was more than that then I would also be sealed inside. Without my calling, my sister Ming Yue Guang wouldn’t be able to wake up. Without her, the Two Great Leaders would be able to come out. At that time our lives would be forfeit.” Ming Ri Hao earnestly looked at Yue Yang and emphasized: “Within twenty minutes, you must kill off Huang Sha and his numerous assistants. Afterwards, within ten minutes, destroy the Prison Emperor’s Divine Pillars in the second hall in order to free my little sister Ming Yue Guang... The Prison Emperor’s Divine Pillar, although it is not a divine weapon, it is said that it was used by the Prison Emperor ever since he was a kid to train martial arts. It is extremely hard and durable...”

“Are you saying that we have to destroy the pillars?” Hearing this, Yue Yang became stupefied. All of these pillars were hundreds of meters thick. How were they going to destroy them?

“It isn’t a foundation pillar. Inside the palace hall, there are many special practicing pillars, a total of nine. My little sister

originally prepared to seal the Prison Emperor inside them. However, seeing the Prison Emperor's wife and daughter risking their lives to protect him, she could not bear it and gave up her sealing actions. The Heaven Runes in the seal recoiled and sealed her inside." Ming Ri Hao did not wait for Yue Yang to talk. He suddenly turned into light rays and disappeared to the sky.

Just before disappearing, he made hand signs to signal 'Start the attack immediately'.

At this moment, dozens of Heaven Realm experts flew down towards them like meteors.

However, they were not Yue Yang's enemy. They only surrounded Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty pretending to attack... After a while, a furious thunder-like howl came from the third hall. The howl shook the entire Prison Emperor's Divine Palace continuously.

There were dozens of Heaven Realm experts from the second and third hall flying over.

Some of them had corporeal forms while other had spirit forms. Everyone of them was different. The leader was a man whose body was shining in silver light. There were two pairs of blue-coloured wings on his back. In his hands, there was an strange-shaped blade. He pointed at Sha Fei and angrily berated him: "Sha Fei, attack the enemy right now. If not I will assume that all of you guys from the Sun Moon Sect have betrayed the Heaven Realm and put you to death!"

“Ni Guo, giving me orders is useless. I only listen to Master Ming Ri Hao’s orders. If you have any complaints, please find Master Ming Ri Hao and tell him!” Sha Fei refinedly and courteously bowed and slightly smiled: “We have received Master Ming Ri Hao’s orders. We are to only surround them and wait for his return. You have no authority to command us.”

“Since it’s like this, then die!” The one called Ni Guo, the blue-coloured winged demon, shot towards dozens of Heaven Realm experts.

“Since you want to fight, we will accompany you to the end!” Sha Fei waved his hand and everyone flew up to counter-attack.

Only Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty remained standing there like bystanders watching a good show.

No one understood for a long time.

Yue Yang had wished to make his move and even kill a few. However, Phoenix Fairy Beauty reached out and pulled him along to the third hall, searching for Huang Sha straight away. Although the Innate Ranked 8 Huang Sha fall short of Phoenix Fairy Beauty, killing him within twenty minutes would still be very hard... unless his weak point is targeted!

Water was capable of restraining Huang Sha, but the question was how much water was necessary.

A cup of water?

A bucket of water?

Or does it need to be a river or a lake?

Before Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Yue Yang managed to enter the Third Hall, they suddenly discovered that not only Huang Sha, the Innate Level 10 Lei Shen Shi were also standing by the door waiting for them... Seeing this, Yue Yang suddenly felt his mouth dried.

Even without thinking it can be understood that Ming Ri Hao's plans have been leaked. However, it was not known who the traitor was.

Within twenty minutes, how were they going to put down the Innate Ranked 10 Lei Shen Shi and the Innate Ranked 8 Huang Sha?

Chapter 340 – An Unkillable Enemy, Huang Sha

“There’s no other way, let’s take one each!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty clung onto Yue Yang giggling, “That electric guy is mine.”

“...” Yue Yang was speechless. She was really optimistic, wasn’t she?

Phoenix Fairy Beauty chose to fight against Lei Shen Shi. Although defeating him will be difficult, it wouldn’t be difficult for them to fight as equal.

On the other hand, how could Yue Yang defeat the Innate Level 8 Huang Sha, in only 20 minutes? Yue Yang looked at the battle location. The battle was located in high grounds, so there was no water flow at all. It was a battle that was advantageous to Huang Sha but not advantageous to him at all. If there was an ocean or a lake below the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, it would still be okay, but there was only hard ground and soil below them. Furthermore, this was the Third Hall that was located hundreds of metres in they sky, it wouldn’t be easy to beat Huang Sha down to the ground.

Lei Shen Shi looked like a humanoid electric storm on the outside.

He was around 15 metres tall, and his whole body was pitch black.

The crackling sound of electricity resounded.

He was Phoenix Fairy Beauty's opponent, so Yue Yang didn't observe him for too long. He focused his attention to Huang Sha, who was standing in front of Yue Yang. He was around eight metres tall. He looked like a giant made out of sand from the outside. He looked like a human guy on the outside, but it was obvious that his body, even his armour, were all made from sand particles. This 'Huang Sha' crooked his mouth, making a soundless smile when he saw Yue Yang looking at him. He took out two black-coloured wooden rods from his back and held them in his hands. When he released his strength, the two rods immediately glowed with Heaven Runes Runic Circle. Bathed in the silver light, they released a special kind of shock wave faintly, like a light breeze blowing through the forest...

(Shiro: Huang Sha means Yellow Sand)

When Yue Yang saw the two gigantic rods, his brows jumped.

With his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, these pitch black wooden rods were not mere ordinary weapons. They were made of the 'Undying Desert Poplar'.

According to the Medicine Encyclopedia records and the materials that the pitiful guy's mother left for him, Yue Yang knew that this Undying Desert Poplar had a very strong water absorbing abilities. It was also tough and durable, to the point that it was unimaginable. The Medicine Encyclopedia recorded that even if one put an Undying Desert Poplar into fire and burn it for a year, it could still stay alive if one planted it on top of moist sand.

The Medicine Encyclopedia recorded that this Undying Desert Poplar was a required ingredient to cure a special kind of illness called 'Insect Edema'.

Other than having a strong water absorbing ability and great vitality, Undying Desert Poplar was also extremely hard and durable.

It was as hard as diamond!

When hitting a steel rod of the same size with an Undying Desert Poplar, the steel rod would bend and even break apart. On the other hand, there wouldn't even be a scratch on the Undying Desert Poplar... This was how hard the Undying Desert Poplar was. Right now, Huang Sha used these Undying Desert Poplar as weapon. It was obvious that he understood what his weakness was, that's why he had especially used Undying Desert Poplar as weapon.

Yue Yang bides his time while Phoenix Fairy Beauty chased after Lei Shen Shi and soared to the sky, charging her energy, preparing to attack him with her strongest strike.

A terrifying thunderclap roared down, tearing the sky apart.

Of course, Phoenix Fairy Beauty avoided the pillar of lightning. She had long disappeared from her initial location and escaped far away.

Lei Shen Shi hurriedly chased after her. Inside Lei Shen Shi's heart, Huang Sha who did not have any weakness at all would definitely be able to defeat a mere Innate Level 1 human warrior. Although this human boy possessed World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame, Huang Sha's job was only to stall for time. He did not need to kill him completely. As long as he kept him busy and be careful of his enemy's World Exterminating Wheel, they would definitely win... Although this Innate Level 1 human boy possess a terrifying killing ability, he was lacking in terms of abilities and realm of strength compared to Huang Sha. He was too far behind!

Possessing a powerful killing power was not everything that matters in battle.

Especially when that human boy was facing against Huang Sha who had no weakness at all.

“Ming Ri Hao is only using you as a chess piece that can be thrown away after use, do you know that? He will not truly join hands together with you. In Heaven Realm, the Sun Moon Sect's name can be equated to a fox or a viper. I think you are a smart person, you should understand the meaning of my words.” Huang Sha didn't make his move immediately. He knew that the longer he stalled for time, the more advantageous it would be for his side.

If this human boy in front of him didn't have World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame, he wouldn't need to waste time and try to drive a wedge between him and Ming Ri Hao.

However, Gu Ya and Du Di had died in his hands. This caused Huang Sha to be on alert. He would not be negligent facing against any kind of opponent.

The human boy in front of him was extremely similar to the Prison Emperor but he was still growing.

Huang Sha maintained the distance between him and Yue Yang carefully while maintaining the reach of his attack and at the same time, observed this young opponent's reaction.

Yue Yang raised his brows, "You are saying that I should give up my collaboration with Ming Ri Hao?"

Huang Shao's mouth split into smile, "If I were you, I'd do that."

"I'm not you!" Yue Yang rejected him and took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade and Crescent Blade slowly, injecting his Qi into them relentlessly, preparing to battle.

"There are many choices in a person's life, but if one makes the wrong mistake once, it could not be reverted anymore. Are you sure you don't want to think about it again?" Huang Sha advised patiently. He was acting like a senior watching his junior walking down the wrong path.

"What you said made sense, Ming Ri Hao might really be treating me as a pawn and planned to cast me aside after using me, but that's my business, not yours. Secondly, why should I believe an

enemy's words? No matter what you say, your identity would never change. You are still my enemy!" Yue Yang laughed coldly as he quickly charge his Yin Ability in his hand. In an instant, energy gathered and shone as brightly as the sun.

"Fool!" Huang Sha humphed lightly.

Even though Yue Yang was charging his Yin Ability, Huang Sha didn't do anything.

Maybe, to him, the Yin Ability that Yue Yang was charging would be useless against him. It would not cause him any damage.

Hence, Huang Sha only floated in the sky without moving at all, gazing at Yue Yang with an expression that seemed to be saying, "What a worthless, self-destructing brat". The more he stared at Yue Yang, the colder his gaze became.

First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash!

Yue Yang's move was the normal attack that he normally used... This move was more or less like the five Bronze Saints' signature moves, for example the "Pegasus Meteor Fist", "Rising Dragon Punch", "Diamond Dust", "Nebula Chain" and "Phoenix's Wings Rise". Of course, the difference was that the Five Bronze Saints didn't know many moves, they would always use the same old moves in any situation. Furthermore, they would mostly fail after making their move. Only after being beaten halfway to death by their enemies, they would then be able to release the Cosmo. Yue Yang was different, the number of attack moves that he knew was

simply uncountable. First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash was merely one of them. If he was truly fighting against the enemy, he could attack them for many hours not using the same move twice.

(Shiro: Any of you guys read [Saint Seiya](#) at all? The author is ancient)

The Five Saints' moves were monotonous, they would always defeat their enemies with these few moves. It could be said that their strongest move was also their weakest move.

If it weren't for their Cosmo, the Five Saints were simply trash amongst trash.

Yue Yang didn't have Cosmo, but other than having Innate Invisible Sword Qi in his arsenal, he still had Emperor's Sword Qi, Armageddon Slash, Steel Chopping Technique, Crushing Stone Hammer Technique and others. He was proficient in every single one of them. He even knew the Great Totem Pole Battle Technique.

Furthermore, Yue Yang's strongest feature was not battle skills, it was his summons!

Forget about the Phoenix Sisters and Qilin Girl, with Xiao Wen Li, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, Bloody Queen, Barbarian Cow Shadow, Spirit of Flame and Smoke, Reaper Mantis, Quintet Golden Puppet Mice, Little Golden Beast and all other beasts' help, Yue Yang had become a terrifying existence who could instantly kill any enemy he met.

After entering the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, Yue Yang had hidden his true abilities. He had even only allowed Xiao Wen Li to use her Binding Chains Inherent Skill and not reveal her other abilities.

Yue Yang's Crescent Blade was sharp beyond compare.

With a slash, a wind blade that was metres long immediately flew over towards Huang Sha's head, severing his head from his neck.

Huang Sha's severed head that fell to the ground suddenly smiled eerily and said, "No matter what kind of method you use, you won't be able to kill me. Doing this is just a waste of energy!"

Yue Yang didn't answer, but immediately appeared on top of that head.

He stomped on the head hard, flattening Huang Sha's severed head that was still alive to the ground...

However, the current Huang Sha didn't show any special movement or reaction, until Yue Yang started to leave and flew to a place far away, coldly observing him from the side. Huang Sha turned his body into a pile of sand and turned into a sandstorm along with the rising wind, quickly gathering together in one point.

In the end, he reverted his original body, completely similar.

He shrugged his shoulders at Yue Yang and said with a hint of regret, “I said before, any kind of attack towards me is useless!”

Yue Yang took out a bottle of clear water and showed it to him, asking, “Really? Then I’ll treat you to a drink!”

Seeing the bottle of water, Huang Sha’s expression immediately changed, becoming unnatural.

Holding the Undying Desert Poplar twin rods in his hands tightly, Huang Sha immediately flew towards Yue Yang on attacking mode.

Since the enemy had started using his counter weakness, the water, Huang Sha would definitely not assume the general idea... A hard rod smashed down at the position where Yue Yang was at seconds ago. If he had been a second later, Yue Yang would have been beaten by this super strong smash, turning into a meat paste! Bang! Huang Sha didn’t manage to hit Yue Yang, but he did manage to shatter a bottle into pieces, splashing water everywhere... Huang Sha’s face immediately changed when he saw this.

When water splashed in front of Huang Sha’s face, Yue Yang immediately attacked Huang Sha’s face, pushing him a few steps back.

Yue Yang’s Hui Jin Magic Blade shone.

Ignited in a purple flame, it swung down mercilessly.

The edge of the blade split Huang Sha's gigantic body into half.

“Good idea, it's a pity that there's too little water, you won't be able to kill me!” Huang Sha who was split into half still had the humor to praise Yue Yang at this time.

His body which was split in two immediately drew close to each other and started to heal. Furthermore, the two parts of bodies that was slashed in half didn't leak out a single drop of blood at all. At this time, Huang Sha's body was made entirely out of sand...

Yue Yang didn't wait for Huang Sha's body to join together again. He suddenly took out a bucket.

He poured a bucket full of water onto Huang Sha's head. When Huang Sha was writhing in pain from this ambush, Yue Yang's punch arrived again. This time, he had not only pushed Huang Sha back a few steps, he had even smacked him down to the ground!

Five seconds later, Huang Sha who was shaking his head from dizziness stood back up.

He said the same phrase again, “Useless!”

The face that Yue Yang had bashed in had recovered its original experience before thirty seconds even passed. It was as if he was not injured at all.

“Since it’s like that, I shall cut you to eighteen parts. Let’s see if you can still recover your body with a completely dismembered corpse.” Yue Yang had never believed that there was an unkillable person in the world. If there really was, that could only prove on point, and that was he did not have enough skill to kill his enemies yet! Yue Yang didn’t think that Huang Sha possess an immortal body. The thing that frustrate Yue Yang was the time limit. Twenty minutes, how to defeat this fellow in twenty minutes?

If only he could throw him into a big ocean!

There was not a single drop of water in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace. Where could he find a big ocean to drown Huang Sha?

Using a bottle of water and a bucket of water were both useless. The Undying Desert Poplar rods in Huang Sha’s hands could absorb water very quickly. Furthermore, a small amount of water wouldn’t have any effect on the eight-metre tall Huang Sha even without the Undying Desert Poplar absorbing the water.

What should he do exactly, in order to kill Huang Sha?

Yue Yang had not thought of a good way yet when he was suddenly sent flying by Huang Sha’s punch... Huang Sha was not some kind of newbie in battle, he was an Innate Level 8 warrior!

He was only trying to attack Yue Yang’s morale just now, purposely receiving Yue Yang’s attack without retaliating at all.

Right now, at the moment he made his move, Yue Yang immediately realized that this fellow's punch, who possess the strength of an Innate Level 8, was really quite painful to endure...

Chapter 341 – Storm Conch

“Although it’s good if you are powerful, being powerful doesn’t mean that you are the boss!” Yue Yang’s body was as light as the wind. No matter how Huang Sha attacked, he would be able to avoid it easily. Furthermore, Yue Yang would gain an advantage every time he avoided Huang Sha’s attack, frustrating Huang Sha even further.

“Sand Drill!” Huang Sha stomped both of his feet into the ground.

A large amount of sand appeared from the ground, forming mounds of sand of different sizes.

When Yue Yang took a step forward, those sand mounds would shoot out sharp sand drills of different sizes. It was similar to Yue Bing’s Tree Thorns, but much bigger and higher in number.

When Yue Yang saw that it was impossible to move in land, he decided to fly instead. After reaching Innate, although one couldn’t fly in the sky for long period like the birdmen, one would still able to fly for a short period of time. To Yue Yang, the abnormal guy from another world, flying was as easy as eating.

Huang Sha was furious. He brandished the Undying Desert Poplar rods in his hand.

Long sand whips shot towards Yue Yang furiously under his control, beating on Yue Yang’s body.

A strong gush of wind made the sand whips dance around. There were even sharp blades of sand cutting towards Yue Yang relentlessly...

“It’s no use.” Yue Yang decided not to avoid anymore and summoned his grimoire. He wanted to summon his grimoire so that it could gain some battle experience and level up. This grimoire was still gold-ranked, Yue Yang felt that if he didn’t level it up to platinum-ranked after he defeated the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, it would be a waste of experience. A strong enemy wouldn’t appear whenever he wanted to after all.

“Are we going to play with beasts?” Huang Sha started to summon too.

The thing that surprised Yue Yang was that Huang Sha actually did not have any summoning grimoire.

Huang Sha who had reached Innate Level 8, possessed a powerful domain of power and an immortal body, was actually not a grimoire owner. If he said this to other people, they would probably not believe him. But this was the reality... Huang Sha didn’t have a grimoire, didn’t have a Guardian Beast, and could only summon three beasts. However, all the three beasts in his possession were extremely strong. He had a Platinum-ranked Level 8 Giant Pollution Beast, Platinum-ranked Level 8 Radiation Mecha Beast and Platinum-ranked Level 10 Sand Drill Demon Worm.

However, none of the three beasts were Holy Beasts.

They were only high levelled in numbers. They were powerful, but their intelligence were limited only for battle capabilities.

This was the second time that Yue Yang felt bewildered. Huang Sha was an Innate Level 8, without a Holy Beast's help, how did he reach that kind of high level? If he were a human warrior, that was definitely impossible! Could it be that there was some secret method in the Heaven Realm that the allow warriors to reach Innate without contracting a grimoire? Or maybe, the people in Heaven Realm were all Innates?

The Qilin girl even said that a Demon King was only as strong as ordinary adventurers in the Heaven Realm.

However, Yue Yang believed that it was only the Qilin girl's wrong estimation.

The adventurers that she noticed must not be ordinary adventurers, furthermore, there were both strong and weak adventurers. Amongst human warriors, the strongest ones would be the Chief Adventurers, who would usually be Level 6 [Elder]s. They would usually dominate in one area and became Adventurer City Master, leading thousand of people under them.

Of course the average level of human adventurers would normally be Level 2 [Bravemen]. There were very few [Heroes] around, and one could hardly see Level 4, 5 or 6 adventurers.

After all, those who became powerful enough would be recruited

to serve their country instead.

There would probably be countless strong experts in the Heaven Realm, but looking at the strength of Ming Ri Hao and the two Great Leaders, Yue Yang reckoned that the situation in Heaven Realm would probably not be so ridiculous as what the Qilin girl had said. But he should probably go to the Heaven Realm to look at the situation himself first.

Huang Sha's beasts in front of Yue Yang who had already reached Platinum-ranked Level 8 and even Platinum-ranked Level 10 were of no threat to Yue Yang at all. He even thought they were weak.

Previously when he fought against Moqi Xu Ling, he possessed a Gold-ranked Level 9 beast King of Black Light even though he was only Innate Level 5.

As for Emperor of Zhi Wei Shun Tian, he was even more terrifying, as his Guardian Beast was actually Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Emperor. Right now, the fact that this Heaven Realm Warrior Huang Sha possessed three Platinum-ranked beasts were definitely not surprising at all. Yue Yang was even slightly disappointed. Seems like without a grimoire, even a Heaven Realm Warrior would only have beasts of this level at the most.

Compared to the Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Emperor, Yue Yang really couldn't take this Platinum-ranked Level 8 Giant Pollution Beast very seriously.

The Giant Pollution Beast looked a little like the small monsters

that Ultraman usually fought against. It was huge, more than 50 metres tall. Its green-coloured body were extremely huge, and on its head, its ugly long tube-like nose stuck out, releasing breaths of smelly liquid periodically.

Yue Yang only glanced at it once and ignored it completely afterwards.

He understood why Huang Sha would want to contract and summon such a useless and ugly Giant Pollution Beast. This beast's only helpful ability was absorbing water. The Giant Pollution Beast would be useless to other people, because it had slow speed, low intelligence and its attack could only be used once. It was practically an inconvenience. However, to Huang Sha, it was different. Possessing that beast was equivalent to having water pump. To Huang Sha, who was extremely weak against water, the Giant Pollution Beast was an excellent that couldn't be replaced with anything else.

From Yue Yang's perspective, amongst the three beasts, the strongest one was not the Platinum-ranked Level 10 Sand Drill Demon Worm, but that Radiation Mecha Beast.

This Radiation Mecha Beast was not the kind of puppet beast that Yue Gong would usually make. This Radiation Mecha Beast was alive.

Strictly speaking, this fellow was the same as Optimus Prime and Megatron from the movies, they were all silicon-based lifeforms. Looking at that silicon-based lifeforms, Yue Yang suddenly thought that Yue Gong's wish of giving puppet beasts life,

intelligence, feeling, soul and personality could actually be realized.

Of course, the metal lifeform in front of Yue Yang right now, the Radiation Mecha Beast, didn't have high intelligence. It was no different from an animal, it might even had lower intelligence than them.

It could change the shape of its body, but it couldn't turn into cars nor could it speak.

Under Huang Sha's orders, it turned into a gigantic lion-like mecha beast. It looked extremely ugly, but it could form sharp teeth and claws... Looking at this, Yue Yang was slightly shaken. The Golden Beast in his wrist, the Golden Beast that was called a Tong Tian Beast by the others, could it actually be a silicon-based lifeform? Could it actually even be a metal lifeform with intelligence, feelings and soul?

He wouldn't be able to get any information on this right now, but Yue Yang believed that as long as he continued to work hard, he would definitely be able to fulfil Yue Gong's wish.

"Brat, are you scared silly now?" Seeing that Yue Yang was standing still and keeping quiet, Huang Sha even thought that his beasts had scared his enemy silly.

"Boom, boom, boom, boom!"

The Radiation Mecha Beast that had turned into a lion boomed towards Yue Yang with slow steps.

As it walked on the ground, the water puddles underneath it were quickly turned black, polluted by the radiation that it was emitting. The Sand Drill Demon Worm was also avoiding the Radiation Mecha Beast far away, hiding underground. That Giant Pollution Beast, however, didn't seem to mind at all. Instead, it happily absorbed the water that had been polluted by the Radiation Mecha Beast with its tube-liked nose. It was as if it became stronger the more polluted water it absorbed. When the Radiation Mecha Beast approached closer to Yue Yang, he felt some kind of burning sensation on his skin. Turns out that its strong radiation power could penetrate through the layer of Qi protecting Yue Yang's whole body, damaging his skin.

Fortunately, Yue Yang had an idea on how to counter against this kind of radiation. Otherwise, he would really have a headache.

Crystal Armor started to appear on Yue Yang's arms, protecting and covering his whole body. This was the sickly beauty's speciality. After his wife's tutoring and [Body Fusion] training, Yue Yang managed to learn this move too.

The Golden Beast on his wrist separated itself from Yue Yang's body and returned to its original body, a winged dragon little beast.

Although its body was small, it had big guts. It immediately charged towards the gigantic Radiation Mecha Beast, baring its teeth and claws.

Needless to say, this greedy little fellow had taken a fancy on the Radiation Mecha Beasts' nucleus.

When Yue Yang saw it, he shook his hand, "Alright, it's yours! Don't destroy it too much, I want to keep its body and research it later!" When the Golden Beast heard it, it immediately flew towards the Radiation Mecha Beast. No matter what kind of body size, weight, strength, radiation ability and all that, to the Golden Beast, it was all nothing. Other than its master Yue Yang, it was not afraid of anything else. The Golden Beast didn't have any prejudice towards energy crystals. It didn't matter if it was a lifeform or a machine, as long as it had a magic crystal or a nucleus, it loved them all. Forget about the Platinum-ranked Level 8 Radiation Mecha Beast, it had even wanted to eat the Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Emperor. It was a pity that it was not yet strong enough to eat that kind of strong Holy Beast at that time.

"What a joke!" Huang Sha didn't recognize the little Golden Beast as a Tong Tian Beast. He even thought that the little thing was a trash beast.

"Eh?" Yue Yang was bewildered. Could it be that there was no Tong Tian Beast in the Heaven Realm?

Did this little Golden Beast only exist at lower levels of Tong Tian Tower?

Or maybe, it was a unique existence?

The Radiation Mecha Beast swung its claws towards the little Golden Beast, which it easily avoided as it continued to fly forward. That Radiation Mecha Beast opened its mouth, and ate it whole straight away.

“Hahaha!” Huang Sha laughed confidently. He felt that competing in terms of beast, this human warrior would never compare to him at all. He was practically a little kid picking a fight with an adult. They were completely in a different level.

“There’s not much time left, let’s see if I can finish this battle quickly.” Yue Yang felt that he had analysed his enemy enough, and started to fight more seriously. The second beast that he summoned was the Spirit of Flame and Smoke. Right now, the Spirit of Flame and Smoke was Gold-ranked Level 5. However, she, who had been absorbing the Storm King’s Core, had almost evolved. The flames on her body was blazing thick and fierce. With regards to Yue Yang’s order, she was a little confused. She was not as intelligent as Bloody Queen, nor was she as obedient as Barbarian Cow Shadow who always execute her master’s orders without question. She looked at the Giant Pollution Beast a little hesitatingly and turned her gaze at the Sand Drill Demon Worm. When Yue Yang pointed at the Giant Pollution Beast and ordered her to attack, she chose to reject his order. Instead, it flew to the sky and charged towards the Sand Drill Demon Worm.

“You can’t even control your own beast, hahaha. Pitiful worm, other than having a pretty face, what else do you have?” At this point in time, Huang Sha was already certain that the human boy in front of him was definitely depending on that strong woman in order to reach Innate Level 1. If he didn’t have Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel, he was simply no better than trash...

Huang Sha who originally had maintained his guard on Yue Yang became relaxed when he saw all these.

This brat's combat skills were quite powerful, but his beasts were simply trash.

Possessing an immortal body, the thing he didn't need to worry of was physical attacks... Other than needing to be careful about his Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel, he didn't need to be afraid of this human boy for anything else. Huang Sha even thought that he should just use his ultimate move and kill this boy instantly.

Yue Yang didn't bother to care about the Spirit of Flame and Smoke. He summoned the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen instead and ordered her to fight against the Giant Pollution Beast.

Looks like fighting against the little monster which was Ultraman's enemy would be much easier, much more suitable for her.

"Die!" Huang Sha didn't recognize the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, he didn't even think that a living beast would be able to inflict damage on him. He roared out and jumped several metres high. His legs slowly disappeared and turned into giant sandstorms that whirled quickly, covering the whole sky with sand. His gigantic human head opened his giant mouth and ferociously swallowed Yue Yang whole.

This was his domain of power, “Sandstorm”.

The moment his enemies were swallowed into the eye of his [Sandstorm], no matter what kind of lifeform it was, they would die from dehydration and turn into sand in the end, becoming a part of him.

Yue Yang immediately teleported away and appeared hundreds of metres from there.

Huang Sha chased after him with his [Sandstorm] once again.

Yue Yang’s body flew down vertically, just like a swallow diving down to the ground from high up in the sky. He flew down towards the Second Hall, quickly and swiftly.

“Thinking of saving someone? Dream on!” Huang Sha’s gigantic head on top of the [Sandstorm] released a thunder-like voice as he chased after Yue Yang, flying down at an even quicker speed than him.

If he looked at their speed, he could probably reach the Second Hall before Yue Yang and swallow him whole. However, Yue Yang had the teleportation ability. After learning how to teleport from the Marquis of Zi Jin, no enemies had managed to catch up to Yue Yang before. Compared to Shun Tian, Baruth, Ming Ri Hao and the other expert warriors, Yue Yang’s speed might not be as fast. However, his dodging abilities were definitely one of the most complex ones. Even if his enemy managed to catch up to him, they would not be able to injure him fatally, because Yue Yang

possessed the Mysterious Three Styles skill.

The giant head on Huang Sha's [Sandstorm] tried to swallow Yue Yang repeatedly, but Yue Yang always teleported at the last minute and avoided him.

This truly enraged Huang Sha.

Seeing Yue Yang escaping to the Second Hall, Huang Sha continued to chase after him.

He smashed the ground and turned the whole Second Hall into a sandstorm world, spreading sand everywhere.

It didn't matter if it was the entrance or the exit, Huang Sha had turned them all into walls of sand, tightly sealing the whole place. If Yue Yang wanted to leave, he had to do it with his permission.

"Right now, you can speak your last words." Huang Sha didn't think that in this kind of situation, his enemy would still manage to stay alive. Even if he didn't attack him directly, he could simply kill him slowly by burying him in his sand. This young human boy definitely didn't have a chance of living. Although Nirvana Flame could burn through everything, and the World Exterminating Wheel could cut through anything, how would he be able to destroy a hill of sand that was dozens of metres, no, hundreds of metres tall?

Furthermore, Huang Sha could create this kind of sand hill

endlessly without effort!

The Second Hall became a huge cage.

Huang Sha had already arranged a sand hill trap here earlier, it was just waiting for the enemy to be taken in.

If his enemy had escaped to the Third Hall, Huang Sha wouldn't be able to use this kind of method to bury his enemy alive, because the crystal tablet that he was sealed in was at the Third Hall. Moreover, he had already predicted that this young human boy would need to set Ming Yue Guang free before his comrade was defeated.

Right now, how much time did this boy had left?

Five minutes?

Ten minutes?

Huang Sha laughed sinisterly at Yue Yang who was resisting and defending himself against the sand storm with his Qi.

An ocean of sand piled up at the Second Hall, slowly burying the whole place up. The level of sand rose from Yue Yang's ankles up to his knees, then thighs... The same thing was happening from above. Sand particles continued pressing down against the barrier of Qi that Yue Yang had erected, closely inching towards Yue Yang's head, from ten metres away, to five metres, then one metre.

In the end, it was only a hair's breadth away from Yue Yang's head. It would bury Yue Yang alive in the next second.

Other than Yue Yang's body, there were only sand everywhere around.

The whole of Second Floor had now turn into Huang Sha's stomach.

Other than dying from suffocation, dehydration and turning into sand, there wouldn't be a second ending for Yue Yang.

“...” Yue Yang twitched his lips and did not speak. He suddenly summoned his grimoire protective shield and dispersed Huang Sha's sand. At the same time, Huang Sha also heard a mysterious sound of horn, as if it was the blowing sound from an ocean conch. Huang Sha froze as he realized that beside Yue Yang, a mermaid had appeared without him realizing. Furthermore, the mermaid was holding a snow white sea conch that had a tinge of red in her hands, and was blowing it loudly at a high tone.

Chapter 342 – Battle, Huang Sha's Second Form!

Prison Emperor Divine Palace. The sky above the Second Hall were filled with thick, black clouds.

With a streak of lightning, a rainstorm exploded all of a sudden.

Millions drops of rain fell down like arrows, first forming a water curtain, and then turning into a water wall. Drip drip drip, the rain became heavier and heavier with time. At the end, it was like a waterfall. Under the Storm Conch's summon, the black clouds gathered more and more as rainstorm fell onto the Second Hall that was completely sealed in sand. The dry sand immediately become damp as it collected water. Unable to absorb the water quickly enough, the water level inside the Second Hall started to rise rapidly.

A ten-metre tall Water Giant suddenly stood up from the flooding water and started charging towards the wall of sand covering the Second Hall, trying to penetrate through it as hard as possible.

At first, there were only two water giants, but as the rainstorm continued to fall, the number of water giants increased one by one.

Under the pressure of the waterfall of rain from the outside and the water giants' attack from the inside, the wall of sand started to collapse rapidly as chunks of sand fell to the ground.

“This, is this Storm Mermaid?” Of course Huang Sha knew about his nemesis beast. However, he never thought in his life that he would be done in so miserably by a Storm Mermaid at this height in the sky.

If Huang Sha was at an ocean surface, and not high up in the sky, he reckoned that he would probably be injured seriously at least, if he did not die.

Although his Undying Desert Poplar could absorb water, it would be useless against such a large body of water.

Huang Sha was extremely shocked. He hurriedly utilised his sandstorm special power and sealed the Second Hall entrance and exit tightly with sand. Compressing millions of sand particles together, he formed a waterproof sandstone to block the water from entering. With his Innate Level 8 power and his unique [Sandstorm] skill, he would probably still be able to last an hour under the water giants’ attacks... In one hour, he would kill the owner of that Storm Mermaid who was blowing her Storm Conch. As long as there was no water inside the hall, his power would not decrease so much.

Although he had hardened millions of sand particles into sandstone to stop the Water Giant’s attack, Huang Sha was still cautious and summoned his Giant Pollution Beast from the Third Hall to absorb the water.

He also summoned the Radiation Mecha Beast hurriedly. Its job was to destroy those Water Giants.

As for the Sand Drill Demon Worm, its weakness was also water, hence Huang Sha left it outside in order to prevent sudden ambush from the enemy.

Boom!

The Giant Pollution Beast appeared.

However, it didn't appear because of its master's summons, it was thrown down to the ground by the Thorny Flower Giant that Yue Yang's Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen summoned. It was smashed down like a watermelon, the smelly insides of its body spilling all over the ground... Yue Yang thought that turns out it wasn't like the little monsters that Ultraman fought at all, they could at least struggle and release their ultimate move before dying. In front of the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, the Radiation Mecha Beast didn't even have the chance to groan in pain.

Countless Thorny Flowers drilled out from the underground, devouring the corpse of the Giant Pollution Beast ferociously.

A Thorny Flower Giant smashed the Giant Pollution Beast's heart to pieces and scattered it to the countless Thorny Flowers to eat. The Thorny Flowers who swallowed the pieces of flesh like pythons levelled up continuously.

Huang Sha was shocked.

How could his Platinum-ranked Level 8 Giant Pollution Beast be so easily killed?

Unfortunately, his shock did not end there. His Radiation Mecha Beast was also smashed to the ground, its parts scattering all over the ground as the static electricity flashed all over its mechanical parts. Although it was slower in defeating its enemy, the little Golden Beast had successfully gnawed through the Radiation Mecha Beast's mouth to its brain, energetically devouring its nucleus.

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen pointed her finger.

Countless Thorny Flowers drilled into the Radiation Mecha Beast's body, tightly binding its body which was losing control onto the ground.

At first, those Thorny Flowers were slightly swaying in pain from the radiation effect, some had even shrink back into the ground weakly. Some of them were on the verge of withering, but the Thorny Flowers who had finished devouring the Giant Pollution Beast quickly joined in. These few Thorny Flowers were not affected by the radiation at all. After devouring the Giant Pollution Beast's heart and levelling up, these Thorny Flowers easily pinned the Radiation Mecha Beast onto the ground and bound it tightly. They were even raising it up high... If the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen had not interfered, the Thorny Flowers would probably have already dismantled the Radiation Mecha Beast's body or smash it to the ground into pieces.

“You guys are really fools. You must keep this Mecha Beast’s body intact, you are not allowed to break it apart!” The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was extremely dissatisfied with her subordinates who did not possess intelligence and only had brute strength.

“...” The Sand Drill Demon Worm possess a little bit of intelligence. When it saw the scene before it, it was completely frightened to death.

The Spirit of Flame and Smoke charged towards the Sand Drill Demon Worm which had been shocked silly.

She was really annoyed at herself because she still couldn’t defeat a Platinum-ranked Level 10 enemy even with her current strength.

Furthermore, this cunning enemy could even drill underground, making her unable to fully display her true strength... Suddenly, a flash of thought crossed the Spirit of Flame and Smoke’s mind. Had Yue Yang actually foreseen this weakness of hers? The Spirit of Flame and Smoke still did not have enough intelligence to think deeply, however, in her attempt to think, she succeeded in increasing her intelligence a little.

The more she thought, the smarter the Spirit of Flame and Smoke become. As her intelligence increased, she became closer and closer to becoming a Holy Beast.

This learning process was something that unintelligent life forms would never be able to do in their lives.

Huang Sha realized that his Giant Pollution Beast and Radiation Mecha Beast had both died. Furthermore, his Sand Drill Demon Worm was forced to hide underground, afraid to come out and fight. It wouldn't be quite possible to ask it to come out and save him.

“Great, great job. You are the first human who has forced me into this kind of miserable situation...” Huang Sha was furious. The feeling of being cheated by his enemy surfaced in his heart.

“You should get used to that!” Yue Yang put on the appearance of ‘It is obvious that I will defeat you, it is preposterous if I lost to you’.

Outside, in the eye of the rainstorm, behind the Water Giants, an Ice Serpent Demon had appeared.

(Shiro: for those who didn't know, Ice Serpent Demon is Xiao Wen Li's fourth and strongest beast)

She ferociously stabbed her Dual Blades into the sandstone. The sandstones, which had been drenched by the rain from the outside rapidly turned into ice, continuously spreading all over the sandstone. In the end, it turned into a thick wall of ice. On the opposite side, Xue Wu Xia was doing the same action. At first, Huang Sha didn't realize what was happening, but as the ice wall was formed, he finally realized an extremely important point. He had been sealed inside the Second Hall by his enemy... There were water everywhere outside, wall of ice and sandstone in the middle, and in his belly, there was a mermaid who could summon rainstorm and an extremely terrifying, powerful human boy who

was the mastermind behind all of this mess.

Huang Sha didn't have a chance to explode in fury before he realized that another girl had appeared in front of Yue Yang.

This human girl who looked as gentle as a water suddenly summoned a beast that Huang Sha hated the most in his life. It was an existence that was as terrifying as the Water Giants, a 'Storm Wave'!

(Shiro: Storm Waves is Yue Yu's beast. From chapter 267 – Three days passed, and Yue Yu's Silver-ranked Level 2 Flying Waterfall had levelled up to become Gold-ranked Level 3 "Storm Waves".)

When the Storm Waves appeared, it immediately released a huge volume of water, engulfing the whole of Second Hall.

In just thirty seconds, the whole of Second Hall was drowned in water.

Waves of water emerged from Storm Waves, spiralling out wave by wave into the surrounding, smashing against the surrounding sand walls. The sand pillars and pikes that Huang Sha created were immediately destroyed, breaking away from Huang Sha's control as they sunk to the bottom of the water, increasing the water level even higher.

Huang Sha strive hard to compress his sand into sandstone, making the wall of sand separating the outside from the inside be as hard as iron.

If the rainstorm that the Storm Mermaid summoned or the wall of ice that the Ice Serpent Demon made linked together with the flood that the Storm Waves summoned, it would be the end of him... Fortunately, these water-controlling beasts were not very strong, otherwise he would truly meet his tragic end. Huang Sha was both shocked and furious. There had never been a human warrior who was able to force him into this kind of predicament before. There had also never been any beasts who were able to make him feel the threat of death.

Even the Prison Emperor at that time did not make him feel this miserable.

Huang Sha returned to his original appearance and appeared in front of Yue Yang, furiously roaring and pointing at him, “You! Do you think that by doing this, you will be able to kill me? Let me tell you, you are WRONG! I, Huang Sha, will never die because of water!”

Yue Yang did not reply, he merely looked at Huang Sha quietly.

The water level in the Second Hall continue to rise.

Storm Waves continued to summon water and purposely smashed huge tidal waves against the wall of sand blocking the entrance and exit of the Second Hall, shaking the whole building violently.

“You don’t even know the secret of Heaven Realm Warriors. We

are completely different from humans, we possess two or even three different forms. Even if I give up my immortal sandstorm form, I could still kill you easily in my second form. This is because I am an Innate Level 8 warrior while you are just an Innate Level 1. Thinking of killing me with such a big difference in levels? Thinking of using your Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel in this hall flooded with water? Let me tell you, you are still too young and inexperienced for that!” The sand particles on Huang Sha’s body continued to trickle down to the water surface.

His body which was suspended in air slowly disappeared.

Ten seconds later, his body turned solid, becoming an ugly Predator-like monster or possibly even uglier.

(Shiro: Search google for “predator monster”, i think it’s a movie)

Huang Sha revealed his second form, which had four arms and a long cone-shaped tail.

This body was completely made of flesh and blood, it was not made of sand.

Huang Sha jumped onto the ground that was covered in water and stood proudly as he was submerged inside the water that he was so afraid of just now. He provoked Yue Yang arrogantly with his hand gesture, telling him that the real battle had only just started.

Yue Yang smiled lightly.

A huge wind blade slashed from Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade, streaking through several metres of distance and slit through Huang Sha's body.

Huang Sha didn't defend himself at all as he allowed his chest to be cut open by that sharp wind blade... However, there wasn't a single drop of blood that flowed out. On the contrary, at the location of the incision, countless number of worms started to crawl out from the surface of Huang Sha's exposed flesh. They linked together and healed the wound completely. Within five seconds, the huge gash of wound had already been healed completely.

"My second form is also invulnerable to physical attacks. Moreover, it is also invulnerable to water." Huang Sha's ugly face revealed a smug smile.

"Do you still have a third form?" Yue Yang suddenly asked.

"What?" Huang Sha's eyes showed a shocked expression.

What did this boy mean?

Could it be that he truly believed that all Heaven Realm Warriors had two different forms?

Don't even think about a third form!

He only managed to get his second form after meditating for five thousand years. He also only managed to learn it because he was guided by Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi. Did that boy think changing forms was an easy feat to do? Did he think that it would be so easy to master?

Yue Yang shrugged his shoulders, “If you don’t, it’s time to send you on your way.”

Huang Sha was completely enraged.

With his Innate Level 8 power, his powerful strength and ten times the strength of his jumping power, his sharp, powerful fist ferociously charged towards Yue Yang’s head. Even with the protection of the grimoire protective shield, Huang Sha believed that his enemy would not be able to defend against his punch. His enemy would definitely meet his dead end.

How dare an Innate Level 1 overestimate his own abilities and pick a fight with an Innate Level 8?

Nirvana Flame Shield appeared on Yue Yang’s hands, blocking in front of his grimoire protective shield.

Yue Yang was not afraid at all. He held the Nirvana Flame Shield on one hand while he condensed his Star Explosion Domain of Power in his other hand, preparing to attack.

Even faster than Yue Yang, Xiao Wen Li appeared behind him,

opening both of her eyes wide.

Binding Inherent Skill was immediately activated!

Huang Sha was only restricted for half a second. However, his fist continued to drive forward, penetrating through the Nirvana Flame Shield unstoppably. Before the Nirvana Flame managed to completely burn off his arms, his terrifying strength had broken through Yue Yang's grimoire protective shield as his fist continued charging straight towards Yue Yang's head... This was an Innate Level 8's full power attack!

"Get lost!" Yue Yang charged the Star Explosion in his fist and added a hundred times of the strength of his Giant Phantom Shadow, then ferociously smashed his fist against Huang Sha's fist.

Yue Yang placed everything at stake, not retreating even a step back.

In the sky, Princess Qian Qian jumped out.

Her White Tiger power and Emperor Sword Qi combo slashed hard upon Huang Sha's head.

Chapter 343 – Ground Breaking Pearl

Huang Sha had just pushed Yue Yang back with his punch when Princess Qian Qian's attack fell hard on his head. He screamed out in pain.

Huang Sha took out the great sword that had slashed through his head and smashed it into pieces.

He whipped his long tail, attacking his enemy back.

Princess Qian Qian curled into a ball and protect her body with her hands. She was sent flying by the immense strength like a bomb from a canon, smashing against the sandstone wall.

Princess Qian Qian tried to lessen the impact of the attack on the sandstone. Although it was painful as hell, she immediately stood back up and counter attacked. Leaping with her legs, she flew with a speed faster than a free fall towards Huang Sha who was fighting Yue Yang at close quarters. The image of White Tiger appeared above her head, roaring soundlessly and menacingly... The layer of Qi protecting Huang Sha's body were dispersed by the White Tiger Image and Princess Qian Qian slashed down the second time with another sword in her hand.

A long blade of sword tear across the air.

A pair of Sword Qi crossed in the shape of an X slashed down.

It shallowly cut an x-shaped wound on Huang Sha's head who had just healed the wound on his skull.

With his four arms, Huang Sha used two of his arms to block Princess Qian Qian's attack and the other two to fight with Yue Yang. Although as an Innate Level 8, he was surrounded and badly injured by enemies way below his league, he still maintained his calm and composure.

“Die!” Yue Yang's eyes gleamed as he released all the strength that he had been hiding until now.

It was his first time using all of his strength to fight his enemy, with the support of a hundred layers of Giant Phantom Shadows.

As he thrust his fists forward, he released a World Exterminating Wheel from his right leg.

It directly hit Huang Sha's left ankle.

The World Exterminating Wheel slashed across soundlessly, slicing Huang Sha's left ankle easily. Huang Sha who was fighting with all of his strength lost his balance as his body tipped to the left. His two arms who were ready to resist Princess Qian Qian's attack just now were not able to stop her Sword Qi anymore. Princess Qian Qian's Sword Qi hacked deep into Huang Sha's body through the gap of his arms, destroying one of Huang Sha's eyes. The arm which had not been healed from the Nirvana Flame just now were gripped tightly by Yue Yang. With a shoulder flip, Huang Sha who had lost his left foot was slammed down hard onto

the ground by Yue Yang.

Huang Sha was submerged in water.

He immediately struggled frantically, trying to get up.

It wasn't that he was not afraid of water at all, it's just that this second body form of his wouldn't be broken apart by water that easily. However, if he really fell into water, he would definitely drown like a non-swimmer.

In the sky, dozens of lightning suddenly flashed.

One by one, they thundered towards Huang Sha's head.

Still clamping onto Huang Sha's injured arm which had not finished healing, Yue Yang turned his body and release Innate Invisible Sword Qi from his feet, slicing through Huang Sha's chest.

A golden arrow shot towards them soundlessly, shooting straight towards the wound on Huang Sha's chest that Yue Yang had slashed with his Innate Invisible Sword Qi. Huang Sha raised his head and saw that without him knowing, there were more beasts attacking him, a Thunder Naga that was continuously summoning lightning and thunder and a Stone Element Medusa who was holding a bow in her hand.

“Ahhhh...”

A scream as sharp as a dagger resonated in Huang Sha's ears.

Huang Sha was shocked by the scream and his brain become blank. His heart was similarly shocked, as if he had been poisoned, half of his body felt numb.

When he finally returned to his senses from the scream, he realized that a pair of eyes was looking straight at him. It was the little lamia Xiao Wen Li... It was the second time that Xiao Wen Li activated her Binding Chains Inherent Skill. This time, it did not bind for merely half a second like last time. That time, Yue Yang was purposely limiting the Binding power so that his enemy would misunderstand his fighting power. Huang Sha tried to fight it off for more than 2 seconds, but he discovered that he was still unable to move... His head was hit the third time again by Princess Qian Qian's White Tiger power. On his back, the Bloody Queen Red had stabbed him deep with the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger and Silver-ranked Eyes Destroyer Dagger. Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man who had also been powered up by Giant Phantom Shadow released her maximum power and smashed Huang Sha's leg, making him fall forward.

A pair of lovely hands that had been charging her Aurora from a while ago suddenly unleashed its terrifying power, under the support of Yue Yang's Innate Qi.

Luo Hua City Mistress unleashed her Aurora at arm's reach from Huang Sha's face.

The spiral Aurora beam easily bored a hole on Huang Sha's face.

Blinding white light blasted throughout the surrounding.

The whole Second Hall was engulfed in the blinding white light. It took a while before it returned to normal.

Huang Sha who had received countless serious injuries fell into the water, but he was still alive... However, he had no more strength to fly in the air anymore! His chest was gradually turning into stone, bit by bit, from his wound, then spreading to the surrounding. His head, eyes and nose had been destroyed by the Aurora Beam, there was a big hole that penetrated through right to the back of his head. Brain matter flowed out from his head. With such a heavy injury, not even Huang Sha, who possessed a second form would be able to recover.

“His nucleus is here!” Yue Yang found the location of Huang Sha's nucleus with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision. In the end, after burning through Huang Sha's left arm and ribs with his Nirvana Flame, Yue Yang managed to dig out an energy nucleus that was shining brightly.

Above, a Heaven Rune flickered.

The energy nucleus that was originally Huang Sha's was brightly burning in Yue Yang's Nirvana's Flame.

Huang Sha's will, mind and spirit that still resided inside the

nucleus was completely purified by the Nirvana Flame, disappearing into nothingness. The huge energy source had been completely refined by the Nirvana Flame.

The moment Huang Sha's spirit disappeared, without the support of his spirit, Huang Sha's body couldn't endure it anymore. His head, which was heavily injured from Princess Qian Qian's Sword Qi and burnt to crisp by the Thunder Naga's thunder, broke down to piece while his chest rapidly petrified. Yue Yang and Barbarian Cow Shadow punched Huang Sha's body from both sides, destroying his corpse into pieces that sunk into the water.

The Golden Tiger Shark that had been summoned by the Stone-element Medusa was opening its bloody mouth wide, prepared to eat the sumptuous meal that came once in a blue moon.

After perfect planning and timely ambush, they finally succeeded in killing their enemy.

Huang Sha, who was Innate Level 8, was finally killed by Yue Yang and the girls after changing to his second form.

The moment Huang Sha died, the sandstone walls crumbled down.

Floods of water rushed out from the Second Hall, forming a huge waterfall down towards the First Hall. Xue Wu Xia and the Ice Serpent Demon who had just removed the wall of ice joined the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen and the little Golden Beast

who had eaten until its stomach was about to burst and hurriedly gathered towards Yue Yang. The Spirit of Flame and Smoke hesitated when she saw the Second Hall flooded with water, hence she remained outside instead of going in.

On the ground, the Sand Drill Demon Worm who had hurriedly abandoned its master before its master died peeked out from the ground.

It looked at the Second Hall and felt that Huang sha had truly died. Its eyes that looked a little intelligent showed fear and horror.

Without waiting for the Spirit of Flame and Smoke to find it and attack, it immediately dug deep underground. The Sand Drill Demon Worm, who had been scared witless had no intention to fight the Spirit of Flame and Smoke at all.

“There are only two minutes left, we won’t be able to destroy the Seven Star Pillars that Prison Emperor used to train with!” Princess Qian Qian’s shoulder was fractured and she was also suffering from a few broken ribs. Yue Yu summoned a Healing Water Ball to heal her, but Princess Qian Qian didn’t seem to care about her injuries at all.

“Think of a way, quick! Ming Ri Hao would probably not be able to last longer.” Xue Wu Xia quickly flew over.

“How’s the situation outside?” Luo Hua City Mistress was more worried about the fight between Sha Fei and Ni Guo. The moment

Sha Fei and the rest was defeated, Ni Guo would definitely come over to stop them. Although their strength was nothing to fear of, they would definitely be able to delay them and waste their time. Lei Shen Shi was still fighting with Phoenix Fairy Beauty, so he would probably be occupied. However, would Ming Ri Hao be able to stop Feng Shen Shi?

“It’s not optimistic.” Xue Wu Xia shook her head.

Sha Fei and the others were completely inferior to Ni Guo and the others in terms of strength and numbers. Hoping for their victory was a tall order.

Their only use was to buy them time.

In the sky, the sound of thunder crackled.

A pillar of lightning boomed onto the Second Hall roof ominously.

Lei Shen Shi seemed to have realized that Huang Sha had died. He shot a lightning pillar angrily, shocking the whole of Second Hall. If not for Phoenix Fairy Beauty stopping him, he would probably have come down to kill them all.

At the back of the Second Hall, there were seven pillars that seemed to be invulnerable to physical damage.

These were the Seven Star Prison Emperor Pillars that the Prison

Emperor used to train his skills. Not only was it protected by numerous Heaven Rune Circles, it was still protected by the Prison Emperor's will even now. Yue Yang tried to slash them with his World Exterminating Wheel, but discovered that it could only leave a shallow scratch before it was reflected back. Looking at this rate, they wouldn't even be able to destroy a pillar by hitting it with World Exterminating Wheel for one whole day and night. Furthermore, would Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi, the two Heaven Realm warriors, be willing to give them so much time?

Most importantly, the two Great Leaders of Heaven Realm who were still sleeping was about to awaken any time.

If they awaken, they would definitely not be able to fight this battle anymore.

"You guys, move away from there. I have an idea!" The Old Dragon Turtle suddenly appeared at the hall, he had woken up from his hibernation without anyone realizing it. He trembled as he leaned on his staff, enduring his violent coughing as he shouted out towards Yue Yang and the girls.

"Old geezer, if you didn't die, you should scam away from here, the further the better." Yue Yang knew the method that the Old Dragon Turtle was going to use. This old geezer definitely wanted to use his Self-Detonation.

"You guys would definitely not be able to defeat this seal... This place is protected by the Prison Emperor's will. Amongst the three halls, the seal here is the strongest second only to the Prison Emperor's coffin." The Old Dragon Turtle's wrinkled face was

completely calm, “I am really tired of living. I have lived alone for six thousand years, my life has lost its meaning since long ago.”

“Go away!” Yue Yang sent a flying kick and kicked the Old Dragon Turtle out.

“...” The girls were speechless.

Xue Wu Xia calmed down and observed the Heaven Rune Circles on the Prison Emperor’s Seven Star Pillars, hoping that she could find some kind of method to unseal it.

If they have time to slowly research, they would probably be able to find the unsealing formula.

However, right now, time was not on their side.

Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress looked at Yue Yang one after another. In the end, Luo Hua City Mistress spoke out, “Let’s return to the grimoire world and let the two Great Leaders of Heaven Realm go. We can think of methods to leave the Prison Emperor Divine Palace when we have gathered enough strength. Ming Ri Hao was obviously taking advantage of us. We don’t have to keep our side of deal at the mean time. Furthermore, even if we succeeded in unsealing this Prison Emperor’s Seven Star Pillars, it may not be a good thing for us in the end.”

Yue Yu’s face was also filled with pleas, she really didn’t want anything to happen to her precious brother.

He was not only their clan's hope, he was everyone's life.

Without him, everyone would collapse. Just like the Old Dragon Turtle and his master the Prison Emperor, without Yue Yang, everyone wouldn't have any reason for living.

Looking at the Old Dragon Turtle's self-sacrificing spirit, Yue Yu was really worried that something would happen to Yue Yang and she would end up like that Old Dragon Turtle, old and lonely.

No, if he die, she wouldn't want to live either...

Yue Yu thought about how the Old Dragon Turtle had lived for six thousand years alone and felt a shiver down her spine.

"Give me a little more time." Yue Yang took a deep breath and took out a pearl.

He once thought that this pearl was the trashiest thing in the world. It was the artifact that he was the most dissatisfied with ever since he came to this world.

However, right now, he had entrusted all of his hope to this pearl.

This pearl was called Ground Breaking Pearl.

Ground Breaking Pearl (Fake): The holder can cause a powerful earthquake within the range of a hundred meters and destroy all constructions on the surface. Limited to one time use only.

This imitation Ground Breaking Pearl was the reward he had gotten from the Sky, Earth, Human, Three World Shrines Quest. Yue Yang had always thought that the three pearls he acquired were the trashiest object, the most useless thing in the world. Right now, Yue Yang had realized one thing: There are only foolish people who don't know how to use artifacts, but there are no useless artifacts in the world!

When Yue Yang imbued Innate Qi into it, the Ground Breaking Pearl that could only be used once immediately shone with a bright light.

The light was so bright and radiant, it was like a sun.

Chapter 344 – Prison Emperor Divine Sword

The Ground Breaking Pearl in Yue Yang's hand continuously absorbed Innate Qi like an endless black hole.

When it had almost sucked in all of Yue Yang's Innate Qi dry, it suddenly exploded, sending a sphere-shaped shockwave blast towards all six directions.

That kind of explosion was enough to destroy heaven and earth.

However, that kind of unbelievable, explosive shockwave blast did not cause damage to the human body at all... Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Yu and the others were standing right in the middle of the explosion, but they did not feel anything at all. Other than feeling slightly blinded by the light, they didn't feel any shockwave, they didn't even feel a breeze. The shockwave slowly dispersed to the surrounding, gaining speed with every moment. When the shockwave sphere had reached a radius of a hundred metres, it exploded into countless rays of light. The whole Second Hall was engulfed in radiance. Even the space outside of the Second Hall was illuminated in shining light as the light spread out all over the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

One minute later, when the light disappeared, the great hall returned to normal.

On the surface, nothing had changed.

However, Yue Yang and the girls realized one thing, and that was

other than the Prison Emperor's Seven Star Pillars which was not damaged at all, the buildings and structures in the surrounding one hundred metres radius had all disappeared. The only thing left was a mirage of the Prison Emperor Divine Palace that only existed with the support of the Prison Emperor's will.

In the middle of the Prison Emperor's Seven Star Pillars, a small gate of light appeared. That was the entrance to the sealed space within the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

Yue Yang took the lead and entered the sealed space inside the Prison Emperor's Seven Star Pillar.

There was a transparent passage inside with no physical ground, but Yue Yang and the others were free to move about and walk forward as if they were on the ground.

Other than the Spirit of Flame and Smoke who refused to enter the Second Hall and was waiting outside, all the other beasts followed Yue Yang inside. The Spirit of Flame and Smoke hesitated a little and decided to stay behind in the end, glaring like a tiger watching its prey at the Sand Drill Demon Worm who would sometimes peek out from underground to check the situation above.

Inside the sealed space, there were no Crystal Tablets or coffins that Yue Yang had originally imagined. The whole sealed space was more or less as big as a soccer field.

In the middle, there was a giant cauldron.

In the middle of the giant cauldron, a mysterious-looking great sword that was faintly exuding golden light was embedded inside.

The blade of the great sword was as wide as an axe. It was mysteriously long and thick, a sabre was like a piece of paper compared to this sword... There was an Ancient Rune on top of the blade, surrounded by nine different Heaven Runes that formed a mysterious-looking Rune Circle. Yue Yang recognized the Ancient Rune as “Immortal”. Seems like this was the name of the sword or something that denotes the nature of the sword.

The divine sword was dark in colour, simple and unadorned with jewels. From the outside, it didn't look impressive at all.

However, Yue Yang who possessed Heaven Eyes Divine Vision could see that it was emitting a faint golden light that ordinary person would not be able to see. That light was extremely pure and condensed with energy.

“Is this the Prison Emperor's Divine Sword?” Yue Yang was exhilarated. In reality, his true intentions to strike a deal with Ming Ri Hao was not to help him release the seal on Ming Yue Guang, his sister. The reason why Yue Yang wholeheartedly wanted to enter the sealed space within the Prison Emperor's Seven Star Pillar was to acquire this Prison Emperor Divine Sword.

(Shiro: I was really in dilemma over this term – Prison Emperor Divine Sword. The raws for this term is literally Prison Emperor Divine Sword (狱皇神剑), but the sword holds a lot of similarities with the sword Excalibur (e.g. they were both stuck in something and only a king can pull it out) and it also sounds way cooler. But

there's Prison Emperor Divine Palace, Divine Staff and Divine Seal, so shouldn't there be Divine Sword too... What do you guys think?)

The Old Dragon Turtle didn't agree with Yue Yang acquiring the Prison Emperor Divine Sword at first, the reason was because the conditions of using this sword was even more restrictive than the Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Prison Emperor Divine Seal.

Only people who had an Emperor's bloodline would be able to use this sword.

He didn't think that such a shameless guy like Yue Yang who was not even a member of the royal family would be able to use the Prison Emperor Divine Sword. However, due to Ming Ri Hao's betrayal and the change of situation in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace that had exceeded all of his expectations, the Old Dragon Turtle had no choice but to support Yue Yang's decision to acquire the sword. If Yue Yang didn't have enough strength or a divine weapon to help him, this battle would be very dangerous to fight.

Rather than sit and watch the Prison Emperor Divine Palace collapsing and the two Great Leaders of Heaven Realm escaping, the Old Dragon Turtle would rather allow Yue Yang to try pulling the sword out.

Even if there was only one in a million chance of that happening, he wanted Yue Yang to give it a try.

"Only people who has been recognized by the Prison Emperor Divine Sword will be able to pull out the sword." The Old Dragon

Turtle coughed a little. He didn't want to disappoint Yue Yang too much. Forget about being the descendant of the Prison Emperor, the Old Dragon Turtle was certain that Yue Yang didn't have a trace of royal blood in his veins.

“Isn't it only a piece of worn out sword?” Yue Yang was a little annoyed. Although it was a divine weapon, it was simply too arrogant. Its master had already died, why can't it just accept the next person as its master?

“Give it a try then!” Speaking from his heart, the Old Dragon Turtle didn't think too favourably on Yue Yang.

“Xiao San, I support you. You can definitely do it!” Yue Yu was full of confidence for Yue Yang. In her heart, nothing is impossible for Yue Yang.

“...” Yue Yang looked arrogant on the outside, but he was actually feeling a little cowardly on the inside. This was because he knew that he was someone from another world, so he definitely did not have the bloodline of some ancient emperor. If he wanted to acquire the Prison Emperor Divine Sword's recognition, the chances of it happening was probably as low as meat pies falling from the sky. Of course, with Yue Yang's shameless character, he would definitely not try to pull the sword out fair and square. He would definitely cheat in the end.

Yue Yang first walked towards the side of the giant cauldron and leaped into the air. He reached out and grabbed onto the great sword that was twice the size of hero [Yang Guo's](#) Heavy Iron Sword, then pulled with all of his strength.

(Shiro: Yang Guo is the protagonist of a popular chinese classic novel, Return of the Condor Heroes. He had a Heavy Iron Sword that a martial arts expert, Dugu Qiu Bai, had left behind.)

Only the Prison Emperor Divine Sword was stuck inside the cauldron.

There was nothing else inside the cauldron.

Originally with Yue Yang's strength, forget about pulling the Prison Emperor Divine Sword once. Even if he pulled a hundred times, he would still be able to pull it out easily.

However, strangely, the sword didn't even move an inch.

It was as if the great sword was connected with the cauldron, it couldn't be pulled out no matter how much force was exerted. When the Old Dragon Turtle saw this, his heart was completely crushed... The divine weapon chose its master, this fact couldn't be denied indeed. When the Prison Emperor pulled out the Prison Emperor Divine Sword at that time, he had to communicate with it for ten years before he succeeded in pulling it out.

Yue Yang didn't manage to pull it out even an inch, it's hopeless to even think about it.

Seems like even if he were to communicate with the sword for a hundred years, he still wouldn't succeed in the end.

However, Yue Yang was not discouraged when he failed to pull it out. He turned around and signalled to Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress, “You guys, come try it out too!”

The Old Dragon Turtle almost twisted his nose in anger when he heard that.

This Prison Emperor Divine Sword could only be used by men. Furthermore, recklessly giving the Divine Sword that the Prison Emperor had used before to a girl, what kind of logic was that? Did this brat actually think of the Prison Emperor Divine Sword as a normal thing in his possession?

Just as he was about to stop them, Yue Yang sent him a glare. The Old Dragon Turtle could only endure his misgivings and kept quiet.

He reckoned that Yue Yang, this brat who had no respect for his predecessors at all, would probably send him a flying kick if he spoke out to stop his absurd idea.

After living for thousands of years, he had really never met such a disrespectful human before... Yue Yang ignored the Old Dragon Turtle’s furious expression and pulled Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress over, signalling to them to pull out the sword. If he couldn’t use the sword for himself, his beloved girls could use it instead. Princess Qian Qian was a little hesitant. Her upbringing was slightly more traditional, she didn’t dare to do a blasphemous action such as acquiring the Divine Sword instead of Yue Yang. Luo Hua City Mistress was different, she didn’t feel any hesitation at all. Furthermore, as Yue Yang’s wife, she would definitely listen

to his words.

When Luo Hua City Mistress grabbed the sword hilt, the Prison Emperor Divine Sword suddenly shone with a dazzling light, slightly moving from its spot.

The Old Dragon Turtle almost vomited blood. This indication was similar to when the Prison Emperor was pulling out the sword last time.

Could it be that this girl who looked delicate and fragile was destined to use the Divine Sword that only the Prison Emperor could use last time?

“Aiya...”

(Shiro: Similar to ouch in chinese)

Luo Hua City Mistress suddenly screamed out in pain and let go of her hand.

She could only touch the Prison Emperor Divine Sword for three seconds before she was blasted away by the resisting force of the sword. The Old Dragon Turtle was greatly relieved when he saw this. Girls couldn't use the Prison Emperor Divine Sword after all. Fortunately the sword rejected her, otherwise the Prison Emperor's most divine weapon would be used by a girl of the later generation. This would greatly disrespect the Prison Emperor.

Yue Yu quickly healed Luo Hua City Mistress while Yue Yang

pulled her hands and checked them thoroughly.

There was definitely a reaction just now, but why would it reject Luo Hua City Mistress afterwards?

When Princess Qian Qian saw Luo Hua City Mistress' failure, she felt angry instead. Even if it was a divine weapon only for men's use, did it have to injure Sister Luo Hua's hand when she tried to pull it out?

She covered her hands with White Tiger Qi and grabbed the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, then gave it a strong yank.

This time, the movement in the Prison Emperor Divine Sword was more obvious. Princess Qian Qian had managed to pull a few inches out, but the sword's resisting force became even bigger and also blasted her away.

"This can't be happening..." The Old Dragon Turtle was completely shocked. Could it be that the little lady was actually the descendant of the Prison Emperor? Could it be that she truly had the bearings of an Emperor? But from the feeling that he got from her blood, he couldn't be sure whether she was truly the Prison Emperor's descendant!

"..." Xue Wu Xia also tried once. The Divine Sword shook slightly, but the reaction was similar to Luo Hua City Mistress.

"One more time, lend me a helping hand. I don't believe I can't

pull it out.” Princess Qian Qian was burning with excitement with the Prison Emperor Divine Sword once again. With the help of Yue Yang’s Innate Qi, Princess Qian Qian once again activated her White Tiger Qi and shouted loudly as she tried to pull the Prison Emperor Divine Sword out from the cauldron. She succeeded pulling out half a metre before the resisting force of the sword crackled and electrocuted her until her body felt numb. She was in extreme pain, but Princess Qian Qian continued to grab onto the sword hilt and refused to let go. She was determined to pull out the Prison Emperor Divine Sword no matter what.

“This, is this even possible?” The Old Dragon Turtle felt like the sky had collapsed.

Even the Prison Emperor at that time wasn’t able to pull out the sword forcefully.

Could it be that the divine weapon would really fall onto a girl’s hand? Furthermore, this girl was not even an Innate. How could she possibly possess the power to control the Prison Emperor Divine Sword?

The Prison Emperor Divine Sword released a powerful blast of shockwave, blasting Princess Qian Qian’s hands away. The extremely strong resisting force caused Princess Qian Qian to vomit blood on the spot. The blood spurted out from her mouth splattered on the Prison Emperor Divine Sword.

The Old Dragon Turtle shook his head. Without the Prison Emperor’s bloodline and the bearing of an Emperor, a divine weapon such as this Prison Emperor Divine Sword would never

submit to others.

No matter if it was a man or woman, the most basic condition was to possess the bearing of an Emperor.

Maybe this stubborn girl was born in one of the Three Royal Families. Maybe she was the daughter to a country's emperor. But the Divine Sword would only recognize emperors, not princesses. The Prison Emperor Divine Sword is a King's Sword. Whoever wields it in their hand must be an Emperor, this kind of stubborn will and requirement was not something that could be easily changed. The Old Dragon Turtle slightly sighed in his heart. He was quite divided in this matter. On one hand, he didn't want Yue Yang and these girls to use the treasure sword that had recognized Prison Emperor as its master before. On the other hand, he also hoped that Yue Yang could pull the Prison Emperor Divine Sword out and use the divine sword's power to kill off their strong enemies. Only then would they be able to fulfil the Prison Emperor's wish of sealing the Heaven Realm warriors in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace forever.

"If I can't use it, I must as well destroy it completely." Yue Yang's bad thoughts was that if he can't have something, he would destroy it so that others can't have it too.

"No, please don't destroy the Divine Sword!" The Old Dragon Turtle was really afraid that Yue Yang would damage the Prison Emperor Divine Sword. He quickly shook his hands in fright. In reality, Yue Yang was only saying it, he didn't really intend to destroy the sword. He felt that it wouldn't be easy to gain the recognition of the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, this treasure

sword which seemed to have its own will. However, even if it was impossible right now, it doesn't mean that it would be impossible forever. As long as they spend more time and effort to try it again and again, they should be able to take it down. Especially for Princess Qian Qian who was born of the royal family. With the blood of an Emperor in her veins, there was a high chance for her to be able to succeed.

Most importantly, Yue Yang still had another treasure.

If he used it, maybe it would be effective.

Of course, because this treasure was a consumable item, before he studied it thoroughly, Yue Yang couldn't use it so easily. Otherwise, he might lose a once in a lifetime chance.

Human King's Pearl (Fake): The user would be able to use the Human King's power for ten seconds upon use. Limited to one time use only.

This Human King's Pearl that he acquired from the Three Worlds Shrine, would it be effective?

Yue Yang was still contemplating in his mind when the Old Dragon Turtle suddenly charged towards him, spreading his arms in front of the giant cauldron, afraid that Yue Yang would really use his World Exterminating Wheel and destroy the sword in a fit of anger. Towards this old geezer, Yue Yang immediately sent him flying with a kick irritatedly. Then, he took out the Human King's Pearl...

Success or failure, it all depends on this imitation pearl.

Chapter 345 – Blessing In Disguise

Brilliant rays of light flashed.

The Human King's Pearl emitted blinding rays of light with the power of Yue Yang's Innate Qi. A huge image of an emperor rose to the sky, covering over Yue Yang's body.

The image of emperor in the sky followed Yue Yang's movements as he moved his hand.

Yue Yang reached out and grabbed the sword, and the giant emperor image also reached out to help Yue Yang, pulling the sword at the same time.

The Prison Emperor Divine Sword inside the cauldron shook slightly...

Although it was an imitation Human King's pearl, it seemed to really be effective. Yue Yang was secretly happy, and at the same time, his confidence increased.

“Come out right now!” Yue Yang exerted his maximum power and shouted loudly as he pulled the Prison Emperor Divine Sword from the giant cauldron in one shot. Yue Yang then raised it high to the sky, and in that moment, no other view in the world was more majestic than Yue Yang. The Prison Emperor Divine Sword in Yue Yang's hands crackled with static electricity as the energy that was sealed exploded out suddenly. A powerful shockwave of Qi blasted through the surrounding, pushing Princess Qian Qian

and the others several steps backwards.

The power of the Divine Sword merge together with Yue Yang.

As an intelligent treasure, a divine weapon that chose its master, although Yue Yang had shamelessly played a trick to acquire it, the Prison Emperor Divine Sword still recognized him as its new master.

However, just as the girls were about to cheer for Yue Yang, Yue Yang slammed the Prison Emperor Divine Sword fiercely downwards.

Could this sword actually be fake?

The Old Dragon Turtle was shocked. It was obviously the real Prison Emperor Divine Sword!

Then why would that brat smash the sword downwards? The Old Dragon Turtle was completely confused, e simply couldn't understand Yue Yang's crazy antics. Since the Prison Emperor Divine Sword had chosen him as its master, he should be happy, shouldn't he? Why would he fiercely smash the sword downwards immediately?

However, the Prison Emperor Divine Sword didn't smash on the ground. Instead, it floated in the air automatically.

A figure suddenly appeared in the sky, it was a big and tall man

wearing an armor all over his body. He looked strong, bold, heroic and powerful. He had a pair of thick eyebrows, big eyes, and a full beard that was slightly blue-coloured. His short moustache didn't give off a bad impression, instead, it made others feel that he was especially mature and wise. His calmness gave off the impression that he had went through millions of hardships and years of loneliness, perfectly blended into one... His deep gaze would involuntarily cause others to sigh and be ashamed of their inferiority. This was because the light in his eyes were deep like ocean. Yue Yang and the others really couldn't imagine what kind of experience he had gone through to amass such wisdom and essence.

“Prison Emperor? You, you are real...” The Old Dragon Turtle immediately burst into tears, unable to contain his anguish when he saw this person.

He was separated for six thousand years before he could see his master again.

Although this was only the remnant of the Prison Emperor's conscience and will on the sword, the Old Dragon Turtle was still wrought with emotions, unable to restrain himself. Six thousand years worth of longing burst like a dam of water, as tears rolled down his cheeks unstoppably.

Yue Yang was secretly speechless. This fellow was the Prison Emperor?

He, isn't he too big and tall?

He simply didn't look like a human. Could it be that humans six thousand years ago were all this big and tall? The figure of Prison Emperor in front of Yue Yang didn't seem to be a magnified version, it looked like it was a one-to-one scale. However, the Prison Emperor was over 2.5 metres tall, he was much taller than Yue Yang. Yue Yang looked like a kid standing next to the Prison Emperor's figure.

Seems like he was the Avatar-version of Yao Ming, another world edition!

(Shiro: Yao Ming is the super tall basketball player)

No wonder the Prison Emperor Divine Sword was so big. If it were the size of a normal sword instead, it would be like a dagger for the Prison Emperor. That would really not be appropriate.

“My child, although I have no way of knowing who you are, since you can awaken my conscience that is sealed inside this sword with just your blood, that proves that you are my descendant without a doubt. Don't be afraid, what you are seeing now is the remnant of my conscience that I sealed six thousand years ago. Before I disappear, I want to give you a present.” The Prison Emperor figure started to speak. Although there were no voice spoken out loud, his message was transmitted directly through everyone's minds through a thought wave. Everyone present on the location was able to hear the Prison Emperor clearly.

“Ah... you are the descendant of the Prison Emperor?” The Old Dragon Turtle looked at Yue Yang in shock.

“Have you become senile?” Yue Yang was speechless. He was someone from another world, he wouldn’t even have a single drop of the Prison Emperor’s blood. How could he be his descendant?

“The descendant that Prison Emperor mentioned is probably Qian Qian!” Xue Wu Xia reacted the quickest. She saw Princess Qian Qian spurting out blood onto the Divine Sword because she was injured from its resisting force before. Although the blood splattered on the blade just now, it had completely disappeared now. It was obvious that the blood was absorbed by the Divine Sword. From this, it could be concluded that indeed, Princess Qian Qian’s blood had awoken the Prison Emperor’s remaining conscience sealed within the sword.

“Impossible!” Princess Qian Qian was shocked when she heard Xue Wu Xia. Just now, the Divine Sword had resisted her, so how could she possibly be the descendant of the Prison Emperor?

“This, what is happening actually?” Luo Hua City Mistress felt extremely confused and disoriented, unable to comprehend the situation that was unfolding before her.

The figure of the Prison Emperor slowly closed his hands as a huge amount of energy started to gather in his palm.

His thought wave was transmitted to the rest of the people’s minds, “My child, although your current strength is still inadequate to wield the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, don’t give up, I will also give you a little bit of help. I hope that you will

cherish this Divine Sword and don't disappoint my decision to pass this sword on to you..."

As Princess Qian Qian continued to be in the state of shock and disbelief, the Prison Emperor gathered his energy and synchronized it with the Divine Sword's power.

In the end, the Prison Emperor's remaining conscience seemed to disappear as the two mass of energy conformed together, forming a ball of light that flew straight towards Princess Qian Qian.

A deafening tiger's roar shook throughout the whole Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

Princess Qian Qian's Guardian Beast, the White Tiger, appeared immediately, and started to evolve into a giant beast who was several metres long from its head to its tail. It opened its mouth and immediately swallowed the ball of light that was filled with energy.

The beast then immediately turned into a pillar of light that shot up to the sky, flying to a high altitude before it came back down towards Princess Qian Qian again.

After absorbing the energy from the "Spirit's Remnant" and the "Divine Sword", the White Tiger's body shone with an incomparably bright golden light... Princess Qian Qian who had been holding back and wasn't willing to level up to the Innate realm couldn't resist the huge amount of energy that the White Tiger had ingested anymore. She shouted out as her whole body

shot up to the sky and floated in the air motionlessly at a height of ten metres high.

Her summoning grimoire appeared spontaneously and a pillar of golden light enveloped her whole body, extending almost a hundred metres high to the sky. The pillar of golden light seemed to connect the heaven to the earth.

Numerous Ancient Runes and Heaven Runes arranged themselves into a Rune Pattern that slowly expanded bigger, faintly forming a gigantic, ferocious-looking figure of a tiger.

On the other side, the Prison Emperor Divine Sword spontaneously flew towards the pillar of light, bathing in the golden light together with the tiger-shaped rune pattern and Princess Qian Qian's summoning grimoire.

It was unknown how much time passed before this shocking spectacle of levelling up to the Innate Realm finally ended. The blinding golden light slowly dissipated.

Princess Qian Qian who had been promoted to the Innate realm was holding the Prison Emperor Divine Sword which was ablaze with golden light.

She slashed down once.

The slash of the sword flashed once and quickly disappeared.

However, soundlessly, a huge rift appeared from within the sealed space to the Second Hall outside, as if the dimension had been ripped apart.

“...” Forget about the others, even Princess Qian Qian never imagined that her one slash would be so powerful.

“Thank god, turns out the Prison Emperor has descendants!” The Old Dragon Turtle was both crying and laughing at the same time. With regards to Princess Qian Qian, who had received the recognition and Divine Sword inheritance from the Prison Emperor’s remaining conscience personally, he had no more doubts or qualms. He only felt touched and a deep sense of gratefulness. All along, he believed that all of the Prison Emperor’s descendants had died out. He never thought that this heroic, beautiful little girl was actually the descendant of one of the Prison Emperor’s children who managed to escape from everything.

Yue Yang was speechless.

Through the Human King’s Pearl cheat, he managed to trick the Prison Emperor Divine Sword to recognize him as its master.

Originally, he could have used the Prison Emperor Divine Sword. However, because of the interference of that Prison Emperor’s remaining conscience who only allowed his own descendants to wield the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, Yue Yang was left empty-handed. Prison Emperor might have done it out of goodwill, he probably never thought that the one who pulled out the Divine Sword was not his descendant, but a boy from another world who had cheated by using the Human King’s Pearl.

Hence, the moment he stepped in to help, Yue Yang was fated to be miserable.

Prison Emperor Divine Sword had now recognized him as its master, but Yue Yang wouldn't be able to use it.

The only one who could use it was the Prison Emperor's descendant. Not its rightful, perfectly legitimate master, but the descendant that the Prison Emperor had recognized himself, Princess Qian Qian.

Fortunately Princess Qian Qian was the one who get to use the Prison Emperor Divine Sword. If it was another person instead, Yue Yang would really fall into depression and hang himself... At the same time, Princess Qian Qian also did not feel good about this. Although the Prison Emperor Divine Sword had followed the Prison Emperor's wishes, it rejected her because she was a girl and not an emperor. Hence, their compatibility couldn't reach a hundred percent. After getting this Divine Sword, not only was she unable to utilise her full power, she had also acquired an additional title of the "Descendant of the Prison Emperor".

Could it be that her ancestor was truly the Prison Emperor?

She didn't dare to ask Jun Wu You about this, it's not right to assume their ancestors recklessly.

If Yue Yang had acquired the Prison Emperor Divine Sword instead, his power would definitely be greatly increased... Of all

things that could happen, after wasting the Human King's Pearl to successfully contract the Divine Sword, he just couldn't use it in the end.

“Forget it, not all things goes the way we want!” Yue Yang pretended not to care about it at all, but he was actually a little bit jealous inside. It's all that old Prison Emperor's fault for being a busybody!

“I think you look way cooler when you use Hui Jin Magic Blade to fight... This Prison Emperor Divine Sword looked like an iron panel, it's so ugly, it can't even be compared with your Crescent Moon Blade!” Luo Hua City Mistress hurriedly comforted him. On the other hand, Yue Yu, his second sister, was actually laughing in secret. She knew that her precious brother was a lucky star. Putting the fact that he was useless last time aside, ever since he stormed into the Yue Clan Castle with his sister and Fourth Mother, Yue Yu had never seen him falling into a miserable situation before. Who would know that the Prison Emperor's remaining conscience would do Yue Yang in this time!

“Maybe it's a good thing!” Xue Wu Xia truly think that this was a blessing in disguise.

“Unn, unn!” The obedient Xiao Wen Li nodded in agreement.

Princess Qian Qian really didn't know how to pacify Yue Yang. In the end, she changed her aloof demeanour that she always showed him normally and gave him a hug, counting it as a compensation for him. Right now, there were too many people around, otherwise she would probably comforted him more. However, other than the

girls, there was the Old Dragon Turtle too, who was an outsider. She couldn't let go of her honor.

Since he didn't manage to acquire the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, Yue Yang shifted his attention to the giant cauldron.

This kind of giant cauldron, Yue Yang had seen it once before. He had seen it at the Aries Temple of the Twelve Zodiac Temples, a cauldron that can store items.

(Shiro: Refer to chapter 52, it's a cauldron that throws out items of previous Aries Temple challengers whenever Yue Yang throw 1 gold coin into it)

At that time, Yue Yang had thrown in gold coins inside the cauldron and acquired a myriad of things, including a secret Treasure Map in Death Canyon.

Could it be that this cauldron is also good stuff?

Yue Yang took out a few gold coins and was about to throw it inside the cauldron. The Old Dragon Turtle was speechless when he saw this, he almost die from speechlessness.

The cauldron in Aries Temple can store items in exchange for gold, of course the Old Dragon Turtle knew about it. However, he could guarantee that this cauldron and that cauldron were two completely different things. Even if one throw in money into the cauldron, one would definitely not be able to exchange it for anything, because this cauldron is a Sealing Cauldron.

A dazzling, bright white light shot out from within the cauldron.

Without waiting for the others' reactions, numerous balls of light floated out one after another from the cauldron, as if they were fish from a fish farm escaping from a hole that had suddenly broken out.

What is happening here now?

Chapter 346 – Ming Yue Guang

The drops of white light floated out of the sealed space like a school of fish. Almost instantly, they disappeared without a trace.

In the end, there were only clusters of light left.

Within the cluster of light, there was a girl.

She looked like a moon elf with her golden hair, pointed ears, silver feet and bright eyes. Could it be that this was Ming Ri Hao's sister, Ming Yue Guang? Yue Yang couldn't help getting shocked. If it was based on appearance, this Ming Yue Guang looked as different as heaven and earth with her brother Ming Ri Hao. Ming Yue Guang was a graceful, delicate female elf that was smooth as flowing water while her brother was a ten-metre tall giant.... The thing that Yue Yang was curious about was if the two of them were brothers and sisters, then what kind of parents do they have, to be able to produce such a distinct son and daughter?

Ming Yue Guang who was shrouded in clusters of light slowly opened her eyes and looked at Yue Yang. She then bowed, giving Yue Yang the unique greeting between Innates.

If it was based on body types, she definitely couldn't be Ming Ri Hao's sister.

However, if it was based on power, Ming Yue Guang, who was still weak because she had just been released from her seal, seemed to have power that was even stronger than Ming Ri Hao.

Although Yue Yang had enough mental preparation, he couldn't help but feel slightly regretful when he saw Ming Yue Guang. If he knew that Ming Yue Guang still possessed such a huge amount of power even after being sealed for six thousand years, he wouldn't release her so easily just for the sake of acquiring the Prison Emperor Divine Sword.

Of course, even if Yue Yang didn't pull out the sword, with Ming Yue Guang's power, she would probably be able to break free from the seal before long.

“Although I have been sleeping this entire time, I have received the message that my older brother has passed on to me. He mentioned about the deal he had with you. With regards to making peace with the human race, that is also my heart's wish. Originally, I have no grudge or qualms with the human race, everything was just a misunderstanding. I thank you for releasing me, I hope we can be amiable in the future.” Ming Yue Guang didn't speak, she only nodded slightly, but it was like everyone was able to hear her voice. Her thought wave resounded inside everyone's minds. This thought wave was very similar to the Prison Emperor's thought wave just now. Her voice was even clearer and more distinct than the Prison Emperor's voice.

“What are you going to do next?” Yue Yang asked.

“Leave the Prison Emperor Divine Palace and return to the Heaven Realm... I'm in a very weak state currently, I am unable to give you any substantial help. If one day you can visit the beautiful Heaven Realm, you can find me for help then. I am a member of

the Sun Moon Sect, it is very easy if you want to find me in the Heaven Realm.” Ming Yue Guang’s thought wave was not only transmitted to Yue Yang. Everyone could hear her voice very clearly, including the Old Dragon Turtle.

“You guys killed General Nan and many other brave soldiers. You even attacked the Prison Emperor... If you want to leave, you must pass through me.” The Old Dragon Turtle was beyond furious.

“With regards to the past misunderstandings, I am deeply sorry.” Ming Yue Guang slowly bowed towards the Old Dragon Turtle. Then, she shook her head and hands, “I don’t want to fight with you. It was a mistake for the Sun Moon Sect to fight against the human race, I will definitely not allow the mistake to happen again. Yuan Long, even without me saying it, I think you are also aware that you are not my opponent. Even if you fight me in your peak condition, you won’t be able to hurt me in my current weakened state. In this six thousand years, as I was imprisoned inside the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, I have always pondered on one question. Who was it actually that set up this trap and sow discord between us, causing us to fight to death against each other? Yuan Long, you should know that there is some other preparator behind the scenes. In this kind of situation, don’t tell me you are still determined to fight to the death with me, and allow the real preparator to continue getting away with his sins?”

“...” The Old Dragon Turtle suddenly discovered that she was right. He had too many enemies, but this Ming Yue Guang in front of him right now was simply too strong for him. He, who was currently seriously injured and was in the process of healing, would definitely be unable to defeat this enemy.

Most importantly, the person that the Old Dragon Turtle wanted to kill the most was the Prison Emperor Divine General.

Before he succeeded in killing the traitor, the Old Dragon Turtle wouldn't die that easily.

Otherwise, he would die full of regrets.

It had been a difficult journey to enter the Prison Emperor Divine Palace and come this far.

As long as they acquire the Prison Emperor Divine Staff, they would be able to kill the traitor, Prison Emperor Divine General. The Old Dragon Turtle really didn't want to miss this opportunity.

As for killing Ming Yue Guang, forget about the fact that they didn't have the capability right now, even if they have, they must still kill the Prison Emperor Divine General first. That traitor had lived for six thousand years without anyone's punishment. The Old Dragon Turtle couldn't tolerate the fact that that traitor was roaming freely about anymore.

Considering between the two of them, the Old Dragon Turtle decided to let go of his smaller grudge towards Ming Yue Guang at the mean time and think of a way to kill the Prison Emperor Divine General.

Towards this enemy who had been sleeping for six thousand years, the Old Dragon Turtle felt sorrowful because he couldn't

stop her from leaving.

He slowly walked out of the sealed space, unwilling to watch the sight of his enemy leaving this place safe and sound.

Outside the sealed space, Ming Ri Hao, whose body had lost its usual splendour and was covered in cuts and bruises, brought along Sha Fei, who was similarly in a dire state and three other Heaven Realm Warriors, into the sealed space. When they brushed shoulders against the Old Dragon Turtle, the two parties acted like they didn't see each other. They didn't say anything at all and only cared about moving forward to their respective destinations.

When Ming Ri Hao, Sha Fei and the three other Heaven Realm Warriors saw Ming Yue Guang, their expressions turned both emotional and respectful.

They all knelt on the ground, bowing in respect to Ming Yue Guang.

Afterwards, Ming Ri Hao formed a ball of light filled with energy and gave it to Ming Yue Guang.

“We have lost this battle. But we should be glad that we are all still alive. There would be hope as long as we live.” Ming Yue Guang reached out towards that ball of light and quickly absorbed the energy. At the same time, she turned her lily-like hand and released several gentle drops of moonlight that floated towards Ming Ri Hao and Sha Fei, enveloping them and healing their wounds in an instant.

“I didn’t manage to intercept Feng Shen Shi, you didn’t manage to release the seal on time too. Both of us didn’t manage to finish our tasks perfectly. Before we leave, please allow me to give a word of advice as your ally.” Ming Ri Hao raised his head and looked towards Yue Yang, “The two Great Leaders would probably awaken in another hour. They would be able to break free from their sealed coffin. If you guys couldn’t stop their awakening, leave this place right now. With our current strength, they are not someone that we can defeat. In another hundred years, you would probably be able to become the next Prison Emperor and become the strongest warrior amongst the human race. But right now...”

“Can you guys leave this place?” Yue Yang was a little confused. Under the Prison Emperor’s seal, could they even leave this place?

“He can’t, but as the Sealing Heaven Lady, I should be able to override the Prison Emperor’s will.” Ming Yue Guang bowed towards Yue Yang and the girls again as she summoned a grimoire shining in colourful light. Yue Yang raised his eyebrows when he saw it, because he discovered that it was actually a ‘Holy Grimoire’.

There were only one hundred Holy Grimoires in the whole world.

This Ming Yue Guang actually possessed one of them.

Although her Holy Grimoire was not as strong as Empress Fei Wen Li’s Holy Grimoire, Ming Yue Guang still possessed the Holy

Grimoire. Although Yue Yang had heard of her true identity from the monster guy leader An Ge, he couldn't help but to feel shocked. Possessing a Platinum Grimoire and Diamond Grimoire was already extraordinary, but she possess a Holy Grimoire. Wouldn't this mean she was the strongest person in the world?

Ming Yue Guang enveloped Ming Ri Hua, Sha Fei and the others with an extremely beautiful, gentle and special Domain of Power, Moonlight, and brought them into her Grimoire world.

In the end, she waved at Yue Yang and looked as if she was about to leave.

Suddenly, she stopped.

She turned around and smiled a little, then asked with a heavenly voice, "Have you already realised that I am one of the three Great Leaders of the Western Heaven Realm?"

"Oh, are you one of the three Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm?" Yue Yang had already known beforehand when the monster guy leader An Ge visited them at the last minute and told them all the secrets that he knew. Because of this information, Yue Yang and the girls decided to work together with Ming Ri Hao and pull out the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, releasing Ming Yue Guang at the same time.

"Although you are exaggerating your reaction, my senses tells me that you have already known my identity." Ming Yue Guang looked a little curious as she asked again, "Could you tell me why

did you decided to pull out the Prison Emperor Divine Sword and release me from my seal? Aren't you afraid I will kill you the moment I was released? Don't doubt that I have the strength to do that, even though I'm very weak now, I can still kill a human warrior below Innate Level 10 easily."

"If I don't pull out the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, how much time would you need to release the seal on your own?" Yue Yang asked her back.

"Three days at the most!" Ming Yue Guang estimated for a while.

"You can break free on your own, then why would Ming Ri Hao urgently seeks my cooperation?" Yue Yang asked again.

"Because he didn't want me to awaken after the two other Great Leaders. You know, time is life." Ming Yue Guang answered.

"When we released you, why didn't you take the opportunity to kill us? Didn't you say just now that you have the power to kill us all? Why didn't you do it?" The way Yue Yang asked was so relaxed, it was like he was asking her about what they should eat for dinner, not about the matter of his life and death.

"You are younger than the Prison Emperor, so you are more terrifying than him. Forgive me, but I think the word terrifying is more appropriate to describe you." Ming Yue Guang turned around and her figure slowly disappeared in her Moonlight Domain of Power. However, her last answer was transmitted to Yue Yang's mind through a thought wave, "Actually, I did think of killing you,

but I immediately changed my mind when I opened my eyes. I wouldn't be so free as to try killing the descendant of the Eastern Immortal Tribe who could resurrect with Nirvana Flame every time he died. That's not a smart person's move, and it's definitely not something that I, who possessed the 'Moon Eyes' true sight would do... Goodbye now, young human who had the protection of the Immortal Beast. When you possess the strength of a Prison Emperor in the future, I don't mind sharing the Western Heaven Realm with you."

"This girl, she really has a big appetite!" Yue Yang sighed secretly. He understood that Ming Yue Guang was offering to join hands with him to kill the other two Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm,

"There is still an hour left. Can we rush in time?" Xue Wu Xia frowned.

"I can bet that you guys won't be able to enter the Third Hall in an hour, let alone interfere with the Restoration Ceremony. In order to delay time, we have sacrificed a lot of comrades. If you guys had not come in here, we could have continued to sleep and leave this Prison Emperor Divine Palace in another hundred years without sacrificing anything. The worst thing was that you guys even dared to join hands with Ming Ri Hao and release a frightening enemy that you guys would have never expected. That was actually one of the three Great Leaders, Ming Yue Guang, who was hiding her identity. She was unable to escape to the Heaven Realm and was sealed inside Prison Emperor Divine Sword. You repulsive humans, you have completely foiled the plan that we have thought of since five thousand years ago. Right now, I really can't endure my anger anymore, I must teach you guys a lesson..."

When you are reincarnated in your next life, remember one thing, don't ever provoke my anger!" In the sealed space passage, there was a transparent giant with a voice like the roaring of gale and thunder. The moment he opened his mouth, he immediately charged forward towards Yue Yang and the others like a hurricane.

"Feng Shen Shi?" Yue Yang asked hesitantly.

"I don't want to waste my time talking with you. Go and die, annoying human!" The transparent giant man charged forward like the wind, disappearing without a trace.

Outside the passage, the Old Dragon Turtle had been blown away by a great power, and was shot inside the sealed space again like a cannon.

When Yue Yang caught him, the Old Dragon Turtle who had always looked calm and unperturbed revealed a panic-stricken expression.

He pointed towards the Second Hall outside the sealed space passage, his lips trembling slightly as he gulped down his saliva and said, "Everyone, beware. There are two Goblin Beasts outside. These Goblin Beasts are probably from the Heaven Realm who had just awakened. They are extremely famished, you guys must not belittle them..."

Yue Yang was slightly dazed when he heard him, "Goblin Beast?"

Chapter 347 – Goblin Beast, Heaven Realm Centipede

Goblin Beasts were not from the Soaring Dragon Continent. They were monsters that only existed in the higher floors of Tong Tian Tower.

Goblin Beasts in general lived within the Eastern Goblin Tribe's lands, sharing the territory with them.

Goblin Beasts who possessed intelligence would evolve into a low-ranked Eastern Goblin Tribesman after some period of time. For example the Plum Leopard and the Xiong Brothers that fought with Yue Yang during the tournament last time, they had evolved from Goblin Beasts. Of course, not all Goblin Beasts would have the chance to evolve into an Eastern Goblin Tribesman. In order to evolve, the Goblin Beast must fulfil a series of conditions. The difficulty of evolving into an Eastern Goblin Tribesman was the same as a normal beast evolving into a Gold King Beast...

After inheriting the knowledge that the tragic guy's mother had passed on to him, Yue Yang had come to know of a secret.

Those Goblin Beasts that even Innate Rankers fear were not the normal Goblin Beasts, but the Goblin Beasts that came from a higher realm, such as the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower or the Heaven Realm. Heaven Realm Goblin Beasts only existed in legends. According to the records from the tragic guy's mother's knowledge inheritance, these Goblin Beasts might never possess an intelligence equivalent to a human's, but Heaven Realm Goblin Beasts possess an extremely huge and strong body... They were not

something that can be compared to a normal Goblin Beast or Normal-ranked Demon Beast. It was said that any Heaven Realm Goblin Beast had the ability to kill a low-levelled Innate Ranker.

Heaven Realm Goblin Beasts were nightmare-like existences for Innate Rankers.

Fortunately they only lived in the higher floors of Tong Tian Tower, so they did not pose as any kind of threat towards the human race.

The moment he heard the Old Dragon Turtle mention Goblin Beast, Yue Yang immediately realized that these Goblin Beasts had been released by Feng Shen Shi to obstruct him.

“Everyone, stay here, I’ll go outside and take a look.”

Yue Yang took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade and flew out quickly from the sealed space.

At the end of the passage in the sealed space was the Second Hall. When Yue Yang came out, to his extreme shock, he found two Giant Centipedes which were more than one hundred metres long. They were ferociously attacking Ni Guo’s subordinates. Other than Ni Guo, who was Innate level 6 and two other Heaven Realm Warriors which were Innate Level 5 who continued to fight desperately, over a dozen of them were slaughtered immediately without a chance to escape.

The beasts that they summoned to fight the two Giant Centipedes were all killed instantly.

No matter what, as long as something have a gigantic body, they would be terrifying.

Ants are small and weak, but when they turn into Fire Red Giant Ants, they became adventurers' nightmare.

Normal centipedes were nothing much, they can be easily killed when a normal person stepped on them. However with regards to centipede monsters, they were all extremely terrifying. The strongest centipede beast would probably be the Red-headed Domineering King Centipede. It was the king of all myriapods, and was more than thirty metres long. Its outer shell was as hard as iron panels and couldn't be injured by sword blades. Their numerous legs were sharp like spears, and they had poison in their fangs which would kill their enemies instantly.

Domineering King Centipede could even kill Flaming Lion, Battle Kodo Beast, Giant Mammoth and other strong beasts.

However, it did not exist in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

One would need to go to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower at the very least in order to see them.

Domineering King Centipedes who have come of age would be one of the Five Great Insect Kings, including Reaper Mantis, Devil

Spider, Great War Scorpion and Sky Demon Poison Bee. Among the five of them, the Domineering King Centipede and the Reaper Mantis were the strongest in terms of fighting.

If the Reaper Mantis couldn't fly, the Domineering King Centipede might even be stronger than it.

The Domineering King Centipede was only thirty metres long, yet it could survive in the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower. Right now, how frightening would this Heaven Realm Giant Centipede be, who was over one hundred metres long, three times to even five times bigger than the Domineering King Centipede? Yue Yang realized that he couldn't see through the true strength of the centipedes even with his sharp senses. Although they were definitely not as strong as Ming Ri Hao or Huang Sha, compared to human-sized beings, these Heaven Realm Centipedes' body were simply too overpowered...

These two Heaven Realm Centipedes not only have huge bodies. They were also very quick and agile, to the point that it was unreasonable.

In the Great Hall, there was a Forest Boa.

It had just been summoned by its master. Unfortunately, it hadn't even managed to attack before one of the Heaven Realm Centipede shot towards it and bit the Forest Boa's head swiftly.

Injecting poison deep into its enemy's head, it used its sharp, poisonous legs to stab at the Forest Boa's body, which was over

thirty metres long. The giant Forest Boa which was a Gold-ranked Level 8 was attacked like a weak prey. Blood flowed out of the dozens of holes that were created on its body.

The Forest Boa didn't even have the chance to struggle, it collapsed on the ground straight away.

Before 10 seconds passed, the mighty Forest Boa who could kill everything on its path was instantly killed without any chance of struggling. Its tail could only wriggle a little before it died.

As for that Heaven Realm Centipede, it didn't care if there were enemies around who wanted to attack it, it immediately devoured the boa.

The process was extremely bloody and cruel.

Xue Wu Xia and Prince Qian Qian had followed Yue Yang outside. When they saw such a terrifying scene before them, their faces immediately turned pale.

Seeing the hundred metre long Giant Centipede devouring a Forest Boa not far from them, it was truly a terrifying scene that no ordinary human could handle.

Surrounded by the two Heaven Realm Centipede, with the sealed space as the center, there was an eye of a storm, a vortex of wind that was surrounding the whole of Second Hall. A wall of wind that was even colder than a tornado prevented anyone from

leaving or entering. Everyone trapped within the vortex of wind would end up as the Heaven Realm Centipedes' food. This did not only apply to Yue Yang, but Ni Guo and his subordinates too.

In order to prevent Yue Yang from leaving, Feng Shen Shi had placed an artifact on the second hall. With the power of this artifact, he had summoned one of the most famous spells in Heaven Realm, the 'Howling Wind Spell'.

All kinds of living beings would not be able to fly through the Howling Wind Spell.

Even if they try to walk, their movement speed would also be greatly decreased.

Yue Yang had not managed to test out the power of the Howling Wind Spell when Ni Guo's subordinates met their tragic ends.

The Howling Wind Spell coupled with the two Goblin Beasts would only result in tragic deaths!

The Heaven Realm Centipedes which were starving were slaughtering anything that comes within their view.

"What are centipedes most afraid of?" Yue Yang thought that it would definitely be difficult to kill them by physical attack. They must find the centipedes' weakness first and make use of it to inflict a mortal wound on them. Otherwise, even though these Heaven Realm Centipedes didn't move at all, even if he was free to

attack them all he want, he would probably need half a day at least just to kill one.

“Centipedes are afraid of chickens...” Xue Wu Xia replied with a proper answer.

“Then... seems like we should at least find a chicken that is at least a hundred metres tall, otherwise it would not be able to eat these Heaven Realm Centipedes.” Yue Yang was speechless. Chicken eats centipedes, this he also knew. The problem was where to find a chicken that was a hundred metres tall to eat the centipedes. Furthermore, this was a Heaven Realm Centipede, a Goblin Beast. It might not even be afraid of chickens at all. They could just forget about using chickens to counter the centipedes.

However, the thing that made Yue Yang troubled was not these Heaven Realm Centipedes. Although they looked like they were starving, they would not pose as a threat to him.

The real problem was how to leave the Howling Wind Spell.

The two Great Leaders of Heaven Realm would revive in just another hour.

If they did not stop the Resurrection Ceremony, the consequences would be dire.

How could he avoid these two Heaven Realm Centipedes, pass through the wind wall of the Howling Wind Spell and stop Feng

Shen Shi from resurrecting the two Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm?

Just as Yue Yang was thinking over it, the Heaven Realm Warriors who reached the Second Hall died from the battle.

They had been turned into food.

Ni Guo and two other strong comrades were pale as death. They had used an ancient Invisibility Spell and hid at a corner of the Second Hall. Even though their comrades were slaughtered one by one and continued to scream out in pain, they didn't dare to save them, afraid that they would be implicated themselves.

The few remaining Heaven Realm Warriors desperately clung to their lives.

Some had fused their bodies with their beasts and turned into a twenty metre tall giant monster.

Of course, their gigantic body was nothing compared to the Heaven Realm Centipedes.

In front of the hundred-metre long centipede, their gigantic body was extremely small. Even if the Heaven Realm Centipedes only knocked against them a little, they would definitely fall and roll on the ground from the impact.

No one dared to fight head on with these two terrifying Goblin

Beasts. Some were shooting ball of lights from far away to distract the centipedes' attentions while some had summoned blazing flames to protect their bodies.

There were also some who brandished their gigantic blades and attacked the Goblin Beasts' body.

However, this action proved to be a useless struggle.

Any physical attacks on the bodies of these Heaven Realm Centipedes would simply produce fire sparks. Forget about cutting open those outer shells that was as hard as iron panels, even taking out one of their legs was extremely difficult. Fire, ice, and other elemental attacks did not show any kind of special effect on the Heaven Realm Centipede. When Yue Yang saw this, he was secretly shocked. These two Heaven Realm Centipedes' defense were simply too strong.

Normal attacks were completely useless.

Physical attacks to them were equivalent to ordinary adventurers trying to attack a Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle.

The two Heaven Realm Centipedes surrounded ten over Heaven Realm Warriors.

If the Heaven Realm Warriors did not escape quickly, they would immediately be killed. However, whenever someone tried to pass through the wind wall to leave the Second Hall, the centipedes

would immediately use their quickest speed to chase after and kill the escapees, biting them to death, before they managed to leave.

Even the twenty metre tall Heaven Realm Warrior who had fused his body with his summoned beast could not last a minute before he became food to those centipedes...

Other than Ni Guo and two other comrades with strong abilities, all the other Heaven Realm Warriors were unable to escape the centipedes' pincer attack and the Howling Wind Spell.

The two Heaven Realm Centipedes were extremely cunning. They first killed and swallowed the Heaven Realm Warriors' summoned beasts, filling their stomach up.

This had literally given a little hope to those Heaven Realm Warriors. They make the Heaven Realm Warriors felt that at some point, these Goblin Beasts might feel full and decide to let them go. However, from Yue Yang's point of view, forget about the few humans and beasts in front of these centipedes. Even if there were a hundred over Heaven Realm Warriors and summoned beasts, they would not stop devouring every single one of them. The two Heaven Realm Centipedes in front of them were creatures with enough intelligence to hatch such a cunning plan. It was their inborn ability to pressurize their enemies, allowing their enemies to live longer, then devour them slowly after torturing and terrorizing them.

Moreover, terrified preys would not be able to fight with one hundred percent of their strength.

“Let’s take the opportunity before those centipedes finished chewing that fellow. I think we should make our move, otherwise it will be too late.” Princess Qian Qian grabbed the Prison Emperor Divine Sword in her hands tightly. Although she had already levelled up to an Innate and possess the Prison Emperor Divine Sword in her hands, she couldn’t be sure that she would be able to inflict damage on those two Heaven Realm Centipedes.

“No, let’s wait for a while.” Yue Yang knew that if they joined hands with those trapped Heaven Realm Warriors, their combined fighting strength would be far greater.

However, he didn’t think that they would be able to smoothly kill the two Heaven Realm Centipedes just with a few more additional Heaven Realm Warriors.

If those two Heaven Realm Centipedes could be easily killed, Feng Shen Shi wouldn’t have released them.

Yue Yang thought over this point, and shook his head to reject Princess Qian Qian’s suggestion. He replied her in a serious tone, “You guys stay here, don’t even take a step outside. I will stop the Resurrection Ceremony myself.”

Princess Qian Qian immediately refused, “Definitely no. You can’t abandon us. Furthermore, you won’t be able to win fighting against Feng Shen Shi alone.

She knew that Yue Yang meant well, that he didn’t want the

others to risk their lives.

From her Six Records Inherent Skill, she could faintly feel a bad feeling. She felt like Yue Yang would be in a grave danger if he went. However, she was unable to sense more clearly what the source of danger was.

Would they really be able to stop the two Great Leaders' Resurrection Ceremony?

Would they make it in time?

Princess Qian Qian's heart was a mess, she couldn't be certain about anything.

Hence, she determinedly refused Yue Yang's idea of going alone.

Even if they could not provide enough help for him, even if their help amounted to nothing, it would still be better than going there alone.

Xue Wu Xia, on the other hand, reacted opposite of Princess Qian Qian. Normally, she would disagree with Yue Yang's opinion. However, at this critical juncture, she had actually showed an unconditional support. She knew that Yue Yang must have his own reason for doing this. Even though he never mentioned his reason, this must definitely be the best idea. If this was not the best choice, he would not choose to do so.

Hence, Xue Wu Xia decided to give him her full support. Moreover, she would help him to persuade the others to support his idea.

What he needed right now was everyone's support.

She suddenly reached out her hands and hugged Yue Yang. With a low voice, she whispered determinedly, "I understand, we will wait here for you!"

Chapter 348 – Xue Wu Xia's Extreme Freezing Power

[Howling Wind Spell] was the nemesis of all aerial beasts.

It was not an Inherent Skill but a special kind of spell. It required a special artifact to be summoned forth.

The wind walls created by the vortex of [Howling Wind Spell] had a strong capability to counter flight. The higher the enemies could fly, the stronger the attraction force of the wind wall and the vortex would be. The wind walls were made from many tornadoes capable of cutting and crushing any object. The most important thing was its mysterious binding power, which was capable of stopping teleportation and transformation to escape.

In short, once someone was trapped inside the [Howling Wind Spell], it would be hard to escape its restraints. Other than the owner who summoned it or someone with immunity to wind powers, everyone else would be affected.

Its sole weakness was that this [Howling Wind Spell] have time limits. After around two hours, it would gradually weaken and disappear.

However, this information wasn't beneficial to Yue Yang.

Yue Yang was in a hurry to go to the Third Palace Hall's "Profound Coffin Room" in order to stop the two great leaders

from resurrecting. Naturally, he could not wait for the Howling Wind Spell to disappear by itself.

“The power of wind, right?” Previously, Yue Yang had already understood ‘Nature’s Heart’. Additionally, he also cultivates the Innate Invisible Sword Qi which was an Innate Martial Art. With these two, he had a unique understanding and comprehension of Life Energy and Elemental Energy compared to other people. The Big Loli had also taught Yue Yang many things. However, he normally did not use wind and earth very much. Instead he used Yang Fire Ability and Yin Water Ability... Right now, the [Howling Wind Spell] in front of him was the best challenge he could get. Despite Yue Yang not being an expert in the power of wind, he wished to experience the secret of subduing the [Howling Wind Spell].

“Hissssss...”

The two Heaven Realm Centipedes had discovered their prey, Yue Yang, who had just came out.

Seeing this, Xue Wu Xia was astounded.

She had noticed a detail that she had not noticed before. The Heaven Realm Centipedes could not find the sealed space just now, but after Yue Yang left the Seven Star Pillar, they immediately discovered Yue Yang’s existence.

Ni Guo and his two comrades, who were hiding on the corner of the Second Palace Hall, had also noticed this. They immediately

came this way and prepared to hide within the safety of the sealed space.

Those few remaining Heaven Realm Warriors also turned around and headed towards the Seven Star Pillars.

One of the Heaven Realm Centipedes quickly chased after them. Its hundred meter long body was as fast as lightning. Its hundreds of legs formed unique rows of leg. Its target was actually the strongest of them, Ni Guo. Like a bullet, its speed increased by ten times. Its mouth with poisonous fangs opened wide and wildly bite towards Ni Guo, who had blue-coloured wings made of mercury yet could not fly.

“Essence.”

Ni Guo grunted.

His entire body suddenly transformed into melted mercury and entered a liquid state.

The poison attack became ineffective towards Ni Guo. The Heaven Realm Centipede then opened its mouth and sucked. It wanted to suck Ni Guo into its stomach. However at the same time Ni Guo's body had become similar to steel. His legs became thorns deeply penetrating the floor and rooting him in place. No matter how strong the Heaven Realm Centipede's suction strength was, it was unable to move his body a single inch. After all, Ni Guo had the strength of an Innate Level 6. If the Heaven Realm Centipede wanted to kill him, it wouldn't be easy.

Very quickly, the Heaven Realm Centipede changed its target.

It immediately chose its second target. This target was not Ni Guo's two Innate Level 5 comrades but a victim who was barely an Innate Level 2.

That person summoned a Gold-ranked Monitor Lizard and merged with it. His body became more than thirty meters long. The Gold-ranked Monitor Lizard's skin was like a shield protecting his entire body. His back, head and four limbs all had sharp thorns protecting them.

A pair of bags under his eyes secreted poisonous blood and stinky juice. If others smell it they would definitely vomit.

However, all these protection methods could not protect his life.

The Heaven Realm Centipede's body jumped with the speed of a meteor. Its huge mouth angrily bit at the Innate Level 2 Heaven Realm Warrior's huge head and injected venom inside.

The victim howled in pain. Other than struggling with all his might, he also shot green poison and red juice on the Heaven Realm Centipede's body hoping to drive it away. The poison and juice combined on the Centipede's hard carapace producing hissing sounds. It had corroded a huge chunk of the carapace. However, this was not able to inflict any fatal injuries. Instead, it greatly angered the Heaven Realm Centipede.

Its numerous legs raised up like long pikes and deeply pierced his huge body.

His hard scales were like tissue paper and were easily penetrated.

In a flash, he had fallen on the ground. Before the poison killed him, the Heaven Realm Centipede had forcefully ripped apart his body. While he was still alive, it had opened its mouth and devoured him. This was truly painful that one would rather die.

The other Heaven Realm Centipede chasing after Yue Yang had encountered a small problem.

The Heaven Realm Centipede who was filled with confidence as it chased after Yue Yang suddenly discovered that this human was extremely fast, much faster than its prediction.

The strangest thing was that this human had actually disappeared in front of the wind wall, as if he wasn't affected by the Howling Wind Spell at all. He completely went beyond its expectation.

Ni Guo didn't care to check up on Yue Yang nor his comrades, he could only care about his own little life first.

At his first chance, he immediately jumped into the sealed space. Even if there were Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian glaring at him like predators, they were much nicer than those two Heaven

Realm Centipedes which could never satisfy their hungers.

“Go out!” Princess Qian Qian knew that the enemy was an Innate Level 6 warrior, but she possessed the Prison Emperor Divine Sword now, hence she had enough confidence to defeat her opponent.

“With just the likes of an Innate Level 1 like you?” Ni Guo snorted in disdain. However, he still gave her some measure because of the Prison Emperor Divine Sword. Without the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, he wouldn’t even glance at Princess Qian Qian. Innate Level 1? To him, he could kill them any time, no matter if they are humans or monsters. In front of him, the Innate Level 6 expert, no Innate Level 1 would be an exception.

“There’s still us...” Xue Wu Xia replied calmly.

She pulled Princess Qian Qian forward, instead of backwards.

Just as Ni Guo was about to attack them and kill them on the spot, a ray of light beam flashed through the whole sealed space.

Ni Guo spread his four wings and extended his tiger arms as he defended against the [Aurora Light].

He activated his Qi protection to protect his body, just like a

“Eh?”

When the [Aurora Light] reached him, Ni Guo discovered that he had completely underestimated the power of this [Aurora Light].

On the surface, this [Aurora Light] didn't look special.

However, when it fell on him, Ni Guo found to his surprise that the [Aurora Light] was ten times denser than normal [Aurora Light], its power was way beyond his imagination... There was a Silver-winged birdman beast that was suddenly summoned by Ni Guo. It carried a great sword in its hands and blocked the [Aurora Light] in front of Ni Guo, its master, using its body to receive the terrifying [Aurora Light] in place of its master.

The [Aurora Light] quickly disappeared, and Ni Guo breathed a sigh of relief.

Fortunately its duration was short. Otherwise he would really suffer a grave wound... He looked at his palm and discovered that his hands, which had the protection of an Innate Level 6 Qi had actually been seriously burnt.

His palm was scorched black, his skin was split open to the point that his bones could be seen.

He had received this damage after the Silver-winged Birdman's protection. Without its protection, his hands would probably be gone!

Ni Guo looked up and checked on his beast, 'Silver Wings'.

He was shocked by what he saw.

The current Silver Wings' body was emitting smoke, its feathers had been completely burnt bald. Its whole body was black, just like a chicken that had been thrown into fire and was burnt half to death before it escaped from the fire.

The great sword that it used to defend its body a little was originally a Silver-ranked weapon, but it had been completely destroyed.

“I'll send you on your way!”

Princess Qian Qian had stored a lot of power. The White Tiger Image appeared above her head.

The Prison Emperor Divine Sword released a blinding flash of golden light that was incomparably bright like the sun.

She slashed down.

A terrifying power that could shake both heaven and earth...

Ni Guo quickly avoided this attack that could easily kill in an instant. Prison Emperor Divine Sword was a Mythical-ranked Weapon after all, even if the wielder wasn't able to fully utilise its

power, it was still not something that could be looked down on! Ni Guo had already avoided far away before the slash reached him. The Sword Qi from the sword slash was even faster than his prediction and closely brushed through his shoulders, creating a huge rift all along the passage inside the sealed space.

If this slash had slashed through Ni Guo's body, he reckoned that even if he used his [Essence] power to recover, he would probably need a long recovery time. During that recovery time, his enemy would probably have enough time to cut his body into millions of pieces.

Although he possessed the power of [Essence], it didn't mean that he had an immortal body.

Even if one possess an immortal body, receiving a direct attack from a Mythical-ranked weapon would definitely cause instant death...

“Do you still have any more moves?” Ni Gou snickered. With just these abilities, how could they possibly think of killing him, an Innate Level 6? Weren't they simply setting their bar too high? If they didn't have the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, these kinds of attacks were useless towards him. Actually, other than that human boy who possessed the World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame whom Ni Guo slightly feared, he didn't care about the others at all. That abnormal human boy had already left, right now, there were only a few weak women left. What could they do? If there was no Prison Emperor Divine Sword, he could definitely slaughter his enemies, including that tenacious and stubborn Old Dragon Turtle who simply couldn't die.

“Stormy Waves!” Yue Yu summoned her Stormy Waves and unleashed a powerful flood.

“Are you trying to make me laugh to my death?” Ni Guo felt that these women had gone crazy. Why are they trying to attack him with water? He wasn’t Huang Sha, what use would water do to him?

“Noisy bastard!”

Xue Wu Xia humphed coldly and raised her hands.

Slowly, she formed an Ancient Rune Circle. On her body, her Freezing Ice Ability exploded.

Behind her, an Ice Giant and an Ice Serpent Demon that had appeared soundlessly joined together to create an even colder atmosphere, supporting Xue Wu Xia’s Yin Ability who was attacking Ni Guo.

Sensing that something was going wrong, Ni Guo immediately flew towards Xue Wu Xia.

He was about to swung his fist forward with all of his strength.

His motive was to kill Xue Wu Xia in an instant with this punch...

However, in that instant where his punch was about to reach Xue Wu Xia, an incomparably strong, extreme Yin Ability froze Ni Guo's body in an instant mercilessly, turning him into an ice statue. This kind of extreme freezing ice power was not even something that Yue Yang could defeat with his Yang Ability, let alone Ni Guo. In this world, other than Nirvana Flame which possess the ultimate heat, no other power could defend against this extreme freezing ice power. Xue Wu Xia who had been hiding her power all along and was waiting for an opportunity to use them finally made her move. The moment she made her move and showed her true strength, within an instant, she managed to take Ni Guo down and sealed him in ice, right on the spot.

If Ni Guo had not underestimated these human girls who were not Innates, he might not be defeated so quickly and so miserably.

The extreme freezing ice ability made Xue Wu Xia possess the strongest power to instantly kill any enemy.

She retreated a few steps back and looked at Ni Guo who was sealed in ice.

The Ice Serpent Demon who was looking at Ni Guo like a predator watching its prey brandished her Dual Blades and slashed through the ice easily, cutting through Ni Guo's chest.

Behind her, there was also Princess Qian Qian who continued to release her White Tiger Strength. The Prison Emperor Divine Sword in her hands flashed brilliantly as it produced a Sword Qi Blade that could split the heaven and earth. It seemed very fast, yet very slow at the same time. This was what flashed through Ni

Guo's thoughts before he lost his vision. The Prison Emperor Divine Sword produced a sword move as beautiful as a meteor shower in the night sky. This beautiful scenery was what flashed through Ni Guo's eyes in his last moments.

Ni Guo's last thoughts were definitely not appreciation towards the beautiful sword move.

Instead, it was the surprise that the [Essence] power in his body, which was invulnerable towards ice and fire, could actually be sealed in ice.

Previously, no one had managed to sealed his power in ice before. However, it was not because his power was invulnerable towards ice, it's just that he had not met someone who possessed the true power of freezing ice.

Unfortunately, he knew the answer too late!

On the entrance of the passage, his two Innate Level 5 comrades were staring dumbfounded. They could not believe their own eyes. This was simply more unimaginable than Feng Shen Shi summoning two Heaven Realm Centipedes to kill his own people.

Ni Guo possessed the 'Essence' power and was only second to Huang Sha in having an unkillable body. However, he was actually easily killed by a human?

Moreover, the one who killed his main force was actually a

human female that had not yet reached Innate Rank?!

Chapter 349 – Resurrection, The Two Great Leaders Of Heaven Realm

If Xue Wu Xia did not possess the extreme freezing ice power, or if Princess Qian Qian didn't have the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, it would be impossible to kill Ni Guo so easily.

Of course, the most important point was that Ni Guo never expected to be killed by a few human girls who were not even Innates.

His [Essence] power which was invulnerable to fire and ice made his body almost immortal.

Never in his thoughts did Ni Guo ever imagined that his life would end so tragically.

Sealed inside the block of ice, he was unable to showcase his strong abilities at all. He did not even manage to struggle at all before he was killed by the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, the Mythical-ranked weapon.

His two Innate Level 5 comrades were panic-stricken. They were also unable to react in time due to their shock. Suddenly, they sensed an impending crisis. Instinctively, they looked up and to their surprise, they found a Stone-element Medusa aiming at them with her bow and arrow... Beside the Stone-element Medusa, there was also a Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon. All of them were saving up their powers and eyed them like predators watching their preys.

Danger!

These beasts were definitely not your normal beasts. If these beasts' sneak attack succeeded, they might even end up like Ni Guo.

A Reaper Mantis was flying in the sky, prepared to attack anytime.

However, in the eyes of these Heaven Realm Warriors, the Reaper Mantis was the weakest one. The beast that made them felt really uneasy and nervous was that girl with fresh flower crown on her head. This kind of humanoid beast, although they didn't know if she could speak, her eyes showed intelligence. She was definitely a Holy Beast. The two Heaven Realm Warriors didn't know what the humanoid beast was called, but they had accidentally seen how this flower girl who looked innocent on the outside had instantly killed a Platinum-ranked Level 8 Giant Pollution Beast with her terrifying strength.

This girl who was as beautiful as fresh flowers was definitely not someone that was easy to deal with. Her strength was extremely powerful. Even the Radiation Mecha Beast which had wrecked havoc everywhere it go could only die pitifully in her hands.

Even the Radiation Mecha Beast couldn't do anything to her.

If they wanted to fight against her, they really didn't know what kind of beast to summon to counter her skills.

It was the first time that the two Heaven Realm Warrior stopped looking down on their enemies and keenly observed their opponents' skills.

In their eyes, there was no need to fear the human girl who looked as gentle as water, the one who summoned the Storm Waves beast. She was the weakest person in this place.

However, that human girl was standing beside another human girl who continued to charge an [Aurora Light] in her hands relentlessly. Hence, they have no choice but to avoid her.

They would definitely die tragically if they were to be hit by the Aurora Light head on.

As for the two girls, the one with the Prison Emperor Divine Sword and the one with extreme freezing ice ability, they were definitely even more difficult to deal with. If they were not careful, the instant kill incident would probably happen again.

They finally understood now why that other human boy with abnormal abilities could leave so easily, completely not worrying about the safety of his comrades. It was really beyond their expectations. Turns out they really couldn't belittle these girls.

If they belittled the girls, the result would be very obvious. Ni Guo, whose body was still frozen on the ground, was a good example.

“Let’s go!” Those two Heaven Realm Warriors would rather fight against those two Goblin Beast Centipedes than have these girls as their enemy. Both beasts and humans all had the power to kill them instantly, it was really unwise to start a fight with them. Furthermore, within the sealed space, there was not enough room to fully utilize their abilities. The moment their enemies release the Aurora Light, they wouldn’t even be able to avoid. They could only face the attack head-on, and that was how Ni Guo met his tragic end just now.

“Water attack!” Xue Wu Xia made a hand movement. If those two Heaven Realm Warriors decided to fight them to death, even if their own side would probably win, they would require a lot of time to kill the two enemies. They have to revise their initial battle plan completely.

Fortunately, their instant kill just now had intimidated those two Heaven Realm Warriors. They decided not to initiate attack and return back to the Second Hall.

This was the turning point of their battle.

Since their enemies had decided to retreat, their next step would be very easy.

The Storm Mermaid blew her Storm Conch once again and summoned a storm rain. Yue Yu’s beast, Storm Waves, added to the momentum and released a huge flood, creating a huge torrent that washed everything towards the Second Hall. It didn’t matter

if it was the Heaven Realm Centipede or the Heaven Realm Warriors, they would definitely die in this huge flood... Speaking about water fights, there were also the Stone-element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon who were experts in water.

Even more, there was also Storm Waves and Xue Wu Xia who possess the extreme freezing ice power.

Even the undying Old Dragon Turtle with high vitality was an expert in water fights.

Meanwhile, at the highest place of the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, the Third Hall.

When Yue Yang entered, he discovered that there was a transparent giant waiting for him in the middle of the hall. That transparent giant seemed to be a little surprised when he saw Yue Yang walking in, “The Howling Wind Spell wasn’t enough to stop you?”

“Let’s start the fight and stop talking nonsense.” Yue Yang felt that there wasn’t much time, he had to finish the fight quickly. Otherwise, when the two great leaders of the Heaven Realm resurrected, he would have to escape.

“Don’t you just want to acquire the Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Divine Seal? If you have the ability to do so, just try it! I won’t stop you!” Feng Shen Shi whose body was completely transparent suddenly smiled in a strange manner. He then continued, “Walk

around a hundred metres forward, then turn left and enter the Inner Hall. Walk another ten metres, and under the Prison Emperor Statue, there will be the entrance to the Profound Coffin Room. The Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Divine Seal are all inside.”

“...” Yue Yang’s heart dropped a little as he listened.

This Feng Shen Shi sounded so confident. Could it be that the resurrection of the two great leaders were no longer avoidable?

The thing that made Yue Yang had a bad feeling was that Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was fighting against Lei Shen Shi had disappeared. Where was she now? Previously he could still hear the sounds of them fighting, but right now it was completely quiet. Was she defeated?

What actually happened during this period of time?

Although Lei Shen Shi was strong, Phoenix Fairy Beauty was definitely not weak.

Previously she possessed the strength of an Innate level 10. After re-cultivation, Phoenix Fairy Beauty had ranked down to Innate Level 9, but she experienced a complete fundamental change that caused her powers to increase instead of decrease.

Even if Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi joined hands and attacked her together, Phoenix Fairy Beauty wouldn’t be defeated

so easily. Could it be that the two great leaders of the Heaven Realm had already succeeded breaking free of the seal and resurrected? When Yue Yang thought about this, he immediately break out in cold sweat. Ming Ri Hao said that there was still an hour, but Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi were not fools. Maybe they did something in order to hasten the resurrection of the two great leaders of the Heaven Realm...

Of course, Yue Yang was not someone that could easily be intimidated.

Yue Yang teleported and entered the Inner Hall straight away, rushing straight towards the Profound Coffin Room.

Inside the Profound Coffin Room, brilliant light was shining all around. Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was holding a pearl in her hand was summoning Sealing Runes incessantly, attempting to fight against the two black figures in front of her.

Lei Shen Shi was nowhere to be found... Those two black figures were leaning out from crystal coffins, half of their bodies were still inside the crystal coffins. The black figure on the left reached out his hands and easily defended against Phoenix Fairy Beauty's sealing ability. If it wasn't for the Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Divine Seal holding them down with an incomparably powerful strength, the two black figures would probably already be free. Without the Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Divine Seal, the two black figures wouldn't even take the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's sealing into account.

"What is happening here?" Yue Yang didn't understand at all.

How could things end up this way, how did the two great leaders resurrect earlier?

“Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi sacrificed their strength to resurrect these two fellows earlier. I waited for such a long time for you. Why did you only arrive now?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was a little weak when she said this, it was obvious that she was fatigued. She had been holding on on her own for far too long, every second was excruciatingly exhausting for her.

“But Feng Shen Shi is still outside!” Yue Yang was even more confused when he heard her.

“It’s his soul. Feng Shen Shi and Lei Shen Shi only had their souls left, they have sacrificed their true bodies. Didn’t you see that they are not attacking back? They have no more fighting power left, they only have their soul strength left. I can’t hold on much longer, think of a way, quick!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty threw the crisis over to Yue Yang. The two great leaders were about to break free, what could they do?

“The situation has already turn this bad, what do you mean think of a way? We should quickly escape this place!” Yue Yang pulled Phoenix Fairy Beauty and hurriedly started running away.

Forcing the battle would only result in their deaths.

Maybe if they forced themselves, they could slightly delay the two great leaders from breaking free. But they had already awakened now, so whatever they did would be useless.

Without Phoenix Fairy Beauty suppressing them, the two black figures whose faces weren't clear immediately won against the Prison Emperor's sealing power. They were quickly breaking free of the Prison Emperor Divine Staff and Divine Seal.

Prison Emperor Divine Staff released a blinding burst of light, like a sun.

However, the Prison Emperor Divine Seal which was suppressing the crystal coffins from above was still being pushed away by the two black figures, slowly but steadily.

The lids of the crystal coffins suddenly broke open and rolled on the ground. The Prison Emperor Divine Seal's golden light turned darker as it continued to float in the air, but its suppressing power had been greatly decreased. The two black figures' seal had been decreased to the minimum. The Prison Emperor Divine Staff started to shine even more brightly. White light shone out, as sharp as swords, attacking the two black figures, forcing them to join hands and protect each other, enduring the pain... When the white light shining out from the Prison Emperor Divine Staff shone onto the two black figures' bodies, they started to melt. However, these were not mortal wounds. It could only obstruct and prevent the two black figures from breaking free.

"Sealed for six thousand years. Prison Emperor, you are really a terrifying opponent. I will never forget the miserable defeat this time." The black figure on the left sighed with an immeasurable relief as he moved his left foot out of the crystal coffin.

“...” The black figure on the right didn’t say anything. He only bowed respectfully towards the first black figure with the Innate Bow, showing his respect.

There was another crystal coffin, which was supposed to be the Prison Emperor’s coffin.

However, there was nothing inside the coffin.

Prison Emperor’s body and soul had already turned into Sealing Power and Sealing Will. He had already died six thousand years ago.

As Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty ran and escaped out of the Third Hall, they met Feng Shen Shi whose body was completely transparent. He sneered coldly at them, before he respectfully kneeled on the ground. This was because right behind Yue Yang, the two black figures had already chased after them. The black figure on the left had shown his true appearance. He was a pretty boy with golden hair, blue eyes and skin as white as snow. He wore a white robe that looked as white as the clouds in the sky.

There was a halo on his head that was spinning around slowly.

There was a unique Ancient Rune on his forehead that showed his unique identity as one of the great leaders of the Heaven Realm.

Countless white light shone from his back, spreading out just like

a pair of wings. Slowly, it continued to spread outwards, emitting a pure and holy power that made others feel inferior from its strength.

His hands that was even whiter than a girl's hand held an incomparably beautiful and majestic-looking Divine Trident. There were precious stones embedded on it. Numerous Ancient Runes and Heaven Runes were also engraved on it. They were shining brightly like stars.

Below the white robes, the man was barefooted. However, his feet didn't get dirty even after stepping onto the Third Hall's grounds.

When he walked a step forward, bright light would appear on the ground, completely cleansing the place where his feet was about to tread on...

This great leader of the Heaven Realm who had just resurrected ignored his subordinates, Feng Shen Shi's respectful welcome, and looked towards Yue Yang with a slightly smiling gaze instead. With an extremely beautiful, heavenly voice, he slowly spoke towards Yue Yang and the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, "Don't be afraid, young human warriors, I will not kill you. Although killing you are easier than stomping on a small ant, I don't have any intention of hurting weak lives. That way doesn't suit my status. Just answer three of my questions, and I will allow you to leave."

"Look, this is my answer!" Yue Yang raised his middle finger. This was his answer.

Chapter 350 – Opponent With Terrifying Abilities

“Is that a hand gesture to insult us? Wow, this is the first time I met someone who dared to resist and insult me. Interesting!” That Heaven Realm Great Leader who wore a white robe wasn’t angry, he smiled widely instead, “Even if they are enemies, I won’t be angry because they have such a great dignity and personality.”

The black figure on the left revealed his appearance. He was like a black hole, he possessed a body that sucked in all the light all around him.

He looked like a black whirlpool.

He stood quietly on the right side.

He did not say anything at all.

Even when Yue Yang used his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he was unable to see through his true appearance and level.

However, the sense of danger that he gave Yue Yang was not any less than that Heaven Realm Great Leader who wore a white robe and wield a Divine Trident. His power might even be more than the Great Leader who wore a white robe.

“Ming Yue Guang is really clever. Did she leave already? I knew

it, she will never let us awaken faster than herself.” That Heaven Realm Great Leader who wield a Divine Trident sighed. Feng Shen Shi quickly replied him, “My Lord, Ming Ri Hao has joined with the enemies and formed an alliance with this human boy in front of you. He strengthened your seals with blood sacrifice and asked this boy to pull out the Prison Emperor Divine Sword at the same time. Ming Yue Guang has left half an hour ago. If it wasn’t for Ming Ri Hao betraying us, Ming Yue Guang would never be the first to awaken.”

“Although you and Lei Shen Shi are a little stronger than Ming Ri Hao in terms of fighting skills, when it comes to strategies, Ming Ri Hao is still better than you guys. If it were others, would they even thought of the brilliant plan to join the enemies and pull out the sword?” The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident first praised Ming Ri Hao with a gentle voice. Then, he suddenly sighed in a low voice, “Although I don’t get along well with Ming Yue Guang, and that we might even be after each other’s necks, she was still one of the Heaven Realm Three Great Leaders. You, you have to respect her. Only a true warrior would be able to respect their enemy who has more power and higher status than them. Listen well, I won’t say these words twice. In the future, if I hear you insult Ming Yue Guang’s name again, I will kill you immediately!”

“Yes!” Feng Shen Shi broke into cold sweat and trembled violently in fear. He hurriedly knelt deeply, prostrating himself.

“...” Yue Yang frowned. He suddenly had a thought that this Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident was quite awesome.

Possessing an extremely strong power, he was not only able to tolerate his enemy's provocation, he could also strictly manage his subordinates. He could even respect his enemies. This was definitely not an attitude of someone that was ordinary.

Seems like this fellow had indeed lived up to his reputation as one of the Three Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty pulled Yue Yang lightly to signal to him to stop watching them and start attacking instead. Otherwise, they could also escape quickly. It was not a good idea to simply stand still like this.

Yue Yang nodded slightly, showing that he understood her.

However, his next action was still quietly observing them.

In reality, he was extremely anxious. The more time passed, the more the two Great Leaders would recover a part of their powers.

After these two Great Leaders left the Profound Coffin Room, they were actually quite similar to Ming Yue Guang, they were extremely weak because they had just come out for the sealed crystal coffin.

Of course, this kind of 'weak' was relative. Even if these two Great Leaders only possessed one percent of their true strength, they would not be opponents that Yue Yang could defeat at this stage. There was no use in becoming anxious. Yue Yang suppressed

his wildly beating heart and observed his opponents' speech and behaviour with a cold heart. Both running away and making a move was unwise, he must find his enemies' weaknesses.

Otherwise, this battle would end in a meaningless defeat.

“You could pull out the Prison Emperor Divine Sword? You, you are strange indeed. Although Ming Yue Guang might not kill you, she will definitely take you captive. I believe her eyesight wouldn't be inferior to mine, how could she let such an interesting human like you go so easily?” The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident looked at Yue Yang. He slightly frowned his brows, as if he was thinking about something.

“My Lord, he has pulled the Prison Emperor Divine Sword indeed. Your servant has seen it with his own eyes. He used a strange-looking pearl and increased his Emperor's Qi greatly, pulling the Prison Emperor Divine Sword that was originally resisting him smoothly afterwards.” Feng Shen Shi reported quickly.

“Did you use artefacts to increase your strength? Good idea!” The Heaven Realm Great Leader who wore a white robe nodded towards Yue Yang and said, “You are smarter than I thought.”

“Hmm, let me guess you too!” Yue Yang suddenly spoke out, “I think you, who are extremely powerful, is unable to leave the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, that's why you are having ideas on us. Sorry to break your bubble, let me tell you the true answer, we are also unable to live the Prison Emperor Divine Palace... After hearing this answer, as the Great Leader of the Heaven Realm, are

you very disappointed?”

“No, I have never worried about not being able to leave the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.” The Great Leader of the Heaven Realm who wield a Divine Trident laughed out, “Honestly, the thing I am most worried about is whether Ming Yue Guang would set up an ambush when I get back to the Heaven Realm. So, I must make a little preparation in advance.”

“Does your preparation has anything to do with me?” Yue Yang asked.

“No, but I’m a little curious. Why would Ming Yue Guang leave you alone? If she wanted to capture you, a human boy, it would be very easy. She is probably doing it on purpose to make me guess you out and waste my time. Or did you have some kind of tricks up your sleeve that makes her afraid to attack you?” When the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident said this, Yue Yang’s heart calmed down a lot.

The Heaven Realm Great Leader was indeed powerful, although he was hiding his Qi, his enemy was able to see something was not right.

Most importantly, an enemy who liked to analyse others was the most troublesome.

This kind of enemy was definitely the most formidable ones!

As one of the three Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm, he possessed such an immense power, yet he was still cautious and sensitive to signs. He also analysed his opponents repeatedly. It's not a good idea to provoke this fellow, they would just be a headache.

If they had no other way, Yue Yang would never start a fight with this enemy. Especially when their enemy found out that Yue Yang had not fully grown yet. They would definitely be at a disadvantage the moment they start fighting.

Yue Yang could definitely not reveal any weakness to these enemies. This Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident was extremely strong, but he didn't have 'Moon Eyes' like Ming Yue Guang, so he must not be able to see through the strength that Yue Yang was hiding. He only had a brain that would continuously analyse, make inferences and a cautious personality. He would definitely analyse whatever reaction or expression that Yue Yang made.

"You are not our match. You are not even as strong as Feng Shen Shi. However, you are fearless, this is definitely not because you are gutsy. Inside you, there is a special kind of ability that have the power to resist us." The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident concluded as such.

"Congratulations, you have assumed correctly." Yue Yang praised him greatly.

"Maybe I have guessed wrongly, but I don't think that I missed the mark by a huge margin. Young human, you have hidden your

abilities very deeply. At your age, you shouldn't be able to possess so much power. This proved that you are some kind of special existence. Furthermore, that human female beside you who has almost reached the rank of 'Heaven Level 1' is actually listening to you, following your lead, who is merely an 'Earth Level 1'. This must not because of the Soaring Dragon Continent's tradition of women submitting to men, it must be because your hidden true abilities far surpassed hers. Hence, she, who had fully understood the depths of your power, followed you without question..." When the Heaven Realm Great Leader said this, Phoenix Fairy Beauty's heart skipped a beat.

This fellow was simply too clever.

With just a simple observation, he was able to conclude so many things.

Fortunately, he had awakened late. Had he awakened a little bit earlier and watched Yue Yang's fight, he might even manage to guess their final plan.

Yue Yang held Phoenix Fairy Beauty's hand, smiling slightly.

Their enemies were extremely strong and clever. However, this difficult challenge had actually spurred Yue Yang's fighting spirit. Although it looked impossible to defeat their enemies on the surface, so what? Although Boss Monsters were difficult to fight against, why do people fight over one another to challenge the Boss Monsters? The reason was because Boss Monsters were more challenging, more exciting and more satisfying to fight than normal mobs!

Only by defeating these kind of enemies would one feel satisfied!

Yue Yang took a deep breath.

The pressure that he originally kept feeling inside his heart was finally gone.

After entering the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, it was the first time he revealed a relaxed expression. He said, “Since I possess some kind of special power that you couldn’t figure out, what do you plan to do?”

“It’s quite a difficult situation. Ming Yue Guang have left the difficult decision on what to do with you to me.” The Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident frowned. “If I didn’t try anything and let you go just like that, it felt kind of regretful. However, if I make my move recklessly, it may result in a result that is beyond my expectations. If that happened, I will really fall into Ming Yue Guang’s trap.”

“My Lord, this young human possessed Nirvana Flames and World Exterminating Wheel. Ming Ri Hao decided to form an alliance with him because of those abilities.” Feng Shen Shi dutifully reported to the Heaven Realm Great Leader.

“Is that so?” The Heaven Realm Great Leader nodded, “Possessing Nirvana Flames means you have an immortal body. As for the World Exterminating Wheel, what a great temptation! I have always longed to know the Ancient Rune for World

Exterminating Wheel... Dangerous, under this circumstances, Ming Yue Guang had actually left you to me... Did she think I will die under Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel? I have to think about it carefully. Young one, I can't deny my wish to try and steal the World Exterminating Wheel Ancient Rune from you. If I didn't try at least, I won't rest easy... In the face of temptations, how can we not feel any desire or greed? If you don't want me to kill you, then prove to me that you are an outstanding warrior, someone who deserve to possess the 'World Exterminating Wheel'. As for Nirvana Flame, that is not something that anyone can steal, hence I won't hope for it."

"Alright then, I am also thinking of fighting with you." Yue Yang suppressed the nervousness in his heart and squeezed Phoenix Fairy Beauty's hands a little, signalling her to stay back.

"..." Phoenix Fairy Beauty squeezed his hand too. Her hand was a little moist as she broke out in cold sweat.

It was obvious that she was extremely worried for him.

He was obviously not even Feng Shen Shi's opponent, now he wanted to fight the Heaven Realm Great Leader who was a hundred times stronger than Feng Shen Shi. His opponent even had a Divine Weapon. If Phoenix Fairy Beauty said that she wasn't worried, it would be a blatant lie.

However, she understood and respected Yue Yang's decision.

This battle, she would not stop him. However, she would also not

leave, she would use her utmost strength to protect him!

Unless that Heaven Realm Great Leader who wielded a Divine Trident killed her altogether with Yue Yang.

Otherwise, he can stop thinking that he will have his way.

The second Heaven Realm Great Leader who had been standing on the right side quietly since before suddenly turned towards his comrade. It looked like he said something. Soundlessly, he interacted only with his comrade with Thought Waves. Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty was unable to hear anything. According to their reactions and expressions, Yue Yang could conclude that this Heaven Realm Great Leader who looked like a black hole and had not revealed his appearance seemed to disagree with starting the battle.

However, after his comrade, the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident continued to insist repeatedly, he finally agreed.

The black hole fellow ‘looked’ towards Yue Yang.

Yue Yang immediately felt as if he was being X-rayed. He hurriedly hid all of his abilities and quietly summoned his Gold Grimoire, pretending all “I’m very weak please don’t hit me”, trying to trick his enemy.

Showing all of your abilities before PK-ing with your enemy is

the most foolish behaviour.

Yue Yang must be able to give a surprise attack in order to get a little bit of advantage.

‘Forcing against the odds’, forget about other people, even Yue Yang might not be successful... His opponent was one of the three Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm, forcing himself against the odds was simply equivalent to seeking death!

“Reveal your true strength!” The Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident said calmly. Suddenly, he appeared in front of Yue Yang. Before Yue Yang could even react, he reached out his hand and went through Yue Yang’s protective shield. He touched Yue Yang’s face immediately and released his Qi, sending Yue Yang flying a hundred metres back. Yue Yang collided and broke through three giant pillars, smashing hard on the walls of the Prison Emperor Divine Palace. Only then did the impact from the Heaven Realm Great Leader’s attack finally stopped.

“...” Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was right beside Yue Yang previously, could only stare in shock. She simply couldn’t believe their enemy’s attack speed.

This kind of speed is beyond logical.

Even though she and Yue Yang was already prepared beforehand, they couldn’t keep up with the Heaven Realm Great Leader at all.

Heavens, this was actually still the ‘weakened’ Heaven Realm Great Leader who had just broken free from his seal. If they were at their peak condition, wouldn’t they be nightmares then?

Chapter 351 – Life Combustion

Boom!

The walls crumbled and broke into pieces.

Yue Yang who had been knocked out on the ground just a few moments ago suddenly disappeared. He appeared behind the Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident with Hui Jin Magic Blade in his hands which was blazing with the flames from his Yang Ability. He slashed down ferociously with a courageous, vigorous ‘First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash’.

“You don’t have enough strength, and your speed is just so-so,” the Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident turned into a shadow and disappeared.

Within the same second, he re-appeared right behind Yue Yang.

His palm touched Yue Yang’s body.

Yue Yang felt like a Giant Mammoth had just collided against his body. His body was sent flying in the air, rolling wildly.

Yue Yang tried hard to gain control of his body in air. When his body was about to crash onto the ground, he swung his Hui Jin Magic Blade momentarily to decrease the impact of his crash. This also caused his body to slide back and avoid his enemy’s terrifying attack. After creating a huge split of almost a hundred metres on

the ground, Yue Yang stopped his sliding body and charged forward towards the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident the second time. This time, he had not only hold the Yang Ability-infused Hui Jin Magic Blade, he was also holding his Crescent Blade which was infused with his Yin Ability.

In the air, he formed a mysterious-looking Yin and Yang Circle.

Ice and fire revolved and mixed together inside the circle, quickly yet slowly.

That Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident's eyes glinted. He didn't avoid the attack, instead, he raised his hands which was as white as a girl's.

With this right hand, he stopped Yue Yang's Fire and Ice Power Slash.

No matter if it was the Crescent Moon that was incomparably sharp or the Hui Jin Magic Blade which had continued to grow together with Yue Yang all this while, both were unable to harm that tender, snow white right hand. Yue Yang was not even able to nick the enemy's hand. The enemy had easily stopped this 'Second Slash: Heaven and Earth Collapse attack which could easily kill a Lower Innate in an instant, with only the minimum protection power of his body.

"Your abilities shouldn't be this low." The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident shook his right hand a little.

“Boom!”

A ray of white light flashed and immediately reflected the Crescent Moon Blade and the Hui Jin Magic Blade in Yue Yang's hand away. Yue Yang who was holding his weapons tightly was actually injured with multiple lacerations on his skin by this ray of light.

Yue Yang staggered a few steps back and gritted his teeth, charging forward once again.

Heaven Runes and Ancient Runes formed in his hands.

It was dazzling like the brilliance of Milky Way.

In the end, it formed World Exterminating Wheel. With a world exterminating, unstoppable power, it charged towards the Heaven Realm Great Leader.

Before this, no one had dared to stop the World Exterminating Wheel head on before. The Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian, Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, Great Demon King Baruth and so on were all enemies much stronger than Yue Yang, but against the World Exterminating Wheel, they could only avoid it and retreat. None of them dared to stop Yue Yang's World Exterminating Wheel head on. The World Exterminating Wheel was not something that could be stopped with brute force alone. It represented destruction, any living being that came into contact with it would definitely be destroyed. The only exception was Yue Yang, its user, the only person capable of controlling the World

Exterminating Wheel.

“Steal.” When the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident saw it, he was not shocked. Instead, he looked excited.

It was as if he was waiting for Yue Yang to unleash his World Exterminating Wheel.

His opened, empty hand made a pushing down, capturing movement.

Then he pulled his hand inwards.

That unstoppable World Exterminating Wheel which was capable of destroying every single living being immediately flew towards his right hand.

The World Exterminating Wheel that was flying in the air, spinning quickly, stopped in the middle of the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident's hand. It spinned even more quickly, but it was unable to move forward at all.

Behind that Heaven Realm Great Leader, his innumerable white wings which was shining brightly magically turned into long ropes of light. They reached out forward as if they were living things, like an octopus capturing its prey. Uncountable ropes of light surrounded the World Exterminating Wheel which was still spinning quickly.

The Heaven Runes located on the outer surface of the World Exterminating Wheel seemed to be unable to damage those ropes of light.

It was enveloped by the long ropes of light instead.

This kind of strange scene was not something that Yue Yang, or even Phoenix Fairy Beauty had ever seen before. She heard about the 'Steal' Rune before, and knew that some strong warriors was especially good in stealing other people's Runes. However, Phoenix Fairy Beauty had really never seen someone stealing Runes by using ropes of light filled with energy like this. Looking at the layers of Heaven Rune Circles being dismantled one by one, Phoenix Fairy Beauty's heart fell... Could it be that this Heaven Realm Great Leader was really that strong, that even the World Exterminating Wheel couldn't do anything to him?

Yue Yang was about to charge forward and unleash an Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

Suddenly, the Immemorial Rune in the middle of the World Exterminating Wheel appeared after it was unwrapped from the layers of Runes.

Bright light flashed.

The Ancient Rune surrounding the Immemorial Rune immediately emitted an immense burst of power and an extremely dazzling flash of light. The ropes of light coming out from the back of the Heaven Realm Great Leader were immediately severed.

Furthermore, they were absorbed by the Immemorial Rune Circle in the middle that had been continuously spinning. The Heaven Runes that were taken captive previously returned one by one, combining once again into a firmer, more complex combination.

Yue Yang discovered with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision that the World Exterminating Wheel seemed to have unlocked a new ability. He also discovered that it was now able to fully display its full strength.

Its destructive power increased by a hundred times.

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident which was extremely strong and calm immediately took back his hand and bent backwards, avoiding the World Exterminating Wheel's attack... As the World Exterminating Wheel broke down to pieces and return to Yue Yang's body, the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident looked at Yue Yang with a deep gaze.

His right hand which had been cut by the World Exterminating Wheel bled a little. He mumbled to himself, "There's actually an Immemorial Rune inside the World Exterminating Wheel!"

The Heaven Realm Great Leader who never spoke at all from the start, whose body was like a black hole, suddenly emitted a special kind of wave.

He seemed to be trying to communicate with his comrade, the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident.

“Yes, this is the real World Exterminating Wheel. It is the World Exterminating Wheel from the legends which have the power to destroy everything in this world. Turns out it looked like this. I am really getting a little jealous. Why would a mere human boy possess the true World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame? He is really blessed with good fortune. Even Ming Yue Guang and the two of us, who are renowned as the Three Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm, do not possess those skills... There are only 36 Immemorial Runes, and one of them actually appeared in front of me. It’s a pity that I couldn’t stole it. This is definitely my life’s biggest regret.” The Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident nodded towards his comrade and sighed heavily.

“Come towards me!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt that Yue Yang shouldn’t attack them anymore. If this continues, the opponent might get jealous of him and decided to kill him for real.

“With your abilities, it’s a miracle if you managed to hurt me. Of course, with the World Exterminating Wheel, it is quite reasonable that you managed to hurt my body. What a paradox! Try showing your Nirvana Flame, although I can’t steal it away, I have never seen it before. I will feel regretful if I don’t see it at least once in my life.” The Heaven Realm Great Leader’s expressions returned to normal.

“As you wish.” Yue Yang formed Nirvana Flames in both of his hands and charged straight towards his opponent.

“Two clusters of Nirvana Flames? That is more than my expectations!” The Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident reached out his right hand and stopped Yue Yang’s

punches easily.

Yue Yang was pushed back.

As for the Heaven Realm Great Leader, he observed his right hand with a curious expression. Nirvana Flame continued to burn on his fingers where his fist met with Yue Yang's.

No matter how much power he exerted, he was unable to extinguish the Nirvana Flame completely.

Nirvana Flames possessed the power to burn and purify every single thing in the world. It was even more powerful than the World Exterminating Wheel, who could only destroy and did not possess the power of rebirth.

That Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident slid his right hand across his Divine Trident, and immediately cut a slice of flesh.

He cut the piece of flesh burning with Nirvana Flame away.

His wounded finger was quickly healed to normal. When Yue Yang finally steadied himself, the wound on the Heaven Realm Great Leader's right hand had already closed, as if it had never been wounded before.

“Fortunately you have not mastered the ability to control Nirvana Flame from afar. Otherwise, I will be really miserable.”

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident muttered a little, then asked Yue Yang, “Do you have anymore strong abilities? I can feel that you are still holding yourself back. Even if you are not my match, I can feel that you are still hiding something. Young human, I really respect your resolution. Even in this kind of situation, you are still maintaining your fighting spirit. You even have the intention to kill me... Counting the Prison Emperor, you are the second human I met with so much courage, insight, and the guts to fight me!”

“I still have a stronger ability, do you want to try?” A deep killing intent flashed upon Yue Yang’s eyes.

His enemies were strong, they were strong beyond his imagination.

Even if he forced himself to fight him, he wouldn’t be able to kill his enemies.

There were even two Heaven Realm Great Leaders, the moment one of them was in critical situation, they would definitely join together to attack.

The combined power of the two Great Leaders would not be something that could be overcome with brute force and fighting spirit.

The only way was to continue fighting and find out their opponents’ weakness during the fight. Before they manage to find their opponents’ weakness, it would be a joke if they said they

wanted to kill such a strong enemy like these Heaven Realm Great Leaders.

If it was another person, fighting against such a frightening Heaven Realm Great Leader, they would have fallen into despair long ago.

However, right now, in Yue Yang's heart, there wasn't fear at all. Instead, he felt strangely excited, he felt an excitement that could only be experienced by challenging a strong enemy.

A manly man would grow stronger when they met difficulties... He had already slowly managed to catch up with his previous targets, the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei Shun Tian and the Thousand Goblin Sect. Yue Yang had stopped using them as his goal since long ago. The current Yue Yang already had a new target, and that was the Heaven Realm Great Leader, who was much stronger and wiser than Shun Tian and the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader.

Yue Yang felt that as long as he found the opponents' weakness, he would still have a chance to kill his enemies.

There were many ways to kill their enemies. Nirvana Flame, World Exterminating Wheel and there was even the Innate Invisible Sword Qi. The only problem was how to find the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident's weakness. Where in the world was his weakness actually?

Everyone has a weakness.

Some would have many, some would have less. Some people's weakness were more obvious, some were hidden deep.

For example, this Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident's weakness was hidden really deep. From the surface, he didn't look like he had any weakness, as if he was a perfect existence.

However, Yue Yang knew he had a weakness.

No one in this world was without any weakness, this includes the three Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm.

Yue Yang had been observing with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision since he started fighting, thinking hard about how to his enemy's weakness. He felt that he was about to find it. Some kind of feeling surfaced inside his heart, that as long as he continued to fight, he would be able to find his enemy's weakness very soon.

“Young human warrior, do you think I will foolishly wait for you to release all of your strength?” The Heaven Realm Great Leader laughed out loud.

“Thud....”

Yue Yang who was about to attack once again fell on the ground with a thud, falling into a deep sleep.

He had been hypnotised to sleep.

Originally, with Yue Yang's mental strength and abilities, no one in Soaring Dragon Continent was able to hypnotise him. However, in front of this Heaven Realm Great Leader, he had actually been hypnotised without him realizing it. He was sleeping soundlessly, like a defenseless, powerless baby.

On the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident's right hand, there was a small chain bracelet.

On top of it, there was a light green pearl.

It broke into pieces soundlessly and become fragments, slowly disappearing into the air.

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident turned around and looked towards Phoenix Fairy Beauty, "You don't seem to be worried about his life? Could you tell me why?"

"He possess Nirvana Flame, so he had an immortal body. Why would I be afraid?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked towards Yue Yang. There was a gentleness that was rarely seen on her expression.

"No, that is not the real answer." That Heaven Realm Great Leader didn't agree.

"Alright then, I'll tell you the real answer. The real answer is that I am going to make my move. Unless I die, don't even think of

killing him.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s gaze slowly became more resolute. Watching the Heaven Realm Great Leader intently, she humphed, “I’m not the Prison Emperor, so I don’t have the power to seal you. However, don’t ever look down on human warriors other than the Prison Emperor... Otherwise, I might be able to kill you!”

“Did I hear correctly?” That Heaven Realm Great Leader didn’t mock her, his voice carried a little curiosity.

“There is a kind of summoning skill that can only be used once in our lives.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty suddenly revealed a slight smile, “It just happen that I knew this kind of summoning skill which requires sacrifice!”

“Life Combustion?” The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident’s expression turned serious.

“The correct answer is actually a Hundredfold Life Combustion!” The moment Phoenix Fairy Beauty finished, that Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident whose face had always been calm and unperturbed was actually disturbed...

Phoenix Fairy Beauty took a deep breath and started summoning.

Chapter 352 – Second Berserk Transformation

Phoenix Fairy Beauty started chanting a special kind of chant with an extremely soft voice, faintly discernible.

However, the chant's true power resonated from the bottom of her heart.

When Phoenix Fairy beauty started chanting the Summoning Chant that could activate Hundredfold Life Combustion, a skill that will greatly increase one's fighting power, everyone's soul seemed to be struck by thunder. Her voice echoed continuously.

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident showed a grave expression.

It was the first time he made a defensive gesture.

He put his right hand in front of his chest, protecting himself.

A grimoire appeared and floated into the air together with Phoenix Fairy Beauty, its master, ascending dozens of metres into the sky.

Countless Heaven Runes sprung out from the grimoire, magically floating around with the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's hands. One by one, they formed mysterious-looking Rune Circles, complementing

one another, combining with each other. When the Heaven Realm Great Leader saw this, his face immediately changed. He could see it now, his enemy was not faking him, she definitely have the power of Life Combustion that could increase her strength by a hundred times...

This was a summoning skill that not even a Heaven Realm Warrior would have.

Some Heaven Rune started to explode.

The Rune Circles broke apart.

A golden light pillar erupted from the summoning grimoire, rising up to the sky, enveloping Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body completely.

Boom!

That energy she was emitting was like a tsunami that could engulf the whole world.

It was like a volcano eruption. A loud explosion resounded throughout the surroundings.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body had now unified with her Guardian Beast.

A pair of purple demon wings rapidly grew out from her back. It was extremely long, almost ten metres. On the wings, Heaven Runes blinked and formed into Heaven Rune Circles. On the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's beautiful bottom, a hole formed on her skirt as a long, thorny tail grew out from her butt. Adorable demon horns which curved upwards grew out from her head. It looked beautiful and did not seem evil at all. On the opposite, it made her look extremely seductive and tempting. Her ten beautiful fingernails which were dabbed in balsam flower oil also started growing longer, turning into purple-coloured demon claws.

(Shiro: Just FYI...So Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Chinese name is 凤仙美人, which literally meant Phoenix (凤), Fairy/Immortal(仙), Beauty(美人). But in Chinese, the same word can have different meaning based on how it is combined with other words. Today I learnt that Balsam Flower is called 凤仙花. So Phoenix Fairy Beauty's name could also be translated as Balsam Beauty)

At the same time, another thing that changed was Phoenix Fairy Beauty's pupils. Both of her eyes had turned deep purple.

Even with her eyes half closed, she already looked extremely charming and beautiful.

When those eyelashes moved and her eyes completely opened, a pair of majestic, cold demonic pupils were revealed.

Even the golden pillar was unable to conceal the energy that she was emitting. A beautiful dark purple, magenta and light purple-coloured ring of light which was made from Heaven Rune Circles and an Ancient Rune as its core was formed, perfectly and ingeniously combining together, surrounding the Phoenix Fairy

Beauty's body.

This special sight happened before when Phoenix Fairy Beauty levelled up to Innate Level 10 before.

However, the energy at that time wasn't as strong and intense as this time.

"Ahh..."

Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was placing her hands on the grimoire suddenly shouted out loudly.

The whole Prison Emperor Divine Palace trembled.

Her body was slightly trembling, as if she was enduring a great deal of pain.

The level of energy increased rapidly... at first it was only twice of her energy, but very quickly, it rose to 5 times, 10 times...

When the Heaven Realm Great Leader saw how Phoenix Fairy Beauty's strength increased like crazy with her Life Combustion, he couldn't help feeling a chill down his spine. He felt that human warriors were not very strong, other than Prison Emperor, he really had never seen anyone capable of giving him a mortal wound. However, it couldn't be denied that a lot of human warriors were dead stubborn. They would rather die and battle until the end, using Self-Detonation or Life Combustion that

offered their life energy as sacrifice to kill their enemies, completely disregarding their own lives.

This kind of sacrificial spirit was something that was rarely seen amongst the Heaven Realm Warrior.

Other than their own clan or sect members, Heaven Realm Warriors would not sacrifice themselves for others.

As for humans, most people didn't even know what they were fighting for. Sometimes human might even sacrifice their lives for a stranger or a friend they were not very close with. They might even be willing to sacrifice their lives for enemies they disliked last time.

Humans were really difficult to understand. The Heaven Realm Great Leader couldn't understand them even after thousands of years.

While the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident pondered about this, Phoenix Fairy Beauty's energy continued to increase.

“Ouch!”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty spurted blood from her mouth that splattered onto her grimoire.

Her body was ignited with purple flame.

There was an Ancient Rune that surfaced on Phoenix Fairy Beauty's head. As that Ancient Rune lighted up, Phoenix Fairy Beauty's strength increased greatly.

Right now, her strength had reached twenty times stronger.

Furthermore, it was still increasing until thirty times...

A tornado-like energy surrounded Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body like crazy. Even the golden pillar that was emitted by her grimoire was twisted around by this tornado-like energy. The moment she break through her one hundred years bottleneck, when Phoenix Fairy Beauty levelled up to Innate Level 10 and stepped into a whole new realm, her powers had already transcended the ordinary realm. After rebirthing to a new life with Yue Yang's Nirvana Flame, Phoenix Fairy Beauty had benefited even more. She had down-levelled to Innate Level 9 from Innate Level 10, but her strength increased instead of decreased, because it was like her energy was purified by the Nirvana Flame, causing a fundamental change with her energy... With the Life Combustion summoning skill, her energy exploded once again!

Although she had not reached the level of a hundred times, the Heaven Realm Great Leader didn't suspect her anymore.

"You are crazy. I don't have any intention of killing you." He looked up to Phoenix Fairy Beauty in the sky and suppressed the anxiousness in his mind as he called out to her.

“Are you trying to stop me? Just try it out!”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty raised her hand.

Even faster than lightning, she appeared behind the Heaven Realm Great Leader’s back. The hand that she just raised just now pressed onto his back.

Her palm power exploded.

It was the first time that the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident was sent flying.

The Heaven Realm Great Leader stepped nine full steps forward before he could stable himself.

Blood dripped from the corner of his lips but the gaze in his eyes was still calm. His left hand which was holding his Divine Trident didn’t move at all, but his right hand lightly brushed across his lips and wiped his blood, “Is thirtyfold strength enough to injure me? If it gets to a hundredfold, it would really be dangerous. I shouldn’t be looking down upon human warriors. If it weren’t because I was defeated by the Prison Emperor, was sealed for six thousand, and only have merely one percent of my strength and as the Heaven Realm Great Leader, I shouldn’t even need to worry about this. I have assumed too much, too much... Can I give up? I really don’t want to fight against you. You might not care about your own life, but you should think about that human boy lying on the ground. Isn’t he the human race’s hope? If we battle to our deaths, he would definitely come to your rescue and might die in the process.

Do you really want to see that happen?”

“My dear clever Heaven Realm Great Leader, do you know what I wanted to tell you the most?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty have not finished speaking when she pressed her hand onto the back of his head.

“Ouch!” The Heaven Realm Great Leader wasn’t sent flying this time, but his body swayed forward.

With just a slight sway, he neutralised Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s powerful attack.

Even at this point of time, he still had not used the Divine Trident in his hand.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty didn’t pursue him. Instead, she, who had increased her strength thirtyfold by combusting her life as sacrifice, suddenly pressed her hands onto the grimoire and chanted.

Yue Yang who was deep in his sleep mysteriously woke up from his dream. Even though his eyes was not opened, his expression was extremely angry.

It was as if someone truly angered him inside his dream.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty slowly tightened her fist that she pressed upon her grimoire.

Yue Yang's expression became even angrier. Nirvana Flame ignited on his body, like hell boiling over and volcano eruption.

The furious Yue Yang roared like a wild animal.

His voice was loud like thunder, resounding throughout the whole Prison Emperor Divine Palace, deafening. When he took a step forward, the ground beneath him collapsed.

Mud splattered everywhere.

It was as if Yue Yang had become a madman and lost his sense of reason. He charged furiously towards the Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident rapidly.

In an instant, his fists had already flew towards the Heaven Realm Great Leader hundreds of times... The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident felt a little strange in his heart, feeling a little surprised with Phoenix Fairy Beauty's [Charm] Inherent Skill. He might be someone interesting, but this fellow had already slept, so how could he still be hypnotised by Phoenix Fairy Beauty's [Charm] Inherent Skill? Furthermore, this kind of hypnotism power was even stronger than hypnotising with artifacts.

The Hypnotising Pearl was extremely strong, a lot of Heaven Realm Warriors died because of the hypnotism.

However those hypnotising pearl was limited to one time use.

The thing that surprised the Heaven Realm Great Leader was that Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was using Life Combustion could also activate Life Combustion on her partner. Although he didn't know where this power came from, the Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident had already realized one thing, and that was his opponent's abilities were much stronger than what he had expected. Even if he was one of the Heaven Realm Great Leader, he didn't know any Summoning Skills that would be able to increase his comrade's powers by ten times.

Most importantly, this Life Combustion skill did not do damage to her comrade's body at all!

“Danger!”

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident felt some kind of unexplained sense of danger. Furthermore, it was getting stronger with time.

Yue Yang, who had just been pushed back just now, his power was increasing once again.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty sent a ball of purple ball onto his body.

Yue Yang's body immediately morphed into a Demon King-like existence.

Of course, that was only an illusion, it was not his true body. Yue Yang who was ignited in Nirvana Flame and in a berserk state moved his hands and formed a Fire Phoenix. He prepared himself to ride this destructive Fire Phoenix and kill the Heaven Realm Great Leader.

That Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident's calm expression was finally broken.

He didn't stand at the same spot anymore, he immediately soar to the sky.

The Divine Trident in his hand continued to swing.

A white light wave, that looked like a lightning splitting across the sky, shot straight towards Yue Yang's head, attacking him and the Fire Phoenix.

At the same time, Phoenix Fairy Beauty had already caught up to him.

Her hand had already pressed against the Heaven Realm Great Leader's back. She unleashed her palm power.

The Heaven Realm Great Leader quickly escaped.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty quickly chased after him. Her shadow formed a long streak of line across the sky, as if she was always pressing onto the Heaven Realm Great Leader's back, trying to

push him down to the ground. On the ground, with a loud boom, Phoenix Fairy beauty's right hand crashed inside. On the other hand, the Heaven Realm Great Leader who had managed to escape at the last minute, break out in cold sweat from fright.

So dangerous, if he was late even a little bit...

“Come out, my slave.” Finally the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident summoned something.

A flash of white light flashed down from the sky to the ground.

The shock wave emitted from the Heaven Realm Great Leader's grimoire was not something that a normal person could endure. Compared to the energy that Phoenix Fairy Beauty had emitted when she activated her Life Combustion, this shockwave was many times stronger.

Seems like this Heaven Realm Great Leader had not even used his true strength at all since just now.

On the other side, Phoenix Fairy Beauty unleashed the second [Charm] on Yue Yang, making him complete his second transformation!

In the history of the Soaring Dragon Continent, many researchers or great sages had studied about Berserk Strengthening, and most supported Second Berserk Transformation. They had even spent their whole lives

researching it. However, the result they obtained were extremely little. Their conclusion, human's Second Berserk Transformation only existed in theory, but no one had ever proven it. In this thousand years, only Phoenix Fairy Beauty was able to successfully use this kind of illogical Second Berserk Transformation...

Yue Yang who had been sent to berserk state twice had completely gone mad.

Seeing his Second Berserk Transformation, the Heaven Realm Great Leader's eyes popped out, revealing a shocked, disbelieving expression.

This was the Heaven Realm's secret ultimate skill, and only a handful of people could master it. How could the Soaring Dragon Continent warriors learn about it?

Chapter 353 – Sky Law!

Yue Yang was in front while Phoenix Fairy Beauty was behind.

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident couldn't react at all before he saw a fist ignited in Nirvana Flame quickly coming towards him.

He couldn't do anything but watch as Yue Yang landed a heavy hit on his chest.

Furthermore, at the same time, same place from the Heaven Realm Great Leader's back, Phoenix Fairy Beauty also attacked with a powerful attack.

“Humans are indeed a race that can create miracles.” The Heaven Realm Great Leader's body trembled slightly and suddenly, he sent both Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty flying away like a bullet. Fresh blood spurted out from his mouth, but the expression in his eyes turned swift and fierce because of this. He nodded, “Interesting.”

Although he had high defense, after receiving Yue Yang's and Phoenix Fairy Beauty's attacks who had been powered up by Second Berserk Transformation and Thirtyfold Life Combustion respectively, the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident was still injured. It was not just a simple blood dropping from the corner of his mouth like just now, this time, he was really injured. However, the fact that Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty had joined together to attack him really made him furious. He

threw Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty away and immediately retaliated.

He pushed his Divine Trident which was shining resplendently forward. Power started to overflow explosively from his body, just like a shockwave, spreading outwards quickly.

However, it was not destructive at all, it only formed a huge Domain of Power around his body.

“Fiftyfold Gravity.” The Heaven Realm thud his Divine Trident onto the ground. Countless Heaven Runes gathered at his feet, forming a huge Rune Circle.

“Boom!” Yue Yang who was sent flying immediately crashed onto the ground like meteor.

“Eh?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who was thirty times stronger by using Life Combustion as sacrifice, felt her body slowly falling down. When she reached the ground, the stone slabs on the ground were actually cracking from the weight of her body, spreading like a spider web. On the other side, Yue Yang’s legs had stuck deep into the stone slabs. However as he was in a Second Berserk Transformation State, Yue Yang didn’t care what tricks his opponent was using. As long as his body could still move, he would continue to attack. Yue Yang slowly moved his body, stepping on the stone slabs as he walked step by step towards the Heaven Realm Great Leader.

“Turns out you will get stronger when you lost your senses...”

When the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident saw Yue Yang's movements, he immediately understood why Phoenix Fairy Beauty didn't stop him when he used hypnotism before. She also didn't dispel the hypnotism effect. Turns out that this young human boy would become stronger when he lost his senses.

This situation proved one point.

And that was this young human boy possessed a really huge potential, far above his powers now. It's just that he had not fully grown.

With his senses intact, he wouldn't be able to realize his full powers because he was unsure about his true potential. When he lost his senses and enter into a berserk mode, this boy's powers would burst forth without him realizing it.

Most importantly, this berserk state that made him lost his senses wouldn't harm his body at all, because this boy possess the protection of Nirvana Rebirth from his Nirvana Flames.

From here, it could be seen that the true potential within hi boy was far above what he was showing right now, immeasurable.

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident would obviously not let this situation continue.

He swung his Divine Trident and pointed it at Yue Yang, "Dispel."

A strange-looking light burst out from the Divine Trident and shot straight towards Yue Yang's forehead.

In an instant, the strong hypnotising power just now was dispersed, and Yue Yang reverted to his original state.

“My head hurts!” Yue Yang's mental state quickly recovered, as if he had just woken up from a nightmare. His head hurts as if he was pricked by needles. The thing that made Yue Yang suffer the most was because his senses was coming back and the effects from the Second Berserk Transformation was rapidly vanishing. His power which had been rapidly increasing just now immediately decreased. Yue Yang almost couldn't breathe bearing the weight of fiftyfold gravity.

Inside the Heaven Realm Great Leader's Domain, any living being would feel the effect of fiftyfold gravity.

However, Phoenix Fairy Beauty noticed a small detail.

All the stones, building and items here were completely unaffected. They experienced the normal strength of gravity.

Summoning a grimoire protective shield did not decrease the effect of the pressure at all. It was obvious that the opponent's Domain of Power had the ability to pass through protective shields. Their opponent was a Heaven Realm Great Leader, not an ordinary adventurer. The grimoire protective shield was nothing to him. Phoenix Fairy Beauty immediately reacted and increased

her Life Combustion to fiftyfold strength... As she chanted to acquire the status, Yue Yang made use of the strength of Second Berserk Transformation which had not completely disappeared and jumped high. Riding on his Fire Phoenix, he charged towards the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident's eyes glinted.

He didn't receive Yue Yang's attack head-on, instead he raised his Divine Trident to the sky.

A strange kind of light burst forth to the sky from the tip of the Divine Trident. Countless Heaven Rune Circles appeared, dazzling brightly, like a river of stars, interweaving together into a mysterious, complicated Rune Pattern.

“[Void].”

Heaven Realm Great Leader pointed with the Divine Trident. The whole space immediately turned into a zero gravity, void dimension.

Yue Yang who was using all of his strength to resist the fiftyfold gravitational force couldn't adjust his strength at all. Within a second, Yue Yang shot to the sky like meteor and crashed onto the dome of the Prison Emperor Divine Palace. The impact of the crash caused the whole Third Hall to shake violently for a long time.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty noticed that the rubbles and mud were falling towards the ground slowly.

Other than living beings, non-living things were not affected by the domain of power.

She took this in and remembered it at her heart. She felt that this might be the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident's weakness... Of course, that Divine Trident might be his measure to make up for his weakness. Without it, this Heaven Realm Great Leader's strength would definitely decrease.

"Fiftyfold Gravitational Force." The moment Heaven Realm Great Leader changed gravity, Yue Yang's body smashed onto the ground once again.

"Void." The Heaven Realm Great Leader raise his Divine Trident up to the sky. Yue Yang who was resisting the heavy gravitational pressure with all his might shot up like a meteor again towards the dome of the Third Hall.

"Don't forget I'm still here. Is there any meaning to bullying a kid?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty appeared behind the Heaven Realm Great Leader's back. Her hands grabbed at the Heaven Realm Great Leader's right shoulders.

"Woosh."

The Heaven Realm Great Leader disappeared immediately,

avoiding the battle with her.

He smiled towards Phoenix Fairy Beauty and said, “You are luring me to attack you, but no, I won’t fight you. You want to end your life together with mine. I know you have some kind of ability to do this, but I’m not that stupid. Provoking me is useless! How long can you last with your Fiftyfold Life Combustion?”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s heart slightly trembled when she heard that. Her opponent wasn’t tricked at all, what could she do now?

How long could she last under Fiftyfold Life Combustion?

Could it be that she must use Hundredfold Life Combustion?

However, the Heaven Realm Great Leader with Divine Trident had made a decision faster than Phoenix Fairy Beauty. He shouted, “Absolute Domain, Hundredfold Gravitational Force!”

Yue Yang supported his body as his hands and legs sunk into the stone slabs.

Under the pressure of Hundredfold Gravitational Force, forget about him, even Phoenix Fairy Beauty found it hard to defend.

Her legs crushed the ground beneath her as her body, which was enduring the Hundredfold Gravitational Force stooped down slightly. If her hands was not bracing her body by holding onto her grimoire, she might also be unable to endure the force and fall

onto the ground.

Hundredfold Gravitational Force was definitely not something that a human could defend against.

The most troublesome thing was that the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident was able to immediately change the gravitational force inside his Domain of Power into vacuum. Phoenix Fairy Beauty was still alright, she could resist the changes with much difficulties. Yue Yang, on the other hand, was completely miserable. His body couldn't endure it anymore, he was in so much pain as if a herd of giant mammoths had trampled over him.

He held his grimoire which was floating in the air with his bloodied hands to prevent him from falling towards the Divine Palace's dome.

As long as his opponent continued to alternate between Hundredfold Gravitational Force and Zero Gravity, Yue Yang thought that the only thing he could do was to escape.

That was no victory at all.

"I said before, don't forget, your opponent is me!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty humphed.

When the Heaven Realm Great Leader turned back and looked at her, he suddenly saw her hands coming towards her with a speed

faster than lightning. Before a thousandth of a second passed, her hand was already right in front of him, getting bigger with the passing time.

Some kind of irresistible force burst out like a tsunami. The Heaven Realm Great Leaders with the Divine Trident immediately froze. He couldn't even have the time to swing his Divine Trident and attack his opponent before he was attacked by that force... In Yue Yang's eyes, to his surprise, he saw Phoenix Fairy Beauty powerfully pinning the Heaven Realm Great Leader onto the ground. Her sharp claws grabbed at the Heaven Realm Great Leader's head, and when her opponent tried to look back, she smashed the Heaven Realm Great Leader's head onto the ground.

Boom!

The whole of Third Hall violently shook from this attack.

That loud explosion sound reverberated through the Divine Palace for a long time.

Forget about Feng Shen Shi and the other Heaven Realm Great Leader who was like a black hole. Even Yue Yang couldn't believe it.

This, how could it be possible?

The Heaven Realm Great Leader who was strong beyond compare was actually pushed down on the ground by the Phoenix Fairy

Beauty? Just as everyone was shocked speechless, that Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident lifted his head up from the ground with his hands as support. He stabbed his Divine Trident backwards, fiercely stabbing it onto Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body... However, the Heaven Realm Great Leader's attack was useless to the Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

“It's useless!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty shouted out.

She swung her claws and sent the Heaven Realm Great Leader's flying away forcefully.

Just like a cannonball, he flew towards one of the pillars, immediately shaking the whole of Divine Palace. He crashed onto the palace walls and carved a human-shaped hole.

That Heaven Realm Great Leader immediately reacted.

The Heaven Realm Great Leader came out from the hole with a speed faster than light. The Divine Trident in his hand turned into a powerful thunder as he charged straight towards Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

The demon wings on Phoenix Fairy Beauty's back quickly flapped about. With one flap, she had already reached the Heaven Realm Great Leader's back.

Sharp claws grabbed onto the Heaven Realm Great Leader's legs.

She clutched his whole body and smashed him mercilessly to the ground... Without waiting for the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident to recover, she stomped her legs onto the Heaven Realm Great Leader's face. At the same time, she raised her hands high up to the sky. Endless power gathered in her hands, as an impressive sight started to appear in the sky. All of the free energy in the air became berserk, then, as if they were following a specific law, they quickly gathered towards Phoenix Fairy Beauty's hands. A terrifying energy flow started to form in the sky. Purple-coloured lightning streaked across the sky like fiery snakes as thunderbolts boomed!

“Sky...Law!”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty never told Yue Yang before what her Domain of Power was.

She never showed it to him before, but Yue Yang finally understood everything now. Turns out that Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Domain of Power was 'Sky Law'!

(Shiro: Tian Fa (天罰) – Sky Law can also mean Heaven's Punishment or Sky Punishment)

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident revealed a terrified expression. If the Old Dragon Turtle had seen him right now, he would discover that the Heaven Realm Great Leader had the exact same expression when he was about to be sealed inside the Prison Emperor Divine Staff six thousand years ago.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty whose strength had been amplified hundredfold with Life Combustion was fighting against the ‘weakened’ Heaven Realm Great Leader who had just recovered.

The move that she used was an instant-kill move.

Right now, she had finally used her ultimate skill, ‘Sky Law Domain of Power’. With the greatest power she possessed in all her life, she prepared to kill this Heaven Realm Great Leader. Even if she had to sacrifice her life, she would have no regrets...

Would she succeed?

That Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident, for the first time in his life, revealed a terrified expression in front of a human girl!

Chapter 354 – Coldness, Present, Human Rod

Countless thunder and lightning gathered at Phoenix Fairy Beauty's hands, forming a huge ball of electric current.

The whole of Third Hall was as bright as day with the illumination from the lightning.

The whole world was overshadowed by the brightness of the lightning.

The power of this 'Sky Law' was definitely not something a person could resist. Even if it was the Heaven Realm Great Leader who had just awakened, he couldn't ignore this power.

"Careful!" Although Yue Yang was shocked by the scene of 'Sky Law', but a strange scene heightened his sense of danger. Out of the corner of his eyes, he discovered shadow of a black human figure floating out from a black hole. It was that Heaven Realm Great Leader who had hidden his true appearance behind his black hole Domain of Power. That fellow gathered two black holes that could swallow everything on his hands, as if he was about to sneak an ambush on Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Yue Yang panicked and recklessly charged forward, using his body to protect Phoenix Fairy Beauty's back.

He released his Star Explosion Domain of Power and threw it

towards the enemy.

At the same time, Phoenix Fairy Beauty attacked with both of her hands.

The power of Sky Law which had been amplified a hundredfold mercilessly smashed at the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident's body... The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Black Hole Domain of Power used one of the black holes to stop Yue Yang's full-power Star Explosion. His other hand which was holding the other black hole penetrated through Yue Yang's grimoire protective shield and ruthlessly smashed against Yue Yang's chest.

The whole space was distorted.

Not only there was Sky Law's power, the space was also distorted by the clash of Star Explosion and Black Hole Ball and the clash between the Black Hole Ball with the Innate Qi protection on Yue Yang's body. There was also the clash between the Heaven Realm Great Leader Black Hole Domain of Power and Yue Yang's grimoire protective shield.

Even the sound from the resulting explosion was crushing.

Everything inside the space, other than the four people, turned into fine powder.

The resulting shockwave sent Feng Shen Shi who was on his soul

state flying a hundred metres away. All of the walls and pillars in the Third Hall broke down, even the dome almost collapsed.

If it wasn't for the Prison Emperor's will which was supporting the Third Hall and preventing it from collapsing, if it was a normal structure instead, it would have become debris from the huge explosion shockwave. Amongst flying debris, the four people didn't move at all. The first one to move was the Heaven realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident who had been struck by Phoenix Fairy Beauty's hundred times strengthened Sky Law.

He had lost one of his arms and his face was drenched in blood.

His left shoulder and the left half of his body had been seriously injured. His bones were even exposed in some parts of his body.

His left eyes were shut and his forehead was bleeding, from his hair down to his eyes and cheeks, like he was crying tears of blood. Drips of blood dropped onto what remained of his right hand. His right hand was still holding onto the Divine Trident, but he did not attack Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Instead, he stabbed it backwards towards the gap between Yue Yang's ribs and arms, stopping the other Heaven Realm Great Leader's second attack, the Black Hole Domain of Power, to everyone's surprise...

With regards to this, Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty was extremely shocked.

This fellow not only didn't attack back, he had even stopped his comrade's fatal attack and saved Yue Yang's life?

Could it be that this fellow's brain had been fried from the Sky Law Power? Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty was completely at loss!

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with Black Hole Domain of Power seemed to not understand his comrade's actions too. He had came to his rescue when his comrade was in danger, why was he unwelcomed?

“Jiu Xiao, this is my fight. Even if I am killed, my pride as a Heaven Realm Great Leader will not allow me to beg for help. This will only make me feel humiliated afterwards. If it was you instead, if you were beaten to the ground by your enemies, would you beg for your life like a dog? Would you wish for me to come to your rescue? I don't want to look for any excuse, a victory is a victory, a defeat is a defeat... Even if my powers have not recovered and my opponent is using Hundredfold Life Combustion to kill me, is this an excuse for my defeat? As one of the Heaven Realm Great Leader, when did I ever need to find a laughable excuse for my defeat?” When the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident said this, the Heaven Realm Great Leader with Black Hole Domain of Power quickly returned to his Black Hole without a second word.

(Shiro: Jiu Xiao means Nine Nights)

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident turned around, his body drenched in blood. He closed his eye which was bleeding and only used one eye to look at Phoenix Fairy Beauty, “You are really a strong opponent... Other than Prison Emperor, you are the only human who managed to attack me until this bad.

You could have killed me just a little bit more. If I didn't have a Divine Weapon with me, I would need to sleep for thousands of years again today... With this Divine Weapon, you won't be able to kill me. As for me, I don't wish to kill. On the contrary, I long for an opponent like you. That boy and you, you still have so much growing potential. Both of you are still so young. Continue to train yourselves, we will wait for you guys in the Heaven Realm. This lesson, this defeat today, I will forever remember it in my heart."

He summoned his grimoire and his body slowly disappeared, "Goodbye, two human warriors who bring so much excitement to me. I really hope that you guys can give us an even nicer surprise when you see us in the Heaven Realm in the future!"

Before he disappeared, he waved his Divine Trident.

A ray of bright light flashed.

A line of Heaven Runes slowly formed in the sky. Yue Yang recognized a few words, he reckoned that these runes should be that fellow's address in Heaven Realm.

The Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident returned to his grimoire world and completely disappeared. His parting words reverberated for a long time in the destroyed Third Hall, "Remember my name, my name is Xu Kong."

(Shiro: Xu Kong means void, vacuum)

As the Heaven Realm Great Leader called Xu Kong returned to the grimoire world, Feng Shen Shi who was on his soul state also

followed his master with the Divine Trident's light as guidance.

At this time, in the Third Hall, there was only that Heaven Realm Great Leader with Black Hole, Jiu Xiao.

Although he did not speak at all, his true abilities were far above Xu Kong, the Heaven Realm Great Leader with the Divine Trident.

Five bleeding holes appeared on Yue Yang's chest.

Even the extremely strong Yue Yang who possessed Nirvana Flame thus giving him the ability of Nirvana Rebirth was unable to heal the injury his opponent had caused. The black balls which possess the ability of a black hole, able to swallow everything inside, had already invaded Yue Yang's body. If it was another person, they would have already become a corpse. Their corpse might not even exist anymore. However, Yue Yang who possessed [Devour] Domain of Power, had turned his body into a battlefield, fighting a tug-of-war battle that black ball... If it were an ordinary adventurer, they would definitely not be able to endure that kind of battle inside their bodies. However, Yue Yang possessed the Innate Qi protection and Nirvana Rebirth, and unimaginably managed to endure the battle inside his body. Furthermore, the origin of his [Devour] strength had become stronger as it continued to swallow the opponent's power, transforming and devouring into a stronger [Devour] origin...

The black balls had aroused Yue Yang's potential and the origin of his [Devour] Domain of Power abilities at the same time.

The origin of his [Devour] which was not considered very strong in the first place had already become ten times stronger because of the invasion of this strange power.

Furthermore, after the [Devour] origin fused together with the opponent, it started to evolve.

It was constantly changing, becoming stronger.

Of course, the impact it caused on Yue Yang's body was excruciating pain.

Yue Yang was in so much pain that his whole body was trembling. Phoenix Fairy Beauty took care of Yue Yang who had almost lost control and fell to the ground with her beautiful hands and long tails as she glared coldly at the Heaven Realm Great Leader who was called Jiu Xiao.

This Jiu Xiao who possessed Black Hole Domain of Power had not left.

It was obvious that he wanted to kill Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Yue Yang.

Xu Kong's wishes had nothing to do with him.

Although Xu Kong had asked Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Yue Yang to fight again in the Heaven Realm in the future, the current Jiu Xiao was thinking of eliminating these two people as soon as

possible.

“I had always thought that humans are dangerous. No matter how weak they are, as long as there are some kind of miracle, they would become extremely strong. Even if they have short life spans, their growth rate was extremely quick. You, for example, a young human boy who is only twenty years old but possessed a power that is almost the same as my current strength. If I give you another 100 years, I really can’t imagine how much you will grow...” Jiu Xiao whose body was hidden inside his Black Hole Domain of Power slowly floated out. His appearance had not been fully revealed, but his strength and Qi pressured Yue Yang to the point that he found it difficult to breathe.

Compared to Xu Kong who had the Divine Trident, he was three times stronger.

Furthermore, this Jiu Xiao was much more cool-headed. He possessed some kind of cool-headed wisdom.

When Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty gave him a sense of danger, he would not be like Xu Kong, giving Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty the opportunity to launch their attacks. He wished to kill the two of them as soon as possible, nipping the problem in the bud.

Jiu Xiao raised both of his hands to the sky and formed two black balls in the sky.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty raised her hands to the sky and prepared to

summon Sky Law once again.

That Jiu Xiao who was so calm that he was almost cold as ice suddenly asked, “How many more Sky Laws can you summon with that Hundredfold Life Combustion of yours? How long more can you last? If I didn’t guess wrongly, you could only last another minute at most. With such a little time, you shouldn’t be able to summon another Sky Law. Furthermore, do you think I will fight against you head on? You can continue to wait, wait until your life has been fully combusted...”

Although she didn’t speak, Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s darkened expression proved that what Jiu Xiao said was true.

She didn’t want to admit defeat, but she had reached the limits of the limit of her Hundredfold Life Combustion.

“Only half a minute left, speak your last words!” Jiu Xiao didn’t attack Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Yue Yang immediately. Instead, he stood in front of his Black Hole Domain of Power, as if he would return back inside any time. He knew that he had just awakened from his slumber, hence his powers were not even 1% of his original strength. He was completely unwilling to fight the current Phoenix Fairy Beauty head-on. He chose a different battle tactics from Xu Kong, he chose to wait.

“I die without regrets.” This was Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s last words.

“Why don’t you ask me what my last words are?” Yue Yang

endured the pain in his chest and asked his opponent with a hoarse voice.

“What do you want to say?” Jiu Xiao was only vigilant towards Phoenix Fairy Beauty currently. With regards to Yue Yang who was gravely injured, he only spared him a tenth of his vigilance.

“Although I can’t compare to you, this doesn’t mean that you are invincible... Qilin girl, I never asked a penny for your rent. Right now I’m going to die, if you don’t come out and help, don’t blame me for kicking you out of my house.” Yue Yang suddenly shouted out and cursed furiously.

“Don’t be angry, how would I know you are fighting? I have been sleeping and I just woke up just now, I still feel very sleepy.” A Qilin girl who was wearing her pyjama full set sleepily patted her yawning mouth, looking indolent and drowsy as if she had just woken up. She then stretched out her waist and rubbed her eyes, then looked towards Yue Yang who was drenched in blood, with bleeding holes all over his chest, and asked curiously, blinking her eyes, “Are you injured?”

“Obviously!” Yue Yang really wanted to beat the Qilin girl’s butt violently. Forget it if she didn’t want to help heal his injuries, she even had the nerve to enjoy watching the show.

(Shiro: Popular children disciplinary measure in China is to beat their butt)

“This injury is not difficult to heal, but I only have a pair of hands. She or you, I can only save one of you. Which one should I

save?” The Qilin girl reached out her hand, showing that she could only save one.

“Save her!” Yue Yang hurriedly asked her to first heal Phoenix Fairy Beauty when he heard her.

“I can save her, but I can’t give you any guarantees, because it’s already a little too late to save her.” Before the Qilin girl could even finish her words, Yue Yang had raised his hands and beat her little bottom hard, “Then why are you wasting time talking bullshit? Quickly save her now!”

“You dared to hit me?” The Qilin girl was furious, she was about to throw a tantrum. However, when she saw Yue Yang who looked like he was about to eat a person, she jumped in fright and stuck out her tongue. Then, she quickly held the unconscious Phoenix Fairy Beauty and brought her back into the grimoire world. In the end, she asked Yue Yang, “Who is that fellow that looked so ugly and sinister? It’s alright if his looks couldn’t make it, but he still dared to reveal his face to the public. I don’t understand, does he has any self-awareness?”

“Save her quickly! You are not even marrying him, why do you care about how he look like!” Yue Yang shouted exasperatedly.

“So you actually have an Immortal Beast’s protection. No wonder Ming Yue Guang and Xu Kong let you off.. Although Immortal Beasts are strong, do you think they don’t have weaknesses?” That Heaven Realm Great Leader called Jiu Xiao suddenly turned invisible and returned to his Black Hole Domain of Power. His thought wave floated out, “If it wasn’t for the fact that I have just

awakened, I would have killed you all together with that Immortal Beast. Young human, let me give you a present!”

A flash of black light, like a sword, shot out from the black hole.

It disappeared in an instant.

Just as Yue Yang prepared all of his body to take the attack, suddenly, Lei Shen Shi who looked like a Thunder Giant appeared. He held that black light in his hands as he bowed in respect towards the black hole.

The Black Hole Domain of Power slowly disappeared. In the end, a cold strain of thought wave floated out, “Cut all of his four limbs so that he could become a human rod. Bear in mind, you can’t endanger his life, otherwise that Immortal Beast protecting him will immediately attack you back. The Immortal Beast’s weakness is that she has to follow the rules. She can’t take the initiative to attack weak living things, unless her master’s life is in danger. Humans’ battle power mostly depended on their four limbs. Once he lose his limbs, his battle power will decrease greatly. Furthermore, humans will not be able to grow out another set of limbs... Young human, I hope that you will like my present!”

Chapter 355 – Lei Shen Shi, Death

Although the Qilin girl didn't attack at all, Jiu Xiao, the mighty Heaven Realm Great Leader was definitely scared away by her.

A lot of unexpected events had happened in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace battle.

For example, strong Heaven Realm Warriors such as Feng Shen Shi, Lei Shen Shi, Ming Ri Wu, Huang Sha, Sha Fei, Ni Guo and the others had broken free from their seals and even possessed physical bodies. This was completely different from the information that the Old Dragon Turtle had given to them previously. These strong enemies who popped out of nowhere had completely thrown Yue Yang's plans into jeopardy. Even after intense training for a month guided by the Sword Goddess and obtaining Nirvana Rebirth, he was still unable to pull the gap between him and the enemies. The most frightening thing was that the time of the awakening of the three Heaven Realm Great Leaders had changed because of Yue Yang's interruption. Furthermore, every Heaven Realm Great Leader succeeded in breaking free, and every single one of them possessed destructive powers capable of annihilating a whole army.

Under this kind of critical battle, Yue Yang was unable to control the flow of the battle. He could only make the best out of the situation.

Other than fighting to their deaths, Yue Yang's only hope was for the Phoenix Sisters and Qilin girl to help him with his fight. Yue Yang was not afraid of the hard battle, but he was afraid that Xue

Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and the others would be killed.

Forget about Xue Wu Xia and the others who couldn't revive, Yue Yang was not even willing to let his guardian beasts like the Bloody Queen and the others who could revive to die.

Their greatest threat was only Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao, the two Heaven Realm Great Leaders.

Xu Kong had been heavily injured by Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Sky Law attack which was strengthened by a hundredfold, and left with a flashy escape. The one that Yue Yang was worried about the most was the cold and wise Jiu Xiao. Furthermore, he was such a strong opponent... Fortunately the Qilin girl had appeared and scared him away. Seeing how quickly he escaped after the Qilin girl appeared, Yue Yang sighed in relief in his heart. As for Lei Shen Shi who was still in his soul state, even though he possessed strong powers and the artifact 'Black Light' that Jiu Xiao had bestowed to him, Yue Yang wouldn't really care too much about him.

After all, compared to the two Great Leaders just now, the strength of this Lei Shen Shi who had lost his physical body couldn't really be mentioned.

“Electric Cage...”

Lei Shen Shi was originally in his soul state, so he was not very strong. His battle power should be almost zero. However, with the 'Black Light', his powers had greatly increased. He was able to summon a gigantic Electric Cage, turning the whole Third Hall

into a prison, trapping Yue Yang and the others.

Yue Yang's [Devour] Domain of Power was still trying to consume the black ball filled with energy that Jiu Xiao had shot into him. His body was also healing his wounds with Nirvana Flame, hence he was unable to stop Lei Shen Shi's actions.

Maybe he didn't have much confidence in victory, hence Lei Shen Shi had borrowed the power of the artifact 'Black Light' again and summoned two Heaven Realm Goblin Beasts.

They were different from the Centipedes that Feng Shen Shi summoned. These goblin beasts had humanoid appearances.

One of them was red while the other was green.

Both of them were gigantic, their heights could reach 50 metres easily.

They looked grotesque like a blood-sucking, man-eating demon.

Their bloody mouth dripped with their smelly slobber. Their sharp teeth and red eyes continuously emitted their bloodthirst and ruthlessness. Their forehead were branded with the word 'Demon' and their body were almost naked other than their lower part which was covered with animal skins.

They held a 30 metre long giant wolf tooth which had the ability to crush one of the pillars in the Third Hall with just a simple

swing.

Whenever they took a step, the weight of their body would shake the whole of Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

Boom, boom, boom...

When they walked towards Yue Yang and the other humans who were much smaller than him, the whole of Third Hall shook uncontrollably.

The most frightening thing was that these two humanoid red and green Goblin Beast had the Domain of Powers “Bone Maggot” and “Death Mist”. The red demon’s “Bone Maggots” sucked in Yue Yang’s strength like crazy while the green demon’s “Death Mist” engulfed the whole Third Hall with a green, disgusting mist. Yue Yang discovered that his skin had even turned rotten green!

Yue Yang’s eyes glinted as he looked at Lei Shen Shi.

Lei Shen Shi who was holding the ‘Black Light’ artifact was waiting for the right opportunity to attack. Seems like he wouldn’t leave unless he really cut all of Yue Yang’s four limbs.

Suddenly, Yue Yang sighed slightly, “Yes, I admit it. With my current strength, I am still unable to fight against the two Heaven Realm Great Leaders. This battle was the hardest and most difficult battle I have ever experienced amongst all of my battles. However, I will forever remember the lessons learnt today. When I

escape from here, i will train myself again from the bottom, so that I may become a true expert. When I meet Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao in the future, I will definitely not be like today...”

“Did you think you can really leave here?” Lei Shen Shi didn’t speak, he only sent out a thought wave.

“Even Jiu Xiao could leave, that is the truth.” Yue Yang suddenly smiled brilliantly, like a sun. His smile really confused Lei Shen Shi.

“Immortal Beasts would definitely not take the initiative to attack their enemies...” It was obvious that Lei Shen Shi understood Immortal Beasts’ limitations. An Immortal Beast’s protection would only come when their master’s lives were at stake.

“I have a sister. She had never participated in battles before, so none of you guys know about her existence. Right now, do you want to know where she is?” Yue Yang had not finished speaking when a small body appeared from inside the Profound Coffin Room, holding the Prison Emperor Divine Staff in her hands. It was Yue Bing. When the Prison Emperor Divine Staff that contained the Prison Emperor’s will came out to thee Third Hall, it immediately shone with dazzling light, illuminating the whole hall so brightly as if it was daylight.

The bright light was so dazzling that the two Goblin Beasts were unable to open their eyes. They roared in fear continuously.

They subconsciously avoided Yue Bing who was holding the Prison Emperor Divine Staff with both of her hands, retreating step by step backwards.

However, when Lei Shen Shi shouted to them to stop and keep calm, they became slightly better.

Suddenly, from outside the Electric Cage, a human figure appeared. He shouted a warning towards Yue Yang, “These two are the Red Goblin King and Green Goblin King. They possessed extremely strong vitality. You won’t be able to defeat them using normal physical attacks. You must take out the Goblin Pearl inside their bodies. Most of the time, their Goblin Pearl would be at their head, some would also have it at their belly button...”

Before he finished his words, Lei Shen Shi had already shouted thunderously in fury, “An Ge, you traitor!”

Although the birdman An Ge was afraid of Lei Shen Shi, he felt quite safe because there was Yue Yang in front of him.

He summoned his courage and replied, “I’m not a traitor. You guys are not my master from the beginning, you are also not our Sect Leader. You guys are just our dictators, forcing us to listen to your order with fear and violence. We were forced to come down from the Heaven Realm and fight with the humans. The battle with the Prison Emperor left my brothers and sisters in grave injuries, but even so, you continued to look down upon us. You guys never acknowledged us as your comrades, you guys didn’t even acknowledge us as your comrades... Our existences were just like slaves. When Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao needed to speed up their

recovery, the ones you sacrificed were our brothers and sisters. So many of my comrades were still in their slumber, yet you sucked all of their energies from them. Many of those who were like me, who had awakened earlier, were also unable to avoid their tragic fate... In order to rescue the two Great Leaders in advance, in this six thousand years, you guys have been using our bodies and beasts as sacrifice... Look at my body, what have I become? When I woke up, I have turned into a beast-mix, I have even lost a huge part of my memories. If I hadn't recovered my memories due to the shock from my battles, I might even still continue to be your foolish slaves, becoming the sacrificial pawns you needed, like my other brothers and sisters..."

"I'm not afraid of death, and I'm not afraid to fight. However, I definitely don't want to become your sacrificial pawn. I am also a proud Heaven Realm Warrior. Even if you are much stronger than me, you won't be able to kill my pride." An Ge only had the strength of an Innate Level 1 right now. If Lei Shen Shi had not turned into his astral state because of his sacrifice to the two Heaven Realm Great Leaders, he could have killed An Ge in one move.

"No matter what reason you have, the fact that you are a traitor doesn't change." The Black Light Artifact in Lei Shen Shi's hand shot out a ray of light towards An Ge, sharp as sword.

"If you want to kill him, can you ask my opinion first?" Yue Yang stood in front of the sharp sword beam.

He reached out and stopped that sword beam head-on.

Speaking of controlling sword beams, other than the Heavenly Sword Goddess and the Big Loli which was made up of sword qi, no one was more of an expert other than Yue Yang.

Lei Shen Shi discovered that the sword beam that he shot out with 'Black Light' was useless. Hence, he quickly ordered the Red and Green Goblin King to attack. Just as the two Goblin Beasts were charging towards Yue Yang, a mirror suddenly appeared in front of Yue Yang. This was Yi Nan's 'Soul Mirror'. Her Soul Mirror reflected the brightness emitted from the Prison Emperor Divine Staff onto the two Goblin Beasts' face. Immediately, the two Goblin Beasts shut their eyes in pain, blocking the light coming into their eyes with their big hands. It was as if they had great fears towards this shining light.

The two Domain of Powers in Yue Yang's body 'Bone Maggots' and 'Death Mist' had also quickly dispersed under the light that the Soul Mirror had reflected.

When the Black Light in Lei Shen Shi's hands were slashed down, Yue yang unleashed the Five-coloured Divine Light.

It was time for Yue Yang to strike back.

The 'Green' colour of the Five-coloured Divine Light clashed with Lei Shen Shi's 'Black Light'.

Within one attack, Lei Shen Shi and the 'Black Light' were both blasted a hundred metres away. The 'Black Light's' light grew dimmer while Lei Shen Shi's body crackled with electricity

current, as if he had received quite a grave injury.

“Mine is the real Five-coloured Divine Light, yours is fake goods. No matter how generous Jiu Xiao is, he wouldn’t give the true Five-coloured Divine Light to you. The ‘Black Light’ in your hands is nothing more than imitation goods.” Yue Yang appeared behind Lei Shen Shi’s body, holding the Five-coloured Divine Light in his left fist. He punched out as he condensed the Star Explosion power in his right hand. When Lei Shen Shi tried to defend himself, Yue Yang threw the Star Explosion to him.

“Woosh.” Lei Shen Shi was shocked, he immediately turned into electricity and avoided the Star Explosion attack.

“Die.”

Yue Yang didn’t pursue him, instead, he guided that ‘Star Explosion’ to bend and exploded it right at the Red Goblin King’s head.

The Star Explosion caused half of the Red Goblin King’s head to shatter into pieces.

It fell to the ground with a loud boom.

However, the strange thing was that the Red Goblin King whose head had been shattered to pieces, was still alive.

Its shattered brain was quickly regenerating as countless pieces

of flesh automatically turned into powder and returned back to the Red Goblin King. A paste like substance formed on the Red Goblin King's head and it slowly turned back to the Red Goblin King's original appearance. This process had only taken a few seconds.

“Let me send you back to hell.” Yue Yang who held the World Exterminating Wheel in his hand threw it down from the sky, slashing the Red Goblin King whole body into two.

On the other side, the extremely furious Green Goblin King had not managed to do anything before Yue Yang turned around and slashed it into two too with his World Exterminating Wheel.

Both the Red Goblin King and Green Goblin King's bodies which were split in half were growing sprouts of flesh, as if they were about to reconnect again into one.

However, a little lamia with big, adorable eyes had appeared.

She had Dual Icicle Blades in her hands.

In an instant, she froze the Red Goblin King and the Green Goblin King's bodies which were split in half into ice blocks... Of course, this was not the end.

When Lei Shen Shi rushed towards them to help, she had already raised her two little hands towards Yue Yang, showing him a red and green Goblin Pearls in her hands.

The Red and Green Goblin Kings who had lost their Goblin Pearls were just like humans who lost their souls. Although they had not died physically, they became a mere mountain of flesh. They were not a threat at all. The ‘Bone Maggots’ and ‘Death Mist’ Domain of Powers had also become useless under the light from the Prison Emperor Divine Staff.

“Even if I can’t kill you, I can kill all the girls you brought with you. Human, the greatest weakness of your race are women.” Lei Shen Shi was completely incensed.

He knew that he would definitely not be able to defeat Yue Yang, because Yue Yang possessed the true Five-coloured Divine Light.

Yue Bing was under the protection of the Prison Emperor Divine Staff, hence Lei Shen Shi was also unable to come in closer.

Yi Nan had the Soul Mirror to protect her. The Soul Mirror revolved around her body, reflecting the light from the Prison Emperor Divine Staff, allowing her to control the Soul Mirror to face any direction. This was also equivalent to having the Prison Emperor Divine Staff protecting her, hence Lei Shen Shi didn’t dare to attack her. As for Xiao Wen Li, she was a Guardian Beast, hence he wouldn’t be able to kill her completely. In the end, the furious Lei Shen Shi decided to go down to the Second Hall and kill those few female humans who would not be able to resurrect in the future. This would cause Yue Yang to go crazy. That was how they dealt with the Prison Emperor and the warriors that followed him last time.

When a human man saw their women die, they would fall into

despair. They might even kill themselves after winning the battle.

This kind of behaviour was far beyond Lei Shen Shi's, who was from the Heaven Realm, comprehension.

However, he knew that human warriors had this kind of fatal weakness.

“Do you want to kill me? You don't have to go to the Second Hall, I'm already here...” Xue Wu Xia clasped the Ancient Book in her hands as Princess Qian Qian whose body was drenched in blood appeared behind her, holding the Prison Emperor Divine Sword in her hands. Behind them, Luo Hua City Mistress and Yue Yu who looked pale and a little weak followed.

Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon were protecting them left and right.

The fact that they managed to come over proved that the two Heaven Realm Centipedes had been successfully killed.

The thing that shocked Lei Shen Shi the most was not the fact that the Howling Wind Spell that was supposed to stop them were ineffective, nor was it the fact that his subordinates and the Heaven Realm Centipedes have been killed. It was not even the Heaven Centipede Pearl that the Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon were holding in their hands. The thing that shocked him was the Ancient Book that Xue Wu Xia was holding.

That Ancient Book was a Silver-ranked Artifact.

If it were last time, Lei Shen Shi wouldn't even bat an eye on a Silver-ranked Artifact... Even a Gold-ranked Artifact wouldn't be able to hurt him, who was an Innate Level 10. However, he, who was in an astral state right now, felt a really bad feeling towards the Ancient Book. Although it was only Silver-ranked, it was a soul-type artifact. The most terrifying thing was that it seemed to be an artifact that specialized in swallowing thunder-type energies. It was coincidentally his nemesis.

Xue Wu Xia turned her book open, and a female spirit that looked like her appeared.

The spirit was covered with cold air all over her body, but there were static electricity buzzing in her hands.

Facing against Lei Shen Shi who was so much bigger than her, the female spirit charged forward courageously, not showing a trace of fear at all. She looked as if she wanted to swallow Lei Shen Shi who was a thousand times stronger than her.

“NO!” Lei Shen Shi felt a kind of fear from his sixth sense as a warrior and hurriedly tried to leave. However, behind him, Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li had appeared at the same time and locked his movements with Binding Chains. Nirvana Flame, World Exterminating Wheel and Innate Invisible Sword Qi flew towards Lei Shen Shi's body at the same time. However, the one who delivered the ultimate blow was the sickly beauty who had taken out the Prison Emperor Divine Seal from the Profound Coffin Room and knocked Lei Shen Shi's head with it.

Chapter 356 – Conclusion Of A Hard Battle – Everybody Levels Up!

Lei Shen Shi's immortal body was stronger than Huang Sha's body of sand. If he had not sacrificed his body, then Yue Yang, with his current strength, would have had a hard time killing him, who was at Innate Level 10.

Other than destroying his nucleus, he would be invincible.

After losing his body, only his spiritual body remained and he couldn't use his lightning powers. As a result, he was at his weakest. If not for Jiu Xiao bestowing him with the Black Light and giving him power, Yue Yang could easily ignore Lei Shen Shi's existence. When the Qilin girl had saved Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Xue Wu Xia and the others had also rushed over. This completely lifted the boulder in his heart. He was determined to surround and kill Lei Shen Shi. Yue Yang would not allow this powerful enemy to regenerate. He would take advantage of him being at his weakest state to forever seal him inside the Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

“HOOOOWL!”

Lei Shen Shi could not bear the pain. Whether it was Nirvana Flames, World Exterminating Wheel or Innate Invisible Sword Qi, any of them could heavily damage his soul.

The Prison Emperor's Divine Seal, containing the Prison Emperor's Will, pressing down on his forehead made him remember the shadow of death six thousand years ago.

Six thousand years ago, the Three Great Leaders and his comrades had used their strength to endure the seal together.

Today, he was alone without any support, could it be that he was going to die?

“Die with me!” Lei Shen Shi turned around and charged towards Yue Yang. He was prepared to use the Heaven Realm’s taboo skill, “Physical and Spiritual Self-Detonation”, taking down Yue Yang with him.

Even though he lost the support of his body’s energy causing the Physical and Spiritual Self-Detonation strength to weaken, it would still absolutely be capable of annihilating his enemies.

Xiao Wen Li glared at him and her Binding Chains Inherent Skill burst out once more.

Yue Yang did not retreat but instead he moved forward. In his hands, he created a giant burning phoenix with Nirvana Flames and shot it towards Lei Shen Shi’s body. The World Exterminating Wheel followed after, cutting the Heaven Rune protecting his soul. Then, Yue Yang’s Innate Invisible Sword Qi struck at Lei Shen Shi’s nucleus.

Lei Shen Shi’s nucleus broke apart and his entire body shook. His spiritual energy dispersed and it was then absorbed by Yue Yang’s ‘Devour’ domain...

However, Lei Shen Shi did not die.

When he knew that he already had no chance to kill Yue Yang, he suddenly gave up the idea of dying together. Instead, he charged towards Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian. Yue Yang's hair stood up in anger. He quickly chased him and reached towards Lei Shen Shi's spirit body. He forcibly dug out what remained of his nucleus. Lei Shen Shi suddenly laughed: "Too late! Men's weakness is women. Breakdown and go crazy!"

He charged towards Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian. The Black Light in his hands prepared to perform his final attack.

Before the Nirvana Flames obliterated his nucleus, he still had a bit of time.

"Die!" Princess Qian Qian tenderly shouted. The image of the White Tiger flashed in the air. With the strength of the White Tiger and the help of the Emperor's Sword Qi, she moved the Prison Emperor's Divine Sword and cut Lei Shen Shi's spirit in half.

At the same time, Lei Shen Shi also extended his hands.

He basically did not defend. He only raised the Black Light and chopped towards Xue Wu Xia.

No matter how Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Yu, Stone Element

Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and the Ice Serpent Demon attacked, he ignored them all. He wholeheartedly wanted to kill Xue Wu Xia. The Black Light slashed down and nothing could stop it... The Old Dragon Turtle quickly caught up but was sent flying by the other half of Lei Shen Shi's body. He simply could not block the Black Light's slash.

“No!” The Sickly Beauty had already formed a crystal shield, but her speed was not fast enough. She was too late to rush to Xue Wu Xia's side and sadly shrieked.

“Sister Wu Xia!” Yi Nan also controlled the Soul Mirror to fly over but her distance was too far.

“...” Xue Wu Xia felt that she had already been locked on by the Black Light. If she ran away, she would just die faster. She did not panic and deeply looked at Yue Yang. She even let out a smile. If this would be an eternal separation, then she would leave him a smile. He liked her smile and always wanted her to smile, but she would normally ignore him.

She raised her right hand, preparing to receive the attack. She hoped that one arm would be enough to exchange with her life.

Even though she did not know if this would succeed, she still wanted to try it.

Isn't it only an arm?

As long as Lei Shen Shi did not turn around to attack Yue Yu or Luo Hua, then losing an arm is fine!

She did not move at all. Her Guardian Beast, Blizzard Lady was also copying her movement. It also raised its arms inviting the attack, while her other hand condensed had condensed her freezing powers waiting for a chance to counterattack. Luo Hua City Mistress had already exhausted her strength and could not help. She was so scared that she almost fainted. Yue Yu, who was normally weak, had tears streaming her cheeks. She had prepared to use her body to protect Xue Wu Xia, but she stopped because she would only be sacrificing her life pointlessly.

“Motherfucker!” Yue Yang broke out into his fastest speed to pursue Lei Shen Shi. He also tossed out the Five Colors of Divine Light to block the Black Light.

“Kyaaaahhhhh...” In the sky, Bloody Queen Red screeched and flew down. She used her entire body to embrace the Black Light. She knew that she was a Guardian Beast and would never truly die. She prepared to use her body to block this attack.

On the other side, the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen had rushed over.

A while ago, she was cleaning up the battlefield in the Second Palace Hall. She was late by one step and did not expect Lei Shen Shi’s suicidal actions.

Lei Shen Shi was not only an Innate Rank 10, he was also well

known for his speed. Even though he had sacrificed his physical body, when he attacked, it wasn't something that could be easily stopped by everyone.

The Black Light flashed.

It had chopped an arm, at the same time the body behind the arm was also cut in half...

Fresh blood erupted in mid air.

The nucleus that was being held by Yue Yang was being purified by the Nirvana Flames. It had thoroughly become a lightning-attribute Soul Energy Pearl. Lei Shen Shi's spirit body immediately lost its conscience. His expression froze. His soul had been purified by the Nirvana Flames and faded away. The Black Light that he used to attack had fallen down from his possession and pierced the floor. Yue Yu was scared senseless. She rushed over and hugged Xue Wu Xia who was laying on the floor covered in fresh blood. She cried loudly: "No. No. Wu Xia. Don't scare me!"

"I'm fine. Ah Man, Ah Man had helped me block the move." Xue Wu Xia had also thought she was finished. However, she did not expect the tall Ah Man would suddenly come out, fly in front of her, and block the fatal attack.

The Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man's right arm was cleanly cut.

The Black Light had cleaved a half of her body. Her body was

almost completely cut in half. She was already very close to becoming humanoid so fresh blood had spurted out wildly like a rain of blood.

When Yue Yang hurried over, she did not speak. Her eyes carried no pain and only carried joy.

Because she had seen her master's eyes containing concern and pain.

Li Shen Shi's soul had already faded away. However, his spiritual body was dragged away by the Female Spirit from the ancient book. She returned inside the ancient book and slowly disappeared. However, no one had paid attention to her actions. Everybody surrounded the Barbarian Cow Shadow. Yue Yang hugged her and exhausted his strength to use the Nirvana Flames to cure Ah Man's severe injuries. Yue Yu was scared to the point that her hands trembled. She had even almost forgotten how to summon her Healing Water Ball.

Unconsciously, everybody had treated Ah Man as a human and not a Guardian Beast.

Ah Man stretched out her remaining left hand and touched Yue Yang's face.

She shook her head as if wanting to smile to tell them she was alright. However, before her smile took form, she had already turned into light particles. Her body gradually returned to a state of energy and returned inside the Grimoire.

“I will remember today’s lesson. I will definitely become the strongest in the world! I swear that in the future, whether facing strong enemies in the human or heaven realm, this kind of thing will never happen again. Never again!” Yue Yang clenched his fists. At this moment, he was angry. He hated himself for not having enough strength. If he had killed Lei Shen Shi in an instant, if he had the strength to withstand the Two Great Leaders’ strength, would these kinds of danger even happen?

Until now, Yue Yang had thought that he was strong.

Even if he was not the strongest, Yue Yang still felt that he could deal with any kind of hardship.

However, this battle had told him a single lesson, and that was to never be limited by the strength in front of him. A true expert would be unimaginably strong. The circumstances would never always be according to their plans and expectations. This world was filled with the unknown.

In front of absolute strength, knowledge and skill were nothing.

Wishing to use knowledge and skill to gain a victory requires oneself to have enough strength.

Summarized in one sentence, only when you are strong enough would you possess the qualifications to toy with others.

The Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm showed Yue Yang a very high target... Even if they were asleep for six thousand years and under their weakest state, the Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm still had the strength to kill Yue Yang. This kind of strength would become the goal for Yue Yang's training.

Become the strongest warrior among humans was not enough.

What Yue Yang wanted was to become stronger than the Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm, become stronger than the Prison Emperor that had sealed the Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm...

Just as Yue Bing, Yue Yu, Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian, and Luo Hua City Mistress hugged Yue Yang, all of a sudden, everybody's Grimoire appeared and flipped their pages. Huge golden pillars, unprecedented in history, had shone out from the grimoires and shot towards the skies. Every beast was bathed in this golden light pillar, evolving, leveling up together with their owners.

Amidst the light pillars, Yue Yang's and Xue Wu Xia's level up were the most shocking.

After the female spirit in Xue Wu Xia's Ancient Book had absorbed Lei Shen Shi's spirit energy and bathe under the golden light, the Ancient Book had undergone a fundamental change. It had leveled up to become a Gold-ranked Artifact.

Yue Yang's Grimoire which was originally an Intermediate Gold-

ranked Grimoire had directly leveled up into a beginner Platinum-ranked Grimoire.

Xue Wu Xia who had been suppressing her level at Lesser Innate was unable to suppress her energy any longer. With a loud shout, her body shot up into the sky and was bathed in the golden light pillar that only appeared when one levelled up to Innate. The pillar was so tall that it seemed to be connecting the sky and earth. It more than a hundred metres tall, close to two hundred metres, even taller than the golden pillar that appeared when Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress levelled up to Innates. However, everyone was all busy levelling up, hence no one had noticed Xue Wu Xia's level up.

Her Guardian Beast, Blizzard Lady, changed her body completely and merged with the female spirit in the Ancient Book.

Ice and lightning along with their awareness merged together.

They formed a huge figure surpassing thirty meters, appearing at the center of the golden light pillar.

She inconceivably shed her feathers and became a Diamond-ranked beast. Even if she was only Diamond-ranked Level 1, it was enough to prove that her growth potential became even greater than before. Her appearance brought forth snowflakes that floated that danced around in the air... She gradually turned into spirit form and entered Xue Wu Xia's body, just like how Xiao Wen Li would float into Yue Yang's body. Only then did the snowflakes in the air gradually disappear.

“Ah Man!” Yue Yang did not pay attention to any of these. His mind was still worried about Ah Man. Just as he linked minds with the hibernating Ah Man, he surprisingly discovered that Ah Man truly did not die. She was only hibernating due to her severe injuries. She was unlike other Guardian Beasts that would lose their memories upon death.

She was still the same Ah Man.

She was still his own Ah Man.

Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen Red, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and the Ice Serpent Demon surrounded Yue Yang. They bathed in the Nirvana Flames that appeared during Yue Yang’s level up and leveled up at the same time. They continuously evolved and shed their feathers. Even the Spirit of Flame and Smoke, that had been hunting the Sand Drill Demon Worm, erupted into flames, enjoying the pleasure of leveling up...

The Old Dragon Turtle, who did not level up along with Yue Yang and the others, held the Prison Emperor’s Divine Staff that contained the Prison Emperor’s Will. His tears welled up as he knelt down and lamented continuously.

Other than him, the Prison Emperor had only left behind a forgotten history.

Six thousand years had passed and the sealed Heaven Realm

Warriors had not died but escaped. Who could have remembered the Human Emperor who had shocked the Heaven Realm?

Who could still remember the Prison Emperor who sacrificed his life in order to seal the Three Great Leader of Heaven Realm?

The sole thing that assured the Old Dragon Turtle was that a genius had once again appeared amongst the humans.

He was still very young and could not compare to the Prison Emperor before. However, with this brat's growth potential and a little bit of hard work, there will come a time when he will become a new generation super Ranker. He could even become stronger than the Prison Emperor...

He was still young.

With the challenges and experiences he gained today, his powers would be unlimited in the future.

He would be the best successor for the new generation Prison Emperor!

Chapter 357 – Tong Tian Tower's Sixth Floor

After the battle in the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace, the Old Dragon Turtle happily took the Prison Emperor's Divine Staff and rushed out to use a secret technique to recover his power.

With regards to Yue Yang's adamant refusal to give the Prison Emperor Divine Seal to him, he couldn't do anything to it at all.

Although Yue Yang would not be able to use the Prison Emperor Divine Seal right now, to Yue Yang, who definitely refused to be shortchanged, he would still want it even if he could only use it to smash walnuts.

He finally cleared the Prison Emperor Divine Palace quest after so much hard work. He had even chased the three big bosses away.

If he didn't receive some Artifacts as compensation, Yue Yang would feel gravely wronged.

Hence, Prison Emperor Divine Staff belongs to the Old Dragon Turtle, the Prison Emperor Divine Seal belongs to Yue Yang. As for the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, it indisputably belongs to Princess Qian Qian. Furthermore, only she could use it.

Yue Yang said that he had contributed the most, so he insisted on getting double the amount of rewards. Hence, he also snatched the Prison Emperor's Seven Star Pillars forcibly.

The Old Dragon Turtle obviously disagreed, but his opinion did not matter at all to Yue Yang.

Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia and the others didn't leave at once. Instead, they stayed at the Prison Emperor Divine Palace and rested inside the grimoire world for three days until they completely recovered from the fatigue of the great battle. Then, they spent a few more days to round up all the various rewards they got from the Prison Emperor Divine Palace. They tore up the Heaven Realm Centipedes' venomous mouth and outer shells into pieces. They also took the Sand Drill Demon Worm's Inner Dan, the Heaven Realm Warrior's wings, weapons and armors. All of these materials were brought into the grimoire world, becoming materials for refining.

They cleared the whole place until there wasn't anything left to be cleared. Only then did Yue Yang left the Prison Emperor Divine Palace under the Old Dragon Turtle's secret teleportation method.

Amongst all of the Sealed Heaven Realm Warriors, only the monster guy An Ge was left.

That fellow had almost been swallowed whole by the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen.

Fortunately Yue Yang had promised to spare his life before.

An Ge carried over a dozen of his comrades' remnants and memento, then walked step by step away from the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, leaving through the teleportation gate.

Before he left, he turned back for one last look.

Maybe there was a thread of unspeakable sadness in his heart. He didn't look as happy as he thought he would be, instead, he felt a little depressed. Yue Yang didn't really care about him at all, but listening to An Ge's mumbling, he discovered that An Ge actually had around fifty comrades before. Now, only he was left. He could also only find ten over mementos from them, most of them had been lost. It couldn't be helped that he would feel depressed.

Getting back his freedom was a good thing, but right now, he had become completely alone.

Six thousand years had passed and he had lost his original body and became a monster guy. Could he still return to the Heaven Realm?

With his current Innate Level 1 strength, would he still be able to safely return to the Heaven Realm.

Forget about his lack of confidence, even Yue Yang who had never gone to the Heaven Realm before looked down on him.

"I will stay at the Tong Tian Tower for a while, I want to adapt first..." Monster guy An Ge actually wanted to say that he wanted to follow Yue Yang to the Heaven Realm, but he saw that Yue Yang didn't have that kind of thought at the mean time, so he didn't mention it at all. He believed that when Yue Yang go to the Heaven Realm in the future, he would definitely need a guide. An Ge

believed he would be the best choice as guide, so he was not in a hurry. He would first improve his strength at the lower levels of Tong Tian Tower first.

Parting ways with An Ge, Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia and the others return to the Little Flower Garden

The Prison Emperor Divine Palace battle had not only brought a huge impact for Yue Yang, it had also greatly impacted Xue Wu Xia and the others.

The strong Heaven Realm Great Leaders, the Heaven Realm Warriors who didn't die, the Heaven Realm Centipedes whose bodies were extremely durable... Inside everyone's heart, after this battle, it was like they had acquired a deep enlightenment. When they thought about how they had been recognized in the human realm, they really felt like a frog in a well. Heaven Realm was indeed an abnormal place. If they wanted to advance to the Heaven Realm with the strength that they have right now, they would really be a joke.

Heaven Realm was definitely not a place that they could live easily once they reached the Innate Rank.

After this lesson, Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia and the others finally had a goal. They decided not to think about how the gates to the Heaven Realm would only open once in a hundred years.

The most important thing was not to be in a hurry to go to the Heaven Realm.

Instead, they should be training to achieve greater heights, becoming stronger and having greater powers.

Just as Yue Yang and the others were about to start their harsh training, the Drunk Cat Big Sister and her little panda Niu Niu suddenly came to the Little Flower Garden, bringing a shocking news. The Supreme Elder Zhi Zun, Night Empress, Elder Nan Gong and the others had already returned from the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. With regards to the matter of the Soaring Dragon Continent invasion, the Supreme Elder was extremely enraged. However, with reasons unknown, the Innate Alliance had not moved to interrogate the Thousand Goblins Sect, Western Lion Pagoda and the Kingdom of Zi Jin of their sins. Of course, all the powerful experts such as the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian and the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader had already gone into hiding. No one dared to face the wrath of the Supreme Elder.

“Zhi Zun has returned?” Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia looked at each other. Does Zhi Zun’s return meant that their advancement towards the Heaven Realm had failed?

“She seemed to be looking for you. Elder Nan Gong has also looked for the Vice Principal to discuss about something, but I’m not sure what it is about.” The Drunk Cat Big Sister was a little curious about Yue Yang’s powers. She might not be shocked anymore at his impressive growth, but how did Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress also levelled up to Innates? Could it be that that [Body Fusion] training was really that effective?

“Then let’s go back to the Yue Clan Castle to find out!” Yue Yang also thought that they had stayed at the Prison Emperor Divine Palace for too long, they had missed a lot of news about the outside world.

When Yue Yang returned back to the Yue Clan Castle, elder Yue Hai and the others were overjoyed.

Jun Wu You and Eastern Sky King quickly rushed over too.

They were fathers after all. It would be a lie if they said they didn’t care about their daughters.

Right now, seeing their daughters and their future son-in-law returning safely, they breathed a sigh of relief. Moreover, they had all improved so much. They really should let the young train on their own, otherwise how could their daughters improve so much? Three Innates had followed after Yue Yang, the abnormal brat. The fact that Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress all became Innates, if it happened last time, everybody would have said that it would only happen in dream land...

After a round of celebration, Night Empress suddenly appeared inside Yue Yang’s head.

Zhi Zun and her did not appear in person, but both took turns to question Yue Yang about the events that happened in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace. They especially asked a lot about the circumstances of the Heaven Realm Great Leaders.

“How is she?” Zhi Zun finally asked. She asked the question out of the blue without heads or tails, but Yue Yang understood that she was asking about her little sister, Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

“Not good but not bad either. She is still sleeping.” Actually, Yue Yang had not seen Phoenix Fairy Beauty yet, but according to the Qilin girl, after Phoenix Fairy Beauty spent most of her life force for Hundredfold Life Combustion to fight the Heaven Realm Great Leader, it would be best if she could continue to sleep like this to recuperate. Yue Yang was already very thankful that she was still alive. If the Qilin girl had came out a little later, Phoenix Fairy Beauty might really die because of her Life Combustion skill.

“It would be best if you don’t think about the Heaven Realm Great Leaders now. Thinking too much would bring no advantage at all, you might even get obsessed with it. What you need to focus right now is to build up your basics.” Zhi Zun immediately disappeared after saying this.

“Little fellow, don’t you want to ask about how our expedition to the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower goes?” Night Empress really liked to tease Yue Yang when they were alone.

“What’s the result of your expedition?” Yue Yang guessed that the results was probably not good.

“The Heaven Realm is extremely vast. There are four gates in total to enter it. We went to the bottom of the fourth gate, which should be the West Gate from amongst the North, South, East and West Gate of Heaven Realm. Legends said that ‘The gate to Heaven Realm opens once in a century’, this was indeed correct. However,

in front of the Heaven Realm Gate, there was an extremely long, sealed passageway. The seal guarding the passageway was extremely terrifying, one could go in but would never be able to go out. Hence, we gave up on the next step of the exploration. We thought that it is probably a trap, there must definitely be another way to enter the Heaven Realm. Otherwise, during the Ancient Times, how could so many human warriors enter the Heaven Realm easily?” Night Empress didn’t hold back on Yue Yang, she told him all about everything that had happened, but in a simplified term.

“You mean you guys have given up on entering, and are trying to find a new way?” Yue Yang frowned slightly. Could the seal have something to do with the Prison Emperor?

“Yeah, maybe we’ll talk about it again once you youngsters grew stronger a little more. Otherwise, in case I can’t return, you guys will be in danger.” Night Empress was telling the truth. Even before strong Rankers like Night Empress, Zhi Zun and Elder Nan Gong could confirm that they can return from the Heaven Realm, Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian and the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader had already plotted an attack. If Zhi Zun and the others really couldn’t come back, it would be weird if they didn’t plot to attack Yue Yang with all they had.

“Then you guys would probably need to wait for some period of time ...” Yue Yang felt that even if he had the [Body Fusion] skill, it would be too early for him, Xue Wu Xia and the others to go to the Heaven Realm.

“It’s okay, we will personally teach you guys ourselves.” Night

Empress giggled like your typical next door girl.

Her laughter was like bells ringing in Yue Yang's ears.

However, Yue Yang was unable to sense her body's presence.

Compared to the Heaven Realm Great Leaders, Night Empress was not as powerful. Even against the weakened Heaven Realm Great Leaders, it might still be difficult for her to win. That was because the Night Empress was only a little stronger than Phoenix Fairy Beauty, and Phoenix Fairy Beauty could only injure the Heaven Realm Great Leader after she strengthened herself with Hundredfold Life Combustion. Without Life Combustion, it would be a miracle if the Night Empress was able to fight the Heaven Realm Great Leader on equal terms.

Of course, Zhi Zun, whose strength far surpassed the both of them, in Yue Yang's opinion, would probably have a chance to defeat Jiu Xiao at his strongest .

If the Heaven Realm Great Leaders who had not recovered their full strength met Zhi Zun, they would really have a tragic fate.

Zhi Zun, in Yue Yang's opinion, was the female version of Prison Emperor.

Maybe the current Zhi Zun could not compare to the Prison Emperor at his prime, but in the future, she would definitely be as successful as the Prison Emperor... Yue Yang firmly believed in

this!

In the Soaring Dragon Continent, there were only two people that Yue Yang couldn't figure out. One was Zhi Zun, and the second was the pitiful guy's mother.

After speaking with the Night Empress, Yue Yang had thought that she was joking about the 'personally teach you guys ourselves' part.

Who knew, the next day, she really came and took Luo Hua City Mistress away... At the same time, Princess Qian Qian's mysterious teacher had also come. Yue Yang didn't recognize the old lady, but he discovered that she had a hidden strength of Innate Level 8. He couldn't help but be shocked.

Turns out that there was such a powerful person amongst the protectors of the Royal Family.

Yi Nan's aunt came and left with Yi Nan.

Grandma Wu Teng, who had healed her inner injury with the Martial Arts Pill, came to get Yue Bing.

Yue Yu's master had also come and took Yue Yu away, chuckling all along saying that she couldn't teach her student anymore in terms of martial art skills, but she still had various knowledge and life experiences that she could share with her disciple.

Yue Yu was naturally willing to spend some time with her master, because to her, she was a mother-like figure that she lacked.

Xue Wu Xia was the most favoured. Zhi Zun had come and decided to teach her personally.

To the Xue Clan, this was a dream-like opportunity. No one in the Xue Clan would ever thought that Xue Wu Xia would receive the Supreme Elder of Humans, Zhi Zun's favour.

Forget about them, even Yue Yang never expected it.

In the end, everyone left for their separate training. Only the sickly beauty was left.

“Don't worry, no matter what, I will accompany you. I will stay here.” The sickly beauty revealed a gentle smile as she curled her arm around Yue Yang's, thinking that he would feel lonely. However, everyone's departure was actually only a temporary goodbye. Everyone was trained by different seniors with different experiences and knowledges, they would definitely improve quickly and become stronger. After some time, when they meet again, they would definitely become a better partner for Yue Yang, different from their previous selves.

“You can't continue staying at home like this. You should go out and explore the outside world.” Before Zhi Zun left, she gave an advice to Yue Yang.

“Yes, you should listen to her highness Zhi Zun... You haven’t been to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower right? Do you want to go? Maybe you can train over there. Even if you can’t level up, at least you can learn more knowledge.” The sickly beauty thought that Zhi Zun’s words made sense. If they didn’t go out and train indoors, their views would be narrowed. Furthermore, going to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower wouldn’t conflict against anything. Yue Yang could go out and train during the day and return to the grimoire world at night. She would accompany him so that he wouldn’t feel lonely. She wasn’t afraid that she would get bored inside the grimoire world because she could enjoy researching Runes all day. Whenever he missed her, he could return and spend time with her.

“Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower?” Yue Yang had only gone to the Fourth Floor at the most. Legends said that the Sixth Floor was a place that only the strong could exist, he really never gone there before.

Legends said that the Sixth Floor was where different races gathered, where the Innate Alliance was located.

The Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, what was it like actually?

Chapter 358 – Yue Yang Looked Hideous?

Yue Yang who was able to endure Xu Kong's Domain of Power, which could manipulate gravitational force and continuously changing it between hundredfold and zero gravity, didn't feel anything when he stepped into the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, which impose a sixfold gravitational force on everyone on that level. In reality, a few months back, Yue Yang had already had no problem withstanding twentyfold gravitational force when he fought against the Vice Sect Leader of Green Summit Sect, Moqi Xu Ling.

After finishing the Prison Emperor battle, Yue Yang had improved by leaps and bounds, be it in terms of skills or levels.

If it were another person, they would definitely need a long time to adapt when they first stepped into the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

To Yue Yang, this was nothing.

At the teleportation gate of Tong Tian Tower's Sixth Floor.

Many of the warriors who had just teleported to the level were quietly sitting down and adapting to the sixfold gravitational force. Only a handful of people who had adapted to sixfold gravitational force before or experts who have teleported down from the Seventh Floor could leave the gate proudly with wide steps. Some of the newcomers like Yue Yang who had never stepped into the Sixth Floor before could only look at them in envy. Many

newcomers were observing the sealed Giant Teleportation Circle. Different from the lower levels, from the Sixth Floor onwards, all the teleportation circles were sealed tightly. In order to enter or exit the Sixth Floor, everyone would need to go through the same passageway. Moreover, this passageway restricted flight.

Only experts who had reached Innate Level 6 and above had the power to overrule the restrictions.

Otherwise, even if it was a Giant Dragon or a demon from the Demon Abyss, everyone would need to walk through the passageway step by step.

Yue Yang noticed a lot of demons who were several metres tall walking through with booming steps beside him. They completely disregarded humans' existence.

In here, the hatred between races was not the most important thing. Human warriors respected the strong. No matter what race they were, if they were strong warriors, they would be respected by the others. On the contrary, if their abilities were so-so, even if they were the Golden Elves whose status was extremely high and noble, they would still be looked down and scorned upon.

One's position depended solely on one's levels.

This was the real Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

“What's your name?” On the entrance to the Sixth Floor

Teleportation Gate, the newcomers were queuing to register their names. In the Tong Tian Tower First, Second and Third Floors, they could just stir up trouble whenever they liked and show off their powers for a while. However, here, they were all newcomers. If they were not obedient, they might provoke the wraths of old timers here and die.

“Titan Yue.” Yue Yang also entered the queue. If he was willing, he could just notify Elder Nan Gong or the Innate Alliance, then everything would have been easier. Innate Rankers enjoy special privileges, there was no need for them to queue. Furthermore, an attendant would also be appointed to take care of them. Yue Yang, who wanted to experience life on his own, would of course choose not to do that.

“What’s your level and rank?” The registry officer who seemed to come from a different race asked disinterestedly.

“Ah... Level 6 [Elder]-Intermediate.” Yue Yang did not lie. According to the level stated in his grimoire, he was actually a Level 6 [Elder]. His rank had just levelled up after defeating the Prison Emperor Divine Palace. If it was last time, he would just have been a Level 5 [Grandmaster]. If it was just based on his level, he didn’t even have the qualifications to enter the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

“Your Introducer?” The man with four strands of beard, from an unknown race asked in the Common Language.

“Shui Dong Liu!” Yue Yang didn’t dare to say the Supreme Elder of Humans, Zhi Zun’s name out loud, otherwise, this indifferent

registry officer would definitely have a heart attack. He said the Old Fox's name instead. In any case, in order to protect every Ranker's personal strength and privacy, the registry officer couldn't check warrior's grimoires or test their strengths, so as to prevent the leak of information and protect the interest of different races.

(Shiro: In case you guys forgot, the Old Fox's name is stated in chapter 323)

The registration process would usually only involve verbal inquiries. The registering warrior could even choose not to answer some of the questions.

For the registration of ordinary warriors, this was enough.

As they do not have to hide their rank and strength, Innate Rankers had a special entrance process.

The ones that were being protected were all warriors with special abilities. They might not be very strong, but they have some kind of special skill. These people, if their abilities were known to people who had bad intentions, their lives would be in danger. Of course, nobody would ever think that there would be a powerful person like Yue Yang who would queue and register together with the newbies. No one suspected that he was an Innate Ranker. Most people who saw Yue Yang who possessed the [Camouflage] Inherent Skill would only suspect if he really had the strength of a Level 6 [Elder].

“Do you have any unique abilities?” This question asked by the

man from a different race, wasn't to pry into the secret of the warriors, but instead to set them up with a suitable quest. This question, the registering warriors could choose not to answer.

“My speciality is to create mechanical puppets.” Yue Yang pretended to be an honest child and replied.

“Creating mechanical puppets?” That man from a different race tried to recall something and nodded, “You said that you came from the Soaring Dragon Continent just now. I remember there is a Yue Clan over there that creates puppets... Are you one of their disciples? What's your strongest beast?”

“Silver-ranked Wind Eagle Warrior.” Yue Yang stated one of Ghost Genius Yue Gang's ‘Transformers Goods’ that he found in the Puppet Palace.

“Do you know any combat skills?” The man from a different race questioned closely, “A few decades ago, there's a Yue Qiu from the Soaring Dragon Continent, who was an expert in combat skills. Was he from your Yue family?”

“He had already passed away during a battle, I didn't inherit his combat skills.” When Yue Yang said this, that man from a different race revealed a pitiful expression. Seems like he had no interest at all for Yue Yang who was an expert in creating combat mechanical puppet beasts, but was extremely interested in Yue Qiu, who was a combat expert.

”Young man, do you need my word of advice?” The man from a

different race asked finally.

“Please speak.” Yue Yang felt strange. This fellow didn’t seem to give any word of advice to the registering people in front of him just now.

“According to your level, strength and abilities, it would be very difficult for you to survive in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. In the lower floors of the Tong Tian Tower, your beasts might be an invincible existence, but you must know that in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, the monsters here are a hundred times stronger than what you imagine. Their numbers are also a hundred times more! Beasts that can’t level up such as puppet beasts or beasts with low potential are just like trash up here, they are completely useless. Please don’t blame me for my harsh words, but the ability to create mechanical puppet beasts is useless. If you want to survive in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower longer, you have to possess strong powers, not only in terms of combat skills, but also in terms of possessing beasts with high potential of growth... If your purpose of coming here is not to train for a long period of time, that you only want to try living in the higher floors of Tong Tian Tower for a while and experience a different world, that’s okay. Young one, if you want to train yourself here and continue to become stronger, your preparations are far from enough. Can you understand my words?” The man from a different race didn’t speak in a loud voice, but he used an extremely stern voice to warn Yue Yang.

“Little human boy, why don’t you go home and continue to drink your mother’s milk? This is not a place for a weak, spoilt child like you.” Behind Yue Yang, a sharp voice scorned at him.

“.....” Yue Yang turned back, and discovered that the voice who jeered at him was unexpectedly coming from a dwarf. He was speechless.

“If you insist on entering the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, then, I suggest that you better not enter these places. It’s better to stay in a safe district. “ The man from a different race took out a map, and drew tens of circles, representing those death traps of Yue Yang, this six-ranked clan leader.

“Thank you.” Although he had been looked down upon by the others, Yue Yang was still thankful towards the man from a different race who was cold on the outside and warm on the inside.

This was also his way of showing some kind of protection towards his juniors.

Generally speaking, it was difficult for young humans to accept rejections. However, a word of advice, although it was unpleasant to hear, the effects are much better than harsh rejections.

If Yue Yang hadn’t hid his abilities, if his abilities were really only limited to what he had stated just now, it would really be very dangerous for him to enter the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

That man from a different race didn’t reject him or stop him from entering. Instead, he gave him a fair warning and even carefully pointed out the various dangerous areas on the map for him. Forget about someone from a different race, even if he was also human, they might not show so much care and attention.

Hence, Yue Yang wholeheartedly said 'Thank you' to him. Although he was not really thankful, he wanted to praise the attitude of this man from a different race.

The dwarf who was queueing right behind Yue Yang still continued to ridicule him.

The whole queue were buzzing with hoots of laughter.

Only one of registering warriors, who was a humanoid goblin race, frowned his brows as he observed Yue Yang from the back.

He felt that something was wrong, but he couldn't figure out the problem. Was this human boy really like what that dwarf had said, a weak, spoilt little human boy? Wrong, if he were to choose an opponent, he would rather choose to fight two of that dwarf than fight that human boy... His sharp Goblin's senses make him feel that something was wrong, but he just couldn't figure out what's wrong.

Would a true weakling, when faced with mockery, be so calm and tranquil?

Even if it's oneself, one can never reach this state of ignorance.

He's not that simple. This human boy, he was definitely hiding his abilities. He definitely had some kind of special abilities, it's just that he was extremely secretive and didn't want to reveal it at

all.

The Goblin man made a conclusion in his heart. He felt that Yue Yang was a formidable opponent, but he would never imagine that this young human boy was actually an exceptional Innate Ranker, who possessed a terrifying strength capable of killing an Innate Level 8.

“Looking for tankers in the Blood Area 1...”

(Shiro: tankers are literally meat shields in chinese lol)

“Willing to train you for ten days for a Wisdom Fruit. Two Wisdom Fruits and I’ll train you for a month!”

“Cheap equipments for sale! Exchanging a 90% quality, new Dragon Leather Armor and Light Sword for Black Sand. Mass buying Lustrous Branches, and buying a Death Suit!”

“Good news to the newbies, selling survival guidebooks for Tong Tian Tower for a thousand gold each. You’ll also get a Monsters Map as a free gift!”

“Super-strong healing medicine, selling for a hundred gold each bottle. Limited to nine bottles per customers, first come first serve. Also selling Yellow Topaz!”

The moment Yue Yang exited the Teleportation Gate Passage, just as he took out his water bag and was about to soothe his parched throat, he suddenly heard a crowd of people shouting

outside the big Plaza in front. He immediately spurted out the water he was drinking, coughing violently.

This was really shocking.

This was practically an online MMORPG in a different world, the only difference was there was no hacking or alternate accounts.

Soaring Dragon Continent, as compared to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, cannot be referred to as a continent, but only a small place. On the map, it's even smaller than the palm of an infant. If it's not for Supreme Elder of Humans, Zhi Zun, who was extremely powerful and was ranked number one in terms of powers even amongst various races, these different races might not even be aware of such a small, insignificant place like the Soaring Dragon Continent. Advancing up the Eighth and Ninth floors, the Soaring Dragon Continent would just be a sesame-sized village, almost unseen on the map. Forget about Soaring Dragon Continent, even the Demon Abyss, which was a dozen times larger than the Soaring Dragon Continent, was merely a place as big as a finger on the Eighth and Ninth Floor map.

In the Soaring Dragon Continent, there were not many Level 6 [Elder]s. However, here, they are all over the place. Furthermore, every single one of them was strong.

Level 5 [Grandmaster]? Those could only be attendants!

As for Level 4 [Heroes], they were not even qualified to become servants.

After looking for a long time, Yue Yang finally discovered a handful of [Heroes] and dozens over [Grandmasters] amongst hundreds, nearing thousands of Level 6 [Elders]. Everyone, without exception, was servants to different Rankers.

“You, that hideous-looking human boy over there, come over here!” Suddenly, a lovable voice shouted towards Yue Yang.

“Hideous-looking?” It was the first time Yue Yang heard someone commenting that his looks were unsatisfactory.

“Why are you talking so much. If it’s not because we are short of one person, we won’t even bother to ask you to make up our number. We are rushing for time, so stop staring like an idiot. Let’s go, quickly!” Another voice that sounded coarse and rough resounded from Yue Yang’s back.

When Yue Yang turned around, he immediately jumped in shock, his heart almost flying out of his mouth.

My God...

Chapter 359 – The Standard Of A Handsome Guy

In front of Yue Yang, stood a party of beauties and beasts.

There were two Ox-head people, four Orcs and three Golden Elves. In this party, the beauties were extremely beautiful while the beasts were extremely hideous.

The one that was shouting at Yue Yang was a three-metre tall Ox-head girl. Yue Yang thought that before the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man evolved, she was extremely ugly. However, who would have thought that compared to this Ox-head girl, Ah Man was really beautiful in comparison. It's fine if only the Ox-head girl was ugly, but there were still four more Orc girls with lower fangs that extended upwards. Their bodies were stout and stocky, one even more muscular than the next.

Originally, when they stand together, they were already a shocking view.

Now that they were standing beside three Golden Elves who were so breathtakingly beautiful, the difference between the ugliness and the beauty was really too powerful.

Yue Yang thought that he had quite a strong mental strength, but when he turned around, he really felt that he couldn't take it.

The sight was simply too shocking!

Amongst the three Golden Elves, one of the youngest one was a minor who have yet come of age. Strictly speaking, she was a big loli with a flat chest. Her hair was lively green, and she wore a green-coloured elven clothing that accentuated her slender waist and long legs. She gave Yue Yang the impression that she was a little deer in the forest, lithe yet elegant. Her graceful face was smooth without any flaws, really desirable. Her long eyebrows made her look especially quick-witted, and her light green eyes were like a pair of emeralds... Her soft lips were always smiling mischievously. One could tell with one look that she was smart but a troublemaker, an eccentric little enchantress.

Another one looked like her elder brother. His body was tall and lean, his long purple hair was draped over his shoulders. His handsome features did not lose to the handsome Prince of Tian Luo.

Compared to him, Yue Yang's elegance and gracefulness was a little lacking.

However, he definitely won in terms of masculinity and soldierly aspects.

Of course, compared to the looks of the Golden Elves race, where everyone was either a handsome guy or a beautiful girl, the human race was definitely inferior.

The Golden Elves was the noblest, most beautiful and most reputable race amongst the different branch race of elves. If

humans like Yue Yang, Xue Tan Lang, Yan Po Jun, Prince of Tian Luo and other handsome guys of the Soaring Dragon Continent were to be compared to them, they would only be average at the most.

Standing beside the Golden Elf man was a girl who looked much more mature than the first one. Her beauty definitely reached the 'Femme Fatale' standard, able to cause a downfall to a kingdom. Yue Yang had seen many beauties like Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress, the Sickly Beauty and the others, who had their own assets. They were much more beautiful than the average human girls, but compared to these Golden Elves, they were really incomparable... Yue Yang suppressed his good-for-nothing impulse. According to his aesthetic standards, these Golden Elf girls were a little too skinny, if their chest area could be more wavy, maybe they would be much more beautiful.

Of course, wanting to see an elf's breast was not simply a dream, but sleep-walking in broad daylight!

An elf's personal strength was in their breathtaking, beautiful looks, their slender waists, their heart-stopping legs and perfect, flawless skin.

What are big breasts? Only the Orcs girls beside the Golden Elves would have this gifts, they were practically born with large breasts!

One of the four Orcs girls came out.

Their magnificent breasts were more than capable of suffocating a big man!

That Golden Elf girl who looked more mature was wearing a light purple gown decorated with golden threads. She held a green staff in her hand that had a blue precious stone embedded on top of it. Yue Yang didn't observe her too carefully, because firstly, he had a wife at home that possess an exceptional looks not inferior to this Golden Elf girl. Secondly, this mature-looking Golden Elf girl looked like the handsome Golden Elf guy's girlfriend. She had already been taken.

"The quest requires ten people, we are lacking one more person. If you come along, we can give you a Red Precious Stone as reward. If you want it in gold, we can also do that." When the Golden Elf handsome guy saw Yue Yang, who was observing the three of them, averted his eyes immediately when their eyes meet, he felt that this human man was extremely well-behaved. If it were another human looking at his younger sister and wife, they would probably already drool uncontrollably. After thinking like this, he decided to explain courteously to Yue Yang, and even offer him a reward.

"Why did you guys choose me?" Yue Yang felt strange. The Plaza was full of people, why did they choose a newcomer like him?

"We definitely won't let those fellows who have ulterior motives to join us. You can just follow us for a while, we won't take up much of your time. When we have finished the quest, you can leave the party straight away." The Ox-head girl slapped Yue Yang's shoulders roughly, almost knocking his small body to the

ground.

“Which Instance Dungeon are you guys going to? I am only a little Level 6 Puppet Master now, can I even go?” Yue Yang felt that it would be better if he asked clearly.

“What’s Instance Dungeon?” Everyone was looking at him with a bewildered expression.

“Like the place you guys are preparing to go, the... Jadeite Forest? What kind of Boss Monster is there? I mean, what kind of big monsters are there? Like the guardian of some artifact or the strongest monster?” When Yue Yang asked this, he discovered that they were looking at him like humans looking at aliens.

“Stop reading too many bullshit fairy tales like or . It’s not like what you think.” The Ox-head girl was about to slap Yue Yang’s back once again. Fortunately, Yue Yang managed to avoid it in time.

“You mean, you guys are not going to beat monsters? You won’t train to level up? You won’t look for treasures?” Yue Yang felt that this Otherworld Gaming Company was really too ruthless. How could they make a game that don’t give out treasures?

“We are going to pick up herbs!” A large blue vein started to pop out on the Ox-head girl’s forehead.

“This fellow looks like an idiot, will there really be no problems

bringing him along?” One of the Orc girls spoke to another Orc girl.

“The stupider the better, a smart fellow would be dangerous instead... However, amongst the cunning human race, an idiot like him is really rare.” The Orc girls’ conversation really stabbed Yue Yang’s pride.

Ever since he came into this world, it was the first time he heard someone saying that he was an idiot.

Furthermore, it was also the first time he heard someone saying his looks were unsatisfactory. Heavens, this Tong Tian Tower’s Sixth Floor was really not a nice place!

Yue Yang thought that he might just came to the wrong place. He hadn’t even start touring this place peacefully, yet he was already jeered upon. Alright then, it’s good that they didn’t know the truth yet. It wouldn’t be interesting otherwise. Yue Yang immediately pretended to be ‘I am a fool who have a lot of money, I am easily bullied’. Yue Yang had even thought of pretending to be a ‘Newly Rich Country Bumpkin’.

There was an Ox-head man that had not spoken since the start. He looked like their leader.

He suddenly acted domineeringly and waved his hand heroically, “Why do you talk so much? Let’s go!”

Just like that, the 'Easily Bullied Rich Idiot' Yue Yang was dragged along by the beauty and the beast party. No one cared about this newbie's opinion.

His existence was only to serve as the tenth member for the beauty and the beast party, because the basic requirement of coming to the Jadeite Forest was to have ten people in a party. It was a team quest. If there was only one person, even if he was an Innate, he would never be able to receive it.

The four Orc girls were wearing heavy armours and held a thick, bulky Wolf Tooth Clubs each in their hands. They were also carrying large, black, round metal shields.

Seems like they were the tankers in this party.

The two Ox-headed people, one male and one female, were carrying huge axes in their backs. They were probably the main attacking force.

The big loli elf was an archer, she carried a beautiful Wisteria Bow on her back. Her brother was either a magician or a warlock, the party's important DPS member. As for that mature elf girl who was beautiful beyond compare, needless to say, she was definitely the babysitter of the party, a priest without doubt!

Yue Yang continued to daydream as he walked.

What kind of role would he play in this party? Puppet

Summoner? But he was a fake one, alright? If Yue Yang was a real Puppet Summoner, then what was Ghost Genius Yue Gong?

Paladin?

No, that's not right. Although he had Nirvana Flame, he couldn't resurrect.

A Druid? Although he had Thorny Flower, Hui Tai Lang and the other beasts, he was definitely not a Druid. As for a Knight, forget it, that was not even reasonable!

Could it be that he was a Thief?

Yue Yang thought for a long time, and in the end, he actually made a shocking conclusion. According to his usual actions, his shameless and cunning ways, sneaky and secretive attitude, the most obvious conclusion was... a thief. Forget it, being a thief is also a good thing, he can do a Stun Attack... Yue Yang was still daydreaming when the Ox-head girl's back slap almost sent his heart jumping out from his mouth.

"What are you mumbling about? Do you really have some dissatisfaction?" The Ox-head girl glared at him intently.

"No, I wouldn't dare!" Yue Yang immediately raised his hand in surrender, showing that he was docile and submissive. He was like a submissive citizen of a tyrannical king who would never scold or strike back no matter how much he was bullied.

“If you are worried about the danger, after receiving the quest later, you can leave the party at the Jadeite Forest and teleport back. We will give you your reward and the teleportation scroll.” The kind elf girl thought that Yue Yang was afraid, so she comforted him with a gentle voice. She was just like a big sister comforting her younger brother, making Yue Yang feel really depressed.

“Hey coward, do you know I was brave enough to start doing quests in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower since two years ago? Unlike you, you are already so old, yet you are still trembling in fear!” That mischievous big loli elf made a face at Yue Yang.

“You have started doing quests since two of years ago? Little friend, how old are you this year?” Yue Yang was bewildered. Two years ago, won’t this little minx be around Primary 3?

“Listen well, I’m not a little friend. In another 5 years and 8 months, I will be 160 years old. I’m a grown up, you understand?” The big loli elf girl’s words almost made Yue Yang drop to the ground. Sigh, talking about age with the Golden Elves race who could live up to three thousand years is meaningless.

“Where are you from?” That handsome Golden Elf sent a wry smile to Yue Yang. It was obvious that he felt bad as her brother, hence he tried to change the topic.

“Soaring Dragon Continent.” Yue Yang knew that in these people’s eyes, the Soaring Dragon Continent was a foreign domain,

a very small foreign domain at that.

“I know that the Supreme Elder Zhi Zun came from the Soaring Dragon Continent.” When the big loli spoke about Zhi Zun, she sounded respectful.

Yue Yang noticed something. Not only her, everyone in the party, be it the Ox-head people, the Orcs or the Golden Elves, they showed sincerely respectful expressions when Zhi Zun’s name was mentioned. Seems like everyone in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower really respected the strong. As long as one was strong, one would have fans from all the different races.

The big loli elf then continued, “I also want to be Supreme Elder when I grow up!”

The handsome elf guy who usually spoil her immediately rebuked her, “Don’t disrespect the Supreme Elder, there is only one Supreme Elder in the world.”

The mischievous big loli elf jumped in fright and stuck out her tongue to show that she knew she had spoke wrongly. She then tilted her head and looked towards Yue Yang, “Do you know the Supreme Elder?”

Yue Yang hurriedly shook his head.

The four Orc girls burst into laughter. One of them laughed so hard that her mane became ruffled, “Of course he know the

Supreme Elder, but the big question is if the Supreme Elder knew about him. A weak human like him, I really doubt he had even heard about the Supreme Elder.”

“Of course I heard about the Supreme Elder before.” Yue Yang replied in a monotone.

“Hahaha, do you want to make me laugh to my death?” This time, the Ox-head girl and the reserved elf girl couldn’t help their laughter anymore.

“Little boy, stand beside me later on, I will protect you. Jadeite Forest maybe a dangerous place for you, but I have gone there three times, so I am more familiar with that place than anyone else. As long as you continue to follow me, I guarantee you will be fine.” The Ox-head girl proudly slapped Yue Yang’s shoulder. Her actions really made Yue Yang speechless. Fortunately he knew that the Ox-head race’s standards of beauty was different from humans, otherwise, he would really suspect that this Ox-head girl had taken a liking to him.

The Ox-head people like men with horns. Furthermore, their bodies must be sturdy and full of fur.

A thick, long tail was the most important aspect. Amongst the Ox-head race, a man who couldn’t use his tail to swat away flies was not handsome at all!

Lastly, if one wanted to be even more handsome, one should even put on a nose or an ear piercing.

As for scars, of course the more the better!

Based on Yue Yang's appearance, within the Ox-head race, he was definitely ugly. According to the standards amongst the Orcs, without a big pair of front tusks, a hairy mane and a big belly, a man would definitely be unpopular.

Hence, in conclusion, according to their standards of handsome men, in the eyes of the Ox-head girl and the four Orcs, Fatty Hai would probably be a much more handsome man than Yue Yang.

Chapter 360 – New Party Member

At first, Yue Yang thought that it would be easy to get a quest in the Warrior Guild at the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. Who would know that it was completely beyond his expectations.

In the Warrior Guild of Tong Tian Tower Sixth Floor, the requirements of getting a quest was extremely strict.

Other than the fact that the party level had to meet the requirement, the party's number of members and job allocation were also strictly imposed. If the party leader did not meet the required level, or if the party did not have a party member with certain jobs, the Quest Officer would reject the party's request for the quest. Furthermore, in the Warrior Guild, there were very little single-person quest, because even Innate Rankers believed that in the Tong Tian Tower Sixth Floor, the chances of a single person surviving was extremely low. Without the support of a party, a person would not even be able to guarantee their life's safety, let alone finish a quest.

“Are you really sure that you have the power to finish this quest?” The Quest Officer, who was a middle-aged warrior, asked this question to Yue Yang at least three times.

“If it was really a Starcup Flower picking quest.” Yue Yang was speechless. Did he really need to be so nervous over picking some flowers? They were not even going to defeat some big boss monster. Furthermore, why didn't he ask the others and only him alone? Could it be that he really looked that weak and fragile? Was his [Camouflage] Inherent Skill that effective?

“Young one, you have to pay attention to your attitude. Although the Jadeite Forest is a green-coded area, thirty percent of the monsters there are Gold-ranked monsters, and close to ten percent are Gold King Beasts. Most importantly, sometimes the strong Green Dragon or Blue Dragon would appear there, as they like to rest there. In this hundred years, there were at least 500 warriors who died taking this quest. Do you understand what I mean?” The middle-aged warrior was dissatisfied with Yue Yang’s attitude. He felt that if he let Yue Yang do the quest, it would be equivalent to sending him to his death.

“Alright, I’ll be careful.” Yue Yang didn’t want to argue. He hurriedly expressed his understanding and gratefulness to the middle-aged warrior’s good intentions, so that he could stop him from lecturing him again.

“I will lend this to you for the moment.” The middle-aged warrior gave a teleportation stone to Yue Yang, and warned him one last time, “Young one, if you are in danger, crush it at the first moment, understand? Sometimes retreating is not a disgrace, on the opposite, throwing one’s life is the real foolish thing to do.”

“...” Yue Yang never thought that this middle-aged uncle who had too much saliva on his mouth would actually really care about his life.

Of course, to a Warrior Guild Officer, the warriors who managed to come here, no matter where they were from, were the elite amongst the elites.

If they die at the beginning, it would be a great loss to the world. Especially the younger ones, they still have a huge growth potential, they might even become an Innate in the future. If they die at the initial stage of their growth, it would really be a pity.

After accepting the quest, an attendant led them towards a special teleportation room.

Before they teleported into the Jadeite Forest, the old man who was in charge of the teleportation gate warned them, “Everyone, you only have ten days to finish the quest. If you cannot return by the deadline, you will fail your quest. From the eleventh day, we will send a rescue team. If you guys fall into a predicament, you have to keep persevering on. Lastly, I wish you good luck!”

“Thank you for senior’s well wishes.” Other than Yue Yang, everyone, including the Orcs and the Ox-heads, replied him respectfully.

A golden light flashed.

Yue Yang discovered that he was teleporting to a special place.

The whole sky and earth was green. The sky was green jade-coloured while the ground was dark green. The trees here were close to a hundred metres tall, lush and thick, full of vitality. Compared to the Soaring Dragon Continent, the forest here was obviously much cleaner and lusher, moist and humid as if they had just been washed thoroughly by water.

No wonder this place was called Jadeite Forest.

The sixfold gravitational force had been increased to around eightfold.

The Ox-heads, Orcs and three Golden Elves were quietly adapting to the gravitational force the moment they teleported over.

The strongest amongst them, the Ox-head Leader and the handsome elf guy had quickly adapted. When Yue Yang saw them opening their eyes, he hurriedly pretended not being used to the gravity, so as to avoid them seeing through his deception. The slowest one to adapt was the Golden Elf big loli. She required five full minutes before she finally adapted.

The moment she adapted, she immediately teased Yue Yang, the 'weak human', with a bell-like voice, "In the past, I have always been the slowest. It's good now, finally someone stole the precious position from me. You have to treasure it well, because I gave that position to you! Right, what's your name? It's been so long, yet we still don't know what your name is!"

"That's not my fault, it's because you never asked." Yue Yang reported his name and spoke out the famous name of 'Titan' proudly.

"That... I think you don't really suit the name Titan." The Ox-head girl slapped Yue Yang's shoulders as always.

“If my name is not Titan, then what could it be?” Yue Yang didn’t let her slap his shoulder.

“Maybe Pai Gu Jing will suit you more.” The Ox-head girl almost said that Yue Yang was a skeleton.

(Shiro: Pai Gu Jing is the slang for anorexic in china)

“...” Yue Yang immediately rolled his eyes when he heard that. They were really such a bully!

Entering the Jadeite Forest, everyone showed a serious and vigilant expression, as if they were going to fight a bloody battle. Only Yue Yang who was not afraid because of his ignorance, treated this journey as a holiday trip. Of course, according to strength, for the powerful Yue Yang who could kill an Innate Level 8, coming to the Jadeite Forest was really to have fun.

It was not that there were no strong monsters in the Jadeite Forest. On the contrary, there was a lot.

However, it was marked as a green-coded area because the monsters here would not take the initiative to attack intruders. Most of the time, they would only roar to drive the intruders away. Unless the intruders attack them, they would live in harmony with each other.

A large group of Forest Wolves and ten over Forest Boas walked past Yue Yang, but they did not pay attention Yue Yang’s little party at all. They only walked past them quickly.

All of them were Gold-ranked Level 6 monsters and above.

There were also the Metal Dragon Eagles and Golden-head Falcon which were even more powerful. Yue Yang had even saw two Gold King Beasts, Purple-backed Thunder Condors.

Other than a row of Gold Mammoths' footprints marking their territory and warning intruders not to come in, the party who had walked for six hours had not met any enemies yet. The Ox-head and Orcs, Elves and human risk-taking party that Yue Yang was in, they were not in these beasts' prey list.

With great difficulty, they finally walked towards a marshland that was slightly more deserted.

Just as they were finding a place to rest, suddenly, Yue Yang felt a strange presence...

"No, this isn't right. My heart is beating so fast, there may be danger here. We should leave." That gentle elf girl who didn't talk much usually suddenly stood up. Her slender hands grab hold of her staff tightly as she surveyed the surrounding. Although she didn't see any anomaly, she immediately warned her comrades, "I didn't see any enemies, but this place doesn't feel good."

"Anna's senses are the sharpest. Since she said it's not safe here, we should leave immediately." The elf woman's husband, that handsome elf guy immediately stood on guard in front his wife and sister.

The four Orc girls and two Ox-head people reacted very quickly. They immediately took out their weapons and guarded the three elves in the middle.

Only Yue Yang didn't move in tandem.

In the sky, a cry resounded.

More than a hundred over wyverns proudly flew towards them, blocking the sun above them.

Yue Yang almost drooled when he saw this. So many wyverns, how many magic crystals could he get if he killed them all?

“Hide behind the trees, idiot, do you want to die?” The Ox-head girl who had hidden herself behind the trees rushed out and pulled Yue Yang inside. She glared at him angrily and whispered, “Didn't I say you should follow me? Are you really an idiot? Don't speak loudly, wyverns have sharp senses, especially this kind of green-spotted wyvern. Their sight and hearing ability are extremely sharp.”

“You are really not going to fight monsters at all?” Yue Yang was a little disappointed. How would he level up without fighting monsters? How would he get magic crystals?

“Stop talking!” the Ox-head girl glared at him and hurriedly told him to stop talking.

The majestic flock of wyverns flew across the sky.

Yue Yang's heart broke into pieces. His Reaper Mantis needed wyvern's magic crystals to level up, it was such a good opportunity just now. Had he known earlier, he wouldn't have joined their party, he would have come on his own... Of course, he wouldn't be able to receive the Jadeite Forest Quest, and wouldn't even come here at all.

Although the wyverns have gone for quite a while, the strange feeling that Yue Yang felt was still very strong.

He knew that it wasn't those wyverns, there was an even stronger existence following him. Furthermore, this existence's location was way out of his hearing and sight ability. The elf girl Anna couldn't sense the strong existence's presence at all. The Ox-head party leader, although he kept silent, he had a bad feeling and even went to check ahead on his own before leading his party forward.

It was a pity that the Ox-head party leader's search ahead was ineffective. That strong existence was like a shadow who could even hide from Yue Yang's ears and sight.

What kind of existence was it?

It was following the party that he was in so closely, what does it actually want?

Having the ability to hide itself and tail someone, it proved that this existence was at least a Holy Beast...

Yue Yang couldn't figure it out, he could only keep a look out.

On the way, Yue Yang had a lot of harvest. Although the place where the Starcup Flower grew was still far away, on the way there, there were various flowers and herbs. Yue Yang had seen them in his Medicine Encyclopedia and the tragic guy's mother's knowledge inheritance. Seeing good stuff, of course Yue Yang wouldn't let it off easily, plucking them off continuously. On the contrary, the Ox-head, Orcs and Elves in the party were indifferent to Yue Yang's actions, as if they didn't know that these were all precious treasures.

"The herbs in the forest are limited, we should exercise restraint when we pick them, so as to prevent unnecessary wear and tear." That Golden Elf handsome guy advised Yue Yang not to pick so much.

"But the Jadeite Forest is so big..." Yue Yang was speechless. From the map, the Jadeite Forest was at least half as big as the Da Xia Kingdom, what does it matter if he pick some herbs? Even if a hundred thousand people came and cut down the trees for a month, it would only affect the Jadeite Forest a little.

"That's right, but the Jadeite Forest is a medium-sized forest, and their resources are limited. We are all outsiders after all, we are not the owner of this place. The living things here, they have their

own cycle of nature. We cannot overdo it, otherwise we might really destroy the environment. You must understand that there are a lot of adventurers like us who come to this forest endlessly. If everyone demanded something from the nature without giving anything else back, Jadeite Forest wouldn't have time to recover. If it can't recover, our successors would not be able to enjoy the Jadeite Forest's selfless rewards." The handsome Golden Elf guy's words made sense, making Yue Yang stared blankly for a long time.

No matter if it was in China or in the Soaring Dragon Continent, Yue Yang never met anyone who was so caring and protective of their nature.

The government in China had only spoken about protecting the environment, they did not act on it at all.

However, the moment materials such as fur, herbs, oil, minerals and others appeared, everyone would claim the resources like madmen, plundering everything as quickly as possible. Even if it was harmful to the environment or causing imbalance to the nature, and causes natural disasters, people continued to plunder without end.

In conclusion, in front of money, environment means nothing. As long as they get money, no one would care about natural disasters, no one would care about the consequences of polluting the environment.

Even if they obviously know that they ended up destroying the environment , destroying their own home, destroying their own

lives, they did not care at all.

Yue Yang didn't know what kind of realization that this handsome elf guy had, but when looked at the Ox-heads and the Orcs, they were all looking at him with an expression of "You are nature killer". Yue Yang couldn't help but to be shocked. Could it be that humans are really that greedy compared to other races? Still dissatisfied even after plundering so much resources and was even greedier to plunder more until their deaths?

"Alright, I won't pick them anymore." Yue Yang couldn't endure the gazes they were giving him. Did he really deserve this for picking just a few branches of flowers and herbs?

"A human like you who could suppress your own desires is really rare." The handsome elf guy seemed surprised at Yue Yang's reaction. He sincerely praised Yue Yang as he reached out his hand, "I'm Lin En. Your behaviour has really changed my perspective of humans."

(Shiro: Lin En literally meant gratitude to forest)

"I'm called Bao Er, I'm a very very very outstanding godly archer, one hundred percent accuracy." The big loli elf emphasized her godly, unrivalled archery skills.

"Although I don't really like you, it'll be quite rude if I don't introduce myself." The Ox-head girl was offended when Yue Yang avoided her slaps to his back, but she still mumbled out her name, "Call me Fan Lun Tie, it means healthy and strong, it's a really good name."

“...” Yue Yang didn’t think that Fan Lun Tie was a good name for girls, although she was an Ox-head.

(Shiro: Fan Lun Tie is a very boyish name)

“Li Ao.” The Ox-head party leader said curtly.

“Fude La, Fude Jiao, Fude Li, Fude Man.” The four Orc girls’ name sounded very strange and odd, but according to their Orc Language, when the four names were put together, it meant plump and white. However, when Yue Yang observed the four Orc sisters, he discovered they were darker than anyone, they are anything but ‘white’. However, the plump part was definitely true.

“If you don’t know, my name is Anna. I am Lin En’s wife.” In the end, the mature elf girl smiled, “Although you are human, you gave me the feeling that you are a little brother who have not matured yet. You are different from other humans who are cunning and full of schemes.”

“...” Yue Yang was speechless. Couldn’t she just praise him if she wanted to? Why did she has to say that he wasn’t mature? It hurts his pride.

“Although your abilities has not reached the maximum potential, we welcome you to join our party. After that annoying Ai Gui returned to his hometown to become a blacksmith, he refused to come out and receive quests with us. We have not been able to find someone that we can get along with. Little boy, you are very lucky. If you are scheming and deceiving, I would have thrown you out to

the marshland and feed you to the wyverns.” The Ox-head girl grabbed Yue Yang’s shoulders, stopped him from running away, and slapped his shoulders hard. Then she laughed out very happily.

With regards to her tendency to speak and behave rudely and provocatively, Yue Yang was really speechless.

Fortunately the Ox-head race wouldn’t marry a human. Otherwise, if this Fan Lun Tie had a human husband, the unlucky cap would probably be beaten until he died of internal injuries.

The flat-chested big loli elf very mischievously asked Yue Yang about the human race, deliberately trying to embarrass him.

Of course, it was also because she was curious.

For example, “Do humans really fight wars everyday?”

Another example, “I heard that humans would exchange their sons for food when they are hungry. Is that real?”

All these questions, it was difficult for Yue Yang to answer.

This was because all of these questions were actually facts, and the cruelty of humans were a hundred times worse than selling sons for food or engaging in wars all the time! If he told this pure-hearted Golden Elves about the darkness of humans’ heart, they would probably faint from shock.

“What’s your personal strength?” The handsome Golden Elf guy tried to help Yue Yang out of the predicament by changing the topic. He also wanted to understand if this party member that was newly-acknowledged by his friends had the ability to join them.

“Personal strength? Probably creating mechanical puppet beasts...” Yue Yang summoned the Silver Fox that he worked hard to make for Yue Shuang, his little sister, before. It was quite a good explanation for his personal strength. When the Silver Fox appeared, the big loli elf Bao Er immediately took a liking too it. Countless little stars appeared in the big loli elf’s eyes. If it weren’t for her good upbringing, she would have already stolen Yue Yang’s Silver Fox that was extraordinarily cute away.

The Silver Fox did not have intelligence, it only have a set of skills.

Yue Yang created it to protect the little girl Yue Shuang.

Because he was worried that enemies would endanger Yue Shuang’s safety, when creating the Fox, he made its ability of sensing enemies nearby his priority.

The moment it appeared, its eyes immediately flashed with a blue colour. Its ears perked up and it snarled, revealing its sharp teeth.

This kind of battle position showed that it had discovered a strong enemy nearby...

Chapter 361 – Since That Is The Case, You Guys Should Just Die

When the Silver Fox discovered there was a strong enemy in the surrounding, on the contrary, Yue Yang felt that the strange Holy Beast that was following him had suddenly left.

It left to the south east direction.

When Yue Yang was feeling confused about this, suddenly, the Ox-head party leader Li Ao's Black Iron Wrist Protector and the Golden Elf Lin En's Precious Stone ring lighted up in red at the same time. Both of the red lights pointed towards the south east direction. The two people shouted at the same time, "There's someone requesting help from the south east direction!"

"Quick!" The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie slapped Yue Yang's shoulders hard, signalling to him to follow her. She rushed to the front, wielding her giant axe.

"Oink oink, quickly, saving others will give us twice party points." The four Orc girls also rushed forward dauntlessly.

"..." Yue Yang felt that this kind of saving others are pain in the ass.

They might not even be able to guarantee their own life, let alone save others.

The monsters here, the moment they go berserk, they were definitely not monsters that this party could defend against.

Of course, saving others might be the good culture in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. This point, he couldn't use a human's perspective to differentiate right or wrong. Yue Yang recalled the Silver Fox who had been baring its teeth and signalling that there were enemies surrounding them and followed behind the big loli elf Bao Er. He could enjoy a nice view for one, looking at her round little butt covered with her tight pants, it was quite seductive. For another, he could also help the innocent and enthusiastic Bao Er, who was the weakest one in the party, in case an emergency happened.

On the way, Yue Yang discovered that countless monsters were gathering on the south east direction, including the flying beasts in the sky.

After walking for half an hour, a thick scent of blood pervaded the air, spreading throughout the forest.

Beside them, beasts would come and go at times, but they completely ignored Yue Yang and the others. It was like they had gone berserk. They rushed forward, as if there was some kind of thing that was summoning them.

After walking for another ten minutes, there was a swamp and a lake up front, and they came into a wide clearing. On the south east direction, at a tall mountain peak in front, countless Green Dragons swoop down continuously, releasing their dragon breaths and attacking the human warriors with flames.

The countless number of beasts rushed towards the battlefield, recklessly charging towards the ten over human warriors who had formed a defensive circle to protect themselves.

The ground was filled with the corpses that the human warriors had killed.

Fresh blood covered the whole ground.

The river of blood flowed towards the lake, staining the clear lake water red...

Yue Yang did not need to look to know that these people were not in danger at all.

There were two Innate Rankers in the party, and the weakest amongst the party members was a Level 7 [Overlord]. A few Green Dragons wouldn't give them any difficulty at all. As for the beasts on the ground like Forest Wolves, Forest Boas, Falcons and so on, they were completely just throwing away their lives. Quantity would never bring difficulty to two Innate Level 3 Rankers. Furthermore, these two had artifacts on their hands. One of them held a Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear while the other clasped a Curse Ball. The Curse Ball had the ability to increase the party's strength and weakened the forest beasts' power. It would be weird if they were defeated in this battle!

Yue Yang didn't understand why they would sound a distress call. Could it be that there was a stronger Holy Beast amongst the

beasts?

On the high cliff, there was a silver figure guarding in front of a cave. Only this giant Silver Dragon had the power to resist the two Innate Rankers, albeit with much difficulty.

However, even if it had the support of the Green Dragons around it, Yue Yang didn't think that it would be able to endure the deadly combination of the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear and the Curse Ball combo... Especially the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear, it was a stronger weapon than the Dragon Slaying Dagger that Yue Yang had.

More accurately speaking, they were Gold-ranked weapon designed specifically to kill giant dragons.

Legends said that ten thousand years ago, there was a talented boy with a mediocre appearance called Tai Yue. With a fated meeting, he fell deep in love with a beautiful dragon girl, who reciprocated her love.

Their incompatible love had angered the Golden Dragon King.

The Golden Dragon King angrily imprisoned the dragon girl, but she escaped very quickly and eloped with her lover Tai Yue to a deserted place, living in seclusion. The Red Dragon Prince who secretly loved the Dragon Girl was once Tai Yue's best friend, so he gained Tai Yue's and the Dragon Girl's trust. Other than the Red Dragon Prince, no one else knew about their location. Even the Dragon Girl's escape was planned by the Red Dragon Prince.

With regards to the Red Dragon Prince, the Tai Yue husband and wife were extremely grateful. They viewed him as their benefactor.

However, the truth was that the Red Dragon Prince was burning with jealousy because the Dragon Girl had fallen in love and became his best friend's wife. He was intent on destroying the two people's happiness.

Under his report, the Golden Dragon King very quickly dispatched the Royal Dragon Guard to capture Tai Yue and the Dragon Girl.

The Red Dragon Prince notified Tai Yue immediately, and requested him to create a weapon that could kill the Golden Dragon King for him. He would personally kill the strongest Golden Dragon King and put an end to this tragedy. Hence, Tai Yue, who was an expert in making weapons, personally created a Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear as the Red Dragon Prince's weapon. As for himself, he created a Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear to protect him and his wife from the Royal Guard's attack.

After killing the Golden Dragon King, the Red Dragon Prince informed the Dragon Girl and told her that Tai Yue, her husband, was the one who did it.

The Dragon Girl mistakenly believed the Red Dragon Prince and started to interrogate her husband.

Tai Yue who had the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Sword hung on his waist couldn't explain himself, he could only confess that the Golden Dragon King was killed by a weapon that he created.

The Dragon Girl walked away in anger, and Tai Yue was killed by the furious Royal Dragon Guard who wanted to take revenge on their king... In the end, the last blow was delivered by his good friend the Red Dragon Prince, with the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear that he created. He immediately died on the spot. When the Dragon Girl who came back after calming herself down saw her husband's corpse, she was devastated. Then, she finally realized there was something wrong and investigated privately. When she saw that the Red Dragon Prince possess a Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear, she finally understood everything.

The remorseful Dragon Girl was unable to take revenge, so she pinned all her hopes on her son, who was still inside her womb.

When Tai Yue's child grew up, he was more outstanding than his father. At the same time, he inherited his mother's beautiful features. Other than creating an extremely sharp Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger, he had also studied Transformation Technique with a Ranker called Wu Xiang. Tai Yue's son pretended to be a beautiful girl and approached the Red Dragon Prince who had become the Dragon Race's King. He successfully assassinated him. Just as the furious Dragon Race was about to tear Tai Yue's son into pieces, the Dragon Girl appeared and lamented her tragic story to her people. She then took her husband's Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Sword which was on the Red Dragon Prince's waist and committed suicide. Her sacrifice for love shocked the entire Dragon Race. In the end, the Dragon Race released Tai Yue's son, who was heartbroken and inconsolable.

The story was passed on generation by generation. After such a long time, nobody knows if the legend was true.

However, the Yue Clan descendants in the Soaring Dragon Continent looked up to Tai Yue's son, the strong man who created the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger to avenge his father. They regarded him as their ancestor and chose Yue as their surname!

This was the story that the old man Yue Hai told Yue Yang after he had gotten the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger.

In Soaring Dragon Continent, other than the Yue Clan, other clans would probably have already forgotten the legend. Maybe the Royal Library of the Da Xia and Tian Luo Kingdom would record a few sentences of this story in a thick history book.

No matter what, the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear, Dragon Slaying Sword, Dragon Slaying Dagger were the three weapons in the Dragon Slaying Collection. Other than the three weapons, there were also the Red Dragon Armour, Tai Yue's gloves, Dragon Girl's necklace and Dragon King's Crown. All these artifacts were the items that were passed down in legends. The later generations grouped them into a set. Inclusive of the Dragon Slaying Spear, Dragon Slaying Sword and Dragon Slaying Dagger were grouped into the Revenge Set. Of course, because the legend was passed on for too long, the Revenge Set slowly turned into the Dragon Slaying set after some time as the Dragon Slaying-part was easier for the later generations to remember.

With the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear, Yue Yang felt that those few low-levelled Green Dragons would definitely die under the two Innate Rankers' attacks.

He didn't understand, such a strong party, why would they call for help?

These people definitely had the power to handle the monsters in Jadeite Forest. Why are they still calling for help?

However, when the flock of a hundred Green-spotted Wyvern, Yue Yang's heart twitched... Here, everywhere around was magic crystals. He couldn't spoil the balance of the environment, but in order to save people, it should be okay if he take some magic crystals, right? Furthermore, it was not like he killed all the dragons here. The monsters that that party killed won't be able to resurrect anyway, it would be a waste if he didn't pick those magic crystals up.

Yue Yang flexed his hands and prepared to clean them all up.

Of course the most important thing was to collect magic crystals. He couldn't care less about other people's life and death. Furthermore, there were two Innates supporting the party, it would be difficult to die even if the party members wanted to.

On the other hand, the strongest amongst the party members that came to their rescue, the party leader Li Ao, was actually weaker than the weakest of the group of humans. If they really joined the battle, their lives might even be in danger...

“These bunch of despicable, shameless humans are really too evil. Humans are definitely no good!” The Ox-head girl roared furiously.

“Hey, hey. What’s happening?” Yue Yang didn’t understand. Why were they angry when they saw that the humans party that they hurried to rescue were currently winning? Were they actually jealous? Or was it because this Ox-head girl was as kind as Buddha and couldn’t bear to see the ground drenched in blood?

“They are Dragon Hunters.” The handsome elf guy Lin En suppressed his anger and explained remorsefully.

“What?” Yue Yang still didn’t understand.

“Idiot, Dragon Hunters are a kind of barbaric, bloody job. They have completely lost their conscience and are addicted to massacres. Although they say that they are Dragon Slayers, they actually do all kinds of bad things. They will kill whatever monsters they see, clearing everything like a locust epidemic destroying one whole pasture of land. The Jadeite Forest is the place for the Green Dragon and Blue Dragon to rest, but these Dragon Hunters have used some kind of secret method to trick the Warrior Guild Quest Office and came here. They slayed the dragons and plunder the dragon crystals... We can’t just sit still and do nothing, we must punish these evil humans severely and butcher them!” The big loli elf was so angry that she clenched her teeth. She almost shot out the arrow on her bow.

“Don’t, you are not their match.” Yue Yang hurriedly stopped her.

“Do you think what they are doing is right? Couldn’t you see the bloodbath on that battlefield?” The Ox-head girl seized Yue Yang’s collar.

“That, my opinion doesn’t matter here. The most important thing is that you guys are far from becoming their match.” Yue Yang told them the truth.

“They are a party of fifteen, and the strongest ones are Innates. Four of them are Level 8 Intermediate Emperor, six of them Level 7 Advanced Overlord and the weakest amongst them are three Level 7 Beginner Overlord. Everyone of them are higher levelled than Lin En and I. This battle looks difficult, we might be completely annihilated.” The Ox-head party leader Li Ao looked extremely serious this time. It was the first time he spoke so many words.

“You guys are not really going to fight with them, right?” Yue Yang was shocked when he heard him. Wouldn’t this be a case of throwing an egg into a rock?

“Dragon Slayers are the common enemy of all races. Although we are weak, we can’t just leave them to do what they please and do nothing. They would kill us all sooner or later anyway, so someone must come out and stop them. Even if we can only kill one of them, we could decrease their strength by a little.” The handsome elf guy Lin En made Yue Yang speechless.

Yue Yang remembered there was a saying spoken by a German pastor, Martin Niemöller, “First they came for the Socialists, and I did not speak out – Because I was not a Socialist. Then they came for the Trade Unionists, and I did not speak out— Because I was not a Trade Unionist. Then they came for the Jews, and I did not speak out—

Because I was not a Jew. Then they came for me—and there was no one left to speak for me.”

(Shiro: <https://www.ushmm.org/wlc/en/article.php?ModuleId=10007392>)

If the slaying of dragons happened in the Soaring Dragon Continent, no one would oppose the Dragon Hunters.

Most of the people would think that it was nature’s law.

Killing dragons and getting their dragon crystal was a human’s basic desire. It’s alright to kill anything, as long as they need it, they could even kill their fellow humans, let alone dragons.

Maybe there were only a few of people who thought that killing too much would disrupt the harmony of the community, destroy the environment and the ecosphere. However, they would definitely not dare to stop the Dragon Slaying Hunters.

At the most, they would only curse them in their hearts.

There would be people who protest slaying the dragons, but would there people who took action against the Dragon Hunters?

No!

Amongst humans, such a fool would definitely not exist!

That was definitely a death-seeking action. Forget about having the ability to stop them, even if they had it, they might even ignore the Dragon Hunters evil acts because they were worried that their future would be afflicted. There might even be people who joined the Dragon Hunters enthusiastically, becoming one of the Dragon Hunters to reap huge benefits.

What was the Giant Dragon's wrath and the hundreds of beasts' cries?

Those things, who would care about them? The deterioration of the environment and nature, who would care about them?

Yue Yang was completely shaken by the few idiots in front of him... They clearly knew that their enemy was much stronger, yet they still advanced bravely to the battle. Inside these Ox-head people, Orcs and Golden Elves' brains, could it be that they were filled with rocks? Couldn't they be more flexible, returning to the Warrior's Guild first then coming back to fight with more reinforcements?

"This is throwing away your own life. Let's give up our quest and return to the Warrior's Guild. We can ask for reinforcements and come back here again!" Yue Yang advised.

“Good idea. You should go back, then! Bring Bao Er with you.” The handsome elf guy Lin En patted Yue Yang’s shoulders and nodded, showing his agreement.

“That was really a good idea...” The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie laughed coldly without any tinge of ridicule.

“I, I wouldn’t run away just before the battle. Even if I die, I won’t leave. Let this coward of a human escape, I am a brave Golden Elf, I am a noble member of the Moon God Royal Guard, I will definitely not escape in the face of danger. I, I am not afraid of death, because death would only bring me back into the Moon God’s embrace!” The big loli elf girl Bao Er’s lips was trembling. It was obvious that she was actually afraid of dying.

(Shiro: Moon God – KIV. Translating is subjective, it can be translated as Moon Goddess too. Will need to see the context in future chapters.)

“Good Bao Er, you are really a brave warrior!” The four Orc girls praised her in chorus.

“You guys are making her throw away her life. She wouldn’t be able to withstand any of the opponent’s attacks. What use could her little bow and arrow do? Make her opponents lose a strand of hair? Have you guys ever thought that the moment you failed, not only would you die, you would also miss the chance of capturing them. Bao Er and Anna’s purity might even be tarnished by the enemies. This will be the result of your reckless heroic act! You want to defeat the enemy, that I understand, but before you guys become stronger, this method is completely illogical. It’s

completely wrong, I can't accept it!" Yue Yang was furious.

"Even if we die, the Moon God would not let us be humiliated. We will offer our lives. No one will be able to sully the Moon God's disciples." Anna's breathtakingly beautiful face revealed a smile. She looked at Yue Yang as if she was a big sister looking at her younger brother, gently nodding her head, "What you said is completely right. Our choice of action might not exactly be the best choice. However, the worth of a life living in this world is not measured by how much wealth he acquired or how smooth-sailing his life journey was. It is measured by how much he could enjoy freedom and heart-felt happiness... If he can't, no matter how strong he is or how rich he is, he is still poor and weak. My words, you might not be able to understand it, but one day you will, because you are different from other humans. Think about it, if an enemy is threatening your freedom, making you feel unhappy, what will you do? Fight! I believe you will fight. But of course, your method of fighting is different from ours. You can endure and kill your enemies after you have grown stronger, but we can't. That's why we choose this method... There are no right or wrongs in our fighting method, your method is right, but our method is not wrong either. We only have different opinions, but we are both fighting in our own way."

"So you would rather die and fight? Do you think sacrificing your lives for nothing to your enemies worth it?" After listening to Anna's lecture for a long time, Yue Yang asked.

"There's value. The value in our fight is not by how many enemies we defeated, but in our hearts. We definitely couldn't tolerate this kind of behaviour. They can kill us, but they wouldn't be able to change our mind, soul and will." The Ox-head party

leader Li Ao patted Yue Yang's shoulders, "We won't force you, because you are human, you are different from us. You can stay, or return and report to the Warrior's Guild... Amongst all the humans I've met, you are one of the best youngster. Live on your life happily!"

"Sleep..." The Golden Elf handsome guy Lin En covered Bao Er's face with his hands for a while. A green light flashed and Bao Er immediately collapsed. Anna carried her softly.

The Golden Elf Lin En spoke to Yue Yang, "Take my sister away She is still a child, please bring her to my father. You don't have to care about the things that happen today. In Tong Tian Tower, there are a lot of small parties like us. Everyday, there would be people dying and new people entering. A warrior's grave need not be with their families. Everywhere can be our final resting place, be it in mountains, forests, snow or sand. Our fighting method is different, but there is one certain thing between us, we are both excellent warriors!"

"I have really never seen anyone who are more determined to throw away their lives like you guys... Forget it, I won't leave at the mean time. Maybe I can try talking with those Dragon Hunters. Maybe they would consider my advice seeing that I am also of the human race, maybe they will consider leaving afterwards." Yue Yang thought to drive away those fellows, so that these stubborn Ox-heads, Orcs and Golden Elves wouldn't die for nothing here.

"No, if you go, you will only throw away your life. They will never listen to anyone's advice." The Golden Elf Lin En shook his

head, he didn't agree with Yue Yang's plan.

“Idiot fool, go ahead and do it. When you are killed by them, I will avenge your death. I will definitely kill one of them at least!” The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie slapped Yue Yang's back strongly, and laughed out loud at the same time.

The human Dragon Hunters party had already discovered Yue Yang's party. Two of the four Level 8 Intermediate Emperors flew over towards them like lightning.

When they saw Anna and Bao Er's appearance, they immediately smiled wantonly.

The tall and skinny one on the left chuckled lewdly, “What a good day, it's been a long time since I tasted a Golden Elf. It should have been 20 year at least. I never thought a Golden Elf will serve herself on a silver platter in front of me today!”

“Among those two, compared to that mature-looking Golden Elf, I like the young sleeping one better. When I think about her crying out in pain as I rape her, I couldn't help having goose bumps from the exhilaration and anticipation. That young one must be a virgin. After we finished raping and killing them, I can slowly drink her delicious blood. Hahaha, wouldn't that be awesome!” The other man who had a heavily-muscle body and did not wear any top completely ignored everyone there as he laughed out loud in ecstasy.

“Can you consider letting them off on my behalf, as a fellow

human race? We will leave immediately.” Yue Yang knew that he was wasting his breath, but he must confirm what kind of existence these Dragon Hunters were.

“Who are you to say that? Human? Do you think we don’t roast human and eat their flesh? Don’t think that because you are human, you can give us orders like that! In the Tong Tian Tower, there are no difference in races. As long as you are strong enough, then every living thing is either food or slaves, you understand? You think that just because we are both humans, I will be so generous and let you off? Dream on! You bumped into me, just think about it as your bad luck! With just the likes of a weakling like you, you still dared to act like a hero? Do you want to make me laugh until my jaw dropped? I say, little boy, have you drunk your milk yet? You are so naive and foolish, what kind of place do you think Tong Tian Tower is? Your nursery? If you don’t have the ability, then you can only die!” The tall and skinny guy spitted on the ground as he taunted Yue Yang rudely.

“I think a donkey has accidentally kicked this fellow’s head, I’ve never seen an idiot like him. With your power, I am really curious about how you could still survive in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. Little boy, let me tell you one fact: the weak are prey to the strong. Come and kill us if you have the ability to do so! In your next life, if you still have a next life, you must remember. If you don’t have the ability, you should just hide behind your mother’s skirt and let her protect you your whole life just like how a mother hen would protect its chick. Remember not to go out of your house, otherwise people might just accidentally stomp a fool like you to your death!” The heavily-muscled guy laughed out loud.

“...” The Ox-head Party Leader Li Ao, the Golden Elf handsome

guy Lin En, the Ox-head girl and the four Orc girls were all looking at Yue Yang.

No one spoke, but Yue Yang could feel that they were trying to console him.

It's just that they didn't know how to.

Anna who was carrying Bao Er walked to Yue Yang's side and said gently, "You are just like my little brother, kind and smart. It's just that you lack experience. I am very happy to have met you. Take Bao Er and leave now, you are still young, you shouldn't die here. We will open a path for you. Use the teleportation stone and leave. The Golden Elf race and I will always wish you good luck. Although you are a human, you are really excellent!"

Yue Yang looked at Anna and shook his head. He didn't take Bao Er who was in her arms.

He stopped Lin En, Li Ao and the others who wanted to advise him, and walked, step by step, towards the two Dragon Hunters.

"Did you say the weak are prey to the strong? If you have no ability, you should let yourself be killed and slaughtered? I have learnt a lot from your words, a lot... Since that is the case, you guys should just die!" Yue Yang was completely furious. Faster than lightning, his hands moved towards the tall and skinny guy's face. Yue Yang's Star Explosion Domain of Power exploded. That tall and skinny guy didn't even have a second to struggle before his head immediately exploded.

In the next second, Yue Yang appeared in front of the heavily-muscled guy...

Chapter 362 – You Don't Deserve To Use This Spear!

That heavily-muscled man was still in shock. He never thought that a 'weakling' enemy would actually be able to instant kill his comrade who was equal to him in strength. How could a Level 8 Intermediate Emperor have killed just like instantly just like that?

However, as a Ranker, he had a quick reaction speed.

When Yue Yang appeared in front of him, he didn't think much and simply punched forward.

This punch was strong enough to split a mountain. Even the gigantic Gold Mammoth would collapse to the ground with this punch.

“AGGHHH...”

The heavily-muscled guy only felt pain in his fist. His body suddenly went weak and involuntarily collapsed to the ground. He felt his fist was grabbed by an unstoppable force and was completely crushed in that moment. That kind of pain shot straight into his bones. He heard a weird sound in his ears, which he was actually very familiar with. This was because he would hear that cracking sound every time he crushed his enemies' bones. He even liked that cracking sound that makes others' hair stand on its end.

He listened to the voice as he closed his eyes in an attempt to endure the pain.

He realized his arm was completely numb. It continued to twist and changed shape.

In the end, his whole arm was twisted out of his shoulders... He never imagined that today, the one that was being tortured turned out to be himself.

He didn't even bother to shout in pain before he turned around and escape.

This kind of enemy was not someone he could handle, he could only run away. He must return to the two Innate Rankers, only then could his life be saved! As he was about to run away like crazy, Yue Yang touched the back of his head.

A great force suddenly pushed the heavily-muscled guy's face to the ground. His head sunk into the ground, but the great force continued to push his head forward. Like a plough that the bull pulled to loosen the soil on the ground, his head drew a long line on the ground.

Everyone, including the two Innate Rankers, was completely dumbstruck by the scene in front of them.

They were shocked speechless.

No one could understand what was actually happening!

That fellow whose head was pulled through the ground like a plough was not dead yet. When Yue Yang released him, he could even jump up and ran towards his comrades, with a face like a rotten fertilizer.

Only his squished mouth was calling out in an unclear cry for help. The sight made everyone's heart tremble and hair rise.

“Boom!”

He didn't even manage to run ten steps away before his head was exploded to pieces by Yue Yang's Innate Qi charge.

His brain matter and skull pieces splattered all over the ground!

As the two Level 8 Emperors had died under Yue Yang's hands, their beast's body had also exploded as they died together with their master. They didn't even manage to betray their master and died on the spot.

“We have no intention to be rude to your excellency...” The one who reacted fastest was one of the Innate Ranker. He wore black clothes and had an eagle beak-like crooked nose. His gaze was sharper than sword and he held a Curse Ball in his hands. He should be playing the role of intelligence in the party. He had heard a little about their conversation just now, and he knew that the two Level 8 Emperors were vile and nasty. Now that they had

angered the opponent, it was very normal for the opponent to kill them one after another afterwards. The only thing that he felt strange about was the fact that there was such a strong Innate Ranker in their opponent's party.

Why would an Innate form a party and do quests with Level 6 Elders and Level 7 Overlords? This was really bewildering.

The other Innate with the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear wore a red robe and had red hair.

He was glaring at Yue Yang furiously.

If only he could determine Yue Yang's level and abilities, he would already attack him.

As a Level 3 Innate Ranker, although he possessed extraordinary powers, he knew that there would always be someone stronger than him. Although Innate Level 3 was considered strong in Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, there were many far stronger warriors than them. Innate Level 3 was not an unrivalled existence.

If he were to encounter a Level 6 ranker, he would be killed instantly. Right now, he was just afraid that this boy was a Level 6 Innate Ranker!

Judging from his age, he didn't look like an Innate at all.

However, if he wasn't an Innate, he wouldn't have been able to

kill two Level 8 Emperors in an instant!

“Let’s talk!” Amongst the Dragon Hunters, a scrawny guy who seemed to be the most proficient speaker tried to ask Yue Yang.

“....” Yue Yang’s answer to them was the Earth Splitting Slash. With a burst of his Innate Qi, his Hui Jin Magic Blade burst into raging flames and he slashed the scrawny guy who was about to negotiate with him into half.

The Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear pierced the air in a flash.

The red haired Innate Ranker wearing a red robe roared in anger. He gave up fighting with the heavily injured Green Dragon although he could have killed it with a few more blows. The sudden critical situation that arose because Yue Yang killed his comrades forced him to change his mind and attack Yue Yang instead. Innate Rankers were bound by the rules of the Innate Alliance, so normally, Innates would avoid battles as much as they can. Especially Innates of the same race, so as to avoid lost in overall strength as a race, unless negotiation completely broke down, killings between the Innate Rankers would not occur under normal situations.

Following its master’s attack, a Gold-ranked Level 8 Red-eyed Lion roared as it attempted to pounce on Yue Yang.

In the sky, two Gold-ranked Level 7 Cow-Eating Giant Vultures were hovering in the air, baring their sharp claws.

Facing attack from all sides, if it were another Innate Level 2 or below, they would definitely be running around in circles, especially when they were being attacked by the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear which was extremely sharp, terrifying and powerful. It was more than capable of causing one to die upon contact.

Yue Yang dodged and escaped from the sharp point easily.

His Yang Ability burst out in an instant.

Under Yue Yang's control, the Hui Jin Magic Blade roared with raging purple flame that soared into the sky like a phoenix and attacked the two Cow-Eating Giant Vultures.

The two vultures shrieked as they became roasted birds!

As the Red-eyed Lion attacked from behind, Yue Yang held the Silver-ranked Eye Destroyer Dagger and sliced it past the eyes of the Red-eyed Lion. Without waiting for the Red-eyed Lion to react to the attack, Yue Yang's Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger had penetrated its skull. Innate Invisible Sword Qi pierced the skull through the blade and shot through the Red-eyed Lion's magic crystal in its skull.

The Red-eyed Lion was initially leaping through the air, but it suddenly fell to the ground with a loud thud.

Without it could even land on the ground, it had already killed by

Yue Yang. The other Innate Ranker watched as his face turned pale from the realisation that the ‘Venom Curse’ released from his Curse Ball was rendered useless on his opponent. God knows what those two Level 8 Emperors did to offend this opponent, who was immune to the unique skills of Gold-ranked artefacts and could remain safe under attacks from both the Innate Rankers and their beasts. He was even capable of striking a deadly attack in return.

“No, my Kitty!” The red haired Innate Ranker with bloodied clothes cried sorrowfully as he unleashed all his powers and went after Yue Yang.

Yue Yang didn’t even bother about him as he raised the Crescent Moon and Hui Jin Magic Blade together.

The two Level 7 Overlords who rushed to defend couldn’t even withstand one blow from Yue Yang before their heads were cut off, soaring across the sky...

The current Dragon Hunters Team, who was always the tyrannical bully, now became victims of abuse. In front of Yue Yang the killing machine, they couldn’t stay in their party formation anymore. The survivors all fled, except for two Level 8 Emperors who fled to where their leader, who was holding the curse ball was. They knew that they would be the safest when they were near their leader.

Flee?

Who can flee faster than an Innate?

Yue Yang thrust the Prison Emperor's Seven Star Pillars onto the ground and went after the Level 7 Overlords.

Blade slashes, dagger thrusts, Star Explosion... Yue Yang raised his fire bow and ice arrow and aimed at the fellow who escaped the furthest. His Ice Arrow pierced the heart of the fellow who thought that he could get away.

Even an Innate Ranker could be instantly killed by Yue Yang's Ice Arrow. Previously, Yao Guang of the Seven Great Bears died after being shot by three ice arrows.

As the fellow who escaped was just a normal Level 7 Ranker, he didn't even get the chance to cry before he froze into a ice sculpture.

“Burst! “

Yue Yang clenched his fist as the ice sculpture burst into a million pieces of ice crumbs.

Apart from two Level 3 Innate Rankers and the two Level 8 Emperors, amongst the whole team of Dragon Hunters, there was only one surviving Level 7 Overlord. Based on his real strength, he could easily fight on the same level as the Golden Elf Lin En and the Ox-head Party leader Li Ao. However, now he appeared as weak as a chick in front of Yue Yang, he didn't even have the courage to fight back.

As Yue Yang approached him, he took out his teleportation stone with trembling hands.

The teleportation stone was subsequently shattered.

However, the pillar of light for teleportation didn't appear... Nobody looked at Yue Yang as their attention fell on the Prison Emperor's Seven Star Pillar thrust onto the ground previously. The giant pillar had such a strong will that it disrupted the teleportation severely.

“Please spare me! “ The fellow cried out as he trembled in fear.

“Your comrade taught me that only the fittest will survive, and I'm sorry you're not strong enough!“ Yue Yang then pointed on his forehead.

A bloody hole for appeared on his forehead, passing through the back of his head.

The [Innate] Invisible Sword Qi is invincible. It was unrivalled and invincible. Forget about the Level 7 Overlord, even powerful warriors like the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian, the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader and the Great Demon King Baruth didn't dare to stop the attack head-on.

Maybe because they have witnessed Yue Yang's terrifying power and also understood that they couldn't escape, the two Innates and

two Level 8 Emperors charged forward towards Yue Yang like madmen, intent on attacking Yue Yang from all sides. If they didn't risk everything to kill Yue Yang, they wouldn't have any chance of surviving. Right now, they had understood that their opponent had been completely enraged by their comrades' arrogant attitude and was determined to slaughter their whole party. There was completely no room for negotiation or reconciliation!

The Innate with the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear took the lead, becoming the main attacker of the party.

The Innate Party Leader who held the Curse Ball in his hands took out a Gold-ranked Staff and attacked from above Yue Yang. He also summoned his Gold King Beast, Chaotic Flame Beast, to attack Yue Yang altogether.

The two Level 8 Intermediate Emperors attacked from the left and right. The one on Yue Yang's left held a Thunder Axe while the one on the right held a Blood Scythe.

Yue Yang laughed coldly.

Welcoming the four attacking enemies, his body flashed across.

When Yue Yang re-appeared again, amongst the four attacking enemies, the two Emperors who was charging towards Yue Yang in the air had fallen to the ground.

The warrior with Thunder Axe's head was separated from his body.

The warrior with Blood Scythe waist had been twisted off.

The Innate party leader with the Curse Ball cried out disbelievingly, "Impossible, it's definitely impossible! What godly weapon do you actually have? How could you kill them so easily?"

"I don't believe it!" The red-robed, red-haired Innate with Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear charged forward as if his life depended on it and thrust his spear straight towards Yue Yang's heart.

Before the spear even reached Yue Yang, the wind blade caused by the spear had already torn across the air.

Even the cliff dozens of metres behind Yue Yang were smashed into pieces by this powerful attack.

Yue Yang was pierced through by the spear.

However, before the enemy manage to smile, Yue Yang's after image had disappeared. Yue Yang's real body appeared right behind the enemy, his eyes flashed with ridicule. With regards to speed, how could these fellows be compared to the Heaven Realm Great Leader, Xu Kong? They were like tortoises compared to him. How could Yue Yang, who had gotten used to Xu Kong's speed, be pierced by his spear?

He stuck close to his enemy's back.

Nirvana Flame flared up and turned into a spear.

With a powerful thrust, the Nirvana Flame Spear pierced through the back of the Innate with the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear, right through and out of his chest...

“You don't deserve to use this spear!” Yue Yang snatched the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear in lightning speed. With another beautiful thrust of spear, he pierced the burning enemy on the spear point and threw him to the ground. He stomped on the enemy's head, trampling his head deep into the ground, trapping him, who was still trying to struggle for live even on death's door.

“Let me go, I can promise you something!” The Innate party leader with the Curse Ball knew that he would definitely not be able to defeat his enemy, hence he only pleaded for his life.

“You asked too late...”

Yue Yang turned around, and the World Exterminating Wheel that he had thrown out just now easily slashed the last man standing, the Innate party leader, into half.

He kept his World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame Spear, and took the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear and Curse Ball. He then turned around, and looked at his new party members

Lin En, Anna, Li Ao, Fan Lun Tie and the others who were still staring with their mouths agape, unable to believe everything that happened in front of them. Yue Yang then turned again and took back the Prison Emperor Seven Star Pillars. At the same time, he crushed the teleportation stone that the middle-aged warrior from the Warrior Guild gave him.

It was time for him to leave the party...

Although they had different thoughts, Yue Yang had learnt quite a lot of things from the Ox-head, Orcs and the Golden Elves. For example, he witnessed their will to fight for their own beliefs, their fearless courage and their unyielding spirit. These things were things that Yue Yang had never seen before.

Although he didn't agree with their views, he didn't disagree with their life philosophy.

“Wait...” In the instant before Yue Yang teleported away, Lin En, Li Ao and the others shouted out, as if they had just woken up from their dreams.

Before Yue Yang left, he felt that weird Holy Beast that had been following him from the start observing him. When did it come? Even with Yue Yang's sharp senses, he was actually not able to sense its presence.

If he wasn't in the midst of teleportation, Yue Yang would have searched for that Holy Beast to see what it truly look like.

If it was fated to be, they would definitely meet again. Yue Yang suddenly felt this way in his heart.

He had only just came to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. His future levelling journey was still a long way ahead...

Chapter 363 – How Could You Lose A Person?

In the Warrior Guild, Yue Yang who teleported with the teleportation stone immediately appeared in front of the middle-aged warrior.

“Do you need healing?” When the middle-aged warrior saw that Yue Yang was covered in blood, he thought that Yue Yang was grievously injured. He never thought that those blood were the blood of the Dragon Hunters party that Yue Yang had massacred.

“Thanks, I’m fine. I can’t compensate your teleportation stone for the mean time. As for the quest, my comrades will definitely finish it.” Yue Yang nodded, then turned around and left.

“That boy is really a little weird...” The middle-aged warrior watched Yue Yang’s back and frowned.

“What happened?” A young Foreign Tribe Warrior beside the middle-aged warrior asked.

“It doesn’t seem like he has gone through a bloody battle. Although he was covered in blood, he was extremely calm. I don’t understand, how could he be someone who had just reached the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower?” The middle-aged warrior had seen through Yue Yang’s details previously, and discovered that he had joined a party straight away, before an hour had even passed since the first moment he stepped onto the Sixth Floor. If it wasn’t that way, the middle-aged warrior would not have given Yue Yang

a teleportation stone for emergency escape.

Right now, this newbie had actually returned before half a day had passed. Furthermore, he was covered in blood.

However, he looked extremely calm.

Could it be that this boy was one of the generals who led bloody battles in the lower floors of Tong Tian Tower?

Not even ten minutes had gone by before Yue Yang entered the Warrior Guild again. He walked up to the middle-aged warrior and gave him a form, “I decide to join the Anti-Dragon Hunters Mercenary Procession. The Mercenary Guild said that I need a nominator and a guarantor. May I ask if you could help me sign your name here?”

“You met Dragon Hunters just now?” The middle-aged warrior was greatly shocked. Dragon Hunters were not a joke. Although they weren’t many, almost every Dragon Hunters party was led by a corrupted Innate Ranker. Every Time they moved, their party would consist of more than ten members at least. It would be extremely difficult for normal warriors to kill Dragon Hunters! Even the Warrior Guild’s ‘Iron Blood Guards’ would require more than a hundred men to defeat a single Dragon Hunter party.

“There happen to be a powerful warrior passing by. He drove them away, so my party member and I were unharmed.” Yue Yang didn’t deny that they met the Dragon Hunters.

“You are very lucky!” The middle-aged warrior sighed, “Every year, at least a hundred newbies died under the Dragon Hunters’ hands. Listen, I can sign here, but you must listen to my advice. Before you reached the Innate realm, if you met the Dragon Hunters when you are alone, you must immediately escape, the faster the better.”

“Understood.” Yue Yang obviously wouldn’t tell him the truth.

“You wait a minute!” The middle-aged warrior wrote two words on Yue Yang’s form, ‘Ou Gen’. Looks like that was his name.

After he finished signing his name, he did not gave the form back to Yue Yang immediately.

Instead, he walked into the Warrior Guild’s inner office and did not come out for quite a few minutes.

When he returned the form back to Yue Yang, there was another name written on it, ‘Matthew’. That was Yue Yang’s guarantor. The middle-aged warrior Ou Gen had settled the guarantor’s name conveniently. When Yue Yang was about to leave, Ou Gen had even warned him, “Young one, I understand your anger, but I sincerely wish that not just today, I wish that next year, or even a hundred years later, I can still see you walking into the Warrior Guild full of fighting spirit like today... Do you understand what I mean?”

Yue Yang nodded, “Thank you for your advice. I think I won’t do anything foolish.”

With regards to Ou Gen's name, Yue Yang remembered that there was a Great Demon King with the name of Ou Gen in the Demon Abyss.

Of course, that Great Demon King Ou Gen didn't give Yue Yang a good impression. This Uncle Ou Gen, an Innate Level 1 with a moustache in the shape of '八', on the other hand, was much more to Yue Yang's liking. Although he was a little naggy, he was really a good guide for newbies.

When Yue Yang left, the old man who was in-charge of teleporting Yue Yang and his party to the Jadeite Forest just now came out.

He, who had hair as white as white swan, laughed out, "Ou Gen, it's really rare for you to agree being the nominator for a newbie. You have even asked me to be the guarantor."

"That young human is really mysterious... The thing that made me feel strange is that he looks very familiar. Maybe I have seen his father or relative before, it's just that I can't remember him from the back of my head now." The middle-aged warrior Ou Gen frowned.

"Yeah, he do look familiar. I wouldn't notice it if you hadn't said that." The old man remembered vaguely.

Yue Yang walked towards the Mercenary Guild and handed a hundred gold and the filled up registration form. He officially

became one of the mercenary and received a 'Valor Medal', the identifier for mercenary soldier.

This Valor Medal was divided into six ranks.

Every rank had different Runes installed. The first three ranks were strengthened with Dwarf Runes while the later three ranks were strengthened with Heaven Runes.

With regards to this medals, Yue Yang didn't care at all. Furthermore, Dwarf Runes was easy as primary school questions to him. Even the Heaven Runes on the later three ranks of the Valor Medal was like the most basic knowledge for Yue Yang. They couldn't even compare to the sickly beauty's research. What Yue Yang wanted was a status. Now Yue Yang discovered that the normal path of training was not suitable for him, he must walk a unique training journey that was different from anyone else.

For example, levelling up by defeating monsters. Yue Yang felt that he was now under-levelled but extremely powered up. With his super strong abilities, it might even be an overkill.

Yue Yang decided to be patient and start from the beginning. This was actually quite difficult.

This was because he had already gotten used to meeting stronger enemies with every battle.

Yue Yang really couldn't care less about picking herbs or

defeating low-levelled monsters to get magic crystals. These things didn't make his heart move at all.

On the opposite, if he tried a new way.

If he could 'get treasures from killing people' rather than 'get treasures from killing monsters', Yue Yang would be more fired up about it. Especially when he slaughtered the small Dragon Hunters party just now. He had killed his arrogant enemies in one swoop, then took their treasures such as Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear, Curse Ball, Blood Scythe, Thunder Axe and others and kept them inside his Lich Ring. That kind of satisfying feeling was something that he wouldn't experience normally. Furthermore, the equipment that the small Dragon Hunters party wore were far more valuable than the magic crystals and herbs that he collected along the way.

If he had killed a normal party, he wouldn't be able to explain it. After all, the other party had not offended him at all.

However, he had killed the Dragon Hunters, who was notorious for their cruelty and crimes.

He managed to uphold justice and acquire treasures at the same time. Getting double achievement, why shouldn't he go for this?

In the Mercenary Guild, Yue Yang realized that among the top 100 quests, five were requests to annihilate the Dragon Hunters. Some requests were for small parties, while some requests were for a single person.

Assassin Guild, Thief Guild and Mercenary Guild were all combined together as one body in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. All requests would be issued on the Mercenary Guild, but the trade, materials and rewards would be completed at each guild. All three guilds would have a Bloody Villain List. Amongst the top ten wanted people, eight of them were Dragon Hunters. Only two were naturally born mad slaughterers.

The murderer who killed the most number of people was called 'An Xi'. That fellow had slaughtered over a million people, way ahead of the second in line.

This An Xi, from the description, possessed the strength of an Innate Level 10. He was a Ranker who was said to have slaughtered one whole continent before.

Other than the Supreme Elder of Humans, Zhi Zun, An Xi who had lived for more than two thousand years was not an enemy that anyone dared to challenge.

According to the Top Rankers List, his great name was ranked even higher than the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian, and Thousand Goblins Sect Leader. Amongst the names Yue Yang recognized, only Luo Jia Shan, the 'Sky Execution' from the Demonic Palace were ranked at the fifth place, the same rank as 'An Xi'. The Great Demon King Baruth was ranked fourth, but Yue Yang did not recognize the second and third Rankers. Seems like they were Rankers from the Outer Realm.

(Shiroyukineko: Sorry for mistranslation. Sky Execution was previously Sky Pearl, I read the word 诛 as 珠... Will change the

previous chapters.)

In the Bloody Villain List, other than An Xi who was top of the list, the top ten mad murderers had not killed over ten thousand people.

Of course, these numbers were not counting the number of civilians that they killed, it was only the number of warriors that they killed.

It was unknown how the list kept track of the numbers.

Yue Yang went through the list. He felt that if he killed every single fellow in the list, he would acquire a lot of treasures.

Other than the mysterious An Xi, the Dragon Hunters who mostly dominated the Bloody Villains List had actually so rampantly created a country in one of the Outer Realms in Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. It really made Yue Yang surprised... Seems like as long as one possess power, no matter who they are, they would be able to act as they please, unrestricted!

“Why are you covered in blood?” When the sickly beauty saw Yue Yang return all covered in blood, she became curious.

“I was beating up some little thieves.” Yue Yang chuckled.

“Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear? It’s a set with your Dragon Slaying Dagger. Not bad.” The sickly beauty knew that Yue Yang

had always wanted to find suitable weapons. This Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear, although it was not the ideal Holy-ranked or Divine-ranked Weapon that Yue Yang had wanted, it was still part of a Gold-ranked set. It was still a good thing to have.

“The Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower is kind of interesting. I will rest for a while, tomorrow I will continue to find treasures.” A thought suddenly flashed through Yue Yang’s mind. Should he bring Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others to train here? Although it would be a little dangerous, and that they might die if they were careless, under this kind of environment, they would definitely improve faster than in Soaring Dragon Continent.

“Are you missing Wu Xia, Qian Qian and the others?” When the sickly beauty saw Yue Yang deep in thought, she even thought that Yue Yang was missing his home. She slowly hugged him.

“Also missing you.” Yue Yang didn’t deny her. He hugged the beauty and gave her a sweet kiss.

“You are thinking of playing dirty tricks, right?” The sickly beauty’s starry eyes looked drunk in happiness as she slowly closed them. Within Yue Yang’s embrace, her hands pinched his arms lightly, “Scoundrel, you should bathe first, your whole body reeks of blood...”

The second day, Yue Yang who wore the Gemini Mask, Wyvern Armor, and carrying a Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear wrapped up in a cloth appeared in front of the Mercenary Guild.

He used his Valor Medal to receive three quests. After getting the map for the quests, he prepared to teleport to his destination.

Suddenly, he walked towards the Plaza.

Golden Elves Lin En, Anna, Bao Er and the Ox-head party leader Li Ao, Fan Lun Tie and the four Orc girls walked passed him, but they did not recognize that the man who was dressed strangely was actually the weakling Titan Yue who had suddenly exploded and annihilated a whole Dragon Hunters party. Yue Yang was walking right beside Bao Er the big loli golden elf, but this self-pronounced 100% Accuracy, Unrivalled Archer with Sharp Eyesight had even glared at him, because Yue Yang had accidentally knocked over the card in her hand.

She raised her card up high, which stated, “Looking for party member, Titan Yue. Hoping for any kind of news, informers will be rewarded.”

The same search request for Titan Yue had also been posted at the Mercenary Guild Quest List.

Yue Yang didn't greet them, he only chuckled and teleported away from the Plaza, starting his bounty request.

And at this time, in the newbie registration site, a few men were acting like farmers who had just came into a big city. They were shouting excitedly as they walked in. One of them was a fatty, he was holding a chicken drumstick with his oily hands, biting voraciously as if he was a reincarnation of a Hungry Ghost. He ate

as he talked with his comrades, “Monkey Ye, look at that. This is the plaza of Tong Tian Tower’s Sixth Floor. My god, it’s so much bigger than my courtyard... Look at those monsters, my god, how did it grow so big? Look at those Golems, do you think that their brains are made of stone? Not bad, this Tong Tian Tower Sixth Floor is more lively than I imagined. If we can set up a stall here, we might earn a lot of profit.”

“Dumb Fatty, although you have the spirit of a merchant, don’t be an embarrassment to Soaring Dragon Continent. Nobody here wants your trash!” The lean guy sneered at the fatty.

Two honest-looking, dead silent men carried two huge bags and followed behind the lean guy and the fatty, not speaking anything at all.

Behind them, there were two more guys.

One was cold as ice, as if he was a guy who had just broken out from a world of ice and snow.

The other one had a face as smooth as jade and whiter than girls. For a human man to have such a beautiful appearance, it might even be pushing the limits of a human.

The Golden Elf Lin En and the Ox-head Li Ao glanced at each other. Are they newbies from the Soaring Dragon Continent?

The Ox-head Fan Lun Tie became more anxious. She quickly

walked forward with wide steps and shouted out with her coarse voice, deafening everyone around, “You human newbies over there, stop there and don’t move!”

“Is this robbery? Great Ox-head King, I have no money!” Fatty Hai raised his hands exaggeratedly and pretended to be panic-stricken, “I have chicken drumstick though, if you don’t mind leftovers!”

“Who wanted to rob you? I just wanted to ask you about a person!” The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie grumbled at her heart, why are there no normal humans from the Soaring Dragon Continent?

“So it’s not robbery...” The fatty immediately turned around and shook his hand, just like he was swatting flies, “Shoo, shoo. I don’t speak to anyone other than beauties. What do you mean ask us about a person. We just came to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, we don’t know anyone and didn’t owe anyone money. You asked the wrong person!” He continued to speak as he ate his chicken drumstick, completely disregarding the Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie’s enraged eyes.

“We want to find someone who is like you, a newbie who came from the Soaring Dragon Continent!” Bao Er hurriedly ran towards them and asked.

“It’s a whole other case if a beauty is asking me! Although you are still small, you will definitely be a beauty when you grow up. I have decided to answer your question. However, you must call me Great Big Brother first!” The Fatty showed his piggy older brother appearance.

“Scram! You are really an embarrassment!” The lean guy sent the fatty flying through the air with a kick.

“That’s right...” The ice-cold guy agreed.

“Please don’t mind him. Although the Soaring Dragon Continent produce many handsome guys and beautiful girls everyday, sometimes, a defective product will arise. For example, that piggy over there is a disgrace to our Soaring Dragon Continent. Just ignore him.” The lean guy acted refined and courteous, but even a blind person could see that he was not a virtuous person either. Furthermore, his courteous demeanour right now was the complete opposite of his violent actions just now. Even the Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie, who had strong mental strength, could not react to these people.

“We have no intention to disturb you guys. We only wanted to find a friend whom we had just gotten to know but went missing. He is called Titan Yue, do you happen to know him?” Anna decided to ask them herself.

The moment she asked, Lin En and Li Ao noticed that everyone’s faces revealed a strange expression.

Did they really ask the wrong people?

Were these people Titan Yue’s enemies?

They definitely recognized him, but they might not be friends. If Titan Yue was their friends, why wouldn't they come to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower together? Titan Yue came alone, could it be that he was trying to hide from these people? These people looked a little strange, it was completely possible that they were Titan Yue's enemies!

Lin En and Li Ao prepared themselves internally.

The fatty that had been kicked flying just now had already returned without anyone noticing. He was standing right in front of Anna.

He put the chicken drumstick inside his robe and wiped the grease on his mouth. He then took out a comb and brushed his hair neatly. Next, he dusted off the dust on his clothes and finally, acting like an elegant noble, he bowed gracefully, "My beautiful, fair lady, allow me to answer your question. Let alone answering your questions, I would even jump into blades and fire for you. I would also...Ahhhh!"

Before the fatty finished his words, he was kicked to the ground by the lean guy once again.

Then, the few people who came from the Soaring Dragon Continent harmoniously stomped and trampled on the fatty. Anna and Bao Er were completely dumbstruck by the scene before them.

Could it be that everyone in Soaring Dragon Continent are freaks?

Why aren't there any decent ones?

When they finished beating up the fatty, Anna tried to endure her smile and asked once again. Initially, she had doubted that these humans were bad people, but now that she looked again, they didn't seem so. This was only a group of buffoons who liked to make commotions. Although they were kind of lewd and strange, it seemed like they were good people.

“What did you say? Titan Yue? Of course we know him. That brat is my little brother and I'm his big boss. How could I not know him?” The fatty, whose face was full of bruises, so much that he bears close resemblance to the Orcs, suddenly jumped up. His face weren't red and he wasn't out of breath as he proudly patted his chest, “When we studied at Ivy Academy last time, I was the one who led him to woo girls. That brat was too inadequate, no girls like him at all. He simply couldn't compare to the handsome me, who had so many admirers that I have rejected!”

“You are his big boss?” Lin En and Li Ao immediately sweated profusely when they heard him, speechless.

“Are you really big brother Titan's big boss?” Bao Er couldn't help but to sweat profusely as she thought, could it be that the Soaring Dragon Continent respect the fattest as elders? Whoever was the fattest would be the big boss?

“Big brother Titan?” The lean guy looked at Bao Er curiously. His probing gaze made Bao Er feel embarrassed. Before this, Bao Er

definitely never called Yue Yang big brother Titan before, she only called him idiot. However, after she woke up, she heard about the mysterious, amazing story that Fan Lun Tie and the others had told her. She heard about how the cowardly, weak and idiot human had annihilated the Dragon Hunters in an instant and saved everyone. About how he had left in a flashy way and left a lonely, strong person's figure at the end. Hence, the weak, cowardly idiot had levelled up to become big brother Titan.

“Where is he? Hand him over!” The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie was different from Bao Er. She felt that she had been fooled by Yue Yang previously, hence she was extremely furious and was thinking of settling the debts between them.

“Eh, isn't he with you guys?” The fatty asked.

“He, uh, got lost...” Fan Lun Tie found it embarrassing to say that their whole party misunderstood that Yue Yang was a coward weakling, and made him walk away in anger at the end.

“You can lose anything, but you, you, how could you lose a person!” The fatty immediately made a big fuss.

Chapter 364 – Thunder Fortress, The Robbers' Den

Thunder Fortress.

There was a place in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower that could induce fear in a person just by hearing its name— the Thunder Fortress.

Despite its name, it was not a castle or fortress, but a kingdom.

More accurately speaking, it was a robbers' den.

Rumor has it that in the whole of Tong Tian Tower, a unique type of 'Thunder Ore' could only be found there, hence, the adventurers who camped there in the early days named it the Thunder Fortress. Of course, there was another version saying that as the surname of the adventurers' leader was Lei, he named the place the Thunder Fortress, and the ore indigenous to the Thunder Fortress as the 'Thunder Ore'.

(want2eat: Lei is thunder in Chinese)

Whatever the truth was, people didn't really care.

Also, as the Thunder Fortress had been dominated by the Dragon Hunters for thousands of years, it became a restricted ground for normal adventurers.

Other than malicious robbers or bandits, those who could make it into the Thunder Fortress, were only merchants. Anything associated with friendliness, justice or kindness had long gone extinct over here. Combats, fights and deaths could occur any moment...

The king who reigned over the Thunder Fortress was Chong Ni, who was ranked eighth on the Bloody Villain List.

He was a Level Eight Innate with supreme powers that could move mountains, a force where nobody could match up their power to. He was also a serial killer who had killed over forty thousand Rankers in the past 600 years.

Forget about Chong Ni, his three followers—Demon Eye, Mountain Elf and Blood River, were all serial killers in top hundred of the Bloody Villain List.

(Shiro: Would you guys rather Demon Eye, Mountain Demon and Blood River or Yao Tong, Shan Xiao and Xue He? These were names, so it should be the latter, but a lot of readers said that Chinese names were confusing)

Due to the unique terrain of the Thunder Fortress and the powerful Chong Ni who ruled over the place, it was therefore no wonder that the Warrior Guild couldn't do anything. Even the Innate Alliance turned a blind eye to them. In Tong Tian Tower, there were a lot of people who was just like Chong Ni. They couldn't maintain their self-conscience after gaining power, subsequently turning into a dictator. In the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, there were more than a thousand who were villains just like Chong Ni, but as the Thunder Fortress was the most

infamous one, Chong Ni could be considered to be the leader of all villains.

How could there be a Ranker who didn't have their own territory in the Tong Tian Tower?

Only the weaklings don't have their own territories.

The Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian, for example, possessed several palaces in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. He even possessed the Sky Emperor Divine Palace in the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower, where he ruled over the whole rich territory that seemed to be as vast as the Soaring Dragon Continent.

This was an embodiment of his power.

Yue Yang was heading towards the Thunder Fortress, the place where he could unleash his powers without any restrictions.

He first teleported to the Yellow Goat Hills, the only place that allowed access to public. Then, he subsequently made his way to the outpost station of the Thunder Fortress, the ancient town of Yellow Goat. Although this was a town, it was much bigger than White Stone City and was bustling with excitement and activity. Countless merchants traded here, trading various life supplies including food, water, meat and other products such as wine, salt, sugar, as well as gold, silver, copper, iron and other metals. There was even countless slaves from different tribes on sale, including humans. However, most slaves were Beastmen or Half Beastmen

who were physically stronger.

The merchants here were generally weaker, almost everyone were either Level 4 Champions or even Level 3 Hero. At the most, they were Level 5 Grandmasters, and very few of them were Level 6 Elders.

Although they were weak, they were safe.

Apart from the unwritten rule that forbid the killing of merchants, they also carry badges from the different Merchant Guilds they belonged to, and this helped to keep them safe. For example, for merchants who represented Shun Tian's Sky Emperor Divine Palace Merchant Guild, even if they looked as weak as a chick, no one would dare to touch Shun Tian's property.

Power ruled over everything here. As long as one had enough power, he would be granted access to anywhere.

As Yue Yang strolled along the streets of the ancient town of Yellow Goat, he felt sentimental as he looked at the bustling trading zone.

As extreme as it may sound, immorality certainly nurture business faster.

Being profit maximizing, merchants did not care about justice. They used extreme tactics to earn more money. For example, slaves trading was an extremely profitable industry...

“Do you need a female slave? She’s a Half Elf with an exotic look and a hot body. A single taste of her would definitely drive you crazy!” More than one merchant attempted to promote their slaves to Yue Yang. In the ancient town of Yellow Goat, slaves were just normal trading goods which were a tad more expensive than the others. For example, the Half Elf that was offered to Yue Yang just now cost 3000 gold. As long as one was willing to pay 3000 gold and a tax of 500, one could have bought the female slave and do whatever they want with her. This included abusing and killing her. To put it bluntly, her whole life belongs to the person who paid for her.

If one thought that it was too expensive, they can opt for cheaper female slaves for a price ranging from ten gold to more than a hundred gold. With 1000 gold, one could have bought more than ten slaves.

The cheapest slaves were the coolies, who were either Beastmen or Half Beastmen used for mine digging or manual labour.

These coolies were not sold separately but sold per cages.

One cage of 100 slaves, just for 500 gold.

“Are there any Golden Elves?” After walking a few rounds, Yue Yang finally stopped in front of the fat toad merchant who attempted to promote his Half Elf to him.

“Shhh!” The fat toad merchant shushed him. “You know the

goods well, but Golden Elves were extremely hard to get. Maybe you didn't know that they were very stubborn and would not leave the forest they were inhabiting in easily, hence, hunting them was extremely difficult. To make matter worse, when one Golden Elf was caught, all the other villagers will go after and kill the hunter. They would not stop until they die. The Golden Elves had always been a subject of interest to the VIPs, but demand had always been greater than supply. Who doesn't want to earn that money? It's just that it's really too hard to get them! I've been a merchant for over hundred years and I was only involved in trafficking them twice. The last time I done it, I was kidnapping a young Golden Elf, but I was attacked by a Golden Elf that was thousands of years old. I almost die from fright, so I could only let that little prize go... Boy, it was a little prize worth more than 50,000 gold! If it's grown up, people would even be willing to pay more than 100,000 gold for it! “

“Really?” Yue Yang replied disinterestedly as he prepared to leave.

“Wait, although I don't have a Golden Elf, I still have other beauties from different races, including virgins. Do you want to take a look at some of my goods? I'm sure that you will find one that satisfies you. Our Golden Toad Guild was one of the largest Merchant Guild in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, ranked 95 out of ten thousand other Merchant Guilds. I'm sure that you have heard of us.” The fat toad persuaded, afraid that Yue Yang would run off. For him to be able to ask about the Golden Elf, he must be rich right?

Moreover, he was wearing was a Gold-ranked equipment mask, and cladded in the Wyvern Armor. This was something a normal

adventurer would not possess.

Yue Yang wasn't interested in buying a slave nor was he interested in doing something so troublesome as upholding his sense of justice and free all the slaves here. That was a task for the next dimension traveller, he had no time for that.

These slaves had already been domesticated, they had already lost the ability to survive independently.

If they were to be freed, they might die of starvation without the support of their masters.

Actually Yue Yang's real intention was to enter the Thunder Fortress, if not for it he wouldn't have even spoken to the fat toad merchant.

"I want to enter the Thunder Fortress to get some stuff, if it's within your ability then name me a price." Yue Yang's tone was akin to those serial killers who wished to seek refuge with Chong Ni.

"Ahem, it's not that I'm doubting your strength, but entering the Thunder Fortress is a little... if you don't have a guarantor, it will be very hard... I click well with you and want to help you, but..." The fat toad merchant was a little hesitant because if Yue Yang were to get caught, it may implicate him. It would still be alright if Yue Yang only wanted to buy the banned Thunder Ore from the Thunder Fortress, but if he turned out to be a spy from the Warrior Guild, the fat toad merchant was afraid that he would get

into trouble too.

“1000 gold.” Yue Yang stated his price.

“What... What did you say? 1000... I want to help but my hands were tied, I...” The fat toad merchant gulped on his saliva. He wanted to earn the money, but was afraid that he would lose his life before he could even spend them.

“2000 gold.” Like a vicious devil, Yue Yang kept tempting the merchant with money.

“I really can’t...” The fat toad merchant decided that if Yue Yang offered an additional 100 gold, he would relent.

“ If you can’t then never mind.” Yue Yang turned and left.

“Hey, wait!” The fat toad merchant almost wanted to slap himself. Why was he so stupid? He could only earn a profit of 200 gold from the sale of the Half Elf beauty, but now he could earn 2000 gold right away without any capital. How could he simply reject it? You idiot, you must have employed Golems as your personal bodyguards for so long that your brains had turned into stone too, the fat toad merchant thought to himself.

When it was night time, the fat toad brought Yue Yang through the heavily guarded Teleportation Circle and headed towards the Thunder Fortress.

The Thunder Fortress was in an independent dimension, and the space it occupied was not very vast, approximately only the size of five White Stone City in the Da Xia Empire. Yue Yang guessed that it was even smaller than Hong Kong. The Thunder Fortress was surrounded in volcanoes, and the lava from the volcanoes accumulated to form a gigantic lake. In the middle of the lava lake, a funnel-shaped giant island which was wider at the top and narrower at the bottom, just like a spinning top (a.k.a beyblades) positioned in the centre of the boiling lava lake.

This was the Thunder Fortress.

Of course, only Chong Ni's palace was situated at the top, normal Dragon Hunters, robbers and bandits could only live in caves.

As for merchants and slaves, they had to live underground.

Two to three kilometers underground, there was a underground city made from mines and pits. While the environment wasn't comparable to that above the ground, it was good that they could expand the space endlessly. When the coolies dug the mine every year, they would add new pits.

"This is?" At the entrance to the underground city, even after being bribed, an Elite Guard still cautiously asked for Yue Yang's identity.

"My nephew! His face got disfigured during a battle so he had to wear a mask. I brought him here to broaden his horizon, he definitely won't cause any trouble as we were all law-abiding

merchants.” The fat toad merchant said as he gave another 20 gold as entrance fee to the elite guard. The elite guard frowned as he pondered over how a frog would have a nephew of human descent. But what trouble could a timid merchant cause? He reckoned that the merchant brought Yue Yang in to buy the banned Thunder Ore from the black market!

“If anything happens, the Golden Toad Guild will have to bear all responsibility.” The elite guard warned.

“Yes, yes, of course.” The fat toad nodded and bowed, appearing respectful on the surface, but he thought secretly, once we enter, who would know that I brought him in? Moreover there were so many others who sneaked in, how could they even manage the whole lot of us?

“Take off the mask and show it to me.” The elite guard wanted to let Yue Yang in, but seeing the Golden-ranked mask on his face made him greedy.

“Those who dared to touch my mask will become blind.” Yue Yang said as he pointed his Silver-ranked Eye Destroyer Dagger on the eyelid of the elite guard. “Are you still insisting on taking a look at my face now?” Yue Yang said coldly.

“...” The frog merchant’s mouth was so wide opened that he could have swallowed a Kodo Beast.

Chapter 365 – Friend

The strongest one would always be the big boss.

This sentence suits the Robber's Den, Thunder Fortress the most. When Yue Yang made his move, all the problems were solved.

Even after they walked two kilometres out of the pit, the fat toad still couldn't believe what he had seen. It was only until they almost reached the Black Market at the end of the road that he finally swallowed his saliva and said, "Mr. Titan, you really surprise me. Honestly speaking, this is my first time seeing someone handling the elite guard in the Thunder Fortress like that... They were usually evil demons who would devour humans whole, they wouldn't stop until they wring the person who wanted to enter Thunder Fortress dry. Other than giving them endless amounts of bribes, I still have to give them a hundred female slaves every year, otherwise I won't even be able to enter the first checkpoint..."

"Actually, no matter what kind of method you use, it is a good method, as long as you can achieve your purpose." Yue Yang replied disinterestedly.

"Yes, you are right." At this time, the fat toad's respect for Yue Yang greatly increased. Previously, he had only regarded Yue Yang as a VIP customer who must be waited upon carefully. However, right now, he only felt a little afraid of him, mainly because he feared the unforeseeable, "Mr. Titan, I didn't complete my job well. Maybe I should refund you 500 gold, no, I should refund you 1000 gold!"

“No need, gold has no meaning to me.” Yue Yang’s attitude was like an emperor.

That kind of attitude which sees gold as nothing almost made the fat toad cry river of tears. Thinking about how he had always had to work hard, running around everywhere, how much could he earn a year? At first, he only wanted to earn a small sum of money to purchase a small villa in the most bustling part of the Plaza at Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, then lived peacefully with his family. He dreamt of living a high-class, worry-free life. Who would have known that in the end, compared to others, he was not even worth a fart.

Money was indeed unimportant to Yue Yang.

He didn’t have a lot of money, but he didn’t lack of them.

Yue Yang only lacked a Divine Weapon... Of course, in Tong Tian Tower, no one would complain having too many Divine Weapons. He believed that Zhi Zun was also the same.

In the underground city of Thunder Fortress.

Black Market.

This Black Market was extremely large. Other than those who lived outside of the dark pit, all the roads and caves were part of the Black Market. Everything could be found in the Underground

City, including food, water, beast, slaves, weapons, minerals, women, etc... Anything anyone could think of, everything was provided in the Black Market. Even things that nobody could think of can be found here!

On the outskirts of the Black Market, different stalls selling street food from different races were set up. There were Roasted Rats and Roasted Snakes skewer or Roasted Lizards. They were the most popular snacks around.

One would already feel good just by smelling the delicious smell.

It was best to eat them with a chilled mug of Dwarf Ale. That was the definition of a sumptuous meal by most people who lived here.

Walking deeper into the underground city, Yue Yang discovered more products being sold here. Most of them were small stalls, there were also some stalls that were built underground.

Yue Yang felt that this place was very similar to some underground markets in China.

It was messy, but lively.

And it seemed like it was better to set up stalls here than in China, because there were no troublesome things such as 'city management' over here.

Walking past the bustling stream of people, Yue Yang walked a

few miles forward.

As he continued to walk, the area in front of him suddenly cleared up as a huge Underground City suddenly appeared in front of Yue Yang. This underground city was more or less as big as ten football fields. The dome-shaped roof was more than 300 metres above the ground and was covered in caves. The caves glowed brightly with residents' lights, making the whole scene looked like a starry night filled with red stars.

“Although this place was incomparable to the Villain City above, it was still an extremely expensive estate. The stronger and richer people would live at higher floors. Our Merchant Guild pays 30,000 gold yearly rent for a room that was even narrower than a snail's shell, but there's no other way, that's the way of this damned place. It is really hard to find a place to rest immediately unless you rent a cave.” The fat toad complained a few words, then introduced himself in an over-friendly manner, “My real name is Jia De, I am of the Golden Toad race. Of course, in front of the others, it would be best if you still call me Wei Er. I have used this alias for almost a hundred years.”

“Wei Er, you damned toad. I said I want a Butterfly Beauty last time, did you bring one with you?” Suddenly a loud voice resounded from afar.

“Butterfly Beauty?” Everyone couldn't help but to stop their conversations and turned towards the fat toad.

“...” Yue Yang knew that butterfly beauties were extremely rare. They were the gems of the butterfly race, but Yue Yang didn't

know that they were so popular in this Thunder Fortress.

“My highly esteemed Lord Gu Nai Te, how could this lowly toad dare to forget your orders! We have caught a Butterfly Beauty, but the rumours have gotten quite out of hand, so I was not able to bring her here. Please wait for another ten days, maybe I can think of a way.” The fat toad nodded and bowed to another person, humouring him.

This man was not a human, but a man from a different race.

Yue Yang didn't know what race this fellow was, but he could see that he was a Level 8 Emperor (Beginner). His strength far surpassed the rest of the people around, he looked like he was the gangster boss of the region. Yue Yang didn't care about his curious gaze, but measured his surrounding instead. Countless people were performing secret trades, huddling in different groups. There were torches hung on the cliff walls, the soft glow of light bearing witness to these exchanges in the Black Market... Naked Leopard Girl and Snake Girl were twisting their waists inside their cages, seducing soundlessly. They were all high-quality goods.

These women were much luckier than those prostitutes that Yue Yang saw just now, who were standing along the tunnel, revealing their bodies under the torch lights.

They were all beautiful, they only lacked their new master.

Of course, high quality goods couldn't be shown on display, they were for the finale of the Black Market Auction House.

For example, a Butterfly Beauty or a beautiful elf.

Even if the fat toad brought a Butterfly Beauty, he wouldn't sell it to that Gu Nai Te. He would have auctioned her on the Auction House, so that other rich people would fight over her. Even if he sold her privately, the fat toad would have sold it to the Rankers in the Thunder Fortress, for example the top ten Rankers of the Thunder Fortress. As for Gu Nai Te, the small-time gangster boss, it would be enough to deal with him politely afterwards.

“You are just bragging, right? How could the likes of your third-rate Merchant Guild be able to catch a Butterfly Beauty? You think the strong warriors in the Butterfly race are all fools?” Gu Nai Te, who was from a different race, slapped the fat toad's shoulders hard, shaking the fats on the fat toad's arms. His other hand took the money pouch that the fat toad offered, collecting his bribes. Then, he looked at Yue Yang.

It seemed like he extremely disliked Yue Yang.

He signalled for Yue Yang to give him money too.

When he found out that Yue Yang had no intention to give him any bribes at all, he became extremely furious.

He brushed the fat toad who was about to sweet-talk him away, and glared at Yue Yang provocatively, purposely staring him down.

Yue Yang ignored him.

Seeing this, Gu Nai Te became even more furious. His oddly-huge nose flared open, almost as if he was about to breathe fire. Two of his four, thick hands clenched into fists. One of his hand brushed the fat toad aside while his last hand dug into his nose and dug out a green-coloured booger. He then disgustingly tried to wipe the booger on Yue Yang's mask. Yue Yang moved his head in a swift movement and avoided his hands.

"It's okay, it's okay, it's all a small misunderstanding. He is new here, he doesn't know the rules yet." The fat toad hurriedly wiped the booger off on Gu Nai Te with his hands. What a joke, Gu Nai Te, who dared to provoke this Titan who could even disregard an Elite Guard, would definitely suffer in his hands. But this fellow was still a gangster boss after all, everything would be fine if they gave him some money.

"Since he's new, we should teach him our rules!" Gu Nai Te thought that Yue Yang was scared.

He dug out an even bigger booger, but he was still unsatisfied because it wasn't big enough.

He reached out his other hand and dug inside his other nostril.

Seems like he was intent on embarrassing Yue Yang, the newbie who had just arrived here... The surrounding people were only watching idly, as this kind of scene happen everyday, they had

long gotten used to it. The crowd even followed Gu Nai Te's sneers as they wanted to be on his good side. They jeered a few words so that Gu Nai Te would feel happier.

"Bam..."

Yue Yang punched Gu Nai Te square in the face.

He punched him hard, shattering Gu Nai Te's nose into pulp. His finger that was digging inside his nose was also shattered.

Gu Nai Te hadn't even managed to scream out before Yue Yang grabbed the horns on his head and smashed it hard against the cliff wall.

Fresh blood splattered everywhere.

Broken teeth and blood spurted out.

That big boss Gu Nai Te who was extremely strong in people's eyes, his head burst open like a watermelon, splattering blood and brain matter everywhere.

Yue Yang acted like he had only done a small thing, like a normal person who had just killed a mosquito. Under everyone's dumbstruck gaze, he turned around leisurely and prepared to leave.

Gu Nai Te whose head had been completely shattered suddenly stood up. Although he had a head, as a warrior of the Land Scabbard Race, he could continue to fight even without a head. This kind of power was similar to other animals who could continue to live without their tail or their head, but it was much stronger. Yue Yang was not surprised. With his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he had already known his opponent's weakness.

“Explode!”

Yue Yang clenched his fists.

The Star Explosion Power that he had shoved inside Gu Nai Te's body exploded in that moment, shattering Gu Nai Te's innards into pieces. Gu Nai Te's innards and blood splattered all over the fat toad's face.

One of Gu Nai Te's arms fell right at Yue Yang's foot, twitching continuously.

Watching this scene, Gu Nai Te's subordinates immediately abandoned all thoughts of surrounding and attacking Yue Yang... Looking at it right now, changing their boss was more logical than fighting against this terrifying boy in front of them. They could change their boss, it was a very normal occurrence in the Black Market. But if their head was gone, they wouldn't be able to change it anymore! When the guard who was patrolling at a far distance saw that Yue Yang easily killed Gu Nai Te, he also pretended that he didn't see anything. He hurriedly walk further away in order to avoid being implicated.

Fighting, brawling, injuries, death.

These things happened on daily basis in the Thunder Fortress.

The only exception today was that an outsider had killed the strong Gu Nai Te in an instant, he could be considered to be a dark horse.

Many gamblers regretted not betting on the outcome of the fight, otherwise they might have won some money... One of the most regretful person in the scene was the fat toad. He was the person who understood Yue Yang's abilities the most. Yue Yang had even dared to attack the elite guard just now, so what was Gu Nai Te even mean to him? He really regretted not setting up a bet and attracted everyone to wager on the winner of the fight. Otherwise, all the gamblers here would have already emptied their pockets.

“Nice one! Your speed is as fast as lightning, and your power is as might as thunder. I really like a young talented person like you.” A man that was ten times fatter than the fat toad was lying on a comfortable, luxurious-looking carpet. He was being lifted by fifty strong Beastmen slaves who looked like they were having a hard time carrying him. Like he was the star of a show, he proudly make an appearance from the crowd. Beside him, there were even two demon race slaves feeding him grapes and massaging his shoulders.

“...” Yue Yang was speechless. If he didn't have his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he wouldn't have known that this humongous,

overweight fatass was actually a human!

“Do you have any interest in wrestling with me? Winner gets 1000 gold.” The huge fatass tried to entice Yue Yang with money.

“Sir An Dong, the great Slave Merchant of Qi Lan Continent, we are really happy to receive your offer, but my friend over here don’t really care about gold. Maybe we can find a better place to have a chat, about trade, for example.” The fat toad hurriedly bowed politely. He knew that it was the time for him, the spokesperson, to show himself.

“If you want me to fight against that Chief Bodyguard of yours, I don’t mind trying.” Yue Yang suddenly spoke out his condition.

“Three Chief Bodyguards fight you altogether and I will give you 10,000 gold. Do you have the guts?” The huge fatass An Dong had three Lesser Innates Chief Bodyguards. These three people were very close to becoming Innates, but due to their cultivation and enlightenment state, they might not be able to become Innates in this lifetime. Hence, they would be Lesser Innates forever. Their powers were definitely one of the top in the Underground City.

一个护卫首领就可以轻易干掉古耐特，现在三个齐上，没有人认为岳阳这个刚来的新人会答应下来。

One Chief Bodyguard could easily kill Gu Nai Te in one move. Now that there were three of them in one row, everyone thought that Yue Yang, the newcomer, would never agree to An Dong’s deal.

As long as one was not a fool, one would understand how

terrifying it was to fight against the combined strength of three Lesser Innates!

Although there are a lot of money, they still need their lives to in order to enjoy spending it!

Yue Yang pretended to be thinking deeply and mumbling to himself, then he spoke out, “I don’t want money, but if I win, you have to give me a high-class equipment.” When Yue Yang said this, even fools knew that he wanted the ‘Thunder Ore’. However, the thing that everyone never anticipated was that Yue Yang actually wanted the three Chief Bodyguards’ lives... These three Chief Bodyguards were all notorious villains in the Bloody Villains List. As both the Merchant Guild and Assassin Guild offer bounties for their heads, they had nowhere to run to, in the end, they stayed here at the Thunder Fortress under An Dong’s protection.

As long as Yue Yang got rid of them, the quest that Yue Yang came here to finish would be twenty percent completed.

“No problem.” The huge fatass An Dong was rich and influential, he was one of the Thunder Ore Mines’ shareholders. He had many Thunder Ores to spare.

“Boy, you are courting death!” Those three Chief Bodyguards revealed a menacing glint in their eyes.

“Not a bad phrase for your last words.” Yue Yang shrugged his shoulders disinterestedly.

“In order for both sides to fight in a fair match, I suggest that we start the fight one hour later. This way, you would be able to get enough rest and preparation. As for us, we would also be able to take the opportunity to invite more people to watch this intense fight and place their bets on us.” An Dong laughed out loudly as he glanced at Yue Yang, “Young one, you can find a place to rest or come to our waiting room. There are a lot of supplies that you can use for free over there.”

“Thank you, we will appear on time.” The fat toad quickly rejected their offer. What a joke, if they used their supplies, they might not even know it when they suddenly die!

When An Dong left, the fat toad started to complain at Yue Yang without caring about the others watching them, “Mr. Titan, it’s not that I want to blame you for your recklessness, but this time you are really too reckless. You did not think over it carefully and you did not even try to discuss it with me, your friend. Yes, I understand An Dong’s scheming ways, even if you are very powerful, it would be very difficult to defeat them, you understand? An Dong has this special kind of drug that would increase someone’s strength multiple times for a short period. If he used it, then you won’t be fighting against three Lesser Innates Chief Bodyguards, you would be fighting against three Innates... If you don’t have the confidence, we should run away now! Retreating is not a disgrace, recklessly going into fights and dying would be the greatest mistake you can make in your life. Maybe you don’t agree with my idea, but I still hope that you could listen to my advice. This matter, you have to think about it carefully. The enemy definitely have the intention to ‘eat us to our bones’, otherwise they wouldn’t initiate a fight with us... Maybe, An Dong’s true motive is your mask and the treasure behind your back!”

Yue Yang waved his hands, “Jia De, thank you for your good intention. Allow me to say one thing, if you want to be my friend, the only thing you must do is to believe in me!”

Chapter 366 – Wager, Five Platinum Grimoires

Although Yue Yang said that, inside the fat toad Jia De's heart, he was thinking about other thing.

In this world, there was no way that a Ranker could be friends with a weakling!

It was the same logic as how he wouldn't be friends with servants or his bodyguards, because the relationship between a weakling and a Ranker would always be that of a master and servant. When this young human said that to him, he thought that it wasn't because he wanted to be friends with him, he just wanted a merchant manager to help him. Of course, the fat toad Jia De didn't dislike this kind of status difference, he even approved of it.

If Titan, this young person was truly strong enough, it would be a good idea for him to change the person he could depend on.

He didn't mind servicing anyone, as long he could depend on and had the backup of someone strong!

Although the Golden Toad Merchant Guild was ranked 95th largest guild, within the Golden Toad race, Jia De was nothing, his status was not high.

If he really could follow this Titan, the human with extraordinary powers and helped him to manage stuff, it was

definitely not a bad thing... The only problem was if this Titan could win against the fight with the three Chief Bodyguards.

This young human Ranker's power, was his power really as strong as what he had said?

"If he could return victorious..." The fat toad Jia De made a decision in his heart. He was a risk-taking merchant, he was an expert in speculation.

"Let's go!" Yue Yang didn't give a damn on what the fat toad was thinking about.

In the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, everything was so much easier than the Soaring Dragon Continent or China. Here, there were no seniority or complicated human relationship. Only strength matters here, with power, one can do whatever one pleased.

In conclusion, power determined everything. Without power, one would be nothing.

To Yue Yang, the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower made him like a fish in the water.

When he was at the Soaring Dragon Continent, there were still Elder Yue Hai, Jun Wu You and the rest above Yue Yang. Although they didn't restrict his life, their senior-junior, king-subject relationship was extremely evident. Even though it was extremely

mild, it still existed. Under the same situation, when Yue Yang reached the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, no matter how many Soaring Dragon Continent Rankers were here, as long as their strength was weaker than Yue Yang, they would have to show respect to Yue Yang. They would not be able to adopt seniority over him. The norm of human lives were not applicable here.

Yue Yang possessed power, hence he was extremely confident.

Whoever that An Dong from the Qi Lan Continent was, Yue Yang did not even care at all... In this whole Thunder Fortress, there was only one person that was worth of his careful attention, and that was the Innate Level 8 Chong Ni.

Chong Ni did not only possess the power of Innate Level 8, he was also extremely cunning.

A Ranker who could kill heartlessly and still had the ability to join the Innate Alliance, his wisdom was definitely comparable to Huang Sha, who was of the same level.

However, as Yue Yang, Xiao Wen Li, Xue Wu Xia and the other girls had partied together to kill Huang Sha with his weakness, water, at the Second Hall of the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, they manage to defeat him. That victory couldn't be an evidence of Yue Yang's strength. It can be said that Huang Sha who possessed the strength of Innate Level 8 died wrongfully in Yue Yang's hands. If Yue Yang were to fight Huang Sha fair and square, it was not even clear if he would be able to beat Huang Sha or not.

Comparing Chong Ni and Huang Sha, although their powers were more or less equal, if Yue Yang were to fight Chong Ni, he wouldn't be able to make use of the same, siege technique like what they had used on Huang Sha.

Ming Ri Wu and An Ge had told Yue Yang all of Huang Sha's weaknesses.

On the other hand, no one knew this Chong Ni's weakness.

The only report that Yue Yang knew was that this fellow had accidentally commit an offense towards Night Empress and became her target. However, he cleverly managed to escape and only suffered minor injuries.

The moment he escaped, he immediately asked for Elder Nan Gong's help.

He seek forgiveness from the Night Empress with nine Meteor Stars and buried the hatchet between them.

Hearing about Chong Ni's manners, Yue Yang could imagine how patient and clever he was.

Night Empress didn't have a high rank in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. A lot of people had even thought that she was merely one of the members of the Alliance. Only the people in Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower knew that her abilities was only second to Zhi Zun. Amongst the millions of Rankers in Tong Tian Tower, she

was definitely one of the top ten. She even had the qualifications to be in the top 5. Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who had the title of Sky Law, although she acted so arrogantly, she never disrespected the Night Empress when they discussed about her.

Of course, there were many other strong people who hid their true strengths from the public. Night Empress was not the only one.

One of such example was Sky Execution who lived in the Demonic Palace at Mountain Luo Jia. Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who had become Innate Level 10, had told Yue Yang before that she couldn't compare to Sky Execution even in her current level.

Sky Execution's strength was close behind Zhi Zun's. His power had even surpassed the three Demonic Palace Lords who set up the Demonic Palace in Mountain Luo Jia thousands of years ago.

Shun Tian and the Thousand Goblin Sect Leader's strength was extremely clear.

Even if they tried to hid it, they didn't hide a lot.

Night Empress and Sky Execution was different. These two people completely hid their true powers, no one knew their true powers and which realm their cultivation was at.

Right now, it was still too early for Yue Yang to catch up with Zhi Zun and Night Empress or fight against Sky Execution. That was

only Yue Yang's long-term goal. Even if he challenged Shun Tian, Thousand Goblin Sect Leader, Baruth, Ha Xin and the other, it was still too early for him. However, this Innate Level 8 Chong Ni had become the stepping stone target that Yue Yang had chosen.

He still had no ability to defeat the extremely strong one, so he should look for a nicely-matched opponent to train.

This was Yue Yang's current training plan.

With regards to killing monsters to level up, no one would go kill the last big boss at the beginning. That was not killing monsters to level up, that was suicide!

Just like in Diablo, no one would fight Diablo right from the beginning, newbies would definitely go to caverns to find wraiths first! However, Yue Yang who had a certain amount of strength, wasn't interested in small wraith boss who could breathe fire. At least he would try to defeat Andariel... As he walked out to the fighting arena, Yue Yang continued to daydream.

Countless people were pointing at Yue Yang, the newbie. They felt that Yue Yang really had a death wish challenging three Lesser Innates to a fight.

A few gamblers shouted loudly towards him, cursing Yue Yang to die quickly so that they could earn money.

There were also a few people who had seen how Yue Yang had

instant-killed Gu Nai Te just now. They had hurriedly pulled their comrades and tried to warn them, in order to avoid provoking Yue Yang's wrath. Provoking a Ranker's wrath would never be a good idea!

“Boy, go back into your mom's arms and drink your milk!”

“Why are you so skinny? Li Er and the others would definitely beat the shit out of you!”

“You can start crying now, you won't be able to cry later... Did you see his expression? I saw him trembling just now. What a wimp!”

“Anyone wants to buy his flesh? I have already told Mr. An Dong that his flesh belongs to me. Those who wanted to eat human flesh, please register here. I will give you a chilled wine for free if you buy three parts of meat! Innards? What did you say? You think that after being beaten by Li Er and the others, this brat won't even have any innards left? I daresay that Li Er would pull his intestines out, then he would tie it on his neck and turn him into a kite!”

Countless number of people gathered and gossiped together. There were even some people who tried to force their way inside to beat Yue Yang up.

These people were serial gamblers who had bet on Yue Yang's lost.

Yue Yang turned the Crescent Moon Blade in his hand, and slashed every single gamblers who wanted to ambush him, those fellows who wanted to spit on his body with their unclean mouths... The whole ground was filled with cut off arms, lips, tongues and ears.

Following that, miserable cries resounded all around relentlessly. The cursing crowd was immediately thrown into chaos.

Countless of people started running away in terror, those who moved slowly were stepped on by other people.

It was the first time in the Slave Fighting Arena that a gladiator had injured countless audience. No one dared to do this, no one dared to offend the audience. Only Yue yang, the newbie who had only came to the Thunder Fortress less than an hour ago, dared to use the sharp blade in his hand to enforce his new rule! There would always be people in this world who was born to bend rules, for example, Yue Yang.

No one dared to curse Yue Yang anymore. However, behind him, at a place where Yue Yang couldn't hear them, they would still curse him badly.

Almost everyone bet on Yue Yang losing.

The fat toad Jia De thought about the battle for a while and in the end, placed 10,000 gold to bet on Yue Yang's victory.

This was not the Merchant Guild's money. It was a tenth of his lifetime savings.

Jia De was not a crazy gambler, but he was a clever, speculating businessman. If Yue Yang was defeated, he would definitely suffer a great loss. But he wouldn't be ruined, he would still have a chance to start over; If Yue Yang became victorious, then he would earn a small fortune... Chances won't come by every single time, Jia De thought that he must get hold of this chance. Otherwise, he would only be a small merchant in the Golden Toad Merchant Guild forever.

"How much did you bet on?" Before Yue Yang entered the Fighting Arena, he suddenly asked Jia De.

"Not much, cough cough, I didn't bring a lot of money." Jia De jumped in fright and hurriedly explained, "Mr. Titan, I definitely believed in you. I bet on you winning!"

"Will we be compensated with the same good if we place our bet with physical goods?" Yue Yang asked.

"Do you want to bet too?" Jia De was bewildered. Under the normal situation, the gladiator was forbidden to place bets, because everyone was afraid they would fake the results. Of course no one would really follow these rules, as long as they didn't bet on themselves losing, no one would care if a gladiator bid the maximum amount. The Slave Fighting Arena would always welcome it. The maximum amount here was 100,000 gold, other than the extremely affluent people, no one would bet that much. Some poor beggars who wanted to bet but had no money would

even pawn his goods to place their bets. It's just that the odds from the pawning of the goods would be half of the market price.

“Help me pawn these.” Yue Yang took out a huge sack from his Lich Ring.

“Ah... okay.” The fat toad Jia De thought that it was gold pieces or some kind of special ores, so that when he won he would be compensated by Thunder Ores by the huge fatass An Dong.

Unexpectedly, when he opened the sack, he was completely dumbstruck.

That Pawn Declaration Officer who was about to shout out his usual ‘Pawning of five items, item price will be halved due to bad quality’ was completely shocked. He wasn't able to utter a single word.

This was because the things that Yue Yang wanted to pawn were five Platinum Grimoires with different motives... If he pawned these things and if he really won the battle, what would they pay him with? Money? No one knew how to price a Platinum Grimoire. Those were priceless treasures!

The Pawn Register Officer moved extremely quickly. He first wrapped the five Platinum Grimoires and then threw it to the back pile of pawned goods like cabbage. He then wrote a Pawn Receipt with sharp writings, “Five dilapidated Platinum Grimoire as collateral, gambling capital will all be used in one day. Goods will not be refundable if the bet is lost. Goods will be returned if the bet

is won. The odds are only half of the market price... When the fat toad Jia De and the Pawn Declaration Officer was still in a state of shock, all of the formalities had been completed. He then stuffed the pawn receipt to Jia De and shouted towards the window, “Next!”

This shout finally woke the Pawn Declaration Officer up.

He had wanted to snatch the pawn receipt in Jia De’s hands, but Jia De immediately ran away quickly, not giving him a chance to renege.

The Pawn Declaration Officer grabbed the collars of the Pawn Register Officer, who was as expressionless as a rock. He shouted furiously, “Damn you, are you blind?! Did you see what thing it was just now? You actually dared to accept it! If that Jia De fatty really won the bet, how are we going to compensate him? The odds are 1 to 10! Idiot, if that damned Titan really won, we have to compensate him with fifty Platinum Grimoires! Even if it was halved, we would still need to compensate twenty five Platinum Grimoires. Where on earth are you going to find twenty five Platinum Grimoires for him?”

The Pawn Register Officer was completely shocked, “What Platinum Grimoires?”

The blood to the Pawn Declaration Officer’s head was completely blocked due to anger as he shouted miserably in despair, “Please don’t tell me you did not see the goods properly just now.”

“Wasn’t it just five old books?” It was only then did the Pawn Register Officer felt that something was wrong. He looked at the records in his book, “Five dilapidated Platinum Grimoire... PLATINUM GRIMOIRE? My god, which fool would do this kind of thing? That fellow is mad, he actually used Platinum Grimoires as collaterals!”

“That’s not important, the most important thing is that it has been pawned. How are we going to compensate it!” The Pawn Declaration Officer felt like the sky had fallen on him.

“Listen to me, Huo Ji, I didn’t react at all just now because I thought it was just five old books. Dammit, those beggars have always used some rotting books as collaterals, so much that I became so used to accepting old books. How would I know they are Platinum Grimoires! If I knew those 5 books are Platinum Grimoires, I won’t accept it even if they threaten to squeeze my head against the door...” The Pawn Register Officer felt that his numbness to his job had brought him a huge trouble.

“Dammit, that’s not important, the most important thing is that we have accepted the collateral. If that Titan brat really won, Jia De would ask for twenty five Platinum Grimoires from us! Mr. An Dong would beat us all to death and would probably roast our meat into meat skewers. I daresay that we would definitely meet the same end.” The Pawn Declaration Officer was sweating bullets right now, he was trembling all over.

“I say, Huo Ji, maybe it is not that bad... You saw Jia De’s bet, right? He laid a bet on that Titan. That boy will be fighting against three Lesser Innates. Li Er and the others will definitely not lose.

We will definitely win this bet. This is not scary at all. We will definitely win this bet, and the unlucky Jia De will cry and wail. He should be the one crying!” The Pawn Register Officer was also sweating bullets.

“You are saying, we should win this five Platinum Grimoires? Mr. An Dong will not be angry at us, but will reward us instead?” The Pawn Declaration Officer also felt a glimpse of light shining from the dark sky.

“Maybe... No, that’s certain!” The Pawn Register Officer comforted his comrade and himself at the same time.

The two people didn’t care about the gamblers outside who wanted to place their collaterals anymore.

The two officers listened to the news intently, hoping to hear the good news of the three Lesser Innates defeating the newbie called Titan.

Along with a deafening roar of cheers, everything become silent all of a sudden. This kind of silence made the two officers’ hairs stand on their ends. Not good, if the three Chief Bodyguards had won, everyone should be cheering. Could it be that that newbie Titan really won? But that’s weird too, how could the newbie Titan be able to defeat three Lesser Innates?

The two people didn’t care about anything anymore and rushed out. Gasping for breath, they went to a corner of the Fighting Arena and stuck their heads out from the crowd.

When they saw, the two people immediately were so shocked they turned into statues.

In the Fighting Arena, the three Chief Bodyguards had all collapsed on the ground. It was unknown whether they were dead or alive. One of them was so scared that he was trembling nonstop.

Over ten beasts' cut up corpses were scattered all over the ground as a Platinum Reaper Mantis grabbed two beasts on its two scythe-like arms. One was a Thunder Lizard and it was already dead, while the other was Poison Spotted dragon King who was still alive. However, there was a portion of its head that had been chewed off by the Reaper Mantis. Even a blind person could see who was the winner in this battle.

The Pawn Register Officer and the Pawn Declaration Officers' eyes blacked out as they fainted over.

The huge fatass An Dong who was sitting on his carpet looked extremely miserable, as if he was a widow who had just lost her only son.

Jia De felt like laughing when he saw An Dong. That fellow still didn't know what would happen afterwards. If he knew that he was supposed to pay twenty-five Platinum grimoires to Yue Yang, his face would definitely be more interesting...

Chapter 367 – Nightmares And Tiger Nian

Everyone lost their bets.

Being utterly disappointed, the gamblers tore the paper used for betting into pieces and threw them all over the ground.

As the three Chief Bodyguards were not powerful enough, the gamblers who lost their bets were blinded by rage and immediately switched over to Yue Yang's side as they screamed, "Kill him!"

Listening to the waves of crazy screams, made An Dong's complexion became uglier.

However, there was another person whose complexion was even worse.

It was the only surviving Chief Bodyguard, Li Er.

As he was the most powerful among the trio, he survived until the last moment. But he was also not far from death. As long as Yue Yang wanted it, Li Er could die any time. Even the swift Reaper Mantis could kill him, let alone such a strong opponent. Li Er's Thunder Lizard and Green Spotted Dragon King that were once arrogant and known to be powerful in the underground city had all become food to the Reaper Mantis.

He wouldn't have dreamt that a little-known opponent like Titan would be so powerful.

He previously thought that with the combined power of the trio, they could have killed Titan easily.

Unexpectedly, even after drinking 'Crazed Bloodthirsty Potion' and upgrading their strength, they were still easily defeated by their opponent.

This young man who appeared extremely weak possessed strength that no one could imagine. To win the fight with him was as hopeless as three ants fighting against a mammoth; they couldn't defend against him at all. It was a pity that Li Er realised it all too late.

"Spare me, I can give you all my money in return. " Li Er pleaded desperately.

"Sorry but i'm not short of money. " Yue Yang was indifferent.

A man wearing a wide-brimmed hat sat beside An Dong and whispered, " How's the feeling of losing a bet? Depressing, isn't it? If you didn't forget, I placed a full bet on Titan just now for 100,000 gold. I know a million isn't a lot to you, but I hope to get them quickly... I'm be more than happy if you use your shares from the Thunder Mine to repay me. "

An Dong's face fats shook and his face turned ashen, "I haven't lost yet!"

The man wearing wide-brimmed hat shrugged his shoulders, “Of course you haven’t, but soon.”

Upon hearing his words, An Dong’s complexion became akin to that of a dead pig. He gritted his teeth and jostled the female demon slave beside him who was just about to serve him beer, sending her flying into the air, “Scram! Go and get Mr. Nightmare and Mr. Nian quickly, or you’ll lose your life!”

(Shiro: Nian means year)

The men with the wide-brimmed hat stretched his lips, seemingly smiling but also not at the same time. “Mr. An Dong, do you want to bet? I’ll bet 100,000 gold this time too if you don’t mind! “

“One million, if you’ve got guts. If I win we’d be even with the debt for the previous two rounds!” An Dong hit the couch in anger, almost breaking it.

“If you lose, I want one fifth of your share in the Thunder mines.” The man wearing the wide-brimmed hat said as he nodded in agreement.

In the arena, Yue Yang ignored Li Er’s pleads.

Yue Yang only cared about digging all the magic crystals of the beasts and told Li Er casually, “ I’ll give you a chance to commit suicide now. But don’t take too long because I have limited patience! “ Upon hearing this, all the gamblers cheered loudly. Although Yue Yang injured many and made everyone lose their

money previously, nobody want to support a loser. Everyone would only go after the one who had emerged as the winner.

Li Er wore an abject look of despair on his face upon hearing the news.

At the same time, he felt a sense of indescribable wrath .

He glared at Yue Yang with eyes full of hatred, and cursed, “ You forced me into this. If I’m dying, you are going down with me too! “

Li Er spoke his summons quickly as red light shimmered off him. His whole body inflated like a balloon as he turned into a blood red human balloon in a blink of an eye. Self-detonation, it was apparent that Li Er knew that he couldn’t survive so he was attempting to kill Titan together with him.

Jia De’s heart raised to his throat as he felt anxious for Yue Yang.

However, Yue Yang reacted to it as if nothing had happened .

It was only until Li Er’s body bloated up to it’s maximum capacity did Yue Yang raise one of his fingers to poke into the roundest part of the stomach of the blood red human balloon.

Uncountable amount of energy burst out like an volcanic eruption.

Yue Yang spinned his hands.

The explosive energy became tamed like a kitten instantly. Under the control of the Yang Ability, it went from violent to gentle, moving to stationary as it coalesced to become a blood red glowing ball.

It was then kept into the Lich Ring and disappeared.

Only Li Er was left in the arena. All skins and bones, he looked like a dry corpse.

Li Er was not dead yet, but everyone knew that his current condition was worse off than being dead. After losing his powers completely, he went from an Innate to a useless man. No one would be able to accept such a drastic change, so even if he survived now, he would definitely commit suicide later.

Li Er fell to the ground, crestfallen. Nobody cared about his well being now.

After all, who would care about a useless person's well being?

An Dong sat upright, and said in a loud voice, “ Mr. Titan, you have won this round. If you are interested, we can have a second round. For this round, you'd only have to fight against two people, and I'll give you ten times the reward, which is 100,000 gold,if you succeed. Do you have enough guts to rise up to this challenge? If

you don't, then you are a coward, a bastard with no balls! “

Yue Yang raised his head and stated at An Dong sharply, like a ferocious tiger staring at a fat pig. Everyone crowded around to watch the show, as they were certain that An Dong would likely become a dead pig. Yue Yang snorted coldly, “ Mr. An Dong, please don't insult a ranker so casually like this, if not you may have to fret for your life. I will let you off this time after you apologize. But if you do it again, I will kill you! “

Yue Yang's word struck to one as the descend of a devil.

An Dong quivered uncontrollably.

Forget about An Dong, the spectators sitting behind him all had their palms sweating in fear of facing Yue Yang's wrath due to An Dong.

“Alright, I apologize. It was just a slip of the tongue. But still, if you think of yourself as a Ranker, then you will have to accept my challenge. “ An Dong was a cunning rich man who had been in various situations, thus he knew that he couldn't insult the dignity of a Ranker and therefore he wasn't stingy about apologizing. In his heart, in order to get Yue Yang to agree to him, he could bear with everything. As long as Yue Yang fell into his trap, he would have a chance to turn things around

“This isn't fair, we won but you are saying that that this round isn't counted? This is going against the rule set by King Chong Ni for the underground city. “ A minority of the spectators saw that

Yue Yang instantly killed Gu Nai Te and betted that Yue Yang would win in hopes of being favoured by luck .

It was therefore obvious that they would object when they saw that the win wouldn't be counted.

Moreover, they would lose the money from the previous winning round if Yue Yang loses in the next round.

In order to calm the nerves of the spectator, An Dong had to say, "Of course we will take this round into account, but now there's another avenue to bet. You can continue betting that Titan will win consecutively for two rounds, or you can bet that my men would make a comeback this round. Especially for those who lost their money just now, this is your chance to compensate for your losses . I'll give you half an hour to contemplate before you can start betting. The new ratio is 1:2 ,meaning that if Titan lose when you bet for him to win, you lose twice the amount you bet.

There were betting stations set up all around the arena.

Those who lost their bets just now rushed to place their bets. This time even the fools knew that they should bet on the strong newcomer, Titan.

There were also a lot who bet that Yue Yang would win consecutively. Among all, Jia De the fat toad was the most enthusiastic one. He bet with the whole of his life savings, which was total of 90,000 gold.

Even if he lost, it would still be offset by the 10,000 he won previously... And if he wins again, his total earnings would become 280,000! With this money, he could open a small Merchant Guild and be his own boss, he wouldn't have to deal with the attitude of his seniors anymore.

Regarding Yue Yang's bet...

Jia De the fat toad felt that An Dong wouldn't be able to repay him even if he cuts off his meat to sell everyday!

It was because Jia De took advantage of the chaos and transferred all the receipts from his winning bet to another betting station ... This was also a convention in the arena of the underground city. As time is tight, people usually used receipts from winning rounds as their money to bet in the next round. They would then get another receipt in return. If they won, they would become rich overnight, but if they lose, it would be taken that they hadn't win, and they would lose all their capitals.

Jia De was very crafty, he didn't go back to the betting station at the west side, as he proceeded to the one at the east side instead.

As the betting officer and recorder at the west side were too timid, they didn't dare to report it immediately .

The betting officer and recorder at the east side didn't know a thing. Due to the overwhelming crowd, they only saw that it was a receipt from a winning bet and had no time to notice anything else as they shouted, " One old certificate of deposit , all-in , we'll leave

it up to fate to see what happens to the money. If you lose, we wouldn't return you the money, vice versa. The betting ratio is 1:2 ...” The recorder then wrote a new certificate of deposit hastily and kept the old one in a Kraft paper bag and stuffed it into the drawer. He placed the new receipt onto Jia De's palm as he shouted, “ Next one, quickly! “

“Thank you, thank you!” Jia De thanked them politely but on the inside, he was overwhelmed with excitement .

After betting, the initial 25 Platinum Grimoire would become 50.

Forget about An Dong, even the owner of the Thunder Fortress, Chong Ni, wouldn't be able to repay him with 50 Platinum Grimoire!

Now, he would just have to wait for Titan to win and watch the fall of An Dong. That fatty who's ten times heavier than a pig must be crying right now. 50 Platinum Grimoire, just the thought of it made Jia De shiver with excitement .

As Jia De returned to the arena, before he even got chance to speak with Yue Yang, curses filled his ears.

Previously , they were hurled towards Yue Yang, as all of the gamblers hoped for him to lose.

But it was the complete opposite now.

All the cursing were cast at An Dong.

Jia De the fat toad looked at the duo standing in the arena and started to curse loudly too. “Fuck, An Dong you shitbag, fuck your ancestors! “

The reason why Jia De was so agitated was due to the two gladiators hired by An Dong.

One of them was named ‘Nightmare’, and the other one ‘Tiger Nian’. This duo were very notorious and in the whole of the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, nobody was unaware of them. As shameless as Jia De might be, he despised the duo. This was due to the fact that the duo were the scum of the scums. If not for their power as Level Three Innates , more than 90 percent of the speculators would have charged towards them and tore them into pieces.

In the whole of the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, there was no place for the duo, except for the Thunder Fortress and some other robbers’ dens.

The Warrior Guild, Mercenary Guild and Assassin Guild all offered rewards for anyone who could kill Nightmare and Tiger Nian. The person would then choose his reward among the Black Dragon Pearl, the Wisdom Fruit and one Gold-ranked equipment... This type of reward would only be offered for those who could take down serial killers on the top hundred of the Bloody Villain List. Undoubtedly, Nightmare and Tiger Nian were in the top hundred among all other villains.

Although the duo had Innate powers, the Innate Alliance excluded them and expressed disdain over the idea of them joining .

Even in the Thunder Fortress, which was a robbers' den, Nightmare and Tiger Nian weren't welcomed.

Nobody liked them, including Chong Ni who took them in.

“They are all shitbags that couldn't be shitier, don't ever let me see them! “ Chong Ni mentioned this more than once .

Although he didn't mention his reasons, but a lot thought that why Chong Ni took the Nightmare and Tiger Nian in was because their teacher saved his life when he was young, therefore Chong Ni took them in to repay their teacher's kindness. It was therefore no wonder that the duo, who killed their teachers and families , were the type of people that Chong Ni hated most.

Nightmare and Tiger Nian were both Level Three Innates and were extremely vicious.

This was not a simple war between three Innates anymore!

Could Titan continue to win this second round?

Jia De thought as his heart thumped in anxiety. His head was

covered in perspiration, but he didn't bother to wipe them away as he was focused on the changes in the arena.

The tension in the arena peaked as the battle was just about to begin!

Chapter 368 – Nightmare Died In A Nightmare!

Nightmare was a tall and scrawny man.

He wasn't only scrawny but he also had long skinny arms and legs. Yue Yang remembered vaguely that he had read a poem in the past, it was 'My Old Home' written by Lu Xun, which depicted a woman called Madam Yang with legs akin to sticks. It still remained fresh in Yue Yang's mind. He reckoned that this Nightmare who was standing arrogantly with his hands resting on his hips was more or less like that Madam Yang. If his hair was shorter a little bit, he would have looked like the scrawny, old and wizened Xie Ya Long.

(Shiro: Xie Ya Long is some high-ranking guy jailed for corruption in China)

That Tiger Nian, on the other hand, didn't look like that at all. Although Tiger Nian was a little old, his hair was all black, strong and straight, like thorns. He simply looked full of energy.

His thick arms and robust body was filled with explosive power.

A pair of tiger eyes glinted menacingly, terrorizing everyone's hearts.

If his beard didn't show strands of white hairs, no one would be able to tell that he was an old man.

These two people were Innate Level 3 Rankers and they possessed summoning grimoires. The thing that surprised Yue Yang was that they only owned Gold Grimoire. He remembered Phoenix Fairy Beauty telling Yue Yang that these kind of people were most probably be power-levelled to the Innate level. Due to maturing before they were ready, they completely exhausted their whole potential ahead of them. Hence, they were completely looked down upon real Innate Rankers. Of course, some people would use this way to obtain Innate power due to their impatience. As a result, the price they had to pay was reaching their maximum growth at Innate Level 3. Their summoning grimoire was also limited from growing and levelling up, there was no way it could rank-up to higher levels.

Previously, Yue Yang had fought against Yao Guang, Kai Yan and Tian Quan of the Seven Great Bears who were power-levelled by Shun Tian. They were not very highly-skilled, and they were also only Innate Level 3 and below. However, they all possessed Platinum Grimoire.

This proved that Yao Guang, Tian Quan and the others were already quite matured before they were power-levelled. They had cultivated until their grimoire became Platinum-ranked before they were power-levelled.

Unexpectedly, Nightmare and Tiger Nian didn't even possess a Platinum Grimoire.

They only had a Gold Grimoire.

Yue Yang didn't know Nightmare's and Tiger Nian's previous

experiences. If he were to ask the people of Thunder Fortress, he would definitely be shocked. That time, right before Nightmare and Tiger Nian reached the Innate realm, they had actually murdered their own teacher who had raised them painstakingly. They ate their teacher's body and ability like beasts and power-levelled to the Innate Realm immediately.

Because they had acted so evilly, the Innate Alliance rejected them and did not recognize their strength.

When Yao Guang and Tian Quan power-levelled to the Innate Realm, they only did that with Shun Tian's help and a quick-growth medicine.

They had already been looked down by the others using this way, let alone Nightmare and Tiger Nian who ate their master's flesh.

The Seven Great Bears, although their names were quite notorious in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, compared to Nightmare and Tiger Nian, they were all good children!

"Newbie, you are really crazy!" Nightmare let out an extremely sharp condescending laughter, piercing Yue Yang's eardrums.

"Is this your last words?" Yue Yang took out a book and scratched out some line of words, as if he was recording something.

"What do you mean?" Although Tiger Nian was arrogant, he was

extremely cautious. He was both suspicious and curious towards the little book that Yue Yang had. Forget about them, even the whole audience were curious about what Yue Yang had written on his book. Facing against two Innate Level 3 Rankers, facing against such evil murderers like Nightmare and Tiger Nian, how could he have the mood to write something?

“I suddenly remembered, seems like I will be able to exchange your heads for something good in the Adventurer’s Guild after I killed you. I have to write it down, otherwise I might forget and wasted it.” Yue Yang’s words was like

Yue Huang was too arrogant. Forget about outsiders, even Jia De thought that Yue Yang was too haughty.

They were two Innate Level 3 Rankers, it was not as if they were normal Level 3 weakling warriors. Yue Yang had not even fought them before, but he actually wanted to get their heads as reward?

What kind of people were Nightmare and Tiger Nian?

Even though the number of people who wanted them dead might not reach 100,000, there would at least be 99,999 of them. However, these two outcasts were still living well until now. It couldn’t be denied that these two people were powerful. If they were even a little bit weaker, their graves would probably be full of weed by now. How could they still live in the Thunder Fortress happily? Those people who knew of Nightmare’s and Tiger Nian’s abilities were even more convinced that Yue Yang would definitely be defeated. Nightmare and Tiger Nian were powerful Innate Level 3s, they even had unique, high-levelled beasts. That time, when

they were not yet Innate, they managed to kill their master who was Innate Level 5.

From this, it was apparent how terrifying their Beasts were.

The fat An Dong laughed coldly, “This rascal is gonna die!”

The mysterious man wearing a wide brimmed hat shrugged his shoulders, “Mr. An Dong, forgive me as I don’t agree with your views. I won’t deny that Nightmare and Tiger Nian’s Beasts are very unique, but they are not undefeatable.”

The fat An Dong’ face darkened, “You’re preparing to leak information to that lad? “

The man wearing the wide brimmed hat waved his hands gracefully, “Don’t think that I’m like you. Since we are agreed upon this game, I will definitely abide by the rules.”

“It will be best if you do that. Don’t forget that you betted one million.” An Dong warned the men repeatedly.

“...Do I have to thank you for the reminder?” The mysterious men was nonchalant towards An Dong’s attitude.

At the side of the arena, Jia De twisted his hands nervously.

He was in dilemma deciding if he should remind Titan that

Nightmare and Tiger Nian's Beasts were unique. On one hand, if Titan lost, he wouldn't gain anything; however, on the other hand, if he broke the rules first, although he would still be alright if Titan wins because no one would care about the mistakes made by the one who emerged victorious, if Titan lost, he feared that he would be killed.

Was he going to watch the young Titan getting defeated just because he didn't know the powerfulness of his opponents' Beasts?

Even if it's not for the 280,000 he betted, he should care for his new friend Titan.

Although casually, at least that Titan mentioned the word 'friend'!

A Ranker wanting to be friends with a merchant, there won't be many Ranker who would do that in the Tong Tian Tower, right? Feeling an urge, Jia De left his seat and shouted loudly at the side of the arena. "Wait! "

"You want to interrupt the game? " More than ten guards crowded around him immediately .

"I, I am his friend and I just want to show him my support. Do you want to drink up? You should rest now because you just finished a round. It's unfair for you to start the second round immediately!" Jia De waved a bottle in his hands as he prepared to tell Yue Yang more about the unique Beasts of Nightmare and Tiger Nian once Yue Yang approached him to drink water.

“It’s okay, the fight will end soon effortlessly.” Yue Yang smiled slightly, signalling to Jia De not to be over anxious.

“Huh?! “ Jia De perspired profusely, thinking that this lad was either too haughty or too young.

Did Yue Yang not realise his undertone ?

He wasn’t really asking for him to drink up or rest, but rather, he wanted to speak to him. Did Yue Yang really not understand?

Jia De wanted to open his mouth to speak again, but he suddenly thought of Yue Yang’s words not long ago. “Allow me to say one thing, if you want to be my friend, the only thing you must do is to believe in me! “

Should he continue trusting Yue Yang?

During his fight against the three Chief Bodyguards just now, Jia De was similarly worried but Yue Yang’s victory proved his worries and doubts unnecessary. At the same time, he also earned him a handsome reward. Now that the fight was beginning again, could he not trust Yue Yang completely for once? Jia De the fat toad gritted his teeth and smiled at Yue Yang.

Although he believed in his words, to the old him, it was simply ludicrous.

But now, he was willing to try to believe for once!

Just for once!

Hearing Yue Yang's arrogant response, the speculators' responses varied vastly. An Dong smiled coldly, while the gamblers cheered passionately as they favoured haughty Rankers. Weaklings? Let all of them die! The gamblers didn't support goody two shoes but rather, arrogant, chic and powerful champions! Of course those gamblers who betted on Yue Yang losing cursed loudly, but because they were the minority, their cursings were washed away by the loud cheerings.

"..." Tiger Nian smiled coldly in silence.

"Newbie, since you want to die early, I will grant your wish." Nightmare held onto the Gold Grimoire as he started summoning swiftly.

A dark glow appeared on the Gold Grimoire, just like thick smoke, it rose to the sky in a warped fashion.

It then swirled around the whole arena's roof and morphed into a dark hazy-like state as it descended slowly towards the ground.

Yue Yang didn't respond as he watched silently.

The ground of the arena spilt suddenly and out came boiling hot lava that was blood red in colour. It then spread towards Yue

Yang's feet. As Yue Yang didn't move, the lava surrounded his feet and caused him to be unable to move anymore. The air in the arena became insanely hot. Everyone couldn't stand the heat and started to perspire profusely. This include Jia De who was sitting at the side, his sweat fell like waterfall.

The place that Nightmare and Tiger Nian were standing on rose above the ground, and morphed into two tall pillars.

Countless soil, together with the walls of the arena came crumbling down. Some metal cages that were used to keep Beasts also stumbled and fell into the lava.

With a sizzling sound, they melted and turned into smoke.

In the next moment, they became part of the lava .

Yue Yang's eyes were calm and one wouldn't be able to tell any changes, it was as if the pool of lava weren't there.

Just then, under the control of Nightmare's fingers, innumerable spikes emerged from the ground and went straight through Yue Yang's feet. Blood spilled all over the place as the the bloodied spikes tore through his feet , causing everyone to exclaim in shock.

Nightmare summoned the third time as a meteoroid fell from the sky and went crashing into Yue Yang's head.

Yue Yang remained stationary.

The meteorite brushed past his scalp and landed beside him with a thud, causing splashing magma around him.

The enormous shock wave caused everyone to fall to the ground in an unruly manner. Some cried pitifully as they were scalded by the hot lava that splashed onto them. As their body got caught on fire, some of them rolled around while others slapped themselves in an attempt to extinguish the fire. Jia De the fat toad's obese, heavy body flew to the Level Two of the arena that was meant for the VIPs. Some lava got onto his bottom and it caught fire, sizzling as smoke rose.

Jia De's face was twisted from the pain, and he could only grit his teeth to stop himself from crying in pain.

"Not bad, it'd be better if it rained some chilli powder from the sky." Yue Yang spoke suddenly.

"Chilli powder?" Everyone was stunned, why would one want to rain chilli powder?

"If there isn't any chilli powder, this huge bowl of noodle wouldn't be tasteful enough. Eating noodle without chilli powder isn't satisfying ..." Yue Yang explained.

"This is lava!" Nightmare's nose was twisted in anger, what kind of gaze was that? Did these look like noodles? It was obviously lava, it had no relation to eating noodles at all!

“Agreed, this is lava brand instant noodles, if you add some hot water, pour some flavourings, together with poached eggs and some chilli powder or spicy sauce, it’d be perfect, nope, we will still have to add some vegetables. If there’s some left over ribs in the fridge, it’d be nice to add two whole pieces in! “ Yue Yang almost drooled while he was speaking , but nobody could understand his words.

Instant noodles, fridge...nobody had heard of them before.

Also, how was eating noodles and lava related?

Everyone scratched their heads hard but was still far from comprehending him...

Just then, an eerie thing happened. The boiling hot lava disappeared and in the centre of the arena, there appeared a sole, gigantic bowl containing noodles.

Inside were ingredients such as poached egg, ribs and spicy sauce. Yue Yang walked towards it in huge steps ,with chopsticks in his hands, he seemed to be preparing to eat the noodles. The observant ones had already noticed that his pierced foot, and the lava that splashed onto him disappeared as he looked as good as before. To make things more eerie, Nightmare turned into a white pig all of a sudden.

The chopsticks in Yue Yang’s hand turned into a meat chopper as he explained, “Ribs ain’t enough, I’ll have to kill a pig and

barbeque it for some barbecued pork!”

“No, I’m not a pig, this is an illusion...” Nightmare shrieked in horror.

All the illusions disappeared.

Yue Yang didn’t move an inch as he watched silently.

Standing before him were the stunned Tiger Nian and Nightmare, who was covered in perspiration.

To add to the shock, Nightmare continued to cry hysterically, “I wasn’t killed, I wasn’t placed onto the table, no, I wasn’t butchered into pieces nor was I barbequed, no, this is my Beast, this is an illusion, I didn’t die... This is impossible, how could others control my Beast, this is all an illusion... Tiger Nian save me, no, you can’t kill me ,you can’t betray me, we are... This is impossible, you are already dead, I already ate you, no, no, teacher, spare me...”

Nightmare’s hysterical cries stopped suddenly.

Nightmare collapsed as his body twitched and convulsed into spasms as if he just saw the most terrifying thing on Earth.

His eyes were wide opened and bulging like that of a dead fish. His pupils expanded and froze gradually.

Tiger Nian shook Nightmares body vigorously and slapped him continually as he tried to wake Nightmare up from the illusions of his 'Nightmare Beast'. Unfortunately, all he could do was to watch his partner, Nightmare, die from fright.

Nightmare, a serial killer who toyed with his opponent and a disciple who killed his own teacher with a Beast, is dead.

He died from his own 'Nightmare Beast'.

In the illusion of the Nightmare Beast, everything were delusional, but if you affirmed it, they would become reality. When a person died in the illusion, his body would also die in reality... It was because the illusion would kill a person's soul! Under Nightmare's control, this unique ability had taken the lives of several victims. Even Warriors who were stronger than Nightmare couldn't escape it.

But to Yue Yang, who could see through the illusions in the Gemini Temple and Virgo Temple, this kind of illusion was really just a piece of cake.

Not to mention, Yue Yang even possessed the Heaven Eyes Divine Vision which could help him see through his opponents' ability.

"...It's impossible!" The fat An Dong's perspiration fell like waterfall as he stared at Yue Yang in the arena in horror. With a pale complexion, he whispered to himself, "This is impossible, this is a delusion, this lad couldn't have killed Nightmare, he's the mighty Nightmare!"

“Please allow me to remind you, Mr. An Dong, that this is a fact.”
The mysterious man curled his lips and smiled.

Chapter 369 – Pay Him Back In His Own Coin!

Following Nightmare's death, his grimoire and his 'Nightmare Beast' exploded violently with a boom.

The Gold Grimoire dulled and reverted back to the state without a master.

The Nightmare Beast disappeared into the mirage and left behind only a black bead which rolled towards Yue Yang's feet.

Yue Yang bend down and picked both the bead and the Gold Grimoire up. He then kept them into a Lich Ring swiftly, just like how he did when he played online games in the past.

The one who was faster always gets the stuff, therefore Yue Yang was never slow to react.

Jia De the fat toad began to understand where the five Platinum Grimoire came from. They were all acquired by Yue Yang after defeating his opponents.

God, what kind of opponents did he kill?

As Nightmare collapsed, the entire arena was roaring with cheers, including those gamblers who betted for Yue Yang to lose previously.

Nobody could stand the two scums, Nightmare and Tiger Nian. But as they were constrained by their limited power, they could only comply. After watching Nightmare getting killed, and Tiger Nian landing himself into a sticky situation, who wouldn't be happy enough to cheer?

Tiger Nian took out a dodgy looking wand and waved it.

A black light flashed past.

Suddenly nobody could speak as their mouth seemed to have been sealed.

Silence loomed over the whole of the arena.

“Silence Wand, a Gold-ranked equipment! “ Everyone responded to it quickly but no one could speak a word under the spell of the Silence Wand, which almost suffocated those who were in the middle of their shoutings when the spell was casted. The Silence wand was a Gold-ranked equipment which didn't have the ability to attack, but to some warriors, it was a dreadful weapon. For example, it could be used when the opponent needed to speak to summon a beast, hence he would then suffer an ugly defeat.

Not only did Tiger Nian sealed the mouths of everyone in the arena using the Silence Wand so that they couldn't cheer for Yue Yang, he also summoned a giant beast at the same time.

The beast looked like a tiger.

It had a huge physique, spanning an enormous length of 20 metres from head to tail.

Its mountain-like physique made it look very fit and full of strength. Sharp teeth were found all over its wide mouth. As the horn on its head was glowing with an eerie green light, its body started to expand close to 50% more than its original size. With four razor-edged claws and eyes sharp as a hawk, the beast pounced on Yue Yang, baring its claws as it prepared to tear Yue Yang into pieces .

The Reaper Mantis which had been hovering the air dived down fearlessly.

The Reaper Mantis had seen nothing short of strong beasts.

It had also killed several of them. Forget about the Tiger beast, it would even kill a giant dragon without hesitation. It was no average Reaper Mantis, as it had been nurtured with a large number of Dragons Crystals and Yue Yang's Innate Qi. Complemented with the Heaven Runes and purification by the Nirvana's Flame, it was definitely a Reaper Mantis with the most potential in history! Its ambitions was to become a Holy Beast or even a Divine Beast in the future... So how could the Gold-ranked Level 8 Tiger Beast scare a Reaper Mantis that could hunt and kill any Beast, and one who even got the guts to kill a Giant Dragon?

Of course it not!

Although it was slightly low-levelled, the Reaper Mantis was of a higher grade as it was Platinum-ranked!

The Reaper Mantis' sickle pierced into the body of the Tiger Beast deeply, causing huge wounds on its neck and lower spine.

Even before its opponent can counteract, the Reaper Mantis was smart enough to fling him off and flew into the skies to prepare for its second attack... Actually, once a beast suffered severe injury at its neck and spine, it would be not far from death.

From the sickle attacks just now, the Reaper Mantis had already slashed the Tiger Beast's artery and windpipe, it almost hacked its entire head off.

Under normal conditions, the Tiger Beast would definitely die.

However, something eerie happened...

The Tiger Beast's head which had almost been hacked off didn't have any blood on his wounds. They were even healing rapidly.

In less than ten seconds, the fatal wound disappeared without a trace, as if they were never there in the first place. The Tiger Beast's horn was shimmering with green light as a pair of wing began to grow on his back, like that of a bat's, the wing developed and opened.

It rose to the sky and sailed towards the Reaper Mantis in the sky.

On the ground, Tiger Nian smiled coldly as he unleashed his strong power as a Level Three Innate, stunning everyone with his shockwave.

Waving his thunderous punches, he charged towards Yue Yang.

Every punch made the spectator feel a suffocating discomfort. The way he threw his punches made everyone nauseous and feel a sense of tightness in their chests and even in the deepest part of their bones. No one could ever imagine the strength of the waves of punches withstood by the calm-looking Titan standing before Tiger Nian. Those who sat near the arena or those who sat eye level to Tiger Nian's punches were all in agony. They had to gather all their energy to protect themselves, and even then they could only barely do so in defending themselves against the strong punches that were more than ten or even hundred metres away.

Yue Yang didn't retaliate nor did he take a step backwards to shy away.

All he did was to move his upper body slightly.

In doing so only, he managed to dodge casually from all the punches threw by Tiger Nian .

Although every single punch threw by Tiger Nian was lethal, he didn't even manage to touch a hair of Yue Yang after more than

ten punches.

The Reaper Mantis in the air slashed the Tiger Beast who had overestimated its abilities and tried to attack it. The Reaper Mantis tear the Tiger Beast into two ferociously and threw it to the ground... However, the strange Tiger Beast remained unscathed as it fused together again within half a minute. It completely returned to its initial state, unwounded.

Jia De felt the urge to shout to Yue Yang, “This Beast is called ‘the Nian beast’. Other than sound, nothing can defeat it. “

He also wanted to tell Yue Yang that he could only take ‘the Nian beast’ down through the use of sound.

But he couldn’t shout any of those out.

It was all because Tiger Nian had already used the Silence Wand to turn the whole arena into a place of dead silence, no one could make a sound.

The Reaper Mantis had killed the Nian beast various times but even if it ripped the Nian beast into a million pieces, its attempt in killing the Nian beast would be futile as it could recover quickly. Conversely, the Nian beast, with its giant claws, sharp teeth and tail like an iron whip, could easily injure the Reaper Mantis. Although the Reaper Mantis could react quickly, minimizing its injury, the injuries had accumulated and the situation looked bleak now as circumstance favoured the Nian beast.

After all, there was still a difference between the two when one could withstand any attacks while the other could only dodge.

“Yes, that’s the way, this brat is going to die in my hands, together with his Mantis!” The fat An Dong felt a pang of excitement and wanted to scream in joy but unfortunately his mouth was sealed too and he couldn’t make a sound.

“...” In the whole arena, only the mysterious man wearing the wide brimmed hat still smiled, as he still seemed to think that Yue Yang would still win.

Seeing that his Beast was gaining the upper hand, the bloodlust on Tiger Nian’s face deepened.

He was the complete opposite of Nightmare.

Nightmare had strong psychological skills, but he didn’t fare in short distance fight. Once he faced an opponent who was immune to psychological attacks, he could be killed instantly.

Other than the Nian beast who was immune to attacks, Tiger Nian also possessed power as Level Three Innate that allowed him to engage in short distance fights. As long as his Beast could overpower the opponent’s Beast, Tiger Nian could kill his opponent easily in the short distance fight. For example, he was going to use his strongest and most secretive trick, ‘Three moves of the Ferocious Tiger’ now. In the past, when he was overpowered by his teacher, he used the Nian beast and ‘Three Moves of the Ferocious Tiger’, and together with the mental suppression

subjected by Nightmare, they managed to kill their teacher and swallowed a large portion of his body to level up to an Innate.

Even though his teacher was a Level Five Innate then, he was still killed by Tiger Nian in the end.

Of course, Tiger Nian would never deny that part of the credit of killing his teacher went to Nightmare because without his mental suppression, it wouldn't have been possible. But it was also a fact that it was the 'Three Moves of the Ferocious Tiger' that killed his powerful teacher.

After becoming a Level Three Innate, 'Three Moves of the Ferocious Tiger' became the strongest trick of Tiger Nian and no opponents who saw it survived.

"Strike of the Ferocious Tiger." Tiger Nian gathered all his energy to form a giant Energy Tiger resembling the Nian beast. It then went together with the real the Nian beast such that Yue Yang couldn't differentiate between the two. When Tiger Nian felt that the time is ripe, he would strike his attack, just like a fierce tiger pouncing onto Yue Yang.

'Strike of the Ferocious Tiger' could strike through any form of defense, nothing can be shielded against it.

The enormous Energy Tiger passed through Yue Yang's body. As Tiger Nian was about to celebrate his victory, it disappeared and didn't burst as expected.

Similarly, the Nian beast who tried to attack at the same time was captured by the Reaper Mantis in mid-air. As the the Reaper Mantis dived to the ground, it slashed the Nian beast into two and then thrusting it to the ground...

Tiger Nian was shocked, he couldn't imagine how Yue Yang could differentiate between the real and the phony the Nian beast bea beast. One wouldn't have been able to tell the difference with their naked eye. Forget about the human eye, even an Innate belonging to the Hawks' family, who were the most gifted in sights, couldn't tell the difference between the Nian beast and that of created by his energy.

Moreover, although the Energy Tiger was a phony, its strikes were on par with the Nian beast, how could this lad remained the same even after the Energy Tiger passed through his body?

Regarding this, Tiger Nian was very puzzled.

But he didn't really have the time to think. Tiger Nian had to launch his second attack immediately after his first, if not he would suffer severe injuries. As he continue to unleash his powers, a second Energy Tiger appeared. It was compressed from a height of 20 metres to a hungry black tiger standing at only five metres. But of course, it's strength was amplified ten times after the compression... The hungry black tiger moved like a bolt of lightning, it was so fast that it had already pounced on Yue Yang under the control of its master in the blink of an eye and started engulfing on his body.

Forget about Yue Yang, it would break even the strongest rock

and mountain.

Without waiting for his 'Engulf of the Hungry Tiger' to take effect, Tiger Nian launch his third attack.

Tiger Nian morphed into a Tiger resembling the Nian beast, using his two hands as the Tiger's teeth and upper body as the its head, attacking Yue Yang at the same time as the Hungry Tiger.

When he successfully distracted Yue Yang, he rotated his body swiftly, while his two arms struck down tiltedly and his upper body bowed slightly. He then used his left feet as his bearing and his right leg as a giant cane that struck towards Yue Yang's ribs.

This was the most powerful move of the 'Three Moves of the Ferocious Tiger'.

Tiger Nian's then powerful teacher was also ultimately killed by this move. Although Tiger Nian didn't have a tail, he can make use of his legs as cane to attack his opponent and its effect would be extremely powerful. Tiger Nian had already used this on six Rankers and all suffered smashed internal organs and had their ribs broken into pieces, among all, two were Innates. Tiger Nian was very certain that once his leg cane struck his opponent, he would definitely die.

No opponent could ever survive the attack of the Three Moves of the Ferocious Tiger that could be struck through defense.

“Boom! “

The arena vibrated vigorously, making everyone trembling in the shock wave.

Everyone fall onto the ground messily, looking extremely unruly.

Other than the man wearing wide brimmed hat, no one could see what was happening clearly.

Tiger Nian stood at a distance of ten metres from Yue Yang, his expression was deep and no one could tell his emotions. Titan looked unruly as his left rib had an apparent shoeprint and two punch prints on his chest...These were all results of the Three Moves of the Ferocious Tiger.

Was Titan, the young human lad, going to lose?

Everyone was worried.

Suddenly, Tiger Nian staggered a few steps as his body trembled and fell to the ground.

Both of his hands were pressed against his crotch as Tiger Nian curled himself up in pain, just like a grass snake which had been hit fatally.

The men wearing the wide-brimmed hat smiled even wider

because he saw that when Tiger Nian struck 'Cane of the Angry Tiger' onto Yue Yang, attempting to hit his Yue Yang's left rib with his right leg, Yue Yang titled his body and did a side kick. Not only did he dodge from the fatal strike, he also hit Tiger Nian's crotch.... Needless to say, Tiger Nian must be in pain now!

the Nian beast threw itself towards Yue Yang in an attempt to protect its master.

It rolled up its master's body shrewdly and attempted to escape.

A shadow moved in the sky with a speed ten times faster than the Reaper Mantis as it dived towards the ground. Ignoring the power of the Silence Wand, it let out a stentorian shriek... The duration of its appearance and subsequent disappearance was less than one second ,however its shriek was so nerve wracking and made one's soul trembled so much that it resonated in the people's long after it's gone. The previously majestic the Nian beast curled up in pain from the shriek, looking even worse than its master.

Blood oozed out from its eyes ,nose and mouth as an unknown force within its head caused it to exploded.

Reaper Mantis then pounced on it, deprecating the Nian beast's head with its sickle.

Blood spew out this time and the Nian beast would never recover from this.

It died.

The Reaper Mantis gave the Nian beast's head to its master obediently and then went on devouring the Nian beast's corpse...

Tiger Nian could only watch in horror.

He struggled to get up and escape. Even if he was a fool he would have understood now that he could match up to his opponent. Yue Yang ignored him initially as he picked the Silence Wand up . The speculator watched as he kept the Wand skillfully. He must have killed and snatched the possessions of many to be so familiar with the procedures.

Actually Yue had already acquired the Silence Wand once in the Aries Temple.

But of course, its effects were temporary.

But this one is a Gold-ranked equipment and its effects would be permanent. The two Wands' functions were the same but their values were completely different.

With it, Yue Yang felt that a lot of people would run out of their luck...With the Silence Wand in his hands, he could exert its full power and make others cry!

Tiger Nian gritted his teeth as he tried to endure the pain.

He wanted to flee, but before he could shatter the Teleportation Stone, Yue Yang had attacked him with the Strike of a Ferocious Tiger on Tiger Nian's back.

Pay him back in his own coin!

The Teleportation Stone landed on the floor and rolled to more than ten steps away from him.

Tiger Nian was very clear that he wouldn't be able to run away on two feet. Forget about Titan who was as terrifying as a devil, even his Reaper Mantis could make his life hard.

He had to get his hands on the Teleportation Stone, or else he would definitely die.

Tiger Nian whom Yue Yang sent flying into the air tried to hold in the fresh blood which had rose to his throat as he struggled to get up and threw himself towards the Teleportation Stone...

As he was about to grab on to the Teleportation Stone, a feet stepped onto it with full force.

Tiger Nian raised his head unconsciously.

It was Yue Yang the jinx!

“No, no don’t kill me! “

Yue Yang didn’t feel a tinge of sympathy or forgiveness for Tiger Nian who was drenched in blood... To Yue Yang, kindness and empathy were subjects that were rare, and must not be shown towards his opponents!

In front of all the spectators, Tiger Nian was struck in the head consecutively by Yue Yang’s ‘Engulf of the Hungry Tiger ‘ and ‘Cane of the Angry Tiger’, causing his head to explode as he died instantly in dire straits. He shared similar fate with his junior, Nightmare , as they all died under their own tricks! However, no one took sympathy to the duo as everyone burst out in cheers for Yue Yang’s victory. The crazed gamblers took off everything they had, including their clothes, as they waved and tossed it towards the arena, which symbolised their admiration for the one who emerged victorious .

Surrounded by a sea of buttocks twerking in the festive mood, the fat An Dong’s face ashened.

It was especially so after the fat toad Jia De spoke, causing he to faint from haemorrhage.

Jia De said, “ Dear Mister An Dong, the sum I bet was not very big,so we shall leave it aside first. But Mister Titan pledged five Platinum Grimoire with you, so after his two wins, you’ll just have to return him 50 Platinum Grimoire since you are extremely wealthy...”

The mysterious man sitting beside An Dong was equally shocked.
50 Platinum Grimoire?

Looks like An Dong wouldn't be able to repay Yue Yang even if he
sells off his meat!

Chapter 370 – Because I Am A Father

Whether it was five books or fifty books, An Dong could not pay for it.

In reality, he did not even have a single one.

Normal people simply could not possess Platinum Grimoires. Let alone normal warriors, even those who had contract with Grimoires do not necessarily possess a Platinum Grimoire... Furthermore, even if someone had one, would they even be willing to part with it? Moreover who would be able to give it? Acquiring a Platinum Grimoire was not completely impossible. If someone was like Yue Yang killing others and taking their treasures, then it was definitely possible... but obviously, An Dong does not have this kind of ability!

Those who have the ability to possess Platinum Grimoires were all Innate Rankers.

Thinking about taking their grimoires is no different from throwing away one's life!

The mysterious man wearing a wide-brimmed hat stood up and courteously nodded at Jia De: "Mr. Jia De, if you do not mind, please allow me to recover the loss. After all, I am also Mr. An Dong's creditor. Just like a while ago, Mr. Titan helped me win two million gold. Even though it will not be possible for me to help Mr. Titan take back fifty Platinum Grimoires, I still believe that we will be able to give him the biggest compensation. If you do not

mind, please bring Mr. Titan to An Dong's mansion to rest for a while... no, that mansion now belongs to Mr. Titan."

"Of course, Mr. Chen. In the entire Tong Tian Tower no one could doubt your unconditional fairness." The Fat Toad, Jia De, respectfully handed over the mortgage over.

Facing the boy wearing a wide-brimmed hat, Jia De actually chose to put his trust on him without a single bit of hesitation.

The mysterious man named Mr. Chen, whose face couldn't be seen clearly due to his wide-brimmed hat, continued to smile: "I will most likely need three hours. I ask Mr. Jia De and Mr. Titan to patiently wait. In the next meeting, I hope to discuss with Mr. Titan about the business of the Ore Mine. I believe that at that time, he would have already become the new owner of the Ore Mine..."

Jia De bowed a second time: "Thank you very much Mr. Chen. With your help, all our problems are easily solved."

The mysterious Mr. Chen did not even look at the fainted fatty An Dong and confidently shrugged his shoulder: "I am very grateful to Mr. Titan in making me Mr. An Dong's second biggest creditor. In fact doing this much only requires me to lift a single finger."

Yue Yang immediately grabbed back the five Platinum Grimoires.

Other matters were all left to the mysterious Mr. Chen to handle.

In Fatty An Dong's spacious and majestic mansion, he ate a satisfactorily meal and rested for a while. Soon, the mysterious Mr. Chen and a serious-looking elder, as well as a fully smiling merchant entered. Outside the gate, a group of people not less than a hundred also knelt outside close together.

The Fat Toad, Jia De, now acted as if he was Yue Yang's spokesperson. On one hand he welcomed the others and on the other he commanded An Dong's former beautiful maid to pour wine for the guests.

"No need to be polite." The mysterious Mr. Chen sat in front of Yue Yang. His voice was clear as spring water, sweet sounding and pleasant to hear: "Mr. Titan, first, I would like to show you my thanks. First is because you helped me earn a bit of money, but I am more grateful for the second reason, and that is that you are willing to trust me."

"You are someone worthy of trust, of course I would feel assured." Yue Yang replied.

"No matter who, believing a stranger in the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower is hard, especially someone from the Thunder Fortress." The mysterious Mr. Chen's mouth exposed a smile: "I always get right to the point and directly say what I think. In fact, I'm the same as An Dong, I came from the Qi Lan Continent. I normally do not stay at the Tong Tian Tower's sixth floor, and even less at the Thunder Fortress. However, in this period of time, I had no choice but to come back repeatedly. I do not lack money,

just like you, we are not people lacking in money. However, because of a certain reason, the Qi Lan Continent needs Thunder Ores... These Thunder Ores are very important to the Qi Lan Continent. Unfortunately, in order to earn money, An Dong was never willing to sell these Thunder Ores to his home, the Qi Lan Continent. In this period of time, I continuously wanted to acquire An Dong's cave and continuously had no ability to fulfil this wish. Until you, Mr. Titan, appeared."

"Is that so? Looks like I have done a good deed." Yue Yang indifferently smiled.

"An Dong was very rich and also very crafty. Whether it was the Thunder Fortress or the Qi Lan Continent, there would always be a huge demand for Thunder Ores... However, he had miscalculated. He did not know my determination in obtaining Thunder Ores nor could he see through your strength. His stupidity and self confidence will one day get him cut to thousand pieces by the Demon Eye, because Nightmare and Tiger Nian that he had invited fell dead in front of you. A weakening in terms of their overall power is like an attack towards the Thunder Fortress, and more so towards the Demon Eye. An Dong absolutely could not bear this responsibility. Enough, let us not care about a person who is about to die, let us talk about something else!" The mysterious man wearing a wide-brimmed hat, Mr. Chen, raised his head. His pretty face and eagle-like eyes shone from under the shadow of his wide-brimmed hat, looking towards Yue Yang, "Mr. Titan, if you agree to sell Thunder Ores to the Qi Lan Continent then, other than obtaining twice the market value, you will also obtain the true friendship of the warriors in the Qi Lan Continent."

"Precisely as you said, I do not lack money. Maybe we could use

something else for our deal.” Yue Yang placed a magic crystal on the table.

It was a piece of Gold-ranked Level 5 Green-spotted Wyvern Crystal, Yue Yang’s previous spoil of war.

Regardless of it being a high level magic crystal, Dragon Crystals were still treasures. Yue Yang would never say that he had enough, he only felt that the more he had the better.

Other than being used for his own beasts, his sisters Yue Bing, Yue Shuang, Yue Yu, and even Yi Nan all needed great amounts of magic crystals to level up their beasts.

Moreover, there was also Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers. Those people all needed a lot of magic crystals, there won’t be enough no matter how many he had. And finally there was the insatiable Hui Tai Lang who ate magic crystals like eating rice. That fellow, if an entire storehouse of magic crystals was given to it, it would still be able to finish them in no time at all. As a World Exterminating Demon Wolf, it would level up differently from other beasts. It did not seem to be walking the path of a humanoid Holy Beast, instead, it continued to be in wolf form while having the strength of a Holy Beast. It can even be said that it had now become stronger and smarter than a Holy Beast... Its only weakness was that it needed countless magic crystals!

The only good thing was that Hui Tai Lang was not a picky eater like the Bloody Queen Red.

As for Xiao Wen Li, she simply held these kinds of things in contempt. And he simply did not know how to raise this Little Loli Lamia properly.

“Although magic crystals are also in demand, it is not as scarce as Thunder Ores. I will agree to this condition. There are no problems using magic crystals in exchange.” Mr. Chen muttered and nodded to agree with Yue Yang’s request.

“Do you guys have Lustrous Branches, Everlasting Leaves, Fairy Light Bamboos, Helix Woods and Wisdom Fruits, all these precious items?” Yue Yang once again added a condition: “If Mr. Chen has a way to get them, I will buy them for ten times the price.”

“Ten times?” When Jia De heard this, he was shocked.

When he heard Yue Yang talk about Lustrous Branches, Everlasting Leaves and Wisdom Fruits, these treasures, he wanted to remind Yue Yang that no one would sell these things.

Gold can buy a lot of things but these treasures could not be bought with money.

Those who were able to climb up to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower were all experts. They were all the different Continent’s Super Elites.

Everybody needed Wisdom Fruits, those were required for beasts to evolve into Holy Beasts. Additionally the demand for Wisdom

Fruits would also never go down. But towards Yue Yang's offer of ten times the price, Jia De still felt extremely shocked... Those things were originally expensive, by increasing the price ten times many people would be tempted, at the very least the merchant in him was thoroughly tempted.

Ten times was absolutely a fatal temptation.

However Mr. Chen shook his head: "Mr. Titan, we do possess a few of these treasures. However, because our younger generations also need them, we could only apologize. Your price is very sincere, but Wisdom Fruits and these items are truly hard to obtain."

Yue Yang was only trying to probe. Towards Mr. Chen's response, he had already expected it.

Other than merchants, which warrior would bear to sell their Wisdom Fruits?

He looked at the mysterious Mr. Chen and said: "Although we were just acquainted, Mr. Chen's honesty gave me a good impression. Lustrous Branches, Everlasting Leaves and Wisdom Fruits are things I wanted to obtain. If you agree, I could use a few Martial Spirit Pills to exchange."

"Martial Spirit Pills?" Mr. Chen stood up stupefied.

"Ow!" The merchant sitting on the side was more shocked that his entire butt had fell down on the floor.

“Pft!” The Fat Toad, Jia De, who was drinking tea, had sprayed out the tea in his mouth. He almost choked to death.

Even the serious-looking elder’s expression twitched slightly.

The mysterious Mr. Chen deeply breathed in air.

He supported his wide-brimmed hat, apparently trying to calm his mind. He thoroughly suppressed the excitement in his heart: “Mr. Titan, you truly have Martial Spirit Pills?”

Yue Yang nodded.

Mr. Chen once again deeply breathed in air: “Regarding Martial Spirit Pills, I had searched for them for more than twenty years and continuously unable to find them. Mr. Titan you are truly the biggest lucky star... I wish to use one Lustrous Branch, two Wisdom Fruits, a bottle of Succubus Springwater, and a piece of fully ripe Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit to exchange for two pieces of Martial Spirit Pill, can I?”

“Can you tell me why you want two pieces of Martial Spirit Pill?” Yue Yang asked.

“Because I am a father, a father of two children...” Mr. Chen slightly paused. In the end he told the entire truth.

“Your children has a good father.” Yue Yang instantly thought about Fourth Mother. His heart became moved and nodded: “No problem!”

In fact, Yue Yang could immediately agree to Mr. Chen. Without considering anything else, Yue Yang would already agree to exchange them for the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit. This was an important ingredient in creating Martial Spirit Pills and incredibly hard to obtain.

With it, Yue Yang could make more Martial Spirit Pills.

However, Yue Yang originally wanted to sell ordinary Martial Spirit Pills to Mr. Chen.

After hearing about Mr. Chen cherishing his children and being moved by it, Yue Yang decided to give him two of his specially created Martial Spirit Pills... Without any other reason other than that thirst for paternal love that he would never obtain!

He thought about Fourth Mother selling all of her jewelry to gather a thousand gold in order to give the tragic guy a Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill.

Although it was not him, Yue Yang had after all replaced the tragic guy.

So much that Yue Yang had enjoyed all of Fourth Mother’s love, and it was not less than what the tragic guy had received!

“I had never envy others, but this time, I envy your children.” Yue Yang handed over a small Jade Bottle to Mr. Chen. Inside it were two specially made Martial Spirit Pills.

“I also had never been so grateful to someone like today, thank you. At the same time I also wish to say that I envy two people. And those are your parents, having a child like you. I believe that that is their live’s greatest pride.” Mr. Chen carefully took in the Jade Bottle into his bosom. He did not store it inside the storage ring and only placed it in the breast pocket. Afterwards he brought out the items for exchange and gave them to Yue Yang one by one. He stayed until Yue Yang stored them and suddenly bowed: “Mr. Titan, originally, I had a lot of deals to discuss with you, but my heart is now very moved. I wish to take my leave for now and bring back the good news. Please pardon me, I hope to visit and apologize tomorrow!”

“Take care!” Yue Yang’s heart was also filled with waves. He had received the Lustrous Branch and the Wisdom Fruits. He also had the Hard-shelled Dragon Fruit. With these things he was now able to continue making Martial Spirit Pills. Moreover, Yue Bing’s treant could finally evolve this time.

The most important thing was Mr. Chen’s action which triggered Yue Yang’s longing for Fourth Mother.

He also decided to return to the Soaring Dragon Continent and return to the Mirage to see Fourth Mother and the mischievous little girl....

Chapter 371 – Fourth Uncle Passed Away, Handing Down The Responsibility

As Yue Yang wanted to return back to the Soaring Dragon Continent, he teleported straight to Tian Luo's palace after he stepped out of the Tong Tian Tower.

Initially some Warriors from the Warrior Guild saw that Yue Yang was coming down from the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and wanted to host a welcome ceremony as a pretext of digging information about the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower from him.

Yue Yang didn't have time to bother about them as he took their name cards and hastily

walked off after telling them that he was in a hurry.

The Warriors saw Yue Yang off respectfully.

Although they didn't know Yue Yang personally, everyone in the Soaring Dragon Continent would have heard of the famous Yue Titan who was the third young master of the Yue Clan. If one didn't know about him, then he must be a mute and blindman.

Attacking the Yue Clan Castle twice, killing Innate Rankers thrice, following the Eastern Goblin Tribe to invade the Demon Palace, defeating the Seven Great Bears, fighting Shun Tian, killing his fake father... All his heroic deeds were circulated widely among the Mercenaries and Warriors, and were even recorded into the

annals. In educational institutions, Yue Yang's fights had even been used as classic examples by the teachers. His summoning, trainings, Beasts, skills and everything else served as a model for Warriors around the world to follow. Those weak Plant-type Beasts and tragic Special-type Beasts with useless skills all managed to improve their reputations under Yue Yang's influence.

The lousiest combat skills in the world such as the Crushing Stone Hammer and the Steel Chopping techniques, where even the Mercenaries disdained to train, all had their status upgraded.

This was all due to Yue Yang's words.

There was one time where a student from the Death Class of Ivy Academy went to the Yue Clan Castle to visit Yue Yang. He asked, "What kind of combat skill is the best?"

Yue Yang's answer then was, "The best combat skill is the combat skill that can defeat the opponent. Prince Zi Jin's 'Great Desert Storm' may not be stronger than 'Steel Chopping', the Thunder King's 'Thunder Hammer technique' may not be better than the 'Crushing Stone Hammer technique'... The combat skills are fixed, the more important thing is to see how one can use them flexibly. Which is more powerful, Steel Chopping used by an Innate or Great Desert Storm used by a Braveman? There is no lousy combat skills, but rather, lousy Warriors; similarly, there is no lousy Beast, but lousy masters... With enough hard work and effort, even those who trained with Steel Chopping or Warriors that have contract with poor Beasts can become Elders, if not even higher."

Yue Yang said this to motivate the student.

He was afraid that the elites in the Death Class would be too ambitious and anxious in achieving success, hence he said those harsh words.

His words were spread around unexpectedly by the students in the Death Class, and not only the Ivy Academy, but the rest of the institutions around the Soaring Dragon Continent also used his words to educate their students.

The elites in the Death Class already had some kind of foundation, coupled with great teachers like the Old Fox, Eagle-eyed man and Grandma Wu Teng, they would definitely become people worthy of respect in the future. If there were no accidents, they would at least become Level Six Elders.

Therefore, Yue Yang could confidently say that if they work hard enough, they would definitely become Elders.

However, using the same theory on others may not yield similar results.

For those with little potential, if they were to learn Steel Chopping or contract a Beast with poor skills, then their future might be bleak... They would be useless unless they worked a thousand times harder than others, like that of a Ascetic Practice Saint cultivating for decades, in order to change their fate.

It would be impossible for a situation where everyone becomes an Elder, but Yue Yang's words and actions changed a lot of bad practises in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

At least when contracting a Beast, people wouldn't just go for the popular choices like the Bird-type or Animal-type Beasts.

When the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen reappeared in the world under Yue Yang's care and defeated the almost invincible King of Black Light; When Yue Bing's Treant shone on the stage of the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament, warriors of the Soaring Dragon Continent did not dare to belittle Plant-type Beasts anymore. Through the Yue siblings, people not only saw the fact that Plant-type Beasts weren't weak, they also saw that they were far stronger than the Bird-type and Animal-type Beasts.

It was similarly the case for Insect-type Beast. When the Reaper Mantis that killed the Giant Dragon, it proved to people how strong Insect-type Beasts could be.

As Yue Yang didn't go out often, he was unaware of how famous he was in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

It could be said that even the fame of the three great kings such as Jun Wu You, were less famous compared to that of Yue Yang's. Some may not know who the kings of other countries were, but almost everyone was aware who the third young master of the Yue Clan was.

Yue Yang, a twenty year old Innate Ranker, the incredible third

young master of the Yue Clan, encouraged a lot of people tremendously, especially the young ones.

The example set by the third young master of the Yue Clan conveyed a fact to people. If you are willing to work hard, nothing is impossible!

Hence, even if Yue Yang wished to, it would be hard for him to be not famous.

After teleporting to the Palace, Yue Yang revealed to the palace guard that he was the third young master of the Yue Clan and requested for the Tian Luo Emperor to allow him into the Mirage to meet Fourth Mother. The guards were boiling with excitement.

“What?”

After being stunned initially, everyone stood upright in respect as a general led his guards to salute Yue Yang.

If not for Yue Yang , the Eastern and Western Sky King, and various other Rankers in Tian Luo wouldn't be able to make it back from the Ancient Passage. Forget about him saving Old General Ma Xing Kong and his 3000 soldiers or rescuing the Hundred Schools Elite students on the Champion Island, and further ignoring the fact that he saw through the motives of Zi Jin Kingdom, Green Summit Sect and Lion Pagoda Sect, the very fact that he was the fiancé of the Luo Hua City Mistress was enough to earn him their respect.

Luo Hua City Mistress was Tian Luo Kingdom's pride. If it was not that she wasn't interested in succeeding the throne, she would have been the next empress.

What made the people of Tian Luo most proud of was that the Luo Hua City Mistress had already levelled up to become an Innate.

This was announced officially by Night Empress, one of their Heavenly Imperial Guardians. These were her original words, "Children of Tian Luo, I have a good news for you. Today, we have with us here an Innate Ranker who is qualified to join us as part of the Heavenly Imperial Guardian. Our Luo Hua here has levelled up to become a Innate Ranker through her own hard work and also support from her fiancé who is the third young master of the Yue Clan. She is the second youngest Innate in the history of the Soaring Dragon Continent..."

The third day where the announcement was made became the most widely celebrated National Day of Tian Luo.

Although she was not as abnormal as Yue Yang, as a female, Luo Hua City Mistress had surpassed many other powerful people and levelled up to become an Innate. This kind of outstanding natural talent was definitely one in a million!

How many powerful people were there in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent?

And how many warriors could only watch the Innates and sigh?

Innumerable!

They might be dominant in certain areas, have shocking talents, or had been training for hundreds of years, but they were still unable to become an Innate as they turned from young teenagers to an elderly with white hair.

Although Luo Hua City Mistress wasn't as powerful as the third young master of the Yue Clan, but for a young woman to soar to such great heights of becoming an Innate was definitely a miracle in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

The Tian Luo Emperor, Hua Xu Ri, didn't meet Yue Yang but arranged for him to go to the imperial garden to wait as he sent Forth Mother and Yue Shuang there from the Mirage... Yue Yang didn't understand, why did Hua Xu Ri not want to meet him? On the other hand, Jun Wu You that old guy kept asking to see him. Both of them were emperors, why was there such a big difference? Could it be that Hua Xu Ri have something to hide from him?

People thought that Yue Yang's skill was the Camouflage Inherent Skill, which allowed him to find out the secrets of people around him in a certain distance.

Yue Yang seriously suspected that Hua Xu Ri was actually a female, because when he accidentally went into the Night Empress' Mirage previously, he felt that something was a little wrong. Unfortunately, he didn't pay further attention, and after that he didn't get any more chance to see the low key emperor, Hua Xu Ri, directly.

Hearing footsteps, Yue Yang stopped his overthinking.

He turned and raised his eyes up to see.

Fourth Mother was clad in plain white as she held the little girl Yue Shuang and walked towards Yue Yang.

Upon seeing Yue Yang, Yue Shuang pouted her mouth and was on the verge of tears. She then ran into Yue Yang's embrace crying and started weeping sorrowfully.

“Don't cry, my darling, don't cry!” Yue Yang comforted her.

“San-er, my San-er has grown up... “ Fourth Mother said as she stared at Yue Yang for a long time with tears in her eyes. She bit her red lips to stop her tears from rolling down in front of Yue Yang. It was only then did Yue Yang notice that Fourth Mother was wearing a white mourning clothes. With shock, he asked, “[Fourth Mother](#), what happened? “

(Want2eat : Fourth Mother is called Fourth Mother because she is the wife of the fourth son in the family. Yue Yang is actually called 'san' which means number three here because he is the third oldest son in the family. People add 'er' when addressing a person as a form of endearment.)

“Your Fourth Uncle has passed away! “Fourth Mother closed her eyes as tears rolled down her pristine skin.

“What? “ Yue Yang was shocked upon hearing the news. Although Fourth Uncle might not get well after eating his special made drugs, the toxin in his body wouldn’t worsen. How could this happen... Could it be that the toxin in Fourth Uncle’s body changed after he went to the Prison Emperor Divine Palace? Or could it be that the drug he made under Qilin girl’s guidance wasn’t effective? But if Fourth Uncle’s condition worsened after he went to the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, why didn’t anyone inform him? Initially Yue Yang had wanted to find the best ingredient in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and make the Ground Lotus Antitoxin Pill mentioned by Qilin Girl, but it was all too late now that Fourth Uncle was gone.

“San-er, don’t think too much into it. Your Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng gave up willingly, it wasn’t your fault.” Fourth Mother was afraid that Yue Yang would start his wild guessing and feel guilty, hence she embraced him lightly and told him what happened. “When you were in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, there were two Innates who brought your Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng here, threatening to kill them and Miss Feng’s baby if we don’t tell them the method of ascending the Heaven Stairway. The Heavenly Imperial Guardians from Da Xia and Tian Luo kingdom came to rescue them but to no avail because the duo were too strong. “

“Are they called Shun Tian and Thousand Goblin’s Sect Leader? “ Yue Yang asked as he felt that only those two were powerful enough to fight against the Heavenly Imperial Guardians from the two kingdoms.

“No, I heard that they were followers of the Dark Prison King, who was the Prison Emperor Divine General 6000 years ago. Only

the Night Empress and Zhi Zun can fight him, but they could not return on time. I don't know much about the method of ascending to the Heaven Realm, but I do know that my sister once carved it onto a stone in the Valley of Butterflies... So I told them this secret in exchange for the wellness of your Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng. However, your Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng refused to give in to the Innate duo. Miss Feng had even cut open her own stomach to give birth to her daughter and passed away. Your Fourth Uncle then followed her shortly after... San-er, San-er, it's only us now, you Fourth Uncle is never coming back, he won't come back anymore!" Fourth Mother embraced Yue Yang as she wept sorrowfully, her tears running down endlessly, causing Yue Yang's shoulders to become wet from the tears.

"Fourth Mother... " Yue Yang felt extremely guilty as he didn't do his best in rescuing Fourth Uncle.

He always thought that there would still be time, especially because it was a slow-effect poison.

Although the situation looked bleak, with the Qilin Girl's teaching that improved his drug making skills, Yue Yang thought he would be able to cure Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng slowly after he found the best ingredient. He thought that he would first settle his own business, strengthening his power before levelling up his drug making skills. He didn't expect that Fourth Uncle, who treated him like he was his own son, couldn't wait for him and passed away so quickly. Although Yue Yang was someone from another world, he felt thankful towards Fourth Uncle for bringing him up.

If Fourth Uncle hadn't gone out to buy the Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill for the tragic guy, he wouldn't have gotten poisoned.

Even after the incident, as a stepfather, Fourth Uncle never made any request towards Yue Yang who was successful. He even rejected Yue Yang's advances to help and didn't allow Yue Yang to stay by his side, as he was afraid that he would affect his son's promising future.

[The silkworms of spring will weave until they die, and every night the candles will weep their wicks away.](#)

(Shiro: [Poem by Li Shang Yin](#))

This quote flashed past Yue Yang's thoughts.

Although [Li Shang Yin's](#) poem was used to describe how undying his romantic love was, it could also be used on kinship.

(Want2eat: Li Shang Yin was a poet in ancient China.)

Fourth Uncle was a filial son, a dutiful husband and also a loving father... be it towards the tragic guy in the past or the Yue Yang now, even though he didn't know that his stepson then and now was two different people.

“Fourth Mother, I will avenge the death of Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng, I will definitely behead the Prison Emperor Divine General and his followers!” Yue Yang was flaming angry. Initially, he didn't want to provoke the Prison Emperor Divine General, but

since he finds trouble with him, Yue Yang would definitely make him toast no matter how powerful he might be!

“Silly San-er, both your Fourth Uncle and I only wish for you to live in peace, not in vengeance.... You are the only man in our family now and you’ll have to bring up your sisters, if anything happens to you, how do you expect us to live on? And how would I be able to account to my sister? Promise me that you won’t take revenge, or your Fourth Uncle won’t rest in peace. In his last will, he even warned you repeatedly not to seek revenge. San-er, will you listen to me once?” Contrary to Yue Yang, Fourth Mother didn’t want him to take revenge. Although she was in grief, she was still realistic enough to realise that it would be extremely tough for Yue Yang to kill the Innate duo. Even the Heavenly Imperial Guardians couldn’t fight against them. Therefore, she’d rather not take revenge and chose to deal with the pain herself so that Yue Yang and Yue Shuang can live safely.... At least for now.

“Don’t cry, Fourth Mother. I’ll listen to you, okay?” Yue Yang agreed on the surface, but he was still burning with anger underneath.

Fourth Mother finally stopped crying after a while.

Tired from crying, Yue Shuang fell asleep in Yue Yang’s embrace. Streaks of tears still hung on her face, wrenching Yue Yang’s heart.

If he had been more persistent, she might not have lost her father...

Initially Fourth Uncle was like an NPC to Yue Yang, but now the pain Yue Yang felt for his death was akin to that of the passing of a loved one. When he saw Fourth Mother crying hysterically and Yue Shuang weeping, Yue Yang could no longer maintain his composure as just a guy from another world.

Yue Yang felt that in Soaring Dragon Continent, the small house in White Stone City was like his second home.

Although he was from another world, the people surrounding him were like family to him .

He didn't want the incident that happened on Fourth Uncle to occur again... The responsibility of protecting Fourth Mother, Yue Shuang and Yue Bing had now become his, it was his responsibility as a man... Yue Yang suddenly felt that he had grown up, he felt that the responsibilities left by his Fourth Uncle had suddenly been transferred over to his shoulders.

He had the same realization last time. But it was only until Fourth Uncle's passing, leaving him the only man in the fourth branch, did he realise what responsibility really means.

His mentality was changing rapidly.

This incident caused Yue Yang to make a profound realization that he had never known before.

He felt that he grew up instantly... He really did mature this

time! It was only now that he could call himself a real man!

Although there wasn't any observable difference on the outside, Yue Yang's mindset changed drastically, allowing him to make a breakthrough in his mentality.

His mental state had also risen to a whole new level...

Chapter 372 – Long Live, Big Brother!

Yue Yang had wanted to leave the Tian Luo Palace with his Fourth Mother and Yue Shuang and bring them into his grimoire world. However, Fourth Mother didn't agree with him.

“Night Empress had already said that it is very safe inside the Mirage. Even an Innate would not be able to enter easily. If I were to follow you back to the Yue Clan Castle or to your grimoire world, I will definitely disturb your training. I don't want to disturb you, I only hope for you to do your best. Come visit me here if you have time, and when you are finally strong enough and do not need to fear your enemies, we can return back to our little house in White Stone City!”

“Alright then.” Yue Yang did not demand insistently and stayed inside the Mirage to accompany Fourth Mother for two days. In the end, he carried the little girl and return to the Yue Clan Castle.

Elder Yue Hai looked even older than before.

However, his back was obviously still very straight.

He took out the will that Fourth Uncle had written for Yue Yang and nodded, “I'm okay, when your grandmother and father left us that time, I managed to overcome the double shock of their deaths. Your Fourth Uncle's matter won't make shock me to my death. As long as I live, I will take care of the Yue Clan. However, when I'm gone, I would have to trouble you to look after this family!”

Jun Wu You, the old fox and the others had also come to offer their condolences. However, they didn't say anything much, they only patted Yue Yang's shoulders.

After reading the will, Yue Yang stayed silent for a long while.

Afterwhich, he asked the house butler to send out a notice, inviting the Four Great Clans, Three Royal Families and Four Great Sects to the Yue Clan Castle and witness Yue Shuang contracting a grimoire.

If it were another person, they would definitely snort at this. How could someone contract a Grimoire just because someone said they could?

Even though it was common for the members of the Four Great Clans to contract a grimoire, it didn't mean that they could contract it whenever they want.

Witnessing someone contracting a grimoire, that was really the first time everyone had heard of it!

However, the one who sent this invite was none other than the most abnormal human in the world, the third young master of the Yue Clan. Hence, no one suspected that kind of possibility.

In this world, was there anything more unexpected than a twenty year old reaching the Innate Realm? The miracles that the Yue Clan Third Young Master created was also not just once or twice.

The unexpected miracles that Yue Yang had done was uncountable. For example, there was a time when the Great Demon King Baruth sent a strong complaint to Elder Nan Gong from the Innate Alliance, saying that there was a young boy called Yue Yang who invaded the Demon Palace for no reason, destroying the Demon King Statue and injuring countless Demon Soldiers. He even stole a beast and killed one of their friends who was seeking protection in the Demon Abyss... The Great Demon King Baruth emphasised that the Soaring Dragon Continent Rankers should give them an explanation to such a huge breach of the Innate Alliance treaty. Otherwise, the Demon Abyss would do whatever they could to invade the Soaring Dragon Continent.

All along, it had always been the Soaring Dragon Continent warriors that complained against the Demon King. Seeing the Demon King complaining against the Soaring Dragon Continent was really a matter that happened once in a thousand years!

People didn't know what Elder Nan Gong had said to the Great Demon King Baruth, but in the end, Baruth didn't mention invading the Soaring Dragon Continent anymore.

Everyone only knew one thing.

And that was the Yue Clan Third Young Master had recklessly trespassed into the Demon Palace... They didn't know if this brat had played around with the Demon Queen, Demon Concubines or seduced the Demon Princess, but how many people from the Soaring Dragon Continent could return safely after invading the Demon Palace?

Even after three hundred years had passed, there might only be one person as abnormal as the Yue Clan Third Young Master.

People might not respect their Emperor, but how could they not respect a hero? Especially a hero who could step into the Demon Palace, which was an unattainable place for most humans! Whoever it was who was jealous and wanted to find mistakes on Yue Clan Third Young Master, wanting to use this chance to boast about how awesome they were, everyone would quickly interrupt them with a sentence, “Why don’t you try going to the Demon Palace yourself?”

Furthermore, Yue Yang was an Innate Ranker. His potential was limitless, and Zhi Zun was even his Introducer.

Even if Yue Yang didn’t send out invitations to invite honored guests all over the world, they would also want to take the advantage and visit to build a good relationship with the abnormal boy. Once they had established a good relationship, everything would definitely be of no problem.

The two Eastern and Western Sky Kings of Tian Luo, Old General Ma and Hua Xu Ri’s ambassador; Feng Xiao Yun, Feng Kuang, Feng Qi Sha from the Feng Clan; Xue Wen Dao from the Xue Clan; Yan Qian Zhong and Yan Po Jun from the Yan Clan; White Stone City Master, Master Golden Blade, Eagle-eyed man, princes of the Da Xia Kingdom... Zi Jin Kingdom ambassadors, elders from the Lion Pagoda, Elder Ku Ming from the Floating Mist Sect, Dragon Ambassador Pi Po from the Water Crystal Palace and Han Xing Swordmaster from the Moon Fairy Pavilion...

Those who came, some were members of great clans, great sects, great royal families, or even city masters that Yue Yang had not invited.

They came without invitation, looking-like they were being polite, when in reality, they were trying to build a closer relationship with the Yue Clan and introduce themselves to the upper class of elite experts circle.

For example, Fatty Hai's Hai Clan and Ye Kong's Ye Clan, who were noname Clans that others always look down upon previously, as one of their clan members had a good relationship with Yue Yang, they had also now risen in ranks. They had even received the warm welcome of other smaller clans.

A lot of Rankers brought along their own children.

Of course, they did not expect that Yue Yang would take a liking to their son and betroth Yue Shuang to their son. No one would dare to think this way, because it seemed like if their son wasn't an Innate, they wouldn't even be compatible!

Their real motive was to let Yue Yang see if their son had any potential and also for Yue Yang to provide him some guidance which would benefit their son for life.

One had to know that the most abnormal thing about Yue Yang wasn't his own ability cultivate, but to discover talent.

Useless people like Ye Kong and Fatty Hai and ordinary adventurers like the Li Brothers who would have never stood out in the crowd previously, became brilliant geniuses in just a matter of few months under Yue Yang's guidance. They could even be considered to be of the same level as Xue Tan Lang, Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha who were groomed under the four major clans. With regards to Plant-type Beasts which was regarded to be the worst beast of all, especially Thorny Flower which was said to be the worst of the worst and could only be used in school as teaching material.... Under Yue Yang's care, he had actually nurtured a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen that could kill the Blood Prison Demon King in legends.

This was the most awesome part of Yue Yang, who could make others around him as awesome and powerful as he already was!

There were a lot of guests, but except for the powerful ones, Elder Yue Hai normally wouldn't go out to welcome them.

Yue Yang was even lazier to move.

He was an Innate, therefore he had this privilege.... If he were to go out and welcome everyone, wouldn't he just scare off all the guest? Would there be anyone who dare to enter?

The busy Second Uncle Yue Ling, who was the substitute clan master, was very good with public relations and banquet issues. After going through several family issues, he had become more open-minded and less arrogant, he would even greet those from small clans and families passionately, building up the Yue Clan's reputation amongst the people.

Yue Tian and Yue Yan who lost their power also became more tamed as they decided wholeheartedly to start from the bottom again.

They also went forward to entertain the guests despite past disagreements.

They probably wouldn't think of becoming an Innate as they know that it would be impossible, but they hoped that they could at least become a Level Seven Overlord or Level Eight Emperor while they were still alive, this was their dream... Of course this was their ideal previously too.

Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha came to visit Yue Yang especially, and had wanted to pay respect to him like how they would to their father, but Yue Yang was magnanimous enough to help them up and spoke with them, seemingly providing guidance, making the duo very touched. As parents, Yan Qian Zhong and Feng Xiao Yun were also moved to tears. There was a saying that went, "It isn't scary to compare between goods, but it's scary to compare between people."

They were all part of the Three Great Killing Stars, but Xue Tan Lang had already surpassed them to become the most powerful among the trio. Forget about being a Level Seven Overlord or Level Eight Emperor, Xue Tan Lang would become an Innate sooner or later... As for Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha, even those losers like Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Li Brothers had surpassed them, how could they not be anxious? It was still alright for Feng Xiao Yun, because although the Feng family wasn't as close to the Yue family than the

Xue family, their relationship was still alright. Also, the Thousand Dried Bones General, Feng Kuang, was a close friend of Yue Yang despite the difference in their ages... However, the situation looked bleak for Yan Qian Zhong as the Yan Clan was at loggerheads with the Yue Clan. They had tried all means to take them down, and the worse thing was that Yan Po Jun had misunderstandings with Yue Yang previously. Hence, this was causing much of a headache to the Yan Clan.

“The entire Yan Clan will always remember your kindness today.” Seeing that Yue Yang didn’t mind the past anymore, Yan Qian Zhong proclaimed his gratefulness sincerely, so much that he almost called Yue Yang his master.

“Po Jun is endowed with superb skills and is considered to be a rare talent, he definitely could become an Innate in the future. So uncle, you don’t have to worry too much. If he faces any obstructions, I will try my best to help him become an Innate. Seniors, please rest while I speak with brother Po Jun and Qi Sha.” Feng Qi Sha was still alright, but Yue Yang didn’t want to guide Yan Po Jun at first as he was quite rude in the past.

But after Fourth Uncle’s incident , Yue Yang had matured a lot.

In any case, no matter how Yan Po Jun trained, he was destined to achieve little success. Yue Yang estimated that if Yan Po Jun was very lucky and reached his maximum potential, he could become a Level Five Innate, if not, he would reach around Innate Level Three.

With this kind of capacity, Yue Yang could still kill Yan Po Jun

easily, therefore Yue Yang didn't consider him to be a threat.

After a few decades when Yan Po Jun finally became an Innate, Yue Yang would have already went to the Heaven Realm to fight against the Heaven Realm Great Leaders Ming Yue Guang, Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao.

After a few hundred years when Yan Po Jun finally became a Level Five Innate, Yue Yang estimated that he would have already dominated the entire Heaven Realm. If things proceeded this way, why did he still have to be concerned about Yan Po Jun? It would be better for Yue Yang to pay him a little favour so that Yan Po Jun can help him guard the Soaring Dragon Continent. After all, it is better to make a friend than an enemy. If he were to be tempted into joining the Demon Abyss or other foreign Innates, he might even cause trouble in the future. If that would be the case, wouldn't it be better for him to control Yan Po Jun so that Yan Po Jun will work for him?

As the four major clans are the foundations of Da Xia Kingdom, they had to be preserved.

Right now, due to Yue Yang's appearance, the Four Great Clans had united. It was a golden time for the Soaring Dragon Continent. However, once the Soaring Dragon Continent combined forces and grew stronger, the Demon Abyss would definitely not stand still and watch. If those old fellows die, there had to be some juniors like Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha to replace them. Otherwise, Yue Yang wouldn't be at ease even if he goes to the Heaven Realm.

“Brother Po Jun and Qi Sha, please follow me here.” After Yue

Yang talked to the duo for one hour, they felt that they finally saw the light.

They almost did not break their fingers to express the sense of gratitude they felt towards Yue Yang.

As Fourth Mother did not come to attend the ceremony, Yue Yang made a special trip to see her.

Fourth Mother was touched by Yue Yang's gesture, but at the same time also felt that he was playing around. Yue Shuang was still so young, what would she know?

It would be best if Yue Shuang did not get scared by the large crowd of warriors and cry in front of them!

Fourth Mother's worries did not come true as Yue Shuang weren't afraid of all those so called powerful and famous people. She had even sat on the lap of the Da Xia Emperor Jun Wu You and pulled the beard of the Innate Old Fox. As for Yue Yang, he had no choice but to carry her on his neck all the time, acting as her white horse.

After choosing an auspicious time, under the gaze of thousands of Rankers in the Soaring Dragon Continent, Yue Yang held his sister's hand as they walked out from the hall. Together with Jun Wu You, Old Fox and Elder Yue Hai, they proceeded towards the plaza which could accommodate tens of thousands of people, and onto the platform in the centre.

Yue Shuang wasn't scared at all as she held the candied fruits especially marinated by Yue Yang.

When the audience cheered loudly, she would bite the candied fruit and waved to the crowd like how the emperor, Jun Wu You, did.

“I am very happy to see everyone here attending my eighth sister's Grimoire contracting ceremony. Fourth Uncle has passed on, leaving my two sisters behind. I am not talented, so I am afraid that I would fail my Fourth Uncle's wishes. Hence, I hereby promise that i will protect my sisters and bring them up on behalf of my father. I don't hope for them to achieve great success, but just for them to live happily and healthily everyday. I also wish for all the sisters in the world to have a brother to protect them, and also for them to be happy!” Yue Yang said as he wiped away the crumbs around Yue Shuang's mouth and then planted a kiss on her pristine forehead.

“I'll kiss you too! Long live, big brother!” Yue Shuang kissed her brother lovingly. She even kisser him the second time because she felt that once wasn't enough..

Under the arena, it was met with thunderous applause.

Many of the older generations were welling with tears when they saw this touching scene.

Especially the Fifth Elder, who was wiping away his tears discreetly.

Yue Yang brought Yue Shuang who was all smiles to the centre of the arena, and then took out the Bronze Grimoire that he had already taken since long time ago from the Lich Ring.

The Grimoire contracting ceremony had just begun...

Chapter 373 – There's Another Beast Who Wants To Contract A Grimoire?

The little girl Yue Shuang's delicate hands, following Yue Yang's instructions, reached out and rested on top of the Bronze Grimoire.

“Close your eyes and don't think of anything... or how about thinking your favorite food? What's your favorite food that you want your brother to make? Think about it!” Yue Yang's encouraging speech was only made for others to hear. He lightly covered the little girl's eyes and continuously injected Innate Qi in between her eyebrows, that was the true essence of the contract. Quite some time ago, Yue Yang had already connected Yue Shuang's blood channels. She already had a hundred percent chance to contract a Grimoire. However, the time needed to contract a grimoire was uncertain. Moreover, a normal contract was not shocking. Yue Yang wished to make the grimoire contract ceremony a bit more impressive than the usual.

He wanted to make her little sister's contract shock everybody.

Yue Yang had already tested many times on Xue Wu Xia's, Princess Qian Qian's, Luo Hua City Mistress' and Sickly Beauty's body. Using Innate Qi does not really count as anything for Yue Yang. If he did not fear outsiders finding out, Yue Yang had even wanted to use Nirvana Flames to purify Yue Shuang's body!

Of course, those were needless worries...

Golden light gradually spilled out from Yue Shuang's small

hands, and it gradually grew brighter.

In the end, it was like a lake or an ocean giving off a gentle feeling. It was unlike other warriors, who gave out a biting cold and oppressive feeling during their contract. It overflowed and expanded outside just like clouds and mists.

When the golden light reached its limit, it stopped expanding and all the golden light started soaring to the skies. The light pillar was incomparably tall. It was tens of meters high... Every single warrior who saw the gigantic golden light pillar were coloured in shock. What did this golden light pillar represent? It represented a grimoire contractor's potential. An ordinary contractor would never have a light pillar. Normally, light would flash from their bodies and soar up two three meters. This process did not even last a few seconds.

Those contractors who had obtained three meters of light was already very rare. A person who obtained a light pillar above five meters was already an extremely rare genius.

Those capable of exceeding ten meters would have a chance to join the Innate Rankers.

When someone so powerful like the Old Fox was promoted to Innate Rank, his golden light pillar had reached twenty meters high. The Ascetic Practice Saint had praised him endlessly and felt that the Old Fox would probably be promoted into a Heavenly Imperial Guardian in the future.

Today, Yue Shuang's Grimoire Contract gave out a golden light pillar that was tens of meters high....

Although the light pillar from contracting a grimoire was not as accurate as the light pillar from leveling up into an Innate Rank, it was not really that different. If that person did not have some kind of accident in the future, then leveling up into Innate Rank would definitely not be a problem. If the light pillar from leveling up into Innate Rank was one hundred percent accurate and represented a person's future growth, then the light pillar from contracting a grimoire defines their potential.

There was a possibility that the potential would never be realized, but there was also the possibility that it become a huge growth!

The thing called potential... having it does not necessarily mean that you would be strong in the future, but not having it means that you would be very miserable and tragic!

No matter what, this potential of the golden light pillar that was several metres high made the all warriors flabbergasted.

The time and place of contracting a grimoire would never be based on the owner's decision.

There were some who would successfully make a contract in the day, some at night. Others would make a contract while awake, and some while they were asleep.

Generally speaking, a contractor would have a hard time seeing their own light pillar. As for outsiders, other than coincidentally seeing it or following Yue Yang's example of inviting everyone to bear witness to it, it would be very rare for them to bear witness to other contractor's light pillar.

If they did not see it themselves, the Rankers would not dare believe that the little girl Yue Shuang would actually have such a high potential.

"It looks like it is three times higher than mine..." The Old Fox still could not return to his senses from the shock.

"Brother Hai, I could not help but envy you. I can't do anything about your grandson being abnormal, but it is really unfair now that your granddaughter is also this powerful." Jun Wu You guessed that this potential most likely had a connection with Yue Yang. Yue Shuang definitely did not have this kind of frightening potential originally. Of course he would never reveal this speculation; on the contrary, he would even help Yue Yang protect this secret.

"I truly did not know." Elder Yue Hai laughed bitterly. He also understood that Yue Yang had done something. However, he did not imagine that this brat was capable of making such a huge move.

The golden light pillar flowed back and returned to Yue Shuang, and Yue Shaung's body shook a little.

She fell down powerlessly and fainted.

Yue Yang knew that this was the grimoire filling her head with knowledge. Her small head could not handle it, hence, as a result, she momentarily fainted. This was a self-defense mechanism of the brain. During contracting a grimoire, there were also a few people who fell into this kind of situation.

This was also proof that the grimoire was putting more information into their head, so it would become like this.

The knowledge everybody obtained was different, even if other people wanted to faint they would not have the opportunity!

After the Bronze Grimoire finished the contract, it automatically flipped pages.

Yue Yang, who was carrying Yue Shuang, bent his head and looked down. He jumped in surprise... Although she was mischievous and a bit gluttonous, this little sister still gave Yue Yang a nice big surprise. Little girl Yue Shuang was not one bit inferior to her sister Yue Bing.

She was different from Yue Bing, who had to fight through the Twelve Zodiac Temples to obtain her second Inherent Skill. Yue Shuang, this little girl, was naturally born with two Inherent Skills.

[Pearl Inherent Skill]: Gives the skill owner the ability to use

pearl type treasures to summon a beast's spirit. Current Level: Level 1.

[Sweet Sweet Inherent Skill]: When the skill owner's stomach is hungry, there is a fixed probability to temporarily turn objects or weak beasts into a sweet dessert. If the dessert was eaten before it returns to its original form, it would create an irrecoverable loss or be eternally be digested. This Inherent Skill will become stronger as its level increased. Current Level: Level 1.

“What?!” When Yue Yang saw it, he perspired profusely. This kind of Inherent Skill truly was Yue Shuang's style.

“Hahahahaha...” Eastern Sky King and the other's swarmed like bees and squeezed in to look. They were first dumbstruck, but soon after they erupted in laughter. The tears in the Old Fox's eyes even splashed out.

This was too funny. Although any kind of Inherent Skill was possible, Yue Shuang's amusing Inherent Skill was something no one has seen before.

Of course, not a single person present dared to hold this [Sweet Sweet Inherent Skill] in contempt.

It was fine if it was an ordinary object, but if some kind of Divine Weapon was turned into a dessert by the little girl and eaten, it would really be tragic for her enemies. For beasts it was much more terrible. Those stronger than the little girl Yue Shuang might be safe, but those weaker than her could suddenly be turned into

dessert and eaten. Luckily this Inherent Skill still had a lot of restrictions, otherwise it would defy the natural order! The warriors discussed spiritedly. Everyone thought highly of the [Sweet Sweet Inherent Skill] because it had already established a rule. The more restrictions an Inherent Skill has, the more useful it was.

Yue Yang's point of view was different from everyone else. He believed that this [Sweet Sweet Inherent Skill] was not a bad Inherent Skill but, the stronger skill was the [Pearl Inherent Skill].

The Inherent Skill with more restrictions was indeed a better Inherent Skill.

However, Yue Yang still knew of something else. An Inherent Skill which looked simpler and more useless looks on the surface was actually the stronger one!

After a long while, the little girl Yue Shuang finally awakened. Yue Yang told her to flip the pages of her grimoire, and her Guardian Beast appeared in front of everybody. It was a small humanoid doll with beautiful shell as its wings. Its name was Pearl Beauty.

Pearl Beauty: Special-type beast. Humanoid Intelligent Life Form. Silver-ranked Level 1. Living entity. Everyday it would offer three Seven-colored Pearl to its owner. Skill: "Spirit Assist".

Following Yue Shuang's summons, the small thing appeared with a bright violet flash.

Looking at it, it was only a finger big.

Its size was similar to Thumbelina from children's fairy tales. However, it had beautiful shells for wings. Its small body was the same as a dragonfly's, petite and nimble. Its hands held a big piece of silver colored pearl. Furthermore, there were also three pearls of purple, blue, and gold that revolved around its body.

When this Pearl Beauty appeared, it bowed towards Yue Yang and the others, looking extremely polite and well-mannered.

Afterwards, it gracefully flew in front of Yue Shuang and gave a pearl to its owner. However, contrary to everyone's expectations, it was playing with Yue Shuang. After Yue Shuang extended her hands to receive the pearl, it flew back a bit, not allowing the little girl to touch her... Yue Shuang insisted on catching her and continued to chase her. She ran down the stage with bell-like laughter, full of joy... However, everyone looked at each other in fear, such a smart beast...

God, how far was the Pearl Beauty from becoming a Holy Beast?

Even if there was a gap, it would definitely become a Holy Beast in the future, it is already something set in stone!

Being born a Silver-ranked Beast was already shocking, but the most surprising thing was its wisdom. The Pearl Beauty was naturally smart and was a beast other could only dream about but never obtain!

Seeing that the number of Yue Clan younger generation geniuses had increased, many people couldn't help but sigh. They were truly worthy to be called the Four Great Clans. Even a little girl from the Yue Clan was better than the other's grandson. How long would it take for the Soaring Dragon Continent to produce a child like Yue Shuang? If it was not for the fact that there was the abnormal Yue Clan third young master above her, someone with her power might not even appear in hundreds of years.

This generation of youths in the Yue Clan was really too extreme.

One is stronger than the other!

In the past, Yue Tian and Yue Yan were part of the Ten Elite Youths and was already very strong. Then, Yue Feng had unexpectedly appeared and became the clan's hope with his high potential. Not mentioning Yue Yang the abnormal Yue Clan's Third Young Master, Yue Bing had appeared afterwards, showing her powers with her plant-type beasts. Using her Treant that had been powered up with poison and her combat skills, she had almost defeated Feng Qi Sha... Now, emerged another Yue Shuang who possessed two Inherent Skills. In addition, she even possessed the smart Pearl Beauty Guardian Beast and displayed a light pillar that was tens of meters tall. It would be very hard for her to not become famous in the future!

“Come my darling, come here!” Jun Wu You's Empress' motherly instincts was triggered as she lifted the little girl and kissed her cheeks. She faced Yue Yang and said: “Yue Yang, I am extremely fond of this little darling. How about letting her become

my adopted daughter? Darling, do you want to become a princess? If this cute little body was to wear a princess' clothes..."

"Becoming a princess is not fun!" Yue Shuang quickly shook her head.

"A princess has many delicious things and many candies, don't you want to be one?" Before the Empress finished, Yue Shuang's eyes shone and quickly nodded her head. It can't be helped, candy was an unrivalled existence for her.

"..." Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai glanced at each other.

The Empress wishing to adopt a daughter was not impossible.

However, it would disorder the seniority between them!

In any case, the seniority between them were already disordered. Princess Qian Qian was Jun Wu You's daughter, yet, she was engaged to the Yue Clan's Third Young Master. However, Jun Wu You calls Elder Yue Hai as Brother Hai! Now the Empress wanted to adopt a daughter, although it was no big deal, the seniority between them got slightly disordered again.

In any case, at this point, Jun Wu You already did not care about the seniority disordering anymore!

Seeing the empress readily take a future Innate Ranker as an adopted daughter, the women present couldn't help but regret

endlessly.

Of course, no matter how much they regret it, they couldn't steal her from the empress. Furthermore, even if they wanted to take her, the Yue Clan Third Young Master would not necessarily agree. This little girl was his darling treasure. How could a normal person adopt her? Those who realized this raised their hands to congratulate the Yue Clan's happiness. Yan Qian Zhong and many other big clan's patriarchs clenched their fists and stopped themselves from thinking about the idea of tying the knot with the Yue Family.

Let it be, the small bastards in their families simply could not match up to Yue Shuang. Suggesting it would simply be an embarrassment.

It was better to be more honest and not make oneself feel unpleasant.

If the little girl Yue Shuang contracting a grimoire gave everyone such a huge shock that it required them hours to digest everything, then afterwards, the things that Yue Yang said made everyone shocked senseless.

Everybody doubted their hearing.

This included the Old Fox, Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai. However when everybody saw the shock on each other's faces, they understood that they did not hear wrong.

“You.. What did you say?” The Eastern Sky King grabbed Yue Yang’s collar: “What are you playing with you brat?”

“Nothing, I only wish to try something.” Yue Yang smiled brilliantly like the sun. Despite everybody seeing his smile, they couldn’t help but shiver. Yue Yang swept a glance over everyone present and in the end repeated his sentence word by word with certainty: “You did not hear wrong. A while ago I said that I have a worthless beast, its strength is incredibly bad. There’s no other way, I will let it try if it could contract a grimoire, so that it can gain a bit of strength.”

Yue Yang turned around, charged down the stage and yelled: “Hui Tai Lang, you damned dog. Come quickly, this master is still busy. You actually dared to lazily sleep down there?”

When Hui Tai Lang heard him, it eagerly trotted onto the stage. Everyone was dumbfounded.

This dog? It will contract a grimoire?

Chapter 374 – Divine Beast, Hui Tai Lang!

What would it mean for a Beast to make contract with a Grimoire?

They would become Divine Beast!

The difference between a Holy Beast and a Divine Beast lay in the possession of a Grimoire!

For normal Rankers who reached the Innate Realm, they would train by themselves in the beginning, and then they would rely on their Holy Beasts to grow in later parts of their training, training together with their Holy Beast slowly to reach the Innate Realm. As compared to that of a Divine Beast, their progress in leveling up would be very slow... Some people could level up through their own hard work and power, but such people were extremely rare. Those who could level up to Innate without relying on their beasts were hard to find among all the Innate Rankers as there wouldn't even be one in a hundred of them.

With the help of a Holy Beast, there might be a possibility for a Warrior to level up to Innate.

But if he had a Divine Beast, what would happen?

No one had the answer.

It was because other than Zhi Zun, no other Innates owned a

Divine Beast.

At least none on the records of the Innate Alliance.

All the Warriors believed that if they owned a Divine Beast, they could be on the same level as Zhi Zun.

Even the powerful ones like Shun Tian and the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader thought so.

They felt that the greatest difference between Zhi Zun and them was the possession of a Divine Beast!

Today, Yue Yang actually told all the superiors in the whole of the Soaring Dragon Continent that he wanted to make his Beast contract a Grimoire, which means to say, he was going to cultivate a Divine Beast in front of everyone! Had they not heard it and seen it with their own eyes, they wouldn't believe that it was true...Or had it been someone else other than Yue Yang who said it, even if the person was an Innate, they would have thought that that person was out of their mind! Making a Beast contract a Grimoire and turning it into a Divine Beast, was it even possible?

Anyone would say that it was impossible!

People had been trying all ways to do it for thousands of years but to no avail.

Only one person owned a Divine Beast, and that person was Zhi

Zun... No one knew what method she used to cultivate her Divine Beast and of course, she wouldn't tell anyone about it... The reason why people knew that Zhi Zun owned a Divine Beast was due to the attack of the Demon Abyss in the past.

Zhi Zun still wasn't the Supreme Elder back then, and she was also not so famous.

The powerful Demon Kings of the Demon Abyss worked together to invade the Soaring Dragon Continent, breaking the rules set by the Innate Alliance .

The whole of Soaring Dragon Continent was faced with the threat of destruction. Before this invasion, the human-populated Ao Jia and Gu Feng Continent were already destroyed by the Demon Abyss. Soaring Dragon Continent, which was weaker in power, was on the brink of destruction. Innate Rankers like Shun Tian, the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, Chong Ni, Black Prince and An Xi didn't attempt to stop the Demon Kings, and even seemed to support their actions.

In the Innate Alliance, only Elder Nan Gong went forward to stop them, and even fought against the invasion by the Demon Kings, together with warriors from the Soaring Dragon Continent.

The battle was even more dangerous than the battle 3000 years ago.

If the human Warriors lost, the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent would fall and human would become slaves to the

demons, or even food for them.

However, the battle didn't take place because of Zhi Zun's appearance... She summoned her Divine Beast and killed two of the strongest Demon Kings with ease. It shocked all the Rankers as a Divine Beast, which only appeared in myths and was rumored to possess great power, appeared in the public eye suddenly, causing the human warriors and the Demon Army to tremble with fear.

Since then, the name 'Supreme Elder' appeared in the world.

She was incomparably strong, and she once again established the Innate Alliance Treaty. Up till today, all the Innate Rankers had to abide by them.

Even if a fight erupted, they would also have to abide by the rules. Otherwise, Zhi Zun would kill the person who violated the rules personally... But what made the Innate Rankers heave a sigh of relief was that Zhi Zun didn't care about anyone and didn't restrict others' training. She only cared about exploring higher floors of the Tong Tian Tower and searching for the legendary Heaven Realm.

Although it was a long time ago, those Rankers who knew about it was still full of respect to the Divine Beast.

The Divine Beast was a creature of another level.

Its power was unimaginable!

“Let me introduce my guard dog, Hui Tai Lang, to everyone. As you can see, its power is very limited as it was only a bronze-ranked level 3 beast.” As Yue Yang was speaking, Hui Tai Lang nodded coordinately and use it’s own language to greet everybody in a well-practised manner. “Woof... Meow...”

Nobody understood Hui Tai Lang, but what everyone knew was that it was sensitive.

Not only was it smart, but it was ridiculously smart.

To put it bluntly, it was cunning!

Other than not knowing how to speak, it was able to conspire and scheme, and even knew how to bootlick its master.

Although it cannot turn into a person as it wasn’t a Holy Beast, it was smarter than a Holy Beast, as it even knew how to disguise itself. It was actually a powerful Demonic Wolf King who could kill normal warriors and even low level Innates, but it decided to masquerade as a Bronze-ranked level 3 Ironback Demonic Wolf... If not for its even more powerful and abnormal master, people would have to worry if Hui Tai Lang would become the terminator of the Soaring Dragon Continent, bringing about a huge mess. With Yue Yang, people started to regard Hui Tai Lang as no big deal because ‘like master like Beast’. If its master was extremely powerful, it would make sense that his dog would be somewhat strong too.

Although Hui Tai Lang was very powerful, it paled in comparison

to other Beasts that Yue Yang owned.

For example, the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen which ranked up from the Spitting Thorny Flower, the Bloody Queen, which ranked up from a Golden King Beast to a Holy Beast, the one and only Tong Tian Tower Beast, and even his Guardian Beast who turned into Barbarian Cow Shadow...

The Beasts owned by Yue Yang weren't what normal people could imagine.

As for the Reaper Mantis that fed on Dragons, it couldn't even compare to Hui Tai Lang at present.

If not for the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice, the Platinum-ranked Reaper Mantis would be at the bottom of the list.

Those were Yue Yang's beasts that were known to the public, those that were unknown were even stronger! Only a few people like Jun Wu You and the Old Fox knew about his domineering Diamond-ranked Little Lamia Loli, normal Warriors wouldn't know about it ... And nobody knew that the Little Lamia Loli owned a Diamond Grimoire, if not they would all faint from shock!

As the warriors in the Soaring Dragon Continent had not really seen the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, Bloody Queen and Barbarian Cow's skills, they ranked Hui Tai Lang as Yue Yang's number one beast.

They thought that it was the most powerful of them all!

The adventurers were very enthusiastic when they discussed about Hui Tai Lang's deeds.

They were well aware of what it would do and eat everyday.

Some busybodies would even go to the Yue Clan Castle to see how Hui Tai Lang would abuse the young elites of the Soaring Dragon Continent such as Ye Kong, Fatty Hair, Li Clan Brothers, Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo during their training... They watched as the powerful Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were defeated and left in distress by Hui Tai Lang, and similarly with Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo. If they had not known, they wouldn't dare to believe that the weary looking person covered in wounds on the training ground was one of the three Great Killing Stars, Xue Tan Lang! Sometimes they would even see Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha coming to the Yue Clan Castle and getting abused. They were even worse than the 'Bronze-ranked level three' Hui Tai Lang, as they could be deemed as vulnerable in front of Hui Tai Lang.

Forget about them, even the Old Fox who had ranked up to an Innate wasn't a match for it.

This was the beast of the Yue Clan Third Young Master .

A beast without a contract but still remained loyal, not from a noble background but had powerful combat skills, and wasn't groomed deliberately but turned out to be very smart. This was Hui Tai Lang.

Needless to say, nobody in this world, except for the extremely powerful Yue Yang, would own such a strong beast!

But even so, to make everyone believe that Hui Tai Lang could make contract with a Grimoire was still a little tough.

No matter how smart, cunning or powerful it was, it wouldn't be able to match up to the standard of a Grimoire. Neither was it a Holy Beast nor could it turn into a person and talk in human language, so how could it make a contact with a Grimoire? Even if it could, would it even be able to understand what was written on the Grimoire?

Would it know how to use the Grimoire ?

It was definitely impossible because only a Holy beast, who was both smart and could turn into a person, have the right to make contract with a Grimoire .

To put it bluntly, even Shun Tian's Guardian Beast, 'King', wasn't able to make contract with a Grimoire, let alone Yue Yang's guard dog, would it even be possible?

"Please be my witness. I'm just trying so I may not succeed. " Yue Yang said as a Bronze Grimoire popped out from his hands.

People thought that the higher the level of the Grimoire used to make contract, the better the Guardian Beast and its potential

would be.

But Yue Yang knew that it was the exact opposite.

The higher the level of the Grimoire, the harder it would be to make a contract...Also, unless it would become a Holy Grimoire like that of Yue Yang's, the rest would just revert back to Bronze-ranked Grimoire, hence using a Gold-ranked or a Platinum-ranked Grimoire would be a waste.

Hui Tai Lang barred its claws in front of everyone.

After a long moment, there wasn't any reaction.

Everyone heaved a sigh of relief as they felt more comfortable. Luckily Hui Tai Lang wasn't that so powerful that it would turn into a Divine Beast immediately, otherwise they might not even need to live anymore.

"Hui Tai Lang you idiotic, stupid dog, you just wasted my energy! I hold expectations of you, so can you please be more competent?" Yue Yang was boiling with anger as he rained punches onto Hui Tai Lang, causing it to be covered in wounds. People thought that Yue Yang was vexed and had beaten Hui Tai Lang up to vent his anger, but Hui Tai Lang knew that it was a special reward from its master... The harder Yue Yang punched, the more the Innate Qi would enter its body and the more comfortable it would get! If it were other people, they wouldn't even get the chance to get beaten up even if they want to!

“Woof!” Hui Tai Lang who was sent flying more than ten metres away ran back obediently, giving off the vibe that it would show its power this time round.

“If you still can’t do it, I would kill you and use your meat to make a dog meat pot to eat!” Yue Yang’s words caused everyone to break out in cold sweat.

Only Yue Yang would dare to say such things, if it were others, forgot about dog meat pot, there would be a higher possibility of a human meat pot... Moreover, Yue Yang didn’t even contract it but still beat it up so badly, everyone pitied the dog. Even if Yue Yang possessed other powerful Beasts, he shouldn’t abuse it like this!

People never understood why Yue Yang only liked beautiful beast, why he did not want to contract a powerful beast like Hui Tai Lang.

They could not even understand as to why Yue Yang always beat it up!

Although Hui Tai Lang might not be very strong or smart, or know how to bootlick, he shouldn’t treat it like this!

For other Beasts, if their master neglected it just a bit, it’s loyalty would drop. If the same logic was applied here, ten million Beasts would have betrayed Yue Yang long ago.

Hui Tai Lang felt the people’s sympathy and found it annoying.

It is a sign of endearment when my master was beating me up, what do you think you all doing here, is it your business?

“Swallow this down, if you can’t, then I might really have dog meat pot tonight for dinner. I’m not joking.” Yue Yang said as he stuffed a ball of something into its mouth. As he did it quickly, nobody could see what it was. But if they knew that it was the nucleus of Huang Sha, a Heaven Realm Ranker who was a Level Eight Innate, they would have vomited blood.

“Meow! “ Hui Tai Lang wolfed it down and pretended that he was a cat as it rubbed against Yue Yang’s feet.

“Scram!“ Yue Yang shouted as he kicked it a hundred metres away.

“Woof woof... “ Hui Tai Lang felt extremely pleasant. Initially the energy from the nucleus of the Level 8 Innate was causing its body to be on the brink of bursting, but Yue Yang’s kick suppressed the energy nicely, which made Hui Tai Lang felt much comfortable.

Taking note of the time limit of the suppression, Hui Tai Lang quickly ran back.

Its front paws reached for the Bronze Grimoire as it looked at Yue Yang, signalling to him that it was ready and waiting for his command.

Everyone held their breath as silence loomed over the place. Rankers of the Soaring Dragon Continent such as Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai, Eagle-eye man, Eastern Sky King, Western Sky King, Feng Xiao Yun, Xue Wen Dao and Yan Qian Zhong all balled up their fists. Feng Kuang, Eagle-eye man and Dragon Ambassador Bi Bo leaned forward so much that they almost fell as they watched eagerly to witness the important moment... Everyone could see that Yue Yang was dead serious this time. If he was not certain, he wouldn't have brought Hui Tai Lang out to contract a Grimoire.

No one knew what he made Hui Tai Lang eat.

They only knew that Hui Tai Lang's energy had been amplified by tens of thousand instantly.

Maybe a historic moment with the first Divine Beast making its public appearance in Soaring Dragon Continent would happen in the next second. Would Yue Yang succeed?

Yue Yang used his feet to lift Hui Tai Lang's front paw onto the Bronze Grimoire...On the surface, it seemed like he was abusing it, but he was actually using his Innate Qi to help Hui Tai Lang, just like how he did with Yue Shuang the little girl.

Only astute people like Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai would notice the details.

They looked at each other immediately and nodded to each other.

It would be successful!

With Yue Yang's help, the success rate of contracting the Grimoire would be almost certain.

A golden light diffused from Hui Tai Lang's front paw, it wasn't too bright and was even a little dark.

However, the golden light slowly spread out, and the dark golden light was reflected onto the faces of the people around. It made them look as if they were covered in a layer of golden water, which made them looked like they were golden statues.

A golden light pillar rose to the sky...

Everyone raised their head to see as they all gasped... God, that height was even taller than the little girl just now, putting all the human warriors to shame.

The dark golden light pillar fell back, causing Hui Tai Lang's body to shake violently as large amount of smoke and flame rushed out of its mouth and nose. Its tail became transparent like a mist and then turned metal-like in texture in the next moment... Before people could respond, it became mercury-like and just as it looked as if it was melting to the ground, it became a patch of golden sand under the flabbergasted gaze of everybody.

The Bronze Grimoire became smaller gradually, and its design

became completely different from that of a human Bronze Grimoire.

A pale light circled around the Bronze Grimoire.

As its pages flipped slowly, observant Warriors realised that Hui Tai Lang's image was on it... Now, even a blind man would have known that Hui Tai Lang had successfully contracted a Grimoire!

The historical moment in the Soaring Dragon Continent had begun.

With all the warriors as witness, a Divine Beast was born in front of the public!

It was Hui Tai Lang!

A Beast who did not make a contract with its master but was groomed by its owner wholeheartedly; A Beast who let its master beat and scold it but could still be happy and contented; A Beast who was even smarter than a human; A Beast who could surpass a human contracting a Grimoire... Together with its owner, they would leave a glorious mark in mankind's history.

Of course, Hui Tai Lang did not care about that.

After successfully contracting the Grimoire, it was so happy that it transformed into a cucumber-like long body, wiggling on the stage. Afterwards, it grew a pair of wings as it flew in the sky

aimlessly. In the next moment, it grew three heads as they meowed, woofed and roared (tiger's roar) simultaneously. It even turned into a violent sandstorm as it blew up the skirts of gorgeous ladies on purpose in an attempt to please its master, because it knew that its master would like it...

“Come down immediately, are you trying to steal my limelight? I'd punish you for being so supercilious!” Yue Yang was boiling with anger as his beast was embarrassing him by being so haughty.

“Meow!” Hui Tai Lang lowered its head as it tucked its tails like a child who just made mischief. It obediently received a series of beating and scoldings from Yue Yang.

“Hui Tai Lang didn't do it purposefully, it was just too happy!” The Empress couldn't hold back her sympathy for Hui Tai Lang anymore as she went forward to stop Yue Yang in his tracks, otherwise Hui Tai Lang would have to continue suffering for a long while. Hui Tai Lang also took the chance to piggy back Yue Shuang, appearing like an obedient guard dog , which finally quelled Yue Yang's anger.

“Never mind, let me see what skill and Guardian Beast this stupid dog has!” Yue Yang said, jolting up those who were still in a daze back to their senses as they quickly crowded around him.

The Summoning Grimoire would unlock a skill of its owner and grant it a Guardian Beast.

Could it be that Hui Tai Lang also possessed it?

Chapter 375 – Transformation Skill, Replica Beast

The absurd matter of Hui Tai Lang making a contract with Grimoire had become a reality. People like Jun Wu You and the Old Fox fared better than the rest, they quickly recovered from their shock.

In any case, whatever Yue Yang's shocking actions was, it didn't seem strange to them anymore.

After all, that guy was way abnormal!

He was able to train himself to become an Innate at twenty years old, hence it wouldn't be a surprise that Hui Tai Lang could make a contract with a Grimoire now. They guessed that this might only be the beginning, sooner or later, all of his other Beasts like the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen would definitely own their own Grimoires...

“What is it? Let this king see what skill this big dog has.” The Eastern Sky King was one of the rare, courageous ones who wasn't conscious of Yue Yang. To him, even if Yue Yang was very powerful, he was still his son-in-law! Moreover, he still hadn't settled his business with Yue Yang for stealing his only daughter from him!

“This, this is?!” The Western Sky King who squeezed himself at the side widened his eyes.

Transformation Inherent Skill: To transform under certain conditions. Current Skill Level: Level 1.

It looked like a simple skill.

But everyone knew that it wasn't as simple as it looked... In retrospect, they saw Hui Tai Lang transformed into more than one form just now, such as growing wings, extending its body, becoming Cerberus, and it could even turn into sand and become sandstorm. All these meant that it could turn into element-type, strengthening-type, beast-type, and special-type beasts! With its transformation skill, it would have almost no weakness. Even if there was any, Hui Tai Lang could transform again and eliminate the weaknesses. This way, Hui Tai Lang's combat power would rise indefinitely!

Everyone sucked in a gasp of breath.

Abnormal, 'Transformation' was definitely an abnormal skill!

Upon seeing its Guardian Beast, everyone almost collapsed to the ground.

They had seen absurd things, but none to such extent.

Forget about a wolf making contract with a Grimoire, but how should the human Warriors feel about the fact that it possessed such a strong skill and Guardian Beast?

Clone Real Body: Special-type. Bronze Level One. Half-physical body. Able to replicate a clone of the real body that possessed a third of the real body's power. Possess the same skills as that of the real body, the duration of its existence and amount of summon is correlated to its Level. Skills: 'Clone', 'Real Body'.

Everyone was shocked by Hui Tai Lang's Inherent Skill and its Guardian Beast. Honestly speaking, no one had seen such an abnormal Guardian Beast and skill.

One Hui Tai Lang was already powerful enough.

If it were to summon a clone of itself during a fight, and if the opponent wasn't able to differentiate between the two, even an Innate would suffer an ugly defeat! This was because a Guardian Beast would never truly die, if the opponent were to realise that they had only defeated a Guardian Beast after a long fight and the real Hui Tai Lang remained unwounded, the opponent would probably vomited blood till death from the blow.

Even more terrifyingly, there might not only be one clone. If Hui Tai Lang levelled up, it would be able to summon more than one clone.

If an opponent were to be surrounded by a gang of wolf where only one of them was real while the others were clones with one third of its power, the opponent would land himself in dire straits when the fight began.

“Woof!”

Hui Tai Lang raised its front paws to summon its Guardian Beast.

A dull golden light flashed past and then disappeared quickly.

An exact replica of Hui Tai Lang jumped into the air from Hui Tai Lang’s body.

Everyone stared at Hui Tai Lang and its exact replica, as they weren’t able to differentiate between the two because both looked almost the same as if they were twins. However, they were still able to notice one difference between the two. As the real Hui Tai Lang hadn’t moved and continued to remain in its summoning pose, its paws were still resting on the grimoire... Fortunately it maintained this posture, otherwise they would really be unable to tell them apart.

“Who are you trying to deceive!” Yue Yang shouted as he suddenly raised his leg in the air and kicked the Hui Tai Lang that was not holding its grimoire, sending it flying high in the air. Only Yue Yang with the Heaven Eyes Divine Vision would be able to see which was the real Hui Tai Lang. It feigned obedience quickly, while the ‘Hui Tai Lang’ who remained in summoning gesture disappeared after being recalled.

“...” Everyone broke out in sweat as they felt ashamed of themselves.

Who would have thought that humans, who had seen through countless ulterior motives and schemings, and regarded fighting and bleeding on the battlefield as normal, would actually be duped by a dog's trick.

Hui Tai Lang was so cunning as it made its replica place its paws on the Grimoire while it jumped up itself.

If there was really a fight, the opponent who thought that the replica was the real one would definitely be toyed by Hui Tai Lang mercilessly. Would there be an even more cunning Beast than it? Although Shun Tian's Beast, King, was able to personify, knew how to speak, was good at combat skill, and even had certain intellectual ability, but would it know how to use this kind of tricks to deceive people?

Although people weren't familiar with Shun Tian's Beast, they believed that King wouldn't know how to use this trick, even if it was a Holy Beast.

This was the difference between a Holy Beast and a Divine Beast.

Although Hui Tai Lang wouldn't be able to defeat King currently, but what about a decade later?

Everyone could safely say that after ranking up, Hui Tai Lang would definitely make King suffer a ugly defeat....

One wouldn't be afraid if a Beast is strong, but would fear it if it is

smart!

This saying had been around the Soaring Dragon continent ever since 5000 years ago. Until now, it was still true and never proved to be more accurate.

Although Yue Yang wasn't on par with Shun Tian now, everyone believed that Yue Yang would be able to surpass Shun Tian, probably in just a matter of decades... The only person whom Yue Yang might experience a hard time overtaking would be Zhi Zun. When Zhi Zun became Yue Yang's Tong Tian Tower Introducer in the past, she might have already knew his potential. It's just that the other Warriors were unaware of it at all. The scary thing about Yue Yang wasn't his combat power, but his potential, the amount of potential that had yet to turn into combat power. For Innate Rankers like Shun Tian and Thousand Globin Sect Leader who had almost reached their maximum potential they would definitely be jealous of Yue Yang.

Potential might not equate to combat power, but it could determine one's future.

Yue Yang's actions shocked the Soaring Dragon Continent completely.

Not only did he have a sister with a lot of potential, he also own a Beast contracted to a Grimoire, and it even became a Divine Beast born under the public eye... Could anyone doubt his power now? For those who were jealous of him, if they were really powerful, could they get themselves a Divine Beast and walk it along the streets?

Both the Da Xia and Tian Luo Kingdom held celebratory ceremony, and even the ambassador from Zi Jin admitted sourly that it was a miracle of the Soaring Dragon Continent.

“My son-in-law...” This was the Eastern Sky King’s stock phrase recently.

“You are talking about Princess Qian Qian? No, I have never heard that she was seeing Yue Yang, there’s no such thing.” Jun Wu You said that he was completely unaware when others went forward to congratulate him on being Yue Yang’s future father-in-law, he added that Princess Qian Qian was cultivating and hadn’t seen Yue Yang for a long time, if not for it she would definitely attend Yue Shuang’s Grimoire contracting ceremony.

“Undoubtedly, Hui Tai Lang is a Divine Beast. As for the question pertaining to why third young master has not contracted it, it’s useless for you to ask me because if you could understand why, you’d be him!” Lin Miao, one of the head guard of the Yue Clan indicated. Addressing the countless number of people mentioning their concerns about Hui Tai Lang rebelling had long become a pain in the ass for him.

“I want to marry big brother Yue Yang.” Princess Fei Yan of Zi Jin said. She was only six years old.

“I am friends with him.” The scholar-looking, white robed ‘San He’ from the Warrior Guild boasted, but nobody believed him.

(Shiro: The chatty white-robed guy that Yue Yang beat half to

death in chapter 84)

“Yes, Yue Yang got the Puppet Encyclopedia from our ancestor, Yue Gong, and inherited his knowledge. Yue Yang then built upon the fundamentals from Yue Gong’s theories to create and develop a new puppet beast.” After the birth of the Divine Beast, Third Uncle Yue Ling announced that the Yue Clan had upgraded their Puppet Beasts and would be selling off large quantities of Bronze-ranked, Silver-ranked and even Gold-ranked Puppet Beasts. But needless to say, priorities would be given to Kingdoms.

“I’m going to save money to get one of those Gold-ranked Beast and ride it to marry my wife. Who do you think I am? I know Yue Yang and I’d beat up anyone who doesn’t believe me!” Tie Dan, a bandit leader who had forced nineteen woman to become his concubines, said as he beat his hairy chest to swear that he knew Yue Yang too.

(Shiro: Can’t remember, anyone has any idea?)

“Save those lies!” The Mercenaries broke out in laughter.

“Students, I’m glad that you all are here to attend my lessons, because you know, there has never been so many students coming to my lessons. Previously, even the few students who came were just here to sleep.” The Old Fox who had become an Innate Ranker continued to teach, and had become the most popular teacher in the world. It was a good thing for Ivy Academy because while other schools were scrambling to recruit students, they were rejecting them due to full capacity, to the disappointment of many. Luckily, the Old Fox did not set any restrictions to his lessons and even let people from other colleges in to attend, be it students or teachers.

Old Fox would normally emphasize one point. "Students, let me remind you that you shouldn't try to imitate Yue Yang, because his success can't be replicated! Everyone should stay grounded and continue their cultivation, because it's impossible for everyone to become like Yue Yang. It's really impossible! I would be happy if you guys can become people like Fatty Hai and Ye Kong. Especially for students from the Death Class, you all should know how they were like in the class in the past. Worst of the worst! But they placed in hard work afterwards... If you all don't wish to be left behind, then you will have to cultivate patiently. There's no shortcuts. Even Yue Yang's achievements stem from his cultivation and the amount of effort he placed in was far greater than what you would imagine! Don't ever become arrogant and complacent about your future... Yue Yang has already showed an obvious example to all of you, if you cultivate conscientiously, it will definitely bear you fruits of labour..."

As the Old Fox was using Yue Yang as an example to teach his students, Yue Yang bid farewell to Fourth Mother. Together with Hui Tai Lang, they proceeded to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

He had to continue cultivating.

As Fourth Mother had to take care of the baby left behind by Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng, she didn't want to enter Yue Yang's Grimoire World. It was also because she was afraid that she would affect his training. She decided to continue staying in the Mirage until Yue Yang was strong enough to be fearless towards all of his opponents, only then would she agree to live with him. Yue Shuang the little girl on the other hand, would be raised by the Sickly Beauty in the meantime, so that she could learn from Yue

Yang and the Sickly Beauty. They could slowly find a good teacher for her in the future...

Yue Shuang was reluctant to leave her mother's side as she cried for a long time before finally deciding to go with her brother obediently.

Due to the harsh reality of the survival of the fittest in this dog-eat-dog world, Yue Yang had to make this decision.

Only the powerful ones would be able to continue to live in this world.

Become stronger.

Be it for a child or an adult, everyone would have to become more powerful, and they must be even more powerful than their opponent!

Yue Yang brought Hui Tai Lang, who disguised itself as a Bronze-ranked Level 3 Beast, to return back to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and teleported to the underground city of the Thunder Fortress. The impatient Toad Merchant Jia De scrambled to go forth and said, "Mr. Titan, there are riots happening in your mine, please decide if you want to alert the authorities to force them to succumb or if you want to try to calm them down. As for your arena, your fighters and fighter demons are already at their limit, if you don't wish to give them salary, please give them some food at least! "

“My mine? My arena?” It was only until then did Yue Yang remember winning over An Dong’s entire asset, because he left hastily the other time as he was worried about Fourth Mother.

Chapter 376 – Hoist This Idiot Up And Beat Him!

“It’s all my fault. That day I did not clarify that all of An Dong’s properties had already been placed under your name. This includes the West Wind Ore Mine, Underground Arena, ten stores, and two hundred mobile vendor’s booths. There are also three thousand earthen cottages and five thousand slaves... a lot of slaves have already fled, and some of them had switched their allegiance to another master. However, I estimate that those who remained because they had nowhere to go is at least three thousand. Furthermore, Mr. Chen said that An Dong still had a huge domain and a lot of assets in the Qi Lan continent waiting for you to take over. However, Mr. Chen had not yet returned after he left. And the records are still in Mr. Yan Zheng’s hands. Ah, Mr. Yan Zheng is the new butler that Mr. Chen hired for you.” Jia De talked non stop and Yue Yang listened for a long time, only to discover that he had won a terrible mess.

“Are you trying to say that An Dong left this terrible mess and not a single gold can be earned right?” Yue Yang asked.

“It really isn’t like that. An Dong was a scoundrel that was extremely extravagant. The mansion’s decoration and treasures alone amount to at least two million gold. If you must know, the carpet itself is made from velvet. Cough, we still have money, but the Lord Demon Eye came yesterday and grabbed a huge portion of it. He said that it was payment for Nightmare’s and Tiger Nian’s death. I felt that this was a bit wrong, that loss should not be placed on Mr. Titan’s body because you are Mr. An Dong’s greatest creditor. However, Lord Demon Eye is one of Thunder Fortress’ three great leaders and his position is only second to King Chong

Ni. Furthermore, Mr. Titan, you were not here, so I had no methods of stopping him.” Jia De’s face was filled with fear. He was afraid that once Yue Yang became angry he would behead him on the spot.

“How much did he take away?” Yue Yang asked.

“Three million or maybe four million. An Dong’s concubines, the two succubuses, knew where An Dong had kept his valuables. Before Mr. Yan Zheng had arrived, Lord Demon Eye had already taken a huge amount from the treasury.” Jia De saw that Yue Yang was still good and did not become hopping mad. He further supplemented: “Perhaps he also took away a few valuable pearls and magic crystals.”

“Then how much is left right now?” Yue Yang presumed that he did not immediately become a pauper.

“One million six hundred eighty thousand nine hundred fifty one gold.” Jia De sincerely hoped that the future owner would not be angry after hearing this sum. After all, the remaining money was not even half of the total. Furthermore, the ore mine was currently facing an armed rebellion.

“What about the new butler, Mr. Yan Zheng?” After Yue Yang heard it, his heart calmed down. Luckily, this terrible mess still left him with a lot of money.

“He... when he was negotiating with the armed rebels, he had been detained.” Jia De wiped the perspiration on his forehead.

“If Mr. Titan doesn’t mind, there is no harm in transferring the Underground Arena to me and let me help you pass through this crisis. If you must know, we, the Hundred War Guild, had always been interested in the Underground Arena. Of course, if you agree to sell us the ore mine, then it would be better.” A merchant, with a face full of arrogance, walked inside with big steps. His face carried self-confidence and arrogantly looked at Yue Yang, as if he was a noble looking down on an upstart country boy.

He had already ignored the bowing Jia De.

Yue Yang did not recognize this arrogant guy and was extremely disgusted with his high and mighty attitude.

While wearing his Gemini Mask, Yue Yang’s emotions could not be seen. He wanted to see who dared to visit and negotiate a price with him. Could the ore mine’s armed rebellion have any connection with this guy?

“You are?” Yue Yang indifferently swept the arrogant guy a glance. His strength was not high, a Level 6 [Elder], but he had two bodyguards that were Level 7 [Overlord].

“I am Fu Luo from the Hundred War Guild. I am in charge of the Guild’s Thunder Fortress branch, a Rank 8 Gold Star Merchant.” This guy arrogantly casted Jia De a glance. He implied that Yue Yang should not treat him on the same level as Jia De.

“You want the Underground Arena? How much is the quoted

price?” Yue Yang wrinkled his brows. No one could see through his expression as he wore the Gemini Mask.

“One million five hundred thousand gold.” Fu Luo gave an extremely low price.

“No, this price only fits beggars.” Jia De was afraid that Yue Yang would suffer losses and hurriedly interrupted: “Mr. Titan, please forgive me for being honest and direct. You absolutely cannot agree to this price. Stupid An Dong had purchased this from others at four million gold, after repairs and remodeling, and purchasing gladiators and monsters, the Arena’s price would at least be five million gold. One million five hundred thousand gold is an insult to you!”

“Be careful of your words you toad! Let me tell you, you best shut up or else I will toss you out. How could you, an unprofitable Rank 3 Merchant along with that unprofitable Toad Guild behind you dare to clamor with our top 10 ranked guild? Annoying toad, do you understand the thing called rules? Do you understand the thing called a Ranker’s fury? You are starting a fight, humiliating and challenging our guild’s dignity! With just a wave of a hand, we could annihilate you and your guild. Let me warn you, move to one side because this is simply no place for you to speak!” Fu Luo thought that Jia De was a merchant who came to compete in bidding and apparently did not know that he was Yue Yang’s spokesperson. With an arrogant language he rained curses on Jia De. Even in front of the client, Yue Yang, he still dared to be this unrestrained. It seemed like he was normally an arrogant and wild person.

“...” Jia De was so shocked that he did not dare say another word as he shrunk back to a corner.

He stealthily raised his eyes and looked at Yue Yang, as if he was hoping that Yue Yang would stick out for him and speak a few words of fairness for him, or clarify once that he was his subordinate.

With only his small power, without a rankers backing, contending with the Hundred Wars Guild was equivalent to trying to do the impossible. He would only be courting death.

Jia De was someone Yue Yang had uses for.

Although Yue Yang was never an official, he had already seen a lot of political stories. He understood of a few underhanded trickeries that were used.

Yue Yang intentionally let Jia De cool down.

He did not quickly speak and first let the other party, Fu Luo, misunderstand. He let Fu Luo's overweening attitude rise a bit more.

Seeing Yue Yang did not support him, Jia De immediately became sad. He clearly understood that the Hundred War Guild and An Dong were different. They were one Tong Tian Tower's top ten merchant guilds, with just one percent of their strength, they could overwhelm the whole of Golden Toad Guild. Titan can

belittle An Dong, but he absolutely cannot ignore the Hundred War Guild's representative... Of course, in his heart, Jia De still wished for Yue Yang to say one sentence, just one sentence.

He had already intended to rely on Yue Yang and waited for a chance to show his loyalty.

He hoped that it was now, but unfortunately Yue Yang did not say anything.

When Fu Luo saw that Yue Yang did not speak, he even thought that Yue Yang had become intimidated by his Hundred War Guild's fame. His attitude became even more arrogant and wild.

He intentionally used a lecturing attitude and said: "Young Ranker, I have heard before that you are strong. However, could you even compare to the master of our Hundred War Guild? He has attained the level of Innate Rank 8, Lord Shen Pan. He, the Black Prince, and Lord Shun Tian are best friends and even allied together. I believe you are familiar with these three Ranker's names. Without any disrespect, they are existences even more famous than the Leader of the Thunder Fortress, King Chong Ni."

"Becoming enemies with our Hundred War Guild has no benefits. If you were to cooperate with us and do business, then it will end with mutual benefits. The price of one million five hundred gold for the Underground Arena is not unreasonable. The three strongest gladiators had already been killed by you, a majority of the gladiators had also ran away while you were gone, someone even stole a part of the strong monsters. The most important thing is after this matter, Chong Ni had commanded that in the future,

bettors cannot put up collaterals as bets, in order to avoid a similar disaster happening again... These losses have directly affected the selling price.” Fu Luo talked non-stop, lecturing Yue Yang, the rookie, in the business world.

“Finally, other than us, the Hundred War Guild, there will be no second person who would purchase the Underground Arena. I think I don’t have to clarify too much, Mr. Titan should also be able to understand my meaning... Seeing Mr. Titan’s strength and urgent need for money, we had intentionally provided a high price for negotiation. Mr. Titan, we quoted the price of one million five hundred thousand gold. It is absolutely the highest price in the entire Thunder Fortress and it is the only price. Other than us, no one else would quote a second price!”

What Fu Luo was trying to say was that they want this Underground Arena no matter what.

If Yue Yang did not want to sell it to them, then he would definitely be unable to sell it to others. Furthermore, no one would dare bid against them.

If what he said at the start was a lecture, then what he said in the end was undoubtedly a threat!

He saw that Yue Yang did not let out a sound and thought that he was afraid of the Hundred War Guild. So, he added seriousness in his tone and warn this youngster to be a bit tactful!

“...” Yue Yang simply wanted to laugh. He originally thought of

using him to restrain Jia De, who would have thought that this idiot truly cooperated with him.

Shen Pan, he had heard of this Innate Ranker.

He was someone who believed he was righteous.

He was originally named “[Shen Ji](#)”, afterwards he leveled up into Innate Rank and changed his name into “Shen Pan”.

(Shiro: Shen Ji means audit while Shen Pan means judgement, if it makes any sense)

Shen Pan was indeed a Level 8 Innate. However, his Innate Rank 8 is an overstatement. Whether it was in ranking or in strength, Chong Ni, who was also a Level 8 Innate, was higher by a huge length. In the Tong Tian Tower Sixth Floor’s Ranking Board, this Shen Pan is considered as the weakest Level 8 Innate amongst others.

This was like the game [Heroes of Might and Magic 3](#)’s [ghost dragon](#). It was a rank 7 organism but, it was incomparable to the Hairy Legged Uncle, the Black Dragon or even Titan.

(Shiro: I swear, the author’s references are ancient. Can’t find any english records of the monster names, so we just translate as it is)

The Hundred War Guild that Shen Pan had established was indeed one of the top ten merchant guilds.

However at the same time it was the weakest among the top ten.

Of course, compared to fake Innates, Shen Pan's strong existence was still something that others could not look up at. Even in the eyes of the fake Innates, he was still a strong Level 8 Innate.

What made Yue Yang frown was the other name.

Black Prince.

Yue Yang now understood that the black shadow who had attacked him with Shun Tian on that day was not the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader but rather the Black Prince.

The Black Prince was a mysterious Innate Ranker. He possessed a powerful strength, yet nobody knows his origins... Because those who know him are all dead; they were all exterminated by this guy. The Black Prince is one of the top ten homicidal maniac in the Bloody Villains List. His rank and strength were far above Chong Ni. He was on the same level as Shun Tian and the Thousand Goblin Sect Leader.

This guy was the just newly added candidate to Yue Yang's kill list.

When he visited Fourth Mother, Tian Luo's Emperor, Hua Xu Ri, had hired someone to deliver a letter to Yue Yang. In the letter, Yue Yang had gained a secret report about the Black Prince.

How did Hua Xu Ri gain information about the Black Prince, could it be given by the Night Empress?

Yue Yang placed those things aside for now.

However, regarding the Black Prince's secret attack that day that almost killed him and Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Yue Yang would absolutely take revenge.

"If Mr. Titan has made a decision, then sign on this transfer contract!" Fu Luo's tone sounded as if he was giving to charity. If he had not heard about Titan killing the strong Nightmare and Tiger Nian under the audience's watch before he came here, he would have lowered the price to 550,000 gold. Fu Luo looked at this young human who wore a Gold-ranked Mask on his face and laughed coldly in his heart. So what if he is strong? Could he surpass their master, Shen Pan? This brat was thinking of becoming famous in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, but he is still too young! He should learn about the ways of this world first, but meanwhile, Fu Luo would receive this boy's tuition fees first!

"Slap!"

Yue Yang raised his hand and heavily slapped Fu Luo.

The slap smashed his teeth to pieces, causing him to spurt out blood violently.

The two Level 7 [Overlord] hurriedly came to protect him. Yue

Yang stretched out his hands, one for each person, and lifted the two like chicks. He lifted them up high and smashed them hard on the ground. Two heads boomed and smashed on the Velvet Carpet and the Obsidian Floor. Just like watermelons, they were smashed into pieces.

“You dare hit me?” Fu Luo still did not dare believe this was real. He was Shen Pan’s spokesperson yet this brat dared hit him?

“Hitting you is a must, not hitting you would be a grievance!” Yue Yang slapped Fu Luo a few more times. He then beat him onto the floor and used his foot to pound him a few times. When Fu Luo struggled to escape, Yue Yang had warned him: “I declare that Fu Luo, the manager of the Thunder Fortress branch of the Hundred War Guild had insulted Innate Ranker Titan’s honor. He must receive the most severe punishment in order to eliminate this Ranker’s Fury. If you dare run away, then I will retaliate against the Hundred War Guild by a hundred times. At the same time, I will order your arrest at the Warrior Guild!”

“What?” Fu Luo was shocked. He did not understand why the opposite party was so furious. If he did not want to sell the Arena, then forget about it, did he have to use this method?

“...” Jia De emotionally trembled.

He knows that Mr. Titan is not a charitable person, and more so not someone easily bullied.

Let alone Fu Luo, he even dared to get rid of the Innate Rankers,

Nightmare and Tiger Nian, publicly. He ignored that doing this would smear the Demon Eye's face and even directly made An Dong a poor wretch in an instant.

He was capable of conveniently bringing out Martial Spirit Pills, capable of making Mr. Chen treat him favorably, capable of making the Leader of the Thunder Fortress, Chong Ni, secretly praise him, so how could he fear Fu Luo? Shen Pan was very strong. however , would he risk offending Mr. Titan just because of a subordinate who was only the manager of the Thunder Fortress branch? Can't say for sure, but the power supporting Mr.Titan's behind the scenes might even be stronger than Shen Pan's!

Thinking about this, Jia De's eyes immediately lit up.

He clenched both his fists. If there was any hesitation in his heart before, then there is none now. He already firmly decided to follow Mr. Titan.

As the saying goes 'Under a big tree the shade is plentiful'. Mr. Titan, who did not care even if it was Shen Pan, was absolutely the master that he wants to serve in this lifetime.

He absolutely did not make a mistake!

"Jia De!" Yue Yang called out.

"Yes!" When Jia De heard this, he only felt his blood rush emotionally that his throat became slightly hoarse.

“Hoist this idiot up and beat him. If he dares to resist, then cut off his limbs and feed them to the dogs!” Yue Yang big hands slapped Jia De’s shoulders and spoke with extreme seriousness: “Acting as my friend and my specially chosen business partner, you have an incomparably honorable status. Listen, whoever smears your face, then it means that they are smearing mine... Remember this point, Jia De, you are already my friend! If others dare to curse you, you must give him a slap on their face. If he dares to punch you, then you can cut off his limbs! I, Titan, does not have a coward for a friend. I only have noble and dignified warriors as friends! Straighten yourself and bring out your grandeur, punish this idiot without mercy!”

“Yes!” Jia De was extremely moved. He felt the blood rush almost burst out of his veins. He used his life’s loudest voice and shouted.

Yue Yang’s face pretended to be serious, but in his heart, he was secretly happy. Although he does not have the talent as a conman, his conning skill was still more than enough to trick a merchant to do odd jobs for him with a little use of stratagem.

Next, he must handle the matter of the ore mine.

Those slaves at the ore mine had not rebelled last time but caused trouble right after he left. Could it be that there was someone secretly causing problems in secret?

Chapter 377 – Special Item?

After Jia De returned from beating Fu Luo up, Yue Yang was already done with ransacking the whole of An Dong's mansion.

To be more accurate, it was the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice who did the job. An Dong was an extremely shrewd merchant, so he must have possessed more than one treasury. Yue Yang didn't believe that An Dong would let his concubines know about the location of his treasuries if it was the only one he had. Would that be what An Dong would do? Being dubious, Yue Yang drove Jia De away and summoned the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice.

“Discovered a hidden door and large amount of gold; Discovered special items, charged items and precious ores...”

The Quintet Seeking Golden Mice moved around swiftly and found two hidden doors quickly.

Apart from the large treasury, there was another two behind these two hidden doors.

On the Grimoire, new targets appeared continuously as the mice discovered more items. The location of the small hidden door discovered in the hall was very secluded as it was behind an oil painting. The surface of the wall behind it appeared flat and smooth, and the trigger was actually the nails used to hang the oil painting. When Yue Yang pressed on the nails, it vibrated slightly as the wall caved in silently to form a space that could fit a small box, revealing the treasury within. It wasn't spacious as it couldn't

even fit one person, but it was filled with ores that gave off a blue glow. Needless to say, those were Thunder Ores unique to the Thunder Fortress, and they were all of high quality.

Although Yue Yang had not seen them before, he knew from the Puppet Encyclopedia that the quality of the Thunder Ores weren't correlated to their size, but to their purity. The bluer they appeared, the purer they were and the higher their quality would be.

Equipped with the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice and Heaven Eye Divine Vision, Yue Yang was able to tell their quality at one glance, although this might be the first time he saw them.

Among the ores, only two were so blue that they appeared almost transparent, these two were the best of the best.

One was akin to the shape of a pearl and was only the size of a thumb, but it was of a higher quality between the two.

The other one's shape wasn't that neat, but if one could bear to carve it into shape of a diamond and embed it onto their weapon, it could enhance the lightning power of their weapons. This ore would probably drive all the Rankers under the electrical elemental category crazy!

These two Thunder Ores were no longer ores, but were gems of high quality and was considered priceless!

There were also some other fist-sized ores giving off a deep blue glow.

Although they weren't transparent, they were also of high quality. They would be one of the best items to be used in strengthening weapons or creating lightning type puppet Beast.

The remaining deep blue Thunder Ores' quality were a little worse off. But of course, if they were to compare these deep blue ores to the normal, light blue Thunder Ores, these deep blue ones would fare far better. Even the normal light blue Thunder Ores would have made others jump in joy if they got them. If these Thunder Ores weren't of top quality, then An Dong the rich man wouldn't have hide them so cautiously.

Yue Yang pocketed the Thunder Ores An Dong painstakingly collected without second thoughts.

If not for his enormous bet of 50 Platinum Grimoire, An Dong wouldn't have lost everything.

His wealth meant nothing towards Platinum Grimoires.

Moreover, the worst thing he did was to cause the death of Demon Eye's followers, Nightmare and Tiger Nian. After losing his right-hand men, Demon Eye's power had been diminished greatly, and if he were to lose his place in the Thunder Fortress, he would definitely not let An Dong off... Facing the Rankers' wrath, even if An Dong was very wealthy, he wouldn't be able to resolve the issue because it wasn't a matter of money. Demon Eye was one of the

three leaders of the Thunder Fortress, and as Chong Ni planned to advance into the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower, the next City Master could have been Demon Eye. However, now that his strongest supporters, Nightmare and Tiger Nian, were killed, coupled with the attacks from Mountain Elf and Blood River, his chances seemed to be slim now.

Demon Eye also seemed to be venting his anger on Yue Yang, the newbie Titan. His action of snatching money from An Dong was a form of testing the water.

If Yue Yang were to put up with it, Demon Eye might take that as a signal to continue.

The rioting in the mines might also be caused by Demon Eye.

But Yue Yang decided to ignore Demon Eye and the others at the moment.

They were all like elite, low-level bosses, just like [Blood Raven](#), [Corpsefire](#) and [The Countess](#), whose sole purpose was to provide players with equipments when they were defeated by the player.

(Shiro: All of those monsters are from Diablo 2)

“Eh?”

Yue Yang discovered an special item in the treasury found beneath the bricks in the kitchen.

This was his greatest takeaway today as he couldn't use his Heaven Eye Divine Vision to identify what it was.

It was a black, spherical item.

It had some design of the Heaven Runes on its surface, but no matter how Yue Yang dredge into his memory bank, he couldn't recall what it was called. But with the tragic guy's mother knowledge inheritance, Yue Yang felt some sense of familiarity. What is it exactly? A globe that could seal a Ranker's soul? Just like that of that could seal the Dark Golden Specter?

Yue Yang fished out the Silver Moon Ornament given by the Silver Dragon Sisters who were War God Guards. He felt that both were similar but yet different in certain sense.

Forget about it, let's just take it first and study it slowly in the future!

Before Jia De came in, Yue Yang kept all the gold coins, jewels and equipments from the second treasury into the Lich Ring. What made him slightly disappointed was that among all the equipments, only one was Gold-ranked while the rest were Silver-ranked and Bronze-ranked. As for the jewels that only women would adore, Yue Yang couldn't be bothered about them, unless they were jewels like the White Dragon Pearl, Green Dragon Pearl, Vermillion Bird Pearl, White Tiger Pearl and Black Turtle Pearl.

Yue Yang didn't count how many gold coins there were, he only knew that they could fill up two whole chests.

The gold coins were different from normal ones as all bore a unique Dwarf Rune on their surface, so it seemed that they would be even more valuable than normal gold coins.

The rest were medicinal ingredients like Gold-ranked Ivory, Rhinoceros Horns and Deer Horns, and a few precious herbs and even fewer pills. There were also weird collectibles that made Yue Yang speechless, such as the 'Spider Eye', 'Scorpion Tail', 'Globin Nail', 'Skeleton Ash', 'Fairy Saliva' and 'Witch Blood'.

“Looks like An Dong must have been suffering from kidney failure, such that there are so many kidney-boosting herbs. There’s also alcohol!” Yue Yang said as he dug out a huge jug of Tiger Whip Wine.

When Jia De entered, Yue Yang was already done ransacking.

No one knew anything.

Yue Yang was contented with his loots, after all, finding the two top quality Thunder Ores and that special Sphere was a pleasant surprise to him.

The only regret was that he did not find any valuable medicinal ingredients or gems, because they were things that Yue Yang had to collect, and had to be in one set.

After completing the Prison Emperor Divine Palace for the Old

Dragon Turtle and giving him the Prison Emperor Divine Staff, Yue Yang only got one Black Turtle Pearl in return. Although Jun Wu You gave him a White Dragon Pearl in return, it couldn't replace the Green Dragon Pearl. Yue Yang was only left with the Green Dragon, White Tiger and Vermilion Bird Pearl.

“What are you going to do with the mine and the arena?” Jia De adjusted his mentality as Yue Yang's appointed merchant.

“For the arena, feed the beasts what they are lacking in; As for the fighters, offer those who wants to leave ten gold coins, if anyone feel that it was too little, ask him to see me. It's okay if he wishes to stay, but he will have to pass through my evaluation as i don't want to waste my money on useless people. No one should think that they can skive under me. The same goes to An Dong's servants, if they wish to leave, give them money, and if they want to stay, they have to be tested on their loyalty and ability.” Yue Yang was also hinting Jia De not to be too arrogant.

“Yes, of course, loyalty is important.” Jia De wasn't worried, because he had already given his all, so his loyalty shouldn't be an issue. As for his abilities, although he couldn't fight, he was definitely good at business!

“I will visit the mine personally.” The Thunder Fortress was only Yue Yang's first step in dominating the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, yet the rioters want to play with him? He had to make sure that the beasts here were aware of who the real player was! Yue Yang wasn't going to remain as a mine owner or a slave, but he had to take small steps to defeat the ultimate demon, Chong Ni. He couldn't pick a fight with Chong Ni instantly, so he had to fight the

smaller demons first, and defeat the BOSS the last. It'd be more interesting this way.

If Yue Yang were to defeat all the big and small BOSS in the Thunder Fortress, forget about the rewards from the Warrior Guild, Yue Yang would be able to make a fortune just from the loots in the Thunder Fortress.

An Dong?

He was merely a beginning in Yue Yang's quest of defeating demons and snatching their treasures!

There were five underground mines, and the Central Mine belonged to Chong Ni, the owner of the Thunder Fortress. It was the biggest mine of all, and it also yield the greatest amount and highest quality of Thunder Ores.

The remaining four were the Grand Eastern Mine, Western Wind Mine, Southern Sand Mine and Northern Desert Mine. Grand Eastern Mine belonged to Demon Eye, Western Wind Mine belonged to An Dong, Southern Sand Mine belonged to both Mountain Elf and Blood River, and the Northern Desert Mine belonged to the City Master of the Underground City, Ma Long the ancient Beast. The Southern Sand Mine was the biggest one after the Central Mine, and it was owned by Blood River and Mountain Elf. On comparison, Western Wind Mine was the smallest and its ore production was only a third of the others'. It was initially bidden jointly by An Dong and another Ranker called Xi Li, but all the shares went to An Dong later as Xi Li died suddenly.

“Everyone suspected that An Dong caused the death of Xi Li. He was probably secretly supported by Demon Eye and the killing as done by Nightmare, but there were no concrete evidences. This caused Xi Li’s descendants to be disadvantaged and didn’t go forward to fight for it, so An Dong got this mine easily. Mr. Titan, do you think that someone was actually supporting this riot in the dark?” Jia De said as he introduced the mines to Yue Yang. He did not mention things explicitly as he was afraid that those with sharp ears could decipher his speech.

“No big deal, it wasn’t even worth my laughter.” Yue Yang acted as if he was the most powerful man in the world.

“Yes.” What Jia De admired most about Yue Yang was his attitude. As a ranker, he could be as arrogant and aggressive as he wished, this was what that made him impressive!

The underground mine extended through several kilometres. Its entrance and densely packed tunnels were as complex as a spider’s web.

It was very dry in the tunnels as there was little water.

There were a lot of glowing ores that could be barely seen in the dark.

Only after turning into a corner did they see specially made turpentine oil torches.

Almost all of the rioters were slaves, amounting to a few thousand, while a minority were supervisors. They were led by two Beast twin brothers who possessed power akin to that of a Level Seven Overlord and possessed a giant Silver-ranked sword in their hands each. There was also an Ox-head Supervisor that had a slightly lousier equipment, a Bronze-ranked axe.

More than a hundred Beast Guards turned from supervisors to rebelling soldiers.

In addition, there were more than a hundred slaves, similarly armed with weapons and defense equipments, following closely behind their three rioting leaders.

An even larger number of slaves were hiding in the dark as they watched all these numbly. When they saw their new master, Yue Yang, coming, they were shocked and many of them shuddered.

“Among all of you, who is the Xia Pu and Xia Er Brothers?” Yue Yang already knew who they were, he was merely testing them to see how they’d respond.

“ You are?” Xia Pu, the brother with a scar across his face, stood out.

All the rioters, including him, were puzzled as to why their new master would send such a weak human over to negotiate with them.

He is at most a Level Six Elder, and his Beast is even worse. It is actually a Bronze-ranked Level Three Iron Back Demon Wolf, the power of this Beast wouldn't even allow it to survive in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, why would he want it for? It does not seem like a pet too! The weirdest thing is that this human who came over to negotiate was wearing a Gold-ranked mask on his face. What a waste! People will probably snatch it away from him once he steps out of his house...

Who is this guy exactly?

The new master's name seemed to be Titan, and it was said that he was able to kill Nightmare and Tiger Nian, who were Innate Rankers. Could it be that this guy was Ranker Titan's brother, or son?

Chapter 378 – Let Me Touch Them!

“Mr. Titan...” Jia De was about to introduce Yue Yang, but the twin brothers standing at the opposite side suddenly charged forward like lightning, trying to launch a sneak attack.

The two Ordinary Level 6 Golem Guards beside Jia De were blown away mercilessly, repelled several metres behind.

One of the brothers without a scar on his face unsheathed his great sword and pressed them against Jia De’s neck.

The other brandished his great sword and charged straight towards Yue Yang.

The tip of his great sword stopped right at Yue Yang’s throat, so close that Yue Yang would immediately die if he thrust his sword forward even by a little.

However, Yue Yang not only didn’t tremble in fear, he even showed an arrogant expression as if he was someone who had gained the upperhand. He asked, with an extraordinarily calm voice, “Is this counted as kidnapping?”

“Mr. Titan Jnr., please don’t act foolishly.” The man who had a scar on his face was Xia Pu, the older of the twin brothers. He threatened in a cold voice, “I know you are a little skilled, but don’t even try to struggle, otherwise, I won’t hesitate cutting your throat open. I don’t have any intention of harming the body of the noble young master, but I hope you can act smarter.”

“Why are you guys trying to rebel?” Yue Yang asked them.

“Hahaha...”

When Xia Pu heard Yue Yang, he was shocked for a moment, then he started laughing like a madman, as if he had just heard the funniest joke in the whole world.

Not only him, his brother and the rest of the Ox-head guards also started to laugh, some even laughed to tears.

Behind Yue Yang, a black light flashed.

An incomparably sharp dagger suddenly pressed against Yue Yang's neck, and a dark figure restrained Yue Yang from the back. A delicate face slowly moved forward and pressed against Yue Yang's ears, sneering with a cold, heartless tone, “My dear noble young master who has never tasted starvation all his life, you will understand why we want to rebel if I threw you into the mine and lock you up for two weeks! Who are you guys to exploit us so? For what reason? Just because you are born with a noble status? Just because you are more powerful than us? We are also living beings with pride, but we are actually treated like slaves. Locked inside at the bottom of the mine as slaves and working for you guys year after year, digging ores for you guys... Do you know how many people died from exhaustion in this mine? Their bones can pile up into a mountain! They have made you countless riches, but what have you ever done to them? Have you given them a salary? No, we have never even eaten till we are full! Look at you, you wear

Dragon Leather Armor and a Gold-ranked Mask, all of those are from our sweat and blood. Don't you even feel a shred of guilt, you bloody leecher?!"

When Yue Yang heard her, he clapped his hands and laughed out, "Am I truly experiencing a slave rebellion now? Your argument is really logical, even I am almost moved!"

When the dark figure behind heard Yue Yang's insincere voice, she angrily punched him from the back.

However, the dark figure noticed that while her fist was actually in pain from the punch, that boy didn't seem to feel anything.

The dark figure became even more furious and pressed her dagger more forcefully against Yue Yang's skin, "Don't even try to talk your way out of this, or I will kill you! Don't think that you are a big shot just because you have an Innate Ranker as your parents. In my eyes, you are just a trash second generation!"

"Please don't kill him! Mr. Titan is not someone you can afford to offend. If you hurt even a single strand of his hair, you would all die tragically. Don't you guys want to negotiate your conditions? Say them now, Mr. Titan will definitely help you guys!" Of course, Jia De knew that with only these few people in front, they would not be able to defeat his master. However, he coordinated with Yue Yang's farce and shouted in panic, pretending to be terrified. That level of acting was definitely worthy of an Oscar.

"We want 5% share of the mine to be used for our salary and

improving our living conditions,” The older brother Xia Pu stated his first condition.

“Impossible.” Yue Yang didn’t wait for him to finish and rejected him immediately.

“You won’t cry until you see your coffin, is that it? If you dare to speak one more word, I swear I will cut off your tongue.” The dark figure behind kneed Yue Yang’s back furiously, trying to push Yue Yang to the ground. Beyond his expectations, he was unable to move his ‘captive’ at all.

“I’m really scared...” Yue Yang’s words and his unmatching calm expression really made the dark figure furious.

“5% shares of the mine. Its main use would be as insurance to compensate laborers in case of death and disability. You have to agree to this at the very least.” Xia Er, the scarless brother emphasized this point, it was one of the crucial points of their negotiation. Of course Jia De didn’t agree to it, he only said that he would mention it to his boss, but he couldn’t make this decision for them.

“There must be rest time from digging mines. Two days of rest during the week and no more than 16 hours of work per day.

“Every time a miner found a high quality ore, the mine owner would have to give him a reward according to the price of the ore. The reward amount must not be lesser than 1% of the ore price.” The dark figure who was holding Yue Yang also had a condition.

“We must continue to serve as supervisors of the mine, and in the future you are not to take revenge against us or force us to become laborers. You would need the mine owner’s personal signature as guarantee.” Xia Pu, whose face was scarred, looked at Yue Yang. He paused slightly and added, “Other than the above points, there is also one important condition. Adequate food must be supplied to the mine. However, not every race can eat meat, and not every race can eat vegetables. Our food needs are different, the mine owner must guarantee enough supply of food for all of us.”

“So if some of you guys want to drink breast milk, I will have to find a nursing nanny for you? Is that what you mean?” Yue Yang asked.

“You...” The dark figure was so angry that she almost exploded.

Her sharp dagger moved swiftly and almost pierced into Yue Yang’s body. Her anger would not be appeased if she didn’t spill some blood.

But Xia Pu’s sword jumped up and stopped the dagger quickly.

Xia Pu, who was the leader of the group, shook his hand, “Don’t hurt him. We don’t have to quarrel with a second generation trash who is born with a silver spoon and never tasted poverty before. Take him down and lock him up together with Mr. Yan Zheng.” He then waved his hands at Jia De and said, “Go back and tell your master. If he agree with our conditions, all of us will start working immediately. Otherwise, we are determined to rebel until the end,

even if he dispatched the guards to attack us... We'd rather be annihilated and spill our blood all over the mine grounds than go back to slavery!"

Jia De looked at Yue Yang once, before he hesitatingly asked, "Brother Xia Pu, I can understand why you guys want to fight for your salary and all that. After all, no one will be willing to work for free. However, taking Mr. Titan captive is really too much. You need to know that the one oppressing you guys is An Dong, not us. We have just gotten the mine from An Dong's hands..."

When Xia Pu heard him, he sighed, "Indeed it is. However, although you guys have just taken over the mine, we will still revolt. We have been preparing for half a year, and we have been waiting for the right time. Even if the one who came here today was An Dong and not you guys, we will still ask him the same conditions."

"That is not fair. This matter doesn't have anything to do with us from the beginning." When Jia De heard the damned An Dong's name, he became extremely vexed. They were really unlucky.

"Go back and ask your high and mighty Mr. Titan, if he want the mine to operate normally again, agree to our conditions. As long as he is not a short-sighted person, he will definitely see our sincerity. We only wanted to live, that's all. As long as there are rewards and insurance, all the labourers will definitely work hard. This place is, after all, our home. Some of the families living here had lived since the time of their fathers and grandfathers. Aren't they the true owners of the mine? Don't they deserve to get a share of the mine? Rather than forcing the slaves and making them work to their

deaths, why don't you give them a chance to live, so that they could work harder and happier? Wouldn't that be better for everyone?" Xia Pu then added in a low voice. "If Mr. Titan felt that us brothers have offended his pride, we can take any kind of punishment. Even if our heads are cut off, we will have no regrets, as long as he fulfil our conditions."

"Do you think he will agree to them?" Jia De looked at Yue Yang and asked.

"Maybe it will be difficult, but I hope he can agree to them. I hope that you will convey our sincerity to him. If he needed a bunch of people to work at the cost of their lives, he have to give us an equivalent salary. Even the Adventurer Guild outside do it that way. If you continue treating us like cattles or slaves, even if we die, the next generation of slaves will definitely revolt too... In these hundred years, hasn't there been more than enough slave revolts to prove my point? Give them hope, a home and a path to live. If he does that, Mr. Titan Snr. will definitely earn our loyalties and make a huge profit. Wouldn't that be great?" After thinking for a while, Xia Pu waved at the dark figure who was restraining Yue Yang, "Let Mr. Titan Jnr. go. If Mr. Titan Snr. is willing to agree to our conditions, we'll immediately let Mr. Yan Zheng go. We will also report ourselves to authority and seek punishment on our own."

"No, that can't be done. You definitely cannot let this boy return." The dark figure shouted out, "This is different from our plan. Brother Xia Pu, you said that you will lead us to victory before. Pushing forward will lead us to victory. Why aren't we pushing forward? Why are we giving in to the enemy?"

“Enough, this is my decision.” Xia Pu waved his hand, “I said, let him go.”

“I won’t let him go...” the dark figure’s voice resounded, “I only have two brothers, I only have the two of you as family. How could I let you sacrifice yourselves? In the first place, they were the ones in the wrong. We are only upholding justice, why should we give in to our enemies? Brother Xia Pu, we will feel honoured if you die in the battle, but if you die in order to appease some Innate’s fury and save his reputation, we will feel ashamed, dishonour. Without you guys, what would I do in the future? Haven’t it crossed your minds that they might be lying to us, that when the strongest amongst us has died, they will slaughter us all and continue to treat us like slaves?”

“That’s right, that is indeed what I am thinking.” Yue Yang agreed and nodded.

“You shut up.” The dark figure was so angry that her lungs was about to burst.

“My dearest sister... This is actually our last chance. When Mr. Titan Jnr. came here, I understood. If Mr. Titan Snr hasn’t given us a chance, he would have already sent the authorities to us. He could even come here and kill us all personally. He is an Innate after all, who is strong enough to kill Nightmare and Tiger Nian. None of us here is his match. I guess Mr. Titan Snr. also doesn’t want this matter to be blown up, he needs workers and we need to make a living. If he could agree to our conditions, we will do our best to serve him... This is our chance, I hope we can change our initial plans. We should show more sincerity towards Mr. Titan

Snr and let Mr. Titan Jnr. If it is successful, we will gain work and freedom. Of course, it might also fail, and in that case, we will all die...” Xia Pu whose face was scarred swept a glance across the guards and slaves, and slowly whispered, “I’ll leave it up to you guys to decide. Maybe there is only a 1% chance of success, you guys can choose the other option if you wish.”

“Whoever decides to leave the rebellion, I guarantee I will not pursue it any further and will give you some allowance to get by. If you decide to stay and work, I’ll guarantee you enough food. As for your demands for a share in the mines, stop dreaming. Even a fool wouldn’t do that. Furthermore, you guys would also not be able to protect your shares. Come, those who want to leave, please move here... Jia De, give them some money, five gold for each person. Those who want to leave, just take the gold and scam. Those who want to stay will have to do labour work obediently. There will be no money, but I can assure you’ll have enough food. We are different from that An Dong, we are gracious, magnanimous people.” Yue Yang pretended to be a magnanimous second generation noble.

Unexpectedly, the moment Yue Yang spoke out, a lot of people really stood up and chose to leave.

Even the Ox-head leader had also stood up.

The Xia Pu Brothers looked at him in shock.

When the younger of the Xia Pu Brothers wanted to beat the Ox-head up, the elder, scarred Xia Pu Brother stopped him, “Forget it, everyone has their own choice.”

Seeing that more and more people started to follow the Ox-head man, taking the money and taking their chance at freedom, the dark figure suddenly shouted out. She forcefully grabbed onto Yue Yang's collar, raised him up and pointed her dagger at his throat, "If anyone dares to leave, I will slit his throat!"

"A girl shouldn't be so fierce, otherwise no men will like you." Yue Yang realized that the girl standing in front of him was actually quite attractive. Not only was her features smooth and delicate, she also possess a pair of long, slender legs. Although her body was wrapped in tattered clothing, it perfectly showcased the shape of her thighs and seductive bubble butt. It could be seen that she was a high-grade, alluring woman. Her v-shaped chin and big eyes filled with tears were simply captivating, just like a foxy lady.

Forget about his teasing remark just now, the next sentence that Yue Yang said almost made the dagger girl cry out in frustration.

This was because Yue Yang said, "Your face is barely above average, but your chest is flat as a washing board. Others say that girls with big boobs often have small brains. Your chest is so small, yet why does it seem that you have no brains at all?"

Hui Tai Lang rested on the ground leisurely as it gave a big yawn.

It saw that they haven't started fighting yet, so it continued to sleep.

"I, I'll kill you!!" The dagger girl was so angry that she would

have bitten Yue Yang to death if she could. However, she understood that she couldn't harm this second generation young master. Although she was boiling, she didn't move in to attack.

“If you could choke me to death with those slender legs of yours, I actually wouldn't mind it at all.” Yue Yang felt that his performance was like a rapist who had almost gotten his way.

“You think I won't dare to kill you?” The dagger girl felt that she had to bore a hole on this bastard's back no matter what.

“Ahh...”

Before the dagger even touched him, Yue Yang had already collapsed to the ground.

The dagger girl jumped in shock. She didn't stab him at all, why would there be blood in this bastard's chest?

The Xia Pu Brothers and the Ox-heads immediately paled.

There was an assassin!

There was actually a skilled assassin hidden amongst them, that was plotting to kill Mr. Titan Jnr. when he came here to negotiate.

This time, it's the end!

Jia De was also shocked. However, when he saw that Hui Tai Lang was still snoring relaxedly even though blood was spurting out from Mr. Titan's chest exaggeratedly like a water fountain, he calmed down. Jia De's two golems have already recovered although they were beaten up quite badly just now. They were earth-attribute, hence they could sense enemies that moved on the ground from the vibration of the earth.

They raised their hands and punched out at the same time, punching the ground.

The whole mine shook, and dust flew everywhere.

A tall and thin man whose face was covered and was wearing a black cloak appeared at a dark corner.

The long dagger in his hand was glinting with the poisonous colour of dark green.

This person was the assassin that did the killing!

“Dammit!” The Xia Pu Brother's battle was finished. Since Mr. Titan Jnr. has died, Mr. Titan Snr. will definitely take revenge on them. Facing the wrath of an Innate Ranker, blood corpses will definitely scatter all over the mine. This hidden assassin, he was definitely here to frame them. The Xia Pu Brothers thought about how previously, the preparation for their revolution, such as procuring food and weapon, had not gone well at all. However, they suddenly managed to get a huge amount of supplies a few days ago.

Now they understood everything.

He and all the other slaves had been used as pawns by others.

Seeing the fountain of blood spurting out of Yue Yang's chest, the dagger girl covered her mouth with her hands and whimpered, "Are you going to die?"

Yue Yang pretended to be in pain and shouted, "It's such a pity that I can't fulfil my honorable wish before my death..."

The dagger girl was really afraid that Yue Yang would die, she hurriedly said, "Say it quickly, what kind of wish do you have? Quick, say it, quick! Maybe I can help you fulfil it!"

Yue Yang nodded, "You definitely can."

He reached his bloodied hand out towards the dagger girl and pretended to be taking his last breath, "I really want to know whether your chest is really that small, I didn't see it clearly just now! Let me touch them for a while, otherwise I will really die full of regrets!"

"You!!" The first thought that came to the dagger girl's mind was how she could get a big hammer so that she could smash this bastard's head to pieces, then cut the rest of his body up so that she could feed him to the dogs.

Chapter 379 – I'm Going To Kill You!

Just as the girl holding the dagger was about to smash a rock onto Yue Yang's head, she realized that Yue Yang was lying on the ground lifelessly. He seemed to be dead.

She was so scared that her hands trembled. The rock in her hand dropped and it almost hit her toes.

She kicked Yue Yang's body to see if he was really dead. "Hey, are you really dead?"

"Oh my poor Mr. Titan..." Jia De the fat toad cried as he charged towards Yue Yang. His acting skills was absolutely a hundred times more convincing than Yue Yang who was feigning his death. Even an Oscar Best Actor Award might not be worthy of him. Due to Jia De's terrified act, the dagger girl started panicking as she tried to justify herself. "I did not cause his death, it really wasn't me, I only wanted to scare him, who knows that there really was an assassin here? Is he really beyond help? What now? I don't have healing power nor a healing-type Beast... Somebody come and help!"

The fact that she only thought of seeking help now showed that she was as slow as a dinosaur. But luckily her looks wasn't as bad as a dinosaur, because the longer one stared at her, the prettier she looked.

On the other side, the Xia Pu brothers and Ox-head man surrounded the assassin as they attacked him violently.

The assassin wasn't as powerful as the trio, but he was very evasive, he was able to dodge all of their attacks, leaving the Xia Pu brothers powerless against him.

The army arrived to assist soon after.

Two men whose power was akin to that of the Xia Pu brothers charged in from outside the tunnel as they punched the slow Golem Guard, sending it flying in the air. Both sides had equal power now, with the scale tipping slightly towards the assassin.

“This is a gift from my master, Blood River. Hope you like it, hehe!” The assassin took advantage of the chaos and summoned a Mist Beast, facilitating his escape.

“Don't chase him anymore...” Xia Pu knew that they wouldn't be able to win even if they went after him.

The opponent could move around as and when he wished to, even when he was surrounded by two Golem Guards and more than a hundred men.

What would they be able to do even if they caught up with him?

Actually they had fallen into the opponent's trap even before the fight began.

The rioting slaves were just pathetic tools sacrificed to sow discord between the Innate Ranker Titan and Blood River, one of

the three leaders. No matter what the result turned out to be, they wouldn't be able to escape death. Negotiation had turned into an extravagant hope now and the best plan would be to escape. The Xia Pu brothers looked at each other and nodded. The elder brother, Xia Pu said, "Everyone, Mr. Titan getting attacked by an assassin wasn't part of our initial plan. If Mr Titan were to know about it, he would be very furious, and we won't be able to withstand wrath from an Innate Ranker. Please leave immediately if you can, but if you can't leave due to family ties, also do hide into the caves quickly and don't let anyone know that you were here... As there is a change of plans, my brother and I are willing to bear all consequences! Hurry up and leave now, before it's too late!"

Upon hearing, the hundred guards in the crowd started to panic. Some even ran off immediately.

After they left, the remaining ones became even more anxious.

Then a crowd of more than ten people ran off too.

Although some were still polite enough as to bid farewell to the Xia Pu brothers before they left sighing, some others didn't turn their heads at all as they ran off. They even left their weapons behind in the fear that the Innate Ranker would arrive anytime.

Surrounded by guards, the Ox-head man turned to look at the Xia Pu Brothers and also at the trembling slaves. He then said, "Xia Pu and Xia Er, please leave together with us, those who stay here will definitely die! This is not our fault, and even a blind man can see that it was a trap. The wrath of an Innate Ranker is not something what people like us can bear!"

“If there’s no one here bearing the consequences, I’m afraid everyone here will lose their life. There has to be somebody taking up the responsibility. We can leave, but the workers here can’t because their homes are here. We promised to help them, so my brother and I will stay to keep our promise.” Xia Pu, who had a scar on his face, waved his hand. “Just go! This situation is caused by us. Mr. Titan Jr. was assassinated, and we couldn’t save him in time. We even let the assassin escape. There has to be someone bearing the responsibilities.”

“Then I wish you good luck!” The Ox-head man led his team away quickly. He was afraid that if he was any later, the Innate Ranker Mr. Titan Sr. would arrive anytime.

“Brother...” The dagger girl responded after recovering from shock.

“You go too, leave here now.” Xu Pu demanded, “Go back to Gu Feng Mainland, and never return to Tong Tian Tower!”

“No.” The dagger girl’s tears rolled down like a river as she screamed helplessly. “Unless you all come with me, I will not leave too. I can’t just leave you all behind to go home myself. I already promised mother that we’ll train in the Tong Tian Tower together, and go home together!”

“You fool, this is not the time to be affected by your emotions, if you don’t go, we’ll all die here.” Xia Er the second brother raised his hand in anger as he prepared to slap his sister.

“Don’t slap her!” Xia Pu the elder brother pushed away Xia Er’s hand as he smiled to his sister who was already in tears. “If Mr. Titan Sr. is a reasonable man, he won’t kill us, and we will be willing to be his labourers in order to repay him, so we’ll definitely see the light again one day. As we had already left home for a year and Xia Er and I have to stay as labourers for a few more years, you should go home now. Don’t let mother worry about us.”

“No, you are lying to me, you definitely won’t make it home. That idiot is already dead, how can the both of you live?” The dagger girl cried.

“Quickly leave...” Xia Er the younger brother realised that the situation didn’t seem right as he shouted to the slaves.

A shadow moved quickly towards them from a distance.

Some realised that the shadow looked exactly like the little Mr. Titan Jr. lying on the ground.

They wore the same golden mask, was of the same size, same clothes and even looked more similar to each other than the Xia Pu brothers. They were like the same person, but his power differed vastly from the one lying on the ground. Even a blind man could see that this second Mr. Titan was definitely an Innate Ranker. Just by moving swiftly, he blew all the slaves to the ground like a tornado.

When he stared at the Xia Pu brothers, they had difficulties

breathing even though they were quite powerful.

The Ox-head man and his guards who already fled to the cave entrance were so stunned that they kneeled to the ground and did not dare to move at all.

The Mr. Titan who came later waved his hands casually, causing three bloodied heads to roll to the Xia Pu's feet. They all had their eyes opened as if they couldn't rest in peace. They were the heads of the assassin and his two accomplices.

Even Jia De was stunned, let alone the Xia Pu brothers.

Why were there two Mr. Titans?

If Jia De wasn't born with a toad's Inherent Skills, he wouldn't be able to sniff that the blood that spurted out from Yue Yang earlier on wasn't human blood, but dragon blood. If not, he would definitely be worried sick!

“Respected Innate Ranker, I admit that it was our mistake... If you want to punish anyone, please do it on me, as I'm their leader.” Xia Pu braced himself to greet this second Mr. Titan, and then kneeled down slightly to apologise. During his half kneeling gesture, he signaled for his younger brother, together with their sister, to join the crowd again.

“No, it is all my fault. If it wasn't for me who restrained his back, he wouldn't have been assassinated. If you want to kill anyone,

then kill me!” The dagger girl charged forward as she blocked in front of her brother.

“We are done for!” Everyone banged their head to the ground immediately. If she said it like that, forget about her, everyone there would be killed.

The second Mr. Titan changed his stance slightly, unleashing his murderous vibe.

Everyone shuddered uncontrollably as they kneeled to the ground.

No one would think of fighting back an Innate Ranker. Even the Xia Pu brothers lost hope. What use could fighting back do if their opponent could kill them easily, as easy as killing an ant with a finger? Moreover, it was a fact that they caused the death of Mr. Titan Jr. due to their rioting, they couldn't deny that it wasn't their fault.

The dagger girl trembled so much that she almost collapsed onto the ground.

In the end, she bit her lips and mustered up her courage as she arched her small but cute asparagus-like chest up. “If killing me quells your anger, then do it! I’m willing to compensate for that idiot’s death with my life!” She shouted loudly.

“Fuck, who’s an idiot?” Yue Yang stood up straightly, scaring the

dagger girl out of her wits.

“Yo.. You didn’t die? “ The dagger girl was pleasantly surprised.

“Duh.” Yue Yang realised that her reaction wasn’t the same as normal women, and it made teasing her very interesting.

“Then tell your brother quickly that you didn’t die and ask him not to kill us! But I thought the dagger pierced your chest? How come you’re still alright?” The dagger girl got increasingly dubious as she stared at him because the Wyvern Armor Yue Yang wore wasn’t even torn, then where did the blood that spurt out come from? Xia Pu and Xia Er looked at each other as they nodded, they weren’t as slow and insensitive as their sister, and they quickly realised that it was all a ploy.

Mr. Titan Sr. knew that someone was scheming in the dark, therefore he asked his younger brother to carry out this ploy together.

In the end everyone was duped.

All the motives and schemings were exposed by Mr. Titan Sr., and the death of Mr. Titan Jr. landed all the slaves into a disadvantaged situation. Although Mr. Titan Jr. was fine, they don’t know how long they had to serve as labourers to compensate for it... It seemed that the Mr. Titan Sr. did not want to kill the rioting slaves, and he merely wanted to continue enslaving them.

If not everyone would have died even if they had a hundred lives.

The second Mr. Titan who came later was actually an Evil Gemini Shadow summoned by Yue Yang using the Gemini Mask, which possessed half the strength of the real Yue Yang. However, no one could tell the difference between them.

Yue Yang would never disclose the truth as he wanted to create a sense of delusion.

Especially towards his opponent.

The opponent would feel more troubled if he held the thinking that there were two Mr. Titan.

The Evil Gemini Shadow tapped Yue Yang's shoulders softly as it disappeared in a flash, just like how it came. It was so fast that no one could even respond to it.

Yue Yang continue to pretend to be the bad guy. "All those who abandoned their fellow brothers, please scram. A coward who develops cold feet at the last minute is what we needed the least. As for you all, due to the mistakes made, especially you who grabbed me by the collar and scolded me... Do you know what one will become when they scold me? All of you will become my labourers, and serve hard manual labour for a hundred years. The money from your hard work will go towards my psychological compensation! "

“Th... This is not fair, they can leave but we had to stay.” A guard stood out and begged weakly. “I want to leave too. “

“Then scram, right now!” Yue Yang kicked him, sending him flying in the air. “Whoever that wants to leave, scram immediately! “ He scolded.

Upon hearing that they could be freed regardless of their past deeds, a lot of guards and slaves charged out desperately as they queued behind the Ox-head man.

Although they were labelled as those who betrayed their brothers and chickened out, it would all be worth it if they could be a freeman again. Many were notorious in the Thunder Fortress and things like betrayal, abandonment, selfishness were rampant. Others like justice, fairness, self-sacrifice were the rare ones.

Apart from a thousand slaves who couldn't live independently after leaving the mine and a few other loyal guards under the Xia Pu brothers, the other majority left.

And those who stayed, some also wished to leave, but were constrained by various reasons.

Leaving would mean starving to death because they didn't have anyone to turn to, and apart from digging mines, they had no other skills... It would be pathetic if they remained as labourers here, but wasn't this what they did in the past? It was just a matter of the name they were called. Maybe this little Mr. Titan would be kinder than An Dong such that everybody would have something

to eat!

Being a labourer, having a meal to fill their stomach would suffice.

How could they expect anything like rewards and shares?

“Go and release Mr. Yan Zheng!” Yue Yang instructed Xia Pu brothers initially, but then he turned towards the dagger girl. “You, You will become my female slave from this moment onwards, go back with me!”

“No!” Images of herself being chained by the neck as the wretched Yue Yang held her by a lash as he walked her onto the streets flashed through the dagger girl’s mind. “ I’m not going to be the female slave of a rich slacker like you. In your dreams! I’d rather die than to be your female slave! You pervert, if you dare to come near me, I’ll commit suicide!”

“Mr. Titan, this woman is both coarse and flat-chested, she is not suited to be a female slave at all. I have a half elf girl that has the face of a child and a hot body of a woman. Not only is she obedient and submissive, she is also great at all sorts of chores ranging from cooking to knitting. If she is to serve you in your daily life, I’m sure that you will be satisfied.” Jia De quickly suggested his best girl to Yue Yang and swore that the half elf girl was a virgin. According to him, this girl was groomed by women all her life, so she hadn’t seen a real guy before, and she was waiting for Yue Yang to broaden her horizon.

A child's look with a hot body?

Actually Yue Yang wasn't a stranger to it as his noble teacher, [Sora Aoi](#), had graced the hearts of all Otakus, including him, before.

But what would the half elf with a child's look and a hot body grow up to become?

Yue Yang quickly nodded in a perverted manner. "Yeah, that woman who's lacking in both brains and chest doesn't deserve my attention. Let's take a look at this half elf girl. Does she really have the face of a child and a hot body?"

The dagger girl at the side was incensed. Being flat-chested was her weakness, and this wretched rascal kept pouring salt on her wound.

"I'm going to kill you!" The crazed dagger girl charged forward as she swore to kill the perverted guy!

Chapter 380 – Receiving Rewards, Meeting Old Acquaintances

Yue Yang returned back to An Dong's mansion. Behind him, the dagger girl persisted on following behind him so that she could take revenge, even when she had been beaten down numerous times.

She didn't understand, she was obviously much stronger than that bastard, but why does she still get beaten up?

It also seemed that he hadn't used his full power yet.

"I'm going to kill you, pervert, for the good of everyone else!" The dagger girl swore to kill this guy to prevent him from harming other women in the world. But she would never admit that part of the reason was also due to him mentioning that she was flat-chested.

"Mr. Titan Jr., I hope that the labourers will not go hungry." The Xia Pu brother also followed Yue Yang as they had already come to terms with reality and had stop hoping to get any shares.

"It depends on my mood...." Yue Yang replied arrogantly.

"We'll continue working hard, even harder than before. As long as everyone have something to fill their stomach and can be treated when they are sick, we can dig the mine one thousand times faster. We guarantee that we can be a lot faster than before."

Xia Pu felt that it was okay for those who couldn't work as a team to leave. Although there were only one thousand men left, if they could listen to commands, they would suffice.

“Then make her my female slave. I'll be her master and enslave her till she suffers and go mad eventually.” Yue Yang wanted to show them that he had an abusive trait.

“In your dreams!” The dagger girl was furious when she heard it, but she didn't went forward to stab Yue Yang like before.

After encountering several failures previously, she had come to terms that she wasn't a match to Yue Yang.

He might not be powerful, but he surely possessed many treasures.

And with the help of any one of his treasures, he could defeat her easily. Although she was hot-tempered, she wouldn't deliberately ask to be abused if she had already known what the outcome would be.

The Xia Pu brothers could only look at each other and force a smile... Of course they knew that Mr. Titan wasn't short of woman, he was merely teasing her out of boredom. If he was really a playboy, he wouldn't be acting like this now. Unfortunately their insensitive sister didn't realise that he was just making fun of her, so she insisted on competing with him, falling into his trick.

But if she were to just sit still while being taken advantaged of, she wouldn't be their sister.

But this trait of hers was really....

Luckily she met this Mr. Titan Jr. who was only teasing her out of boredom, if he was a real playboy, she might have been locked away as a female slave!

Mr. Yan Zheng was a serious old-fashioned person. He was just released after being locked up by Xia Pu brothers for a few days. However, he still had his emotionless poker face, it was only until Yue Yang finished fighting with the dagger girl did he walk out. "I have a suggestion. For every labourer who worked, his salary per day will be one gold coin. If he were to be sick and stop working, his salary will be voided. If a labourer were to find a rare precious ore, his bonus will be one thousandth of its value, but if he were to keep it for himself, he would be killed with no second thoughts. If a labourer saves enough money, he can apply to leave the mine, or gain access to application for citizenship. In addition, labourers are allowed to set up booths outside the mine to exchange for daily necessities."

He brought up a lot of rules that would benefit the labourers, but they would be even more beneficial to Yue Yang of course.

If all of these could make the labourers work again, the amount of money spent was as little as a drop in the ocean.

And of course, all these rules appeared better to that of set by An

Dong the miser. Yue Yang believed that these rules would suffice to keep them from rioting again.

“I’ll add one more. For those who didn’t contribute for a month, ask him to scram. I will not pay for someone who slacks and is inactive.” Yue Yang was alright with paying gold coins in return for labour.

“Rest assured, we’ll all work hard under the rules suggested by Mr. Yan Zheng!” Xia Pu believed that if the labourers were to know that they could receive both salaries and bonuses under their new boss, they would definitely work very hard, and would even be willing to die from overwork. When they were under An Dong, they couldn’t even fill their stomach as An Dong treated them as slaves literally. They were thrown into mines to dig for ores, and when one batch dies, An Dong would send in the second batch.

“Talk is cheap!” Yue Yang said as he asked Jia De to chase the Xia Pu brothers out. Seeing that her brothers left, the dagger girl stomped her feet and followed them out quickly.

Although she was a little slow and insensitive, it did not mean that she was daft.

She was afraid that once Yue Yang closed the door, he would release his dog upon her or chain her up by the neck, so she escaped quickly, postponing her plans of seeking revenge.

Before she left, she kicked Yue Yang hatefully.

Seeing him enjoying himself made her angry.... Unexpectedly, she had used too much strength to kick, causing her to lose her balance and almost fell. Yue Yang had even helped to support her at her waist when she almost fell to the ground and hit her bottom. She was extremely embarrassed. She quickly got up and ran out of the door in the midst of Yue Yang's laughter.

This made her hate Yue Yang even more. She swore to take him down in the future so that he wouldn't be so arrogant.

Just after she left, two men went in.

They were here to send an invitation.

Blood River and Mountain Elf had jointly invited Yue Yang to attend the annual auction held in the Villian City above the Thunder Fortress.

“Did your master ask you to say anything?” Yue Yang asked.

“With an intelligence like yours, I'm sure that Mr. Titan will understand that the incident recently was an attempt to sow discord between you and my master. My Master, Blood River, has always treated you like a distinguished guest. As a cordial and hospitable man, he even treats the normal merchants with respect. So how could he have sent an assassin after you?” The tall men on the left replied word by word. He seemed to be just someone who works under the order of his master.

“How about your master? What did he say?” Yue Yang looked at the fat man beside him.

“Mr. Titan, my master, Mountain Elf, has always admired you. He is willing to ally with both Blood River and you to enjoy mutual benefits.” The fat man was all smiles.

“Forget about forming alliance first. We don’t have the intention of staying at the Thunder Fortress. We are just passing by, minding our own business. Maybe if we get bored one day, we’ll leave. I don’t care about you guys at all, but if we are affected by problems, my brother and I will definitely kill our enemies’ entire clan.” Yue Yang smiled lightly and waved his hand like a superior. Both men took the hint and excused themselves quickly.

After settling the issues in the mine, Yue Yang got himself a mine that could generate income, and also became ‘enemies’ with Demon Eyes.

With it, he had a reason to seek revenge.

Kill the monsters and steal their treasures.

Yue Yang had clear goals in mind when he came to the Thunder Fortress. Moreover, after he was done killing the monsters, he could then use them to exchange for more treasures from the Warrior Guild or Mercenary Guild. There were a lot of wanted people on the Bloody Villain List here, and the rewards for taking them down were mostly either monetary rewards or treasures. For example, one would be rewarded handsomely for taking down

Nightmare and Tiger Nian, and also Demon Eyes and his gang. Yue Yang would be able to get the rewards for taking down these people in a single action.

Yue Yang didn't bother about the things going on at the arena as he prepared to sell it away. Through this, it would quell the worries of some that Yue Yang wants to take over the Thunder Fortress. Also as its profit wasn't as lucrative and it could be manipulated easily by his enemies. Yue Yang didn't want to end up like An Dong, who had enemies latching onto his weakness.

Different affairs were sorted under the care of Jia De and Yan Zheng.

Jia De would control the finance as he was good at business, and was also loyal to Yue Yang.

Yan Zheng was an old-fashioned housekeeper, if not for Mr. Chen, he would not have worked for Yue Yang. But once he started to work, he would give the same loyalty to whoever his master was.

After leaving the Thunder Fortress, Yue Yang returned to the Plaza in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

He saw that Bao Er the Golden Elf was still holding a banner to look for Yue Yang. But the words on it weren't as polite as before.

It wrote: Titan you liar, if you still don't respond, I'm going to be

angry!

Bao Er's cute angry face was also drawn on it.

Towards this loli Golden Elf, Yue Yang would feel happy whenever he sees her. Teasing her made him happy too.

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others lay around tiredly, drenched in blood. It seemed that they had just returned from a battle. Luckily everyone was well and alive, and Anna the Golden Elf was using the Beast Ability to heal them. The Ox-head Fan Lun Tie was happily devouring a piece of pork. "That liar has already went on to the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower, we are just wasting our time waiting for him here. Oh yeah, fat pig, what's the technique you used just now? Hey, I'm talking to you, how dare you ignore me?"

Upon seeing Yue Yang approaching, Fatty Hai was initially stunned, but broke out into laughter later. "It is just a small trick compared to your barbarous charge!"

"Hwee!" Yue Yang brushed against the banner as he was walking past Bao Er, and he even blew a whistle.

"Do you know how to see when you walk?" Bao Er hated people who walk close to her.

Putting the banner down, Bao Er checked if it was spoilt, and even used her hand to wiped the areas Yue Yang touched, meaning

that she didn't want any outsiders to dirty the banner. She would have scrubbed and washed the banner if there was water.

Fan Lun Tie smashed the pork on her hand towards Yue Yang due to his derogatory whistle towards Bao Er.

Ye Kong held in his laughter as he tried to stop her. "Don't be impulsive, this may be a misunderstanding!"

The Ox-head Fan Lun Tie brushed him off. "Monkey, you leave me alone. You all don't know that this isn't the first time that rascal did this. He walked near Bao Er to brush against her deliberately the other time, and he did it again just now. If it wasn't because there are a lot of us here, he would have molested her. Don't be scared Bao Er, I'll help you teach him a lesson. This guy is very weak, it is just that he possesses a lot of treasures. If I were to strike, he will definitely die from his balls breaking!"

Yue Yang trembled when he heard that.

Dying from broken balls, it was really... an impressive way to die!

He pretended to be terrified and ran towards the Warrior Guild quickly.

Seeing his quick escape, Fan Lun Tie continued to wave punches at him in anger, thinking that if it wasn't because she was tired from their journey just now, she would have already ripped that rascal apart.

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the Li Brothers broke out into laughter, especially Fatty Hai, who was rolling on the floor laughing. As Xue Tan Lang, Prince Tian Luo, Ox-head Party Leader Li Ao and Lin En just came to gather from other places, on seeing everybody laughing, they inquired inquisitively. Why was Fatty Hai and the rest laughing so hysterically when Li Ao and Lin En felt that nothing's funny?

Even Xue Tan Lang with a poker face broke into a smile, making Lin En exclaimed that it was miracle.

“Is it so funny?” The four orc girls who loved to laugh looked at each other as they weren't able to comprehend.

“Yes, I'm dying from laughter!” Fatty Hai laughed and he couldn't even get up from the ground.

“...” Anna frowned, as she seemed to realise something.

In the Warrior Guild, as Ou Gen wasn't there, a man who appeared both haughty and astute went to receive Yue Yang, who claimed that he was an adventurer who just completed missions that offered bounties.

He felt that they were just some small mission, then Yue Yang shouldn't have come to the second level of the Warrior Guild to claim his reward because this was a place for real Rankers. For a Level 6 Elder like Yue Yang, he should have gone to first level to admire those who could go to the second level. But of course, he

was still polite enough not to show his attitude. He asked casually, “What kind of mission did you accomplish?”

Yue Yang’s words almost made him collapsed from shock.

“I’ve accomplished a few, but I’ll like to claim my reward for Nightmare and Tiger Nian first. If you don’t mind, I’ll like to exchange all my rewards for Wisdom Fruits.” Yue Yang said as he took out the heads of Nightmare and Tiger Nian from his Lich Ring and placed them in front of the man. It made him pale like a ghost.

“Nightmare, and Tiger Nian... You k-killed t-two Innates?” That fellow was so shocked that his speech was garbled.

“Be quiet, if I want to announce it, I’ll hire someone else to do it. I don’t need you to say it so loudly. Give me my deserved reward. That’s how simple your job is!” Yue Yang spoke very calmly, as if he just killed two chickens and not two Innates.

“H-here... For, for you!” The man stamped the reward authentication on Yue Yang’s Heavenly Badge as he opened a secret door and took out a parcel containing the Wisdom Fruits.

With trembling hands, he passed it to Yue Yang.

Without even counting the number of Wisdom Fruits, he kept them into his Lich Ring and turned to leave.

“Respected Innate Ranker, can you, I mean, can you forgive me

for offending you previously and give me your signature?” The man asked weakly.

“I’ll forgive you, but ask me about my signature next time!” Yue Yang said as he waved his hands.

The man bowed excitedly, with full of respect, he saluted Yue Yang’s back.

After Yue Yang walked a distance, the others who were too stunned to move just now started crowding around as they observed the two heads on the counter with trembling gaze.

Until now, they couldn’t believe that it was reality.

The two serial killers, Nightmare and Tiger Nian, who were Innate Rankers, were actually murdered...

The arrogant Yue Yang met Fatty Hai and the others when he stepped out of the door. As he wasn’t quick enough to escape, he was captured by the Ox-head Fan Lun Tie.

“I’ll see where you can run to this time, little rascal!” The Ox-head Fan Lun Tie grabbed Yue Yang by his collar and she was about to use the most horrendous, ball-breaking claws on Yue Yang, which would make him infertile. As it was too horrifying, Fatty Hai and the others stopped her quickly, even Xue Tan Lang also went forward to help. As it would affect his future brother-in-law’s happiness, he had to do it.

“Do you all know this rascal?” Even the insensitive and slow Fan Lun Tie felt that this situation did not look right.

“After hearing you... He sure does look familiar!” Fatty Hai said as he circled around Yue Yang.

“Hmph!” Upon hearing, Ox-head Fan Lun Tie concluded that they didn’t know him.

“You look so ugly wearing this stupid mask.” Bao Er felt that Yue Yang must either be disfigured or was the son of a parvenu for him to be so ostentatious.

“This guy has so little power, how did he manage to keep this mask from getting snatched away by others? This is a Gold-ranked equipment! Could it be that the law and order in the Tong Tian Tower has improved suddenly?” The four Orc girls laughed loudly.

Anna’s heart fluttered with their words as all her doubts were cleared.

Just as Fan Lun Tie was about to release Yue Yang and ask him to scram, Anna moved her hands to stop Yue Yang who was pretending to be terrified.

“Are you trying to steal my mask? Although there are a lot of you here, but this is the Warrior Guild’s entrance, all the guards will come out if I were to shout...” Yue Yang said in a low voice.

Bao Er spat in contempt. “Who wants your treasure? Scram quickly, I hate sons of upstarts like you the most. Who are you trying to show off to, no one cares about your goddamn mask!”

But Anna smiled and signalled for everyone to quieten down. “Don’t be afraid, I only want to ask a few question. You can leave after I’m done.” Anna spoke to Yue Yang softly.

Yue Yang wanted to reject her initially, but Fan Lun Tie cracked her giant hands, signalling that if he don’t want to be interrogated, she would break his balls.

Fatty Hai and the others felt that it was so funny that it almost made their intestines cramp, but it wasn’t a time for them to laugh.

So they could only hold in their laughter as they watched the show.

Chapter 381 – Offering Treasures, Thunder Diamond

“Little brother, what’s your name?” Anna asked her first question.

“[Shan Qiu](#) (山丘).” Yue Yang had split the Yue (岳) word in his name and used it.

(Last: Shan Qiu means hill while Yue means high mountain)

“That name is so old-fashioned.” Bao Er cutely pouted, feeling that this was truly a name for a country bumpkin.

“I think it sounds good!” Yue Yang proudly said and made Bao’er roll her eyes.

“Where did you come from?” Anna asked her second question.

“Gu Feng Continent.” Yue Yang had always told lies without blinking.

“I know that place. It is a place that had been invaded by the demons but, the inhabitants are still humans with a few human ruled countries like the country of Noah and Barbie. The most famous specialty of the Gu Feng Continent is the ‘Sea Anemone Coral Orchid’. It is a precious material capable of treating Yin-type venoms, but many nobles use it as ornaments to decorate their halls. Right, the Gu Feng Continent’s Red Stone is also very famous, so famous that every person has one. It is used to

symbolize the warriors of the Gu Feng Continent.” After Anna said this, Yue Yang’s head immediately ached. She is too knowledgeable, if he carelessly responded, then he would easily be exposed.

“Right, Sea Anemone Coral Orchids are not only be used as treatment for Yin-type venoms, but they can also be used to attract Gold Starfishes. The magic crystal from these starfishes were extremely rare, they can be melted and casted into a high quality material. It is even indispensable in creating some types of weapons and puppets.” Yue Yang had seen Yue Gong’s notes in the Puppet Encyclopedia before so he quickly added.

“I heard that because of the demon invasion, the Gu Feng Continent made early marriage widespread in order to protect the female from being plundered and tarnished by the demon. Males and females of eight to nine years old are being paired up to get married. Is this true?” Lin En suddenly inquired.

“...” Yue Yang sweated profusely. Who the hell would know if Gu Feng Continent had this kind of social custom.

“Brother, does the Gu Feng Continent have this kind of custom?” Fatty Hai chimed, definitely wanting Yue Yang to answer.

“No, the places that the demons have occupied are only the cities. Many of the civilians had escaped to the mountains. Although there are early marriages, it isn’t that exaggerated!” Yue Yang forced himself to answer. He based his answer on the dagger girl, who still relied on her brothers and did not have a husband. Early marriage of eight to nine years old should not exist in the Gu Feng

Continent, even if it existed, there is no such custom for warriors. Moreover, even if they were married, does that mean that the demon would not steal the bride? If it truly exists, the custom of early marriage would not only be limited to the Gu Feng Continent, many other races would also have them. Marrying early in order to escape a demon's persecution is a comical idea. It made it seem like demons are law-abiding children.

In truth, the main goal of a demon's conquest was to annihilate the continent's warriors.

They eliminated the danger of powerful enemies and controlled the local growth. Then, they made their own race give birth to more warriors and rule over other races. The conquest was not done to exterminate other races nor to commit adultery. Based on a demon's body type and standards of beauty, it would be weird for them to like human females!

The women that demons like should be tall with long horns. Their entire body should be covered in scales with a barbed tail extending from their bottom. The most beautiful ones would be those whose entire body was ignited in flames.

Whatever snowy peaks and plump peaches, from a demon's standard those didn't matter at all!

The standards of beauty for different races were simply different...

The only thing was that some races like the human race had

more population than others. Their numbers were also countless. Hence, the beauty of human females were just more fitting to the tastes of the majority.

Let alone the non-humanoid races like the metal race, big hands race, finned race and drill race, even the humanoid races like the dwarf race, pygmy race, djinn race, orc race, ox-head race, werewolf race and others would never be interested in human females. They were not just the normal kind of ugly.

Yue Yang had seen many history books. It was rare to see demons invading in order to kill people, devour or fornicate with them... There was simply no meaning in massacring civilians. The demon legion would indeed make a huge bloodbath. However, they only killed soldiers and warriors. As long as their strength crossed a certain threshold, the demons would definitely kill them. Afterwards they would take control of the area's growth, not letting another warrior appear. If a warrior appeared, they would be killed immediately. They disdained killing weaklings, just like how humans would not painstakingly kill all the ants in the world.

Demons would kill, devour people and rape women, but this was not the main purpose of launching a war.

This was only caused by the demons venting their awakened brutal instincts on the battlefield.

Majority of the demons simply did not have intelligence. They only executed their orders. The true controllers of the demon race are those in the higher position such as the Demon Generals, Demon Commanders, Demon Marshals and Demon Kings.

Ordinary demons were merely slaves leading a tragic life. They were bound to become tools of war the moment they were born.

It was not limited to only demons. No matter what kind of race it was, beastly actions such as killing, devouring and raping would always happen during wars.

Even in the Soaring Dragon Continent, in every expedition, the victor would also commit heaps of wicked conduct.

Therefore, although demons were definitely evil, the Gu Feng Continent would not necessarily have early marriages just to escape being humiliated by demons... What do eight to nine year olds understand? Forget about those who matured early, those who matured at a late age might only know how to use their tool to pee! Things such as having the right to the bride's first night, only the more evil humans would practice it.

“Impossible, how could the Gu Feng Continent be so backward! In our Soaring Dragon Continent, many eight to nine year olds are already fathers and mothers!” Fatty Hai bragged.

“Do you mean that eight to nine year olds become parents and then they go out shopping with their children like normal people?” Yue Yang angrily said.

“I am only discussing it for research, don't be angry...” Fatty Hai once again asked: “Little Bro, are you married? Is your life still pleasant?”

“Get lost!” Yue Yang became furious and kicked Fatty Hai away.

“Hey, how dare you hit others?” The Ox-head girl noticed that something was wrong. This brat’s temper was too explosive. They were discussing things nicely, yet he suddenly attacked.

“Everybody quiet.” Anna indicated everybody to stop quarreling and only she can make inquiries. She became extremely serious, but her eyes contained a ‘sister caught sight of a mischievous younger brother’ type of smile: “Shan Qiu, when did you arrive at Tong Tian Tower’s Sixth Floor? Do you have a group? If you don’t, how about joining us to gain experience? Although we are not very strong, we are very united.”

“Wait a minute. I don’t want this incapable brat to join our group.” The Ox-head girl, Fan Lun Tie, was the first to oppose.

“We also do not agree.” The four orc girls also felt that this kind of decision was too careless.

“If this upstart’s son followed us to train, he would definitely cry out of fear by the time we reach the Spider Canyon.” Bao Er always had the bad habit of looking down upon new party members. In truth, her guts were also quite weak, but she took pleasure in acting as a senior and teaching new members.

“What about your opinions? Normally, aren’t you the ones who are the noisiest?” Anna noticed that Fatty Hai and the others, who were normally the noisiest, did not speak at all.

“Cough, I finally discovered someone weaker than me, isn’t this good? If he became a party member, I will have a feeling of superiority.” Fatty Hai laughed loudly. Hearing this, Anna’s eyes immediately shined, as if she had just confirmed something. Even Lin En and Li Ao slightly frowned. It was a well-known fact that this Fatty Hai was very opposed to adding new members to the group. No matter what mission it was, even if it was dangerous or hard, he would absolutely not add a new person and would rather clench his teeth to fight bitterly.

“I forfeit my vote.” Ye Kong flexed his shoulders.

“I support little sister Bao Er. We certainly cannot let him join, unless he give us a few good items.” After Prince of Tian Luo said this, Bao Er immediately clapped her hands and cheered. In truth, she was not opposed to this upstart’s son joining.

“What about you?” Anna asked the strongest of the group, Xue Tan Lang, the Iceberg boy. It was normal for him not to speak a single word in a whole day!

“Up to him!” When Xue Tan Lang spoke, Lin En was flabbergasted, as if she had seen a miracle. Even Anna seemed to have guessed that Xue Tan Lang would say this.

“Everybody vote!” Anna showed that she was attentive to the majority.

“Hey. Aren’t you forgetting to ask my opinion?” Yue Yang felt wronged. What kind of situation is this? Forcing him to conscript

into the party?

“Weaklings don’t have a say in this.” Bao Er was afraid that he would not agree and blocked his argument with a sentence.

“Hahaha!” Fatty Hai laughed his brains out. He would never imagine that Yue Yang would also have moments of being forced to yield. If others found out that this invincible and arrogant Yue Clan Third Young Master was defeated by a small girl from the elf race using words, they wouldn’t be able to say anything and only laugh their heads off.

“He can join, but he must be in charge of cooking. His strength is only enough to be a cook.” Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie looked at his power and reluctantly answered.

“Right, right. He is only material for a cook...” Fatty Hai nodded his head strongly. He only hated that he couldn’t record this moment and bring it back to broadcast to the entire Soaring Dragon Continent.

“I like sweet things and the taste must be light.” Bao Er instructed Yue Yang.

“The four of us like barbecue, huge amounts of barbecue!” The four orc sisters also showed no trace of politeness.

“Are you people finished?” Yue Yang almost went crazy.

“Let’s go, we must go to the Spider Canyon to finish a materials gathering mission, we cannot put it on hold!” Bao Er straightforwardly ignored his protest.

“Look...”

Yue Yang suddenly pointed to the sky.

Everybody was curious and looked at the direction his finger was pointing at.

However, they did not see anything. Out of all people, this brats expression seemed to be very serious, could it be that there is truly something in the sky? Even Fatty Hai had been fooled and looked up.

“What are you looking at?” Bao Er was baffled. There was clearly nothing in the sky.

“An airplane, look there, it flew over there!” Yue Yang moved his finger and seriously pointed to the west.

“I did not see it, there’s nothing there!”

“Is it an invisible beast?”

“Did you see it? My ox eyes are almost popping out. What was it?”

Just as Fan Lun Tie and the others were discussing spiritedly, Bao Er suddenly shrieked. Everybody turned around and discovered that the guy, who seriously shouted that there was an airplane in the sky, had fled with a very fast speed. Bringing his Bronze-ranked Level 3 Iron Back Demon Wolf, he quickly charged into the teleportation portal and disappeared without a trace in an instant.

Anna and Lin En burst out in cold sweat.

However, the two people immediately looked at each other and smiled.

Especially Anna, she rubbed the almost crying Bao Er's head and comforted her with a smile: "He will definitely return. He cannot escape. Let us catch him next time!"

Yue Yang returned to the Thunder Fortress and reverted back to his Innate Rank status.

Jia De spoke in a different manner as he bitterly said that he failed to register the Titan Merchant Guild. He explained that a hundred years ago, the Titan Merchant Guild existed, only it was very small and not well known.

Towards this reply, Yue Yang made an impressive decision: "Have the other Titan Guild dissolve, otherwise purchase it. If they are not willing to sell it to us, then make it disappear forever!"

“Yes!” Jia De felt that following this master was too pleasurable.

If the master was not courageous and bold and only a modest nobleman, could that still be called a master? That was a useless person!

Just as Jia De exited, Butler Yan Zheng brought in a few slaves. He said that it was to present treasures... They were the miners who had dug up good ores last time but secretly kept them and did not give it to An Dong. Now, they are offering it to their new master, hoping that according to their oral agreement, he would give them a bonus of a thousandth of its price. Yue Yang felt that the bonus was a positive action. If every slave had secretly stored a piece, then he has no way of knowing, so he had agreed to the bonus system.

Unexpectedly, the result was not bad. Just as he arrived, some people had presented treasures.

Before the mine was turned over, Yue Yang had heard similar examples of mineworkers devise ways to bring out the ores for themselves. They would stuff their mouths' noses, navels full of them. A few people even cut off their calves and stuff the diamond inside their flesh.

Since An Dong was ruthless, Yue Yang believed that the slaves who had secretly stored ores were not limited to those in front of him.

He generously gave them bonuses and even gave a few gold coins.

Those slaves happily kowtowed him repeatedly. They felt that following Yue Yang was stepping foot into the light. They were able to eat till they were full, they were given salaries, and there were even bonuses. Compared to before, their lives now was simply climbing out from hell and entering heaven... Afterwards, the slaves returned to brag. The results of this news was huge. This time, there were not only a few of them but hundreds of slaves had come forwards to present treasures...

Butler Yan Zheng was flabbergasted. He absolutely did not imagine that those starving slaves would actually stash high quality ores. Moreover, the overseer did not inspect them!

The most exaggerated matter was that of an old and limp slave.

Half a year ago, this old guy who lost all his strength had contacted a serious illness and was near death. He had previously been thrown into the corpse stack and was laid there a few days. In the end, he actually did not die. He relied on eating Carrion Fruits and once more crawled back to the mine shaft. Because he had lost all his strength, he could only eat soil to fill his stomach everyday. He was so hungry that his bones can be seen from the skin. In the end, the dagger holding girl could not bear to look at it anymore and pitied him. She occasionally gave him food which helped him persevere until today... He actually had a piece of high quality Thunder Diamond that even amazed Yue Yang. This piece of Thunder Diamond was simply priceless.

“Impossible?” The dagger holding girl accompanied him to present treasures. When she saw the huge Thunder Diamond, she

was stupefied.

“What do you want? Gold? Residential Status? Or is it women?” Yue Yang did not immediately accept the Thunder Diamond and asked for the conditions.

“Master, you are a good master. In my entire life, I had never seen a kind master like you. I hope to stay beside you and work. Even if my legs are crippled, my eyes and hands are still good. I can still work! I know where the ore vein is, it is sunk in the Fifth Cave. In there, my father and uncle had discovered a good ore vein. However, they did not want An Dong to obtain it so, they intentionally made the entrance collapse, creating an accident and forever buried themselves inside. Now, I wish to lead everybody to once again dig the Fifth Cave. We will pay master back with the best ores. I dare say that the ore vein is the best in the Underground City. As for my request, my master, please allow me to collect all the skeletons of the workers. Being able to store them inside my cave is fine! I do not want money, nor anything else. If master is able to forgive this humble self’s offense, I hope to be able to take off Ms. Xia Yi’s identity as a female slave. Let my savior Ms. Xia Yi continue to work as an overseer. She would become the best overseer in the world. Every single one of us are very grateful to her, just like how we are all grateful to you, master!”

The old slave respectfully prostrated on the floor and said things that amazed Yue Yang.

The dagger holding girl named Xia Yi was already crying in streams.

On one hand was the clean and priceless Thunder Diamond; on the other was a dirty and stinky old slave that was disabled and lame...

Chapter 382 – Level Up, Platinum Crescent Moon Blade!

After obtaining the Thunder Diamond that was worth a bomb, Yue Yang did three things which pushed his reputations to a peak.

First, he made a standardised uniform for the labourers.

Although the uniforms didn't cost much, and the money used to make a thousand of them might not be even worth the money of one of Yue Yang's Wyvern Armour, it was a form of recognition and reward to the labourers. And for individual talented miners, they could have an additional golden line sewed on their uniform. All the slaves cried when they received their red uniforms with golden lines. Yue Yang was the first person in the hundred years of history in the Thunder Fortress to make uniforms for his slaves.

Second, Yue Yang came out with names for the slaves.

This was a first too.

A lot of the slaves didn't have names. Of course, they had nicknames or other forms of address, but they had never own a real name.

When Yan Zheng the butler announced that the kind master, Mr. Titan, had allowed everyone to own a name, and that they could go forward to register when they had thought of one... All of the slaves trembled.

Although they didn't recognise their own names, but when they saw it appeared for the first time on Yan Zheng's notebook, they felt that they had been reborn as a human. In reality, a slave's master would only see him as a tool used to dig mines and wouldn't care about his well being. Even if he had a name initially before he was captured, he would have forgotten everything after spending long hours everyday digging the mine... Only until today, when Yue Yang allowed them to own a name again did they realise that their master had awarded them not only a name but a status that equalised them with other human beings.

Only with this status could they become unique.

Only with a name could they be considered a real being, not a mere mine digging tool that was as insignificant as an ant and abandoned by the world.

A lot of people didn't have names, so Yan Zheng the butler had to come up with one for them.

They were given a serial number at the same time.

If it were to be other free common man, they would definitely feel that it was a form of humiliation and shaming, because the number was sewed on the most obvious part of their uniform. It was like a print on a donkey or a horse, and it could be said that it was a mark that signified that the slave belonged to a master.

But the slaves liked it a lot.

What they were most afraid of now was that their kind master, Yue Yang would leave them alone. They were scared that they would be abandoned by their master and become an insignificant miner in the underground city again.

The third thing Yue Yang did was to grant the old slave a name and a Puppet Beast.

The old slave was named '[Pi Ping](#)'.

As it was a prank by a guy who crossed dimensions, of course no one would know.

(want2eat: Pi Ping is a homonym for Pepin. Yue Yang was mocking that the slave was short, because there was a famous king called 'Pepin the short'!)

The Puppet Beast was modified by Yue Yang. Although Yue Yang created it casually and simply, Yue Yang possessed strong skills in making Puppet Beasts. Even under his casual modifications, he made one which was Bronze-ranked Level 2. But it wasn't capable of attacking, and could only be used as an alternate mode of transport and also used to dig mines... This reward evoked a wave of news that would make everyone who heard it sing praises of Yue Yang and feel goosebumps all over their bodies. There was no need to announce or explain further, all of Yue Yang's slaves were finally convinced. As long as they worked hard, they would definitely win the favour of their master and be rewarded... Everyone hoped that they could be like the Old Pi Ping who was bestowed a name and received a hand-made puppet beast by their master personally.

No one dared to say anything, but all of them were working towards this goal.

As it was a unique reward.

One could even say that it was something that would bring them utmost honour!

What excited and motivated the slaves the most was when Yan Zheng the butler announced that for those who contributed significantly, they would get a chance to meet their master in person and that there would only be ten nominees each year. The possibility of being named by their master, being granted a Beast and the chance of meeting their master became the things the slaves sought after the most.

While the slaves were working desperately to fight for this honour, those who fled regretted deeply.

Nobody had thought that their new master, Titan, would not only spare the lives of the rioting slaves, he had treated them generously too.

The salaries, bonuses, uniforms and many other credits made a lot others envious.

Even the patrol guards in the Underground City couldn't hide their jealousy when they discussed about the changes in the

Western Wind Mine, let alone slaves.

Who wouldn't want a master like Yue Yang?

Look at that damned fat toad. In the past, he was just a pathetic guy with a low status, but now, he walked arrogantly with his head held high. Even when the head of the elite leaders, Bao Gu, saw Jia De, he would address him politely as 'Mr. Wei Er' . If it was in the past, addressing him as 'Fatty' or 'Stupid Toad' would be polite enough.

The fighters in the arena acted like obedient kids now.

Titan would allegedly inspect them numerous times everyday, so if they want to live a good life, they would have to comply with their master's wish... As a result, the fighters who fought several times a day would hug each other ten times, especially towards their opponents, they would smile brightly at each other and kept shaking hands with each other to show their harmony.

Everyone hoped that their fellow fighters would not make any mistakes during their probation period, if not their past efforts would go to waste.

Those who took Yue Yang's money and left were mocked as fools.

Unfortunately one wouldn't be able to overturn their regrets. Those who left and went to work under others were even living in fear that Yue Yang would go after them and finish them all.

Titan treated his subordinates well, but that didn't mean that he could be pushed around as he had the ability to kill the two Innate Rankers, Nightmare and Tiger Nian. Moreover, does Yue Yang still have to do it himself now? With a single command, all of his fighters would rush forth desperately to show off their skills to Yue Yang... The most famous person in the Underground City wasn't its City Master, [Ma Long](#) the 'ancient beast', but Mr. Titan! If one said that they didn't know who Mr. Titan was, then he must be blind and deaf. He might even get beaten up by others.

(Shiro: Ma Long means Horse Dragon)

“Master, City Master Ma Long sent a diplomat here...” Jia De addressed Yue Yang as master like Pi Ping did, because it made Yue Yang sound more impressive. Others would feel that Yue Yang was a leader just by hearing the way he addressed him!

“You go and deal with him, don't pester me.” Yue Yang was contemplating how he should deal with the Thunder Diamond.

The Thunder Diamond would be a good tool used to merge and rank up different equipments. If he were to give it to Xue Wu Xia, it would be of great help to her.

But Xue Wu Xia wasn't around, moreover, Zhi Zun would have possessed too many treasures to care about the Thunder Diamond, so Yue Yang decided to keep it for his own use at the moment. After all, he could use it to rank up his equipments.

Both the Crescent Moon Blade and Hui Jin can fuse with the

Thunder Diamond.

With it, Yue Yang would gain an additional Lightning-type equipment other than his Yin Ice and Yang Fire Ability. If he were to use it on his opponent, it would make them suffer for a long time even if they escaped death in the end. As Yue Yang's Crescent Moon Blade was only Gold-ranked, it could only be used in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, if he were to proceed to a higher level, it would be considered weak. His Hui Jin Magic Blade was Platinum-ranked now, and because it contained two souls, it would definitely rank up to Diamond-rank in the future. Also, the two souls inside of the Hui Jin Magic Blade were superb. Although it was only Platinum-ranked, it was definitely the best of the best among all other Platinum-ranked equipments, and they are near the standards of being Holy Weapons... The Thunder Diamond would seem a little weak to fuse with the Hui Jin Magic Blade, as it wasn't spirited. Yue Yang had always wanted to add a new spirit to his Hui Jin Magic Blade to strike balance such that the powers of the Hui Jin Magic Blade could be maximised.

But if he were to fuse the Thunder Diamond with the Crescent Moon Blade, it would be a waste as the Thunder Diamond was one of high quality. It would take one million years to form one natural Thunder Diamond.

After the fusion, he would only get a Platinum-ranked equipment at the most and it would be tough to level it up till Diamond-ranked. The only way to level it up was if Yue Yang manage to get his hands on the legendary Warrior Soul and succeeded in embedding it onto his Crescent Moon Blade, thus creating an equipment with awareness.

“Nevermind, there will be better treasures next time.” Yue Yang had decided to rank up his Crescent Moon Blade, and get some treasures when he gets to the Heaven Realm next time.

Possessing an ancient Rune “Permanent Hardening” and Heaven Rune “Frost” and “Sharp”, even a Dwarf Grand Smithmaster wouldn’t be able to cast the Crescent Moon Blade, let alone normal equipment masters. If one were to wish to embed a Thunder Diamond on it, it wouldn’t be possible, unless with Yue Yang’s Nirvana’s Flame.

After spending a long time, just as Yue Yang’s hands were going weak with fatigue, he finally managed to embed the Thunder Diamond onto the Crescent Moon Blade.

Flashes of lightning flickered and glided on the Crescent Moon Blade.

The clapping of a thunder occupied the atmosphere.

Its chilly cold air was even frostier than before, and its sharp edges looked as if it could tear down the entire space.

The Nirvana’s Flame in Yue Yang’s hands ceased and the Crescent Moon Blade started humming, as if it possessed awareness, as if it was celebrating its levelling up.

The Crescent Moon Blade had successfully levelled up to Platinum-ranked. It wasn’t just a normal Platinum-ranked

equipment, but one which could be considered to be of high quality among other Platinum-ranked equipments. Although it couldn't match up to the Hui Jin Magic Blade with two spirits, it had developed some insignificant awareness too... What made Yue Yang puzzled was that he didn't understand how a spirited equipment could be made, and he couldn't use his Innate Qi to find out why, as he was afraid that his Devour Inherent Skill would destroy the inchoate awareness inside the Crescent Moon Blade.

He decided to let the tiny awareness grow before investigating it slowly.

He should ask Zhi Zun next time when there is an opportunity.

Yue Yang knew some knowledge about a spirited equipment from the tragic guy's mother. But he did not acquire any knowledge about developing a spirited equipment. It might be caused by incomplete digestion of the information, such that Yue Yang hadn't obtained any knowledge pertaining to this field.

“Whizz!”

Yue Yang raised the Crescent Moon Blade he just levelled up to Platinum-rank as he wanted to test out its strength.

He then used it to slash the wall casually.

The blade pierced the sturdy stone wall easily like it was made up of tofu... The most ridiculous thing was that when Yue Yang took

the Crescent Moon Blade back, he realised that the ten metres thick wall was penetrated entirely by the blade and his Innate Qi. An electrical flash shot out, hitting a Death Bat that was hovering in the air more than 30 metres away.

Even the usually swift Death Bat turned into ashes immediately and its shape remained in the sky.

Then, the ashes dispersed instantly and disappeared into the air.

As Jia De heard some noises, he thought there were assassin and rushed in immediately. On entering, Jia De saw the chilly Crescent Moon Blade that was flashing with lightning on Yue Yang's hands. He shuddered, and looked towards the wall that had been slashed to form a long, narrow crack. His legs gave way as he collapsed to the ground.

“Ask someone to mend the wall.” Yue Yang instructed casually.

“Yes.” It was only until then did Jia De could finally react, and he quickly replied loudly.

After Yue Yang left, he swallowed his saliva as he braced himself to touch the crack on the wall. He was still a little bewildered. As Jia De didn't know that there was still a little electricity left on the crack, it shocked him and Jia De cried for his mom loudly before scrambling out, as if his hands were bitten by a monster.

When it was night time, after Jia De instructed some people to

mend the crack on the wall, he went to find Yue Yang. “Master, the half elf girl is here. Please proceed to inspect the good.” He said as he bowed.

Yue Yang was a little taken aback, so this guy was being serious?

He was merely finding excuses previously.

Whatever, because he pretended to be a master, if he didn’t even want to accept a half elf girl, others might think of him as incapable, and that would make him unimpressive.

Yue Yang waved his hands. “Okay, you can leave now! Oh yeah, you will accompany me to attend the auction tomorrow...”

On hearing that there was a door, Jia De bowed excitedly. “Yes, Yes.”

Yue Yang would usually return to his Grimoire World, but today, he gave it a thought before proceeding to his master bedroom.

There might be a half elf female slave waiting.

Let’s see how she looks like...Of course, Yue Yang was only curious, and would never admit that he went due to the temptation of her having a child’s look and a hot body.

Chapter 383 – Lethal Human Weapon, Half-Elf Girl

The master bedroom that Yue Yang was going to was not furnished with the things that An Dong had used before.

In reality, the moment Yue Yang gain hold of the property, Jia De had changed whatever things that could be changed to a new one, sincerely hoping to serve his master well.

He was now one of the members of the Titan Merchant Guild after all. Although it was just established and was unknown and unrecognized in the world, Jia De knew that before long, the Titan Merchant Guild would definitely reach the top 100 guilds, no, it might even reach the top 10 guild. Seeing Master Titan's attitude towards the Hundred Wars Merchant Guild, Jia De knew that Yue Yang did not even have a shred of respect towards Shen Pan, who was an Innate Level 8... Without a certain level of confidence, would he dare to come into the Thunder Fortress and snatch valuable properties? It must be known that the owner of this robber's den, Thunder Fortress, was Chong Ni, a strong ranker who possess the strength of an Innate Level 8!

Strangely, even after Nightmare and Tiger Nian was killed, Demon Eye, who should have blown his lungs out from anger didn't even dare to let out a fart.

He even faintly showed the intention to return Master Titan's belongings that he took away.

Following such a magnificent master, why would he, Jia De, be afraid he wouldn't have a chance to be successful in the future?

At the lavish entrance of the master bedroom, a few healthy maids stood on attention. When they saw Yue Yang coming, they hurriedly bowed and excused themselves. There were two beautiful maids inside the room, who also hurriedly excused themselves and quickly closed the wooden door behind them.

A wide ivory bed was decorated with a silk canopy that has wild roses out of golden thread embroidered on it. There was a slight bulge on the velvet quilt covering the huge bed, as if covering a small body underneath.

They couldn't have stripped the girl naked before leaving her here, could they?

Yue Yang remembered during the Qing Dynasty, whenever the emperor wanted to bed a concubine, she would be stripped naked by the eunuchs, rolled in a blanket and carried to the emperor's bed. It was said that if concubines did not bribe the eunuchs, they would give them a hard time. For example, the eunuch would pester the emperor about his night plans, causing him to lose interest and not give the concubines a chance to be chosen. Or perhaps after a concubine was favoured, the eunuch would purposely announce the morning hour earlier so that the concubine would miss the chance to be conferred a title... There were also darker stories, for example, the moment a concubine lost the emperor's favour, the eunuchs would take revenge with all they had and use all kinds of terrifying torture methods that would make one's hair stand on its end.

In Yue Yang's opinion, these emperors were fools.

Who would know if the eunuchs had a taste of the concubines along the way? Although eunuchs were useless, they could still give women that they had already been intimate with to the emperor. If that really happened, wouldn't the emperor's [hat be green-colored](#) instead?

(Shiro: Man wearing a Green-coloured hat – husband whose wife is cheating on him. Originated from ancient chinese culture – men whose wife was a prostitute had to wear a green hat due to a compulsory law)

If these concubines refuse to serve the eunuchs, their lives would definitely end tragically. With their intelligence, why wouldn't they do it?

Under this kind of law, the emperor was simply a fool wearing a green hat!

Look at how well people from another dimension was doing. Eunuchs were useless. In this other dimension, female slaves were trained since they were babies. They were trained to be female slaves and would never see any man at all in their lives. They would live in a female palace, and when they have grown, they would be sold altogether with the women who raised them as one set. The first man they see would be their master, and this process was called 'eye-opening'... This method raising concubines was extremely effective, much better than the emperor's '[Preparative Concubine Selection](#)' ceremony. Along the way, even if the concubine's virginity was still intact, they must have already been

trained on other skills. Hence, ancient emperors were the most tragic victims of green hats!

(Shiro: Preparative Concubine Selection – Ancient Chinese Emperors will select a few virgin girls from distinguished families every 3-5 years to add into their harems. The process is quite strict as every girl's body would have to be checked.)

“Is that master? Your servant was sleepy and has accidentally fallen asleep just now!” A clear-sounding voice rung out from beneath the quilt.

Following that, a snow-white body sat up on the bed.

A female slave very respectfully bowed like a slave towards Yue Yang. Although her body was covered by a veil, Yue Yang could clearly see her humongous, extremely powerful and lethal human weapon.

As she was prostrating on the bed, her lethal human weapon was pressed against the bed and formed a breathtakingly deep valley.

Even someone with Yue Yang's composure couldn't help but to swallow a gulp of saliva.

This lethal human weapon was definitely capable of killing people!

Yue Yang couldn't help but to start stripping off her veil, wanting to see for himself the legendary loli-faced, big-breasted half-elf...

Her glowing skin was so white that it rivalled the snow-white quilt made out of swan's feathers. It was sparkling and almost translucent, there was not a single flaw on her skin, which looked so fragile that it could break at any moment. Seems like the women in charge of training this female slave really understood how to best display a woman's charm. If they had displayed this half-elf completely naked, her charm would have been greatly decreased. It would also easily dissatisfy Yue Yang, the top-grade pervert. The real charm lies within faintly discernable things... This point was greatly utilised by this half-elf.

She didn't have any clothes on her body, but there was a thin sash pressing tightly against her skin, covering some important parts of her secret place.

Under the cover of this sash, the half-elf female slave's body had not only become more charming, she had become ten times more enticing.

Especially those two lethal human weapons in front of her chest. Seeing those tightly bound by the sash would simply kill a man.

Yue Yang could see breast swaying or breast trembling whenever he want.

Those breasts were definitely omnipotent, reaching even the highest realm of breasts...

An elf's slender body, a human's curves and a goddess-like innocent face. All of this combined together was the half-elf girl!

The half-elf girl whose eyes was covered by a sash slightly twitched her nose. On her innocent, sweet face, her moist lips blossomed into a smile, “Are you my master? I am really happy that my master is an Innate Ranker! You smell really nice, I have memorised it in my heart and will never forget it.”

“How do you know I’m your master? How do you know I’m an Innate?” Yue Yang was slightly surprised when he heard her. This girl has the ability to recognize him through smell?

“Grandma from the Female Palace told me that I will leave the palace today. My master will be a kind, indomitable man, an Innate Ranker. Master, you truly hide your abilities very well, but I possess the Scent Recognition Inherent Skill, hence I am able to see through master. Although i won’t be able to fully understand the extent of your power, I can see that master is an extremely strong Innate Ranker. As for whether you are truly my master, since the day I memorised your scent, you will be my master forever. A Master-Servant Memory can only be used once in a lifetime. Some people choose to have Sight Memory, but I feel that sometimes eyes can deceive oneself, hence I have decided to use Scent Memory. Scent would never deceive other no matter what, because not only it comes from within one’s body, it also measures one’s strength, etc...” That half-elf girl whose eyes was blindfolded really do seem to possess such an Inherent Skill. At the very least, her identification skill was not something that normal people would have.

“Do you know my name?” Yue Yang asked.

“No, but master’s scent is like a name to me.” The half-elf bowed politely. When she lowered her body, her beautiful back formed a smooth, glossy arch. She was so beautiful that even if it was the most picky man in the world, he wouldn’t be able to find any flaw on her body.

Especially her full moon-like butt. When she was bowing down, they were raised high, making her seductive level shoot straight to the top.

The silk sash around her body bound her lightly across her butt cleft and covered her mysterious place in front. What’s left to imagination could even bring the most serious man’s blood to a boiling point.

Smelling the simple yet irresistible virgin’s smell, the whole room could suddenly turn wonderful. It was as if Yue Yang’s soul was on fire, and igniting his whole body... Yue Yang had an extremely high tolerance, yet he couldn’t help but to clench his fists, trying to forcefully calm his beating heart.

If one said that a half-elf wasn’t enticing enough, they would be lying.

That pure, innocent face coupled with that enchanting body formed an extremely distinguishing contrast, which became an endless temptation.

However, Yue Yang was not a fool who would jump on any women given to him by others. He would search through this

woman's motives thoroughly till the end.

“Do you have a summoning grimoire?” Yue Yang had wanted to ask about who the Grandma from the Female Palace was, but after giving it a thought, he changed the question to grimoire instead.

“No, but Grandma can find out each of our Inherent Skill and train them. My Inherent Skill is Scent Recognition and my beast is Butterfly Enchantress, Bronze-ranked Level 2. Although it isn't very powerful, it can help me to fly for a short period. It can also help me to do many other things!” The half-elf girl nodded obediently as she replied Yue Yang.

“If I gave you a choice, would you choose freedom or would you choose to be a female slave who will serve me forever?” Yue Yang suddenly asked.

“You are already my master. If I am abandoned, I will commit suicide to protect my chastity. There is a saying in Tong Tian Tower, ‘Reputable women will not marry a second time, loyal servants will not serve a second master.’ If master do not trust this servant, please kill this servant...” The half-elf slowly extended her soft, slender arms forward.

Her delicate fingers were soft like lily.

Even though this pair of hands might not be the most beautiful hands in the world, it was definitely one of the best.

How could such a beautiful pair of hands be capable of cooking?

Is she really capable of sewing and handcrafting?

Killing intent flashed in Yue Yang's eyes as he took out his Crescent Moon Blade. Quicker than lightning, he slashed his blade towards the half-elf's head.

With the power of Platinum-ranked Crescent Moon Blade, forget about a weak half-elf girl with the power of a mere Level 3 Hero, even a Lesser Innate would be instantly killed by the blow!

However, the half-elf girl didn't show a shred of fear.

Even when Yue Yang's killing intent had penetrated into her body and suffocated her throat.

Her delicate features showed a sincere expression as she slowly revealed a smile, as if she wish to leave her master with her most beautiful smile in her last moments. Even if he killed her on the spot, it seemed like she wouldn't feel any shred of regret... The Crescent Moon flashed, but contrary to the expectation of blood splashing all over the bed, it only cut through the silk sash that blindfolded the half-elf girl gently. The silk sash tore to half and fall onto the bed.

The half-elf girl covered her eyes with her fingers and slowly rubbed them.

She slowly revealed an innocent smile, just like a flower bud that was blossoming slowly. Then, a spring-like clear-sounding laughter rung out, “Thank you master for ‘opening my eyes’! Your servant, your servant could finally see master’s appearance now... Although you are wearing a mask, your servant has finally seen your appearance. You look the same as your smell.”

“Will you remember my current appearance forever?” Yue Yang lightly tapped at his Gemini Mask as he asked her.

“No, during ‘eye-opening’, master’s whole appearance will be stored inside your servant’s memory. It’s useless even if you wore makeup or masks.” The half-elf girl looked at Yue Yang unblinkingly with her big blue eyes. She picked up the silk sash blindfolding her just now and presented it to Yue Yang. When Yue Yang saw it, he discovered that there was a Heaven Rune Circle drawn on the silk sash. He couldn’t help but to be shocked. Looks like there are quite a lot of talented people in the Tong Tian Tower. That ‘Grandma’ who raised this female servant could actually have such a deep understanding on Heaven Runes. Seems like she is not any ordinary human.

“What’s your name?” Yue Yang took the silk sash and stored it away. He could recognize all of the Heaven Runes on the Rune Circle, but the arrangement of the runes were extremely ingenious, worthy for his research in the future.

“We, the female servants in the Female Palace, don’t have a name. Please bestow this servant with a name, master!” The half-elf girl raised her face and looked towards Yue Yang, just like an obedient cat wanting its master’s caress.

Although Yue Yang was trying very hard to stop his desire, he had almost reached out and caressed her.

If he touched her even a little, things might not be so easy anymore.

It was easy to bestow her a name. Yue Yang had almost shouted ‘Your name is Sora Aoi from now on’, but after giving it a thought, he decided to keep the name ‘Sora Aoi’ locked up inside his memories.

If her name is not Sora Aoi, what should he name her then?

10 minutes later.

Yue Yang who had returned to the grimoire world hugged the sickly beauty the moment he came back and rushed towards the bed.

The sickly beauty signalled that Yue Shuang had not slept soundly yet. When she saw that her clothes had all flown away, she shyly asked Yue Yang, “Who seduced you?”

Yue Yang stooped down and kissed the beauty, “I don’t have time to talk right now...”

Chapter 384 – Purple-Haired Beauty In Black

The second day was the day where the auction in the Villian City above the Thunder Fortress would be held.

However, the auction during the day mainly served as an opportunity for merchants under different Rankers to interact with each other. It was used as a pretext to pry and exchange information. There were also people who became allies on the spot and made decisions on who would get which auction goods. The exemplifications of shady businesses and survival of the fittest were at its best here. For example, when a Ranker took interest in certain treasures, his subordinates would then warn others to stop them from bidding for it. Otherwise, they would become hostile towards them.

Of course, these were only effective towards the weak.

The auction started officially at nine at night. As it would be held for three consecutive days, the best treasures and female slaves would only be put up for sale on the last day.

Yue Yang made Jia De and Yan Zheng the butler the representatives during the day. When he finally woke up, he only instructed the maids lazily to do one thing, that was to help tailor some clothes for the half elf female slave. They were to create legendary female costumes such as sailor uniform, princess dress and others.

Accessories like ribbons, bells, cat ears and lace were not-to-be-missed.

Yue Yang was also contemplating if he should make some policewoman costume or air stewardess costume for the tigress, Xia Yi. A sadistic queen's costume would be suitable too. She would definitely look eye-catching if she were to wear it with high heels and meshed stockings, together with a black leather short skirt on her slender waist and toned bottom. It would definitely be impressive if she were to complement them with a spiked collar and a belt. Everyone would go "Whip me, your highness!" ...

Undeniably, this was also the guilty pleasure of a guy who crossed dimensions.

But for those other maids who were bought alongside with the half elf female slave, their master's instructions were treated with high regards.

"Are you going to make me clothes, Master? I'm so happy!" The half elf girl with a child's look and a hot figure exclaimed. As she was clad in a tight fitting gown that revealed her chest excessively, Yue Yang was boiling with excitement and almost couldn't contain himself.

"What are you doing?" Yue Yang asked curiously as he saw the half elf girl drawing. On the easel, there was a drawing of his portrait which looked like him exactly, his charms and traits fully highlighted. Yue Yang got angry instantly as he glared at her and ordered her to stop. "Who allowed you to draw this? Erase this immediately!" It shocked the half elf girl as she poked out her

tongue and threw her hands up in surrender. “I won’t dare to do it next time. If master were to go out, this drawing would make me feel that master is still by my side. It will definitely energises me when I work!”

She ran off like a little deer and returned with a bowl of hot dessert in a blink of an eye.

Yue Yang was slightly surprised. This girl really knew how to cook?

After a while, Yue Yang kept the dessert into his Lich Ring. Yue Shuang would definitely like this kind of sweet dessert, and moreover, this was made with kind intentions by the half elf girl.

“Erase my face on the painting!” Yue Yang felt the urge to grab a hold of her chests, but he decided to pet her head lightly and stepped out of the house.

“Thank you Granny, I’ve met a kind master.” The half elf girl twirled blissfully as her big eyes became squinted from smiling. “Master is so cool, but he is also meticulous enough to make clothes for me, ha!” She hopped around like a little deer and tied up her hair. Holding a cloth in her mouth and a container with her hands, she seemingly wanted to clean up the house thoroughly. She lifted her sleeves and balled up her pristine small fist. “This marks the first day of me meeting master. I have to work hard to make master like me!”

The few maids grew accustomed to her actions as they cleaned

the hall outside diligently.

They were swift and dexterous, and they complemented each other well, making their work highly efficient.

In contrast to the obedient half elf girl, another girl of her age was similarly cute, but had completely different personality.

Forget about doing chores, the very fact that she could walk around without knocking into a tree or losing her way when making turns was impressive enough. She was none other than the Golden Elf, Bao Er.

On seeing Yue Yang stepping out of the Teleportation Circle, she threw the banner that she was initially holding high up and dashed towards him, grabbing him by his arm. “Where are you running to, I’ve finally caught you after a long wait. Come everyone, I just caught the swindler yesterday!”

“You are?” Yue Yang was great at feigning ignorance.

“Look, there’s an aeroplane in the sky!” Bao Er tried to act decent as she imitated Yue Yang’s tone yesterday. But she burst out laughing in the end. She couldn’t hold in her laughter herself, and instead went on to blame it on Yue Yang, throwing light punches on him with her small fist. “Don’t try to deceive me. I’m super smart and you won’t be able to use the same trick on me twice. If you don’t believe me, try saying that there’s an aeroplane in the sky.”

“...” Yue Yang shook his arms. “Little kid, I’m afraid that you recognised the wrong person. I don’t know you at all!”

“Quit speaking to him, just drag him away directly!” The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie waved her gigantic hands. “We are still short of a hundred Spider Tooth, if we are any later, we may not be able to complete the mission. Let’s go!”

“Hey, I protest.” Yue Yang used the tactic of a diplomat of China.

“Protest rejected.” Bao Er replied with a cute grimace. “ Because you are our appointed slave!”

Looking at Fatty Hai who was swinging his butt and Ye Kong who was laughing discreetly, Yue Yang knew that he had been betrayed. He kicked Fatty Hai’s butt violently, making him groan like a pig about to be slaughtered. As for Anna and Lin En, they feigned ignorance. Among all, only Bao Er remained in the dark. Even the Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie had already guessed a little, but she did not probe further to expose Yue Yang’s identity.

The Spider Valley.

It was a dangerous region with difficult terrain.

Sandstorms were rampant on the two plateau, where several high level monsters resided. There were also various quicksand traps filled with Ground Drilling Demons waiting for their prey.

There was a narrow valley in the middle, with the widest not more than 300 metres.

The shallowest part of the valley was only 50 metres deep.

But the deepest could span a few thousand metres deep. When wind blew, the valley would give a whizzing noise that would send a chill down one's spine. Of course these noises were just ordinary occurrences. The scariest thing in the valley was the densely packed Snaggleteeth Spiders that could swallow a man whole. Not even his bones would be left. They were Level 7 Bronze-ranked creatures. Although their level wasn't considered to be high, they had strong combat power, and their population in the Spider Valley amounted to a few hundred thousand, occupying the whole of the valley.

Numbers could determine everything.

In the valley, most of the Level 7 Silver-ranked Human-faced Spider and the Gold-ranked Devil-eyed Spider King would be hiding in the dark.

Once their prey approached, they would bring all their forces out of the nest to attack it.

Of course, there was the stronger Spider Empress who could level up to Level 7 Platinum-ranked.

There would only be two outcomes of an adventurer who

encountered the Spider Empress. The first would be that he had a narrow escape, and the second would be that he becomes food of the Spider Empress.

There was no third outcome as no one had managed to kill the Spider Empress as of yet... Rumour has it that an Innate had wanted to kill the Spider Empress for the Empress Pearl in her stomach before. However, he returned in failure, severely wounded, and the toxin in his body couldn't be cleared for more than three months. He almost lost his life. Since then, no one dared to attack the Spider Empress.

Luckily, the Spider Empress rarely appears, so the Spider Valley could be considered a yellow warning zone, albeit just barely, but not red forbidden ground.

“Follow me closely, don't wonder off by yourself, if not it will be none of my business if the spiders eat you up!” Although Bao Er was naughty, she was kindhearted. As a senior, she was still caring towards Yue Yang the newbie. At least she was willing to ‘protect’ Yue Yang.

“It's okay, I have Hui Tai Lang!” Yue Yang indicated that he did not need anyone's protection, but he did not reject the idea of enjoying the scenery when following behind Bao Er.

“A Level Three Bronze-ranked Iron Back Demonic Wolf, are you sure it wouldn't tremble in fear when it sees the Snaggleteeth Spider?” Bao Er glared at Yue Yang. She hadn't seen such a weak Beast in the whole of Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

“Woof, woof woof!” Hui Tan Lang protested loudly, but Bao Er still disregarded him.

Following the mountainous path that the adventurers took year after year, they proceeded slowly. After an hour, they finally reached the valley floor of the Spider Valley.

If not for the Red Phosphorous Torch, they wouldn't have reached the Spider Valley even if Fatty Hai and the rest were ten times stronger. The Snaggleteeth Spiders and the Human-faced Spiders hated the Red Phosphorous Fire, so the adventurers could fend them off easily just by waving their torches. If they were to fight them off without the torches, the entire troop of more than a hundred thousand men might be readily swallowed by the Snaggleteeth Spiders. The Spider-eating Birds and the Parasitic Wasps were also the predators of the Snaggleteeth Spiders, but the relationship could go both ways. A large group of the Spider-eating Birds hovering in the air could hunt down a young Snaggleteeth Spider; Similarly, they could become preys of the Snaggleteeth Spiders if they got trapped onto its web.

As for the Parasitic Wasp, the Snaggleteeth Spider would certainly die as the Parasitic Wasps would lay their eggs in the body of the targeted spider so that their offsprings could grow inside the spider's body.

Yue Yang couldn't be bothered about the rules of nature.

All he wanted was to get some treasures here.

He wasn't interested in the Snaggletooth and Human-faced Spider, all he cared about was only the Level Seven Gold-ranked Devil-eyed Spider.

Not only could the eyes of the Devil-eyed Spider be used as medicinal ingredients and used to level up equipments, the precious Poison Pearl in its poison sac was an even more precious treasure. As for the Spider Empress, Yue Yang felt that he might not be able to find it. Moreover, that kind of strong Beast which could even defeat an Innate might have already become a Holy Beast, which would make killing it difficult... She would definitely not wait for someone to hunt it down like BOSSES in games. Seeing how the Old Dragon Turtle had gone to the Soaring Dragon Continent to recuperate when he was injured show that a Holy Beast was very shrewd and its intelligence was on par to that of a human being. It could even clone themselves, making differentiating between the clone and itself difficult.

“There is a party of adventurers in front battling. They seem to be fighting for treasures.” Ye Kong who went to explore the path returned with a bad news.

“We will take the longer route.” The Ox-head Party Leader, Li Ao, made a decision on the spot.

“....” Anna looked at Yue Yang. On seeing that he did not object, she nodded too and agreed to it.

If the Snaggletooth Spider didn't become berserk by the smell of

human blood, they would normally be fearful of the Red Phosphorous Fire and wouldn't find trouble with the adventurers who were here to collect spider teeth. However, once they smelt fresh blood, they would definitely become restless and even besiege the adventurers and attack them.

Just three minutes after they took the longer route in the opposite direction, the spiders on the cliff seemed to be awakened by something as they rushed toward and inundated the battle ground .

Tens of thousands of the spider on the rock of the cliff jumped and rushed forth. The scene was spectacular especially due to the geographic location of the Spider Valley. The number of spiders seemed like they could cover up the entire sky.

Three parties of adventurers gathered as everyone held their weapons nervously and waved their Red Phosphorus Torches.

Luckily no spider attacked Yue Yang and his gang.

But it remained uncertain as to whether the spiders would be blinded by their killing thirst to the extent that they'd disregard the threats of the Red Phosphorous Fire and proceeded with tearing people apart and feed on them... The Red Phosphorus Fire was a threat to the Snaggleteooth Spider as they were afraid of fire. Through the hairs on their legs, they could sense the air movements to search for their opponents. So if they were burnt with fire, they would start panicking. But the Red Phosphorous Fire in the hands of a few adventurers appeared insignificant to tens of thousands of Snaggleteooth Spider. Once the Snaggleteooth

Spiders became berserk, they could kill a thousand times more adventurers.

“Everyone form a circle and hide behind the huge rock. Remain calm, and nobody is allowed to attack.” One party leader shouted.

“Save me, I have used up my torch. If you save me, I’m willing to offer a reward of thousands of gold coins.” Three women in black clothes ran frantically from a distance.

Two of them seemed to be female guards as they were clad in black armour that were tight fitting.

They were holding sharp daggers in their hands. Even in such a dangerous situation, they remained aloof as they proceeded in silence.

The one who was crying for help was their leader. She was clad in an expensive Black Dragon Armour, one look at her and one would know that she wasn’t a normal adventurer. She was probably a Ranker’s or a King’s daughter. Her silky purple hair swung in the air and her features were like that of a beautiful painting. The glow in her green doe eyes charmed everyone and her hot figure was revealed through her Black Dragon Armour. She had a pair of long legs, big chest, small waist, toned butt, delicate feet and pristine arms, making her look like a sexy doll.

The adventurers were mesmerised as they stared at her.

Some people's drool fell like a waterfall.

Yue Yang shook as he looked at the Purple-haired beauty, his gaze was as chilly as ice.

Chapter 385 – Showing Its Might!

Impressive Hui Tai Lang!

Fatty Hai and Ye Kong looked at Yue Yang.

They seem to be deciding on something. When they saw Yue Yang's cold gaze, they were completely shocked, and when they turned towards the purple-haired, sexy and alluring girl, they became fearful.

Xue Tan Lang clenched his fist, as if trying to control his feelings.

Anna and Lin En had already noticed this, but when they saw Fatty Hai's and Ye Kong's expression, then saw Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo clenching their fists, they immediately turned towards Yue Yang, who was standing leisurely in front of Bao Er... The couple looked at each other, then looked at the purple-haired black-clad lady, and their gaze also turned surprised and fearful.

Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie and the four Orc girls didn't have any reaction at all. They didn't feel anything wrong.

Bao Er's reaction was a sour feeling in her heart.

That purple-haired lady's alluring body and electric gaze could even make her elven heart feel jealous.

With regards to beauty, they were probably evenly matched,

rather, the golden elves might even be winning a little.

However, with regards to sexiness and allure, not even ten beautiful elves could compare to this hot beauty wearing a whole set of black dragon armor... She ran all the way here, but she didn't look dishevelled at all, she even looked beautiful. Her appearance was breathtaking, making others want to protect her.

When Bao Er checked on Yue Yang and realize that his eyes were staring blankly, she was furious.

She brandished her fists and punched his head violently, "Hey, isn't it time to come back to your senses? Think about her again if we survived out of this Spider Valley! Useless chap, look at Brother Fatty, although he is a pervert normally, when it's a critical time, look how serious he is! He isn't like you at all, your eyes are about to drop to the ground!"

"No way, even I am drooling right now. Wow, that girl is amazing!" Fatty Hai who was completely dumbstruck just now suddenly laughed awkwardly, he even wiped the corner of his mouth with his hand.

"Yes, I also thought that way." Ye Kong suddenly hugged Fatty Hai's arms, and they started dancing happily.

"I will never understand a human's useless way of thinking..." The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie humphed angrily.

What kind of situation is it now, they still have time to think about girls?

Didn't they notice the ground that was filled with Snaggleteeth Spiders?

The four Orc girls could only roll their eyes. Ever since Fatty Hai and the others joined them, they had never looked at them with a respectful expression before. It must be known that amongst the Orc race, they were all exceptional beauties. Unexpectedly, these humans could not appreciate their beauty at all.

The Ox-head Party Leader Li Ao frowned.

He felt that it was really a troublesome day today.

The appearance of this girl didn't seem like a good thing. A lot of fights between party members stem from women after all.

In nicer-sounding words, these beautiful ladies could be called beauties. But in a bad-sounding words, they were source of calamities.

"Let's go, we have collected enough spider fangs for today. We should do the Puppet Stone Statue Quest." Xue Tan Lang who never initiated anything suddenly spoke out. He suggested to leave the Spider Valley, and Prince of Tian Luo also agreed.

"There's so many spiders here, how are we going to escape?" Bao

Er felt that they should wait until the spiders calm down before leaving. It is simply too dangerous now.

“I have a teleportation scroll. As for you guys, find a way to escape yourself.” Yue Yang was a wealthy millionaire, he possessed several teleportation scrolls that was worth a hundred gold each.

“Can’t you guys bring us along to leave? We are really terrified and we want to leave this place as soon as possible. Please don’t abandon us...” That purple-haired, dragon leather-armored girl suddenly cast away the adventurers that was trying to gain her favour and ran over to ask for Yue Yang’s party’s protection.

“Listen, if you are sensible enough, scam away right now...” The three party leaders of the adventurers was furious. Initially, when they saw that there were two breathtakingly beautiful Golden Elves ladies in Yue Yang’s party, they were already drooling in greed. Furthermore, there was the weak-looking Yue Yang who was actually wearing a Gold-ranked Mask, making them want to snatch it away from him. However, beside Yue Yang, there was Xue Tan Lang who was releasing his Qi, overpowering and pressuring them. They didn’t think they would be able to defeat Xue Tan Lang, hence they discarded the idea of attacking the other party. However, after glancing at each other, the three party leaders thought that they should just give it a try. Maybe they would be able to acquire all three beauties that way... Be it the doll-like girl wearing black dragon leather or the two golden elves, all of them were high quality goods. If they could get even one of them, they wouldn’t mind if they lose ten years of their lives.

As the saying goes, “Humans die for gold, birds die for food.”

Becoming evil halfway through the way, killing people for treasure, these kind of things happen in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower all the time. It's not a strange sight at all.

The three party leaders looked to the sky and saw that the spider waves was slowly passing by.

Seemed like in a short moment, the spider threat would be gone.

Just at the right time, they should take advantage of this opportunity.

Along with the hand gestures that the three party leaders signed, a dozen over adventurers charged forward, smiling evilly and surrounded Yue Yang and the others. In their eyes, this party with two Golden Elves only have one formidable enemy and two good fighters... That youth with the extremely cool face would be the toughest enemy to defeat. The other Ox-head party leader and the handsome Golden Elf was also not weak.

However they didn't care about the others like the Ox-head girl, the orc girls and the two thin guys carrying giant poles. Their abilities were not that high, one adventurer would probably be enough to hold them off, and two adventurers would be able to defeat them easily.

The little Golden Elf girl's bow was only for decoration, she would not pose as a threat.

The fatty's and the monkey's ability were, needless to say, even worse than the others, they don't even deserve to be taken into consideration.

As for the big fool wearing a Gold-ranked Mask, everyone ignored him automatically. A mere Level 6 Junior Elder could be slapped and sent away flying easily anytime.

These adventurers were planning to kidnap the three high quality women in the midst of the chaos.

In the past, they had done this many times.

“What are you trying to do? Please, I beg you guys, please protect us weak women, don't let them tarnish our reputation. I will definitely thank you abundantly when we return...” The purple-haired girl looked pitiful as she cowered and walked towards Yue Yang and Bao Er, as if trying to seek their protection.

“Don't worry, I will definitely protect you. How dare these beasts do this! I, the goddess of justice, will definitely annihilate all of them!” Bao Er's heroic personality burst out as she raised her bow.

“...” Yue Yang could neither cry nor laugh. Who would be the one protecting who?

She didn't even consider this purple-haired girl's origins. Maybe she had other motives for trying to get your protection!

Who would emerge the victor?

Nobody knows!

If it wasn't because Yue Yang was a little curious on her motives, he would have already attacked her.

However, he decided to observe the situation first. It was a good opportunity for them to learn... If he managed to see the whole truth clearly, it might even help with leveling his beasts to Holy Beasts to Divine Beasts! Bloody Queen, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen and even the Barbarian Cow Shadow, Yue Yang would never allow them to be limited to their current level. He must think of a way to level them up into a high quality Holy Beasts and Divine Beasts!

“Boom!”

Xue Tan Lang released a burst of ice cold qi from his body, and the temperature of the whole place suddenly dropped ten over degrees colder. Frost and snow formed in the air.

He looked at the surrounding adventurers coldly and said, “Leave this place immediately, otherwise I’ll kill you!”

Bao Er clapped her hands and praised, “Brother Xue Tan Lang, you are so cool! Beat them, beat all of these fellows up until they are picking up their teeth on the ground. Also, brother fatty and

monkey, go and beat them up too!”

Ye Kong was speechless, “Cough, didn’t I tell you to call me Brother Ye? I am not Brother Monkey...”

The three adventurers party leader estimated that the ice-attributed human boy was extremely strong, it would be difficult to defeat him even with the three of them. Although they were superior in numbers, the moment they start fighting, they might suffer great losses. Afterwards, if the three parties fought internally against each other, wouldn’t they be crippled then? They were a little hesitant. Although beauties are good, they still need to be alive to enjoy the beauties.

Just as they were thinking of retreating, the purple-haired seductive beauty suddenly spoke out, angering them.

That purple-haired girl ridiculed them, “Kill, kill all of these trash. How could useless trashes like them have weird ideas about me!”

When she said these, the three party leaders were furious, more furious than any other moment in their lives. They had originally wanted to let that beauty off, but she was actually seeking death, so they didn’t mind granting it to her. Even if their party members were killed, they could still find other people to replace them. If they missed the opportunity to capture this beauty, they might not be able to get another chance in the future. Furthermore, if they didn’t show off a little after being called useless trashes, how could they still be called a man? They should just die then!

The adventurers surrounding Yu Yang's party were also riled to the point that their eyes glowered in red. They had also initially wanted to let the beauty off, but after hearing her, they wanted to teach her a lesson.

Kill!

The adventurers almost didn't wait for their party leader's orders as they cried out thunderously and charged forward.

The beasts beside them also charged forward together with a loud rumble.

"I will first kill you, then hunt for the boss monster here! Do you really think that I will be afraid of you?" Fatty Hai roared out and released his hidden strength. If Yue Yang was not here, he would probably be a little worried. But now, these enemies felt like the little minions they had to fight before facing the boss monster. He remembered Yue Yang ever said when he conquered the Twelve Zodiac Temples, if he didn't kill a lot of minions before killing the boss monster, defeating the boss monster wouldn't feel that awesome.

"You guys are dead meat!" Ye Kong laughed out coldly.

Their speed were not any slower than the fastest in the party, Xue Tan Lang.

Their hidden strength instantly burst out to the maximum, increasing their speed as they charged towards the enemies... Fatty Hai's Hippo Meteor Punch smashed hard at one of the party leader's chest.

That party leader was completely shocked. Never in his life did he imagine that this vulgar-looking fatty was actually stronger than himself.

Right as the party leader was sent flying towards the valley walls, Ye Kong appeared at his back and attacked with a strong punch.

Together with Fatty Hai, they attacked the party leader's head.

Boom!

The party leader's head burst open.

The party leader who was Level 8 Emperor couldn't even show one of his moves before he was killed by Ye Kong and Fatty Hai's combo attack.

However, he didn't really die meaninglessly, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were originally more powerful than him. Furthermore, he had completely misjudged their strength from the beginning.

Make one wrong move and you will lose all.

On the other side of the battlefield, one of the party leaders was sent flying to the sky by Xue Tan Lang. While his body was still frozen like ice in the air, Prince of Tian Luo smashed him down violently from the sky like a meteor. His body burst into pieces of meat as he died miserably on the spot. This was Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo's combo attack. Their combo attack's power was on par with Ye Kong and Fatty Hai's combo attack... Under the influence of the Great Totem Pole Battle Technique, they would be much stronger attacking in teams than alone. When two, four, or six people formed a combo attack together, the power of the attack would be greatly multiplied.

The last party leader who was riding on a Gold-ranked Kodo Beast was the strongest amongst the three.

The Ox-head Party Leader Li Ao and Fan Lun Tie charged forward.

However, the great axe that they swung violently was actually repelled easily by the party leader.

This fellow had not yet realised that his two other comrades had actually returned to paradise. He was still following their original plan and charged straight towards the purple-haired, black-clad girl with his hands reaching forward, "Beauty, you are mine!"

His plan was perfect. If he attacked the other two golden elves, he would definitely provoke the whole party's wrath.

But if he took the opportunity to kidnap this sexy purple-haired

girl while his comrades were keeping the other party members busy, he would be able to get away if he quickly used a teleportation scroll to escape... As for his other party members, who cares if they die? As long as the two parties fight to their deaths and attracted the horde of Snaggleteeth Spiders with their blood, all of them will be annihilated, and he would be able to enjoy the sexy enchantress all on his own.

“Save me!” The sexy purple-haired enchantress wanted to go around Bao Er so that she could hide behind Yue Yang.

“Hui Tai Lang, you damned dog, what are you waiting for!” Yue Yang kicked the lazy Hui Tai Lang and pulled Bao Er into his arms at the same time.

“Roll over right now, you rotten dog!”

That party leader didn't even care. A Bronze-ranked Level 3 Iron-backed Demon Wolf? He could kill it with a sneeze!

Who would know, the party leader whom the Ox-head Party Leader Li Ao and Fan Lun Tie could not defeat with brute force, as actually smacked flying easily by a Bronze-ranked Level 3 Iron-backed Demon Wolf. It was as if the party leader's Gold-ranked Kodo Beast was made of paper. Hui Tai Lang only slashed its claws a little, yet the party leader felt like he was attacked by a horde of Giant Mammoths. He shot straight towards the valley walls, caused a few rubles to fall, and shook the whole valley violently.

When the party leader struggled in pain to get up, Hui Tai Lang

was standing at a high place as it raised up its hind leg. A stream of hot yellow liquid splashed onto the party leader's face.

The smell of piss almost made that fellow faint.

“I'll kill you, bitch!” The party leader who had strengthened his body with the Kodo Beast could not even manage to swing his fists before he was pressed down by Hui Tai Lang's great claws.

Rumble!

The whole ground shook violently.

That party leader's head burst open like juice as he died on the spot.

Bao Er's mouth immediately formed a cute 'o'. Forget about her, even Anna and Lin En could only stare dumbly at the scene before them.

This, what kind of special Demon Wolf was this?

How could a Bronze-ranked Level 3 beast kill a Level 8 Intermediate Emperor instantly?

Chapter 386 – I Wanna Be A Divine Beast!

“We surrender!” The adventurers cried as they fell to the ground, defeated by Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the Li Brothers just like how the autumn wind sweeps the leaves down.

“Too late.” Xue Tan Lang was aloof and merciless when he strikes.

The same went for Hui Tai Lang as it killed another adventurer with its claws.

Fatty Hai and Ye Kong used all their power as they killed indiscriminately without regards to whether if they resisted.

Anna and Lin En wanted to stop them, but on seeing that Yue Yang and the purple-haired woman was looking at each other, they shifted their attention immediately.

With a charming smile, the purple-haired sexy beauty was trying to seduce Yue Yang with her big doe eyes. But Yue Yang continued with his serious expression as he held on tightly to Bao Er, afraid that the naughty girl would leave his side. Bao Er struggled a bit as she thought Yue Yang was trying to take advantage of her. As she was preparing to bite his arms, she stopped on seeing Anna’s hand gesture.

However, she was still confused with the situation.

Obviously they have won, so what is happening now?

Could it be that this son of an upstart knew this purple-haired enchantress?

“Rest assured, I won’t harm her.” Seeing Yue Yang’s severe expression, the purple-haired woman smiled slightly, making everyone’s heart race.

“Go away!” This was Yue Yang’s reply.

“When you left that day, I thought I won’t see you again. I’m so happy to see you today. Little girl, do you remember the Silver Dragon from the Jadeite Forest? I’m a friend of the Silver Dragon, so I’m not a bad person!” Looking at Yue Yang’s look that was filled with rejection, she turned towards Bao Er. Hearing what she said, Bao Er recalled vaguely. “You, you are the Black Shadow sister from the Dragon Cliff, no wonder your voice sounded so familiar.”

“I’ll give you some money!” Yue Yang said as he took out some gold coins and passed it to Bao Er. “Help me count them!”

“Why?” Bao Er was a little puzzled.

“I’m preparing to sell you away, so please help me count the money.” Yue Yang replied matter-of-factly. Everyone burst into laughter when they heard it.

“Why are you selling me away?” Bao Er was even more puzzled. This sent Fatty Hai and the rest collapsing onto the ground.

Oh boy, if this girl were to be sold off, she might really help the person count his money.

The purple-haired woman smiled as she thought that it was funny too.

She wanted to hold out her hand to pet Bao Er’s head, but Yue Yang brushed her hands away instantly.

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others all started to crowd around, ready to summon their Grimoire for their strongest Beasts. The Li Brothers had even thrust their large Totem Poles onto the ground to support the entire team in terms of combat power. Xue Tan Lang went to gather his strongest freezing air energy while Prince Tian Luo’s meteorite was ready to attack.

Bao Er was confused, and similarly were the Four Orc girls.

The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie was at loss too.

Only Anna and Li En coordinated with Fatty Hai and the rest’s formation as they prepared to take down the silent female guards in black.

The purple-haired woman threw a glance at Fatty Hai and the rest.”Are you trying to bully the three of us with so many of you?”

She said calmly.

Fatty Hai smiled evilly. “It seems that we really make up the majority now...”

“Look up at the sky before you speak!” Ye Kong shouted as he punched Fatty Hai. When Fatty Hai raised his head, what he saw sent a chill down his spine. Because the top of the valley was covered entirely with dense cobwebs, and the spiders were charging down ferociously, with thousands of Human-faced Spiders and hundreds of Gold King Beasts Devil-eyed Spider leading the troop. The densely packed giant spiders filled the entire valley, leaving nowhere empty. They covered everywhere they went with their webs, turning the entire valley into a giant mesh bag in just a while, and trapping their preys in it.

When the purple-haired woman waved her pristine arms, all the spiders stopped dead in their track. They were ten times more organised than a well trained army.

She pointed to Fatty Hai and the rest as she smiled at Yue Yang. “Other than you, no one else can fight me. But if i wish to kill them, i could have done it yesterday. But little sister Bao Er is so cute, how could I bear to harm her? Actually I just wish to make friends and interact with you all.”

Yue Yang pulled Bao Er, who was exceptionally happy after hearing the compliment, behind him, preventing her to leave his side.

This made Bao Er stomp her feet in anger as the intimate posture they were in made her feel extremely awkward. It was as if he was embracing her and he wasn't willing to let go.

Ignoring Bao Er's reactions, Yue Yang stared at the purple-haired woman as if she was a dangerous opponent that he couldn't lose focus of even for a second. Hui Tai Lang stared at the two female guards in black and growled as a warning for them to stop coming any nearer.

"Is there such a way to make friends?" Yue Yang pointed to the spiders that had covered the entire area. "Who will bring tens of thousands of spiders to make friends?"

"You are dangerous too, if I don't bring along these small spiders to protect myself, I'm afraid that you'll kill me!" The purple-haired woman murmured dejectedly, and then broke out into a smile that was ultra charming. "You are wary of me, I'm even more wary of you. How about we treat each other with sincerity? I want to learn the things you know, and if you are interested in my treasures, I wouldn't be stingy..."

"Yue Yang, don't be polite with her, kill her. It's rare that we meet with such a big BOSS. Dealing with tens of thousands of spiders is a piece of cake and would be worthy." Fatty Hai put up a strong front as his feet trembled in fear. A Snaggleteeth Spider would be a piece of cake to him, but there were tens of thousands of them here.

"I'd like to show my power first. Maybe then you all would be interested in making friends with me."

The purple-haired woman disappeared.

She then appeared behind Fatty Hai's back. She blew a breath onto her pristine palm and printed it onto Fatty Hai's back.

Fatty Hai began to breathe heavily, as he attempted to defend and stand his ground with his Iron Rhinoceros strengthening. At the same time, he countered the purple-haired woman with the Hippo Meteor Punch that was ten times stronger and faster than his previous attack. Ye Kong and the Li Brothers who were beside Fatty Hai went to his aid immediately and attacked her with all their might, but they knew that she was a really strong BOSS and the lot of them would definitely not be able to take her down. But because Yue Yang was with them, they weren't afraid.

With a speed of lightning, the purple-haired woman pressed Fatty Hai onto the ground. She then dragged Fatty Hai through the ground, and in an instant, she had drawn a 50 metre long, deep mark on the ground with Fatty Hai's face.

In the meantime, Ye Kong and the Li Brothers had just started attacking.

Their speed differed greatly from the purple-haired girl.

One was as quick as a lightning, while the other one was as slow as a snail.

Before he could even withdraw his fist, Ye Kong realised that the purple-haired woman's hand was already in between his forehead. His head was then smashed into the stone wall with a loud thud. He found himself dizzy and weak, as if he wasn't able to use any strength to attack back. It was as if he had been struck by a hammer.

The Li Brothers were similarly kicked and sent flying into the air one by one.

Although they were abused by Hui Tai Lang during their past trainings, Hui Tai Lang wouldn't defeat them so quickly. Also, it seemed that the purple-haired woman hadn't used all her power yet.

Xue Tan Lang and Prince Tian Luo did not attack because they knew what the outcome would be.

The purple-haired woman appeared in front of Yue Yang in a flash.

It only took her three seconds.

In a matter of three seconds, the strongest in the team, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai, together with the Li Brothers were defeated as they all lied onto the ground lifelessly.

This was an exemplification of her power!

Anna and Lin En were stunned and couldn't believe what happened...

Now, everyone had realised that the purple-haired woman was not just an ordinary person, but they did not expect that she would be so powerful... No wonder she said that she could kill everyone easily. It was because she was really that powerful. Since she was so strong, could it be that she was the legendary Spider Empress? The charming beauty they met today was a Spider Empress that could even defeat an Innate Ranker?

“Do I qualify to be your friend now?” The purple-haired woman smiled as she asked Yue Yang.

“Try to throw a punch on me.” Yue Yang passed Bao Er to Anna.

“I'm not a match for you, but since you requested, I shall try to throw a punch!” Before she finished her sentence, the purple-haired woman had disappeared and reappeared behind Yue Yang. Balling up her fist, she punched Yue Yang's back using the same technique she used on Fatty Hai just now.

“Too slow.”

Yue Yang tilted his body to dodge as he grabbed the right hand of the purple-haired woman and flung her into the air.

Just when she crashed onto the ground, Yue Yang took out his Platinum-ranked Crescent Moon Blade to slash at her.

However, the purple-haired woman had already disappeared, leaving only her after-image.

She flew 100 metres into the air instantly... Yue Yang who was previously on the ground disappeared too as he chased after her. Appearing behind her, Yue Yang slashed his Crescent Moon Blade down, unleashing his Earth Splitting Slash attack straight towards the purple-haired woman's head. The purple-haired woman took out a pair of long silver pikes from between her thighs. She crossed them together to withstand the blow from Yue Yang. Her body immediately shot to the ground like a meteorite from the impact.

When she landed on the ground and stabilised herself, she realised that there was a pair of long legs in front of her.

It was Yue Yang's legs.

His kick was as swift as that of a Buddha's kick as he sent the purple-haired woman flying in the air...

"You really get on my nerves!" The purple-haired woman raged and screamed angrily as she returned to grab hold of Yue Yang's feet with a speed that was ten times faster than she was sent flying in. She flung Yue Yang onto the stone wall, and when he rebounded, she kicked his face. But as Yue Yang had already lowered his head and dodged the deadly blow. He grabbed the woman's thighs onto shoulders with his hands as he raised her up high and smashed her to the ground.

“Boom! “

A deafening noise shook the entire Spider Valley.

Let alone the centre of the battleground, even Fatty Hai and the rest who were far away staggered and almost fell.

Numerous Snaggleteeth Spiders fell from the sky as they became even more restless. They seemed to be driven to the edge of madness, especially after seeing the miserable posture the purple-haired woman had landed herself in when she was smashed into the giant pit by Yue Yang.

The purple-haired woman raised her hand slowly, signalling for the cessation of commotion among the spiders.

She picked herself up.

After spitting some soil and dirt, she took off her Black Dragon Armour, revealing a small vest that showed off her hot body. What made everyone shocked was that when she dropped the Black Dragon Armour to the ground, it landed with an extremely loud thud. It seemed to be made of a material that was a hundred times heavier than a metal block, and this very fact scared Fatty Hai and the rest out of their wits. This woman had been wearing such a heavy armour during the battle just now, yet she could still move so swiftly?

“I’m going to start being serious now. It’s been so long since I

met such an interesting opponent. Although I'm no match for you, I won't let you bully me like this! “ The purple-haired woman tied up her hair and she seemed to remove her pants too. The pants made from Black Dragon skin might be of a heavy weight too, that's why she wanted to release all her burdens to fight with Yue Yang.

“I'm not going fight with you anymore.” Yue Yang turned his back.

He decided to call it a quit.

He had already known how strong the purple-haired woman was. She was nearly a Level Seven Innate. God knows how this woman could cultivate to such a high level.

Of course, if they were to really fight, Yue Yang could still defeat her. It was just a matter of time.

The most important thing was that she was very fast, so it would make the fight very energy consuming.

Hearing that Yue Yang wanted to call it a quit, the purple-haired woman held onto her pants as she was unsure if she should remove it or not.

She responded after being stunned for a long while. “Why? I still have many other superb skills and Domain of Power that I have yet to show! “

Yue Yang waved his hands. “You win, okay? “

Yue Yang ‘s reply made her speechless. She wore her Black Dragon Armour again and kicked Yue Yang ‘s shin when she walked past him. It seemed that she wanted to take revenge of him kicking her just now. But when everyone looked at her, she regained the look of a superior as she reached out her hands. “Please allow me to introduce myself, I’m Jiang Ying, the Lord of the Spider Valley. Some call me the Spider Empress, but I’m actually a dragon, a mixed blood one...My grandmother was a Spider Empress and the Silver Dragon you all met last time was my aunt, she was giving birth at that point of time. If you guys are interested, we can exchange different necessities such as Dragon Skin, teeth, horn, scale, muscle, blood, you name it I have it. I also have some spider related products and even magic crystals, accessories, weapons, medicinal ingredients and ores. “

“Then what do you need? “ Yue Yang didn’t shake hands with her as he inquired her openly instead.

“A Grimoire.“ The purple-haired woman pointed to Hui Tai Lang as she looked at Yue Yang in the eye. “I want to be like Hui Tai Lang who could successfully contract a Grimoire. I’m sure that you know some ways to make me a Divine Beast. “

“Hui Tai Lang is a Divine Beast? “ This almost made the Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie and the four orc girls faint from shock. Never in their lives would they imagine that that stupid dog was actually a Divine Beast!

“Hui Tai Lang is so impressive... “ Bao Er totally forgot what she mentioned previously, that Hui Tai Lang wouldn’t be able to survive in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

“Do you think it’s so easy to contract a Grimoire? “ Yue Yang rejected her on the spot.

“Of course it won’t be easy. But I’m sure that you can do it. “ The purple-haired woman said as she smiled, her small face looked as charming as a ray of sunshine shining through the clouds. She grabbed Yue Yang’s hands forcefully to indicate that they had formed alliance and then she told him a big secret. “I know that a Ten Thousand Years Mother Earth Potion will appear in the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower soon. As long as we could drink it, not only me, even your other Beasts could all become Holy Beasts, or even Divine Beasts! Team up with me. Only I know the place where it will appear and also, a Ten Thousand Years Mother Earth Potion is extremely rare. It will only appear once in ten thousand years. If you miss it, you would have to wait for another ten thousand years! “

“Ten Thousand Years Mother Earth Potion?” Yue Yang wavered a bit. Not only was it popular in the Medicine Encyclopedia, it was also sought after by the Qilin Girl and appeared in the knowledge pool of the tragic guy’s mother.

Everyone said that it was the best ingredient to be used when making a godly medicine. One would have to wait ten thousand years for one to appear.

A Ten Thousand Years Mother Earth Potion would only be

created in a heavenly environment that contained sufficient Spirit Qi. It encapsulated the essence of both heaven and the earth. If a normal man were to consume it, their lifespan could be extended by 500 years.

It was of even higher level than the God's Dew, God's Wine and the Immortal Spring Water. Only the Warrior's Soul and the God's Blood were on par with it, but as both were only found in the outskirts of God's Ruin, one would have to travel to the Heaven Realm to get them... This made the Motherland Potion the only godly medicine that could be obtained from Tong Tian Tower or outside Tong Tian Tower.

But the thing was it would only appear once in ten thousand years.

And only one with affinity to it would be able to get it. But now, it's actually going to appear somewhere in the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower?

If the Warriors in the Tong Tian Tower were to know about this, a lot of them might go crazy. And it would cause fighting and bloodshed in the Tong Tian Tower.

“How many people know about this? “ Yue Yang felt that if her information was real, then it was really not to be missed.

“Only I know about it.” The purple-haired woman shook Yue Yang 's hands vigorously. “ If you make me a Divine Beast, we can split the Motherland Potion equally and form alliance. If you

encounter any trouble, I would definitely go to your aid. Look at all these spiders, wouldn't they be the best soldiers one could ever ask for? I have no other wishes other than becoming a Divine Beast, so how is the deal? “

“I'll have to consider first...” Yue Yang wanted to agree to it immediately, but he managed to hold it in. He had to gain the upper hand first.

“Listen up, I want to become a Divine Beast! There's no need to consider!” The purple-haired woman shook Yue Yang's hand vigorously, she almost broke his bones.

Everyone wanted to agree on Yue Yang's behalf, but who knew that he would turn his back to her and say that he had to give it a thought.

He could be the death of everyone.

It was such a good deal, how could he not agree to it?

Chapter 387 – The Legendary Uniform Fetishism

Yue Yang had a greedy thought.

Turns out that the impossibly strong Spider Empress, purple-haired Jiang Ying was a strong, independent Hornless Dragon with her own thoughts. If Yue Yang was not tempted by this, it would be a lie. Her stunning beauty, sexy body, alluring face and heroic strength were all extremely alluring. If he helped her become a Divine Beast, her strength would probably increase by leaps and bounds. At present, she was already a ‘Seven Stars Holy Beast’ which was equivalent to a Level Seven Innate. If she contracts a grimoire and purify her strength with his Innate Qi and Nirvana Flames, her strength would reach a whole new level. Her future would be limitless!

Moreover, if she obtained and drank the Ten Thousand Years Mother Earth Potion, her strength would sky rocket!

If this girl would only be a mutually beneficial ally, Yue Yang would absolutely not be at ease, especially because she possessed a very high intelligence and could make her own decisions.

It would only take a second for an ally to turn into an enemy.

The only thing that would make Yue Yang be at ease would be to make her into his own beast... The best case scenario would be to use his Phantom Shadow to seize her and turn her into one of his Guardian Beast like Bloody Queen Red.

Only Guardian Beasts would never betray its owner, because they shared life and death with their master.

Yue Yang did not hope to control Jiang Ying's mind. Moreover, he would never be able to suppress a beast's personality, just like how he couldn't suppress Bloody Queen Red's thoughts.

His only goal was to make a contract with her.

Naturally, if Yue Yang suggested a contract with her, Jiang Ying might immediately refuse it. Moreover, a fierce conflict would appear in her heart. No matter how good becoming a Divine Beast is, freedom is better. As a carefree empress-level beast, she would definitely have a hard time accepting the fact of becoming a human's contracted beast. At that time, when he used the Phantom Shadow to seize the Bloody Queen, he had received a fierce rejection, but at that time the Bloody Queen was fatally injured. The circumstances had made her change her mind, combine with the Phantom Shadow and become Yue Yang's Guardian Beast.

With the successful case of Bloody Queen Red, Yue Yang naturally hoped to do the same thing again.

For now he won't say anything and first let this girl worry, and then slowly guide her. First, he would make her have a favorable impression on him so that, when the time comes for the Phantom Shadow to seize her, there won't be any fierce resistance.

Yue Yang was not anxious. He would slowly wait for a chance. It would be impossible to make a contract with such a strong beast just because he wished for it. It was a process that required a long journey and a good opportunity!

Without waiting for Bao Er and the others to come to their senses, Yue Yang used a teleportation stone to leave and return to the mansion in the Thunder Fortress.

In here, he was not Bao Er's cook, he was the house owner with the highest position..

In order to entice Jiang Ying, he intentionally left Hui Tai Lang.

Hui Tai lang would definitely pretentiously summon its grimoire, making everybody see its power. This way Jiang Ying would definitely become extremely envious. Yue Yang's conscience had long turned evil. Naturally, he had never considered himself to be a good person. He felt that if he gave everything away in order to be a nice person, that would be what others may call as incompetent!

“Master, the uniform is done. However, a few details still need to be processed.” A few maids respectfully delivered the uniform.

“Master, your servant has already prepared the hot water for you to take a bath.” The half-elf girl truly knows how to serve her master. When Yue Yang saw her bowing cheerfully in her new maid uniform, his beastly blood boiled and heat began to rise from his lower abdomen. She wore a black apron with white frills, and a

beautiful white headband with frills decorated her head. Her white neck was adorned with a scarlet red handkerchief, and below it, there was a shockingly, soul-electrifyingly beautiful cleavage to behold... How wonderful would it be if he could stuff his head inside those until he suffocate!

“Cough, cough, the uniform is not bad!” Yue Yang strongly pushed aside the thought of happily suffocating inside the half-elf’s breasts and caressed her head.

“Thank you master, your servant is very happy!” Looking at her, it seemed like she wanted to also follow inside and wait upon him taking bath. Her small face blushed. Her small fingers trembled slightly as if she was very nervous. However, her slender legs followed bravely.

Yue Yang suddenly turned around with a deadpan expression and said: “Did you know? A female slave’s uniform needs to be accompanied by long white garters. Short socks are simply not enough. Also, it must be worn together with black shoes, the best would be shoes that covers the entire foot. After going through a black and white contrast, the legs’ beauty would naturally come out. If there is a lace on the garters, then it would be perfect!”

Hearing this, the half-elf girl stared blankly and immediately nodded excitedly: “Your servant will change immediately!”

By the time she ran to her bedroom with deer-like footsteps and changed her uniform, Yue Yang had already finished taking a bath. He had also returned inside the Grimoire World and became one with the sickly beauty.

If Yue Yang could hold back after seeing the sexual allure of the beautiful Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying and the half-elf girl slave's continuous enticement, then the skies would probably crash down. Luckily the sickly beauty did not leave and continuously waited upon her husband. She was endlessly gentle, allowing her spouse to enjoy a happy life. Otherwise, the beast within Yue Yang would definitely push down the half-elf girl to release the heat inside.

Outside, the half-elf girl dispiritedly hanged her head and criticized herself: "Failure. I was actually not able to serve master taking a bath. It was such a good opportunity..."

After a moment, she clenched her small fists and raised her morale: "I will definitely be more diligent tomorrow and make master like me!"

After the maids delivered dinner, the half-elf girl absent-mindedly ate on one hand and opened a book on the other hand.

From time to time she would leak out sighs of admiration as she looks at the topics on the record. "When your master returns from his battles, you must respectfully welcome him and carry your sweetest smile, that is the start of warming up your master's heart. Do not forget to wait upon your master while him are taking a bath and give him a gentle and silent massage. After your master removes his fatigue, you must offer the dinner that you had prepared earlier on, the dish is as follows... When your master is bored or lonely, use your huge breasts and take the initiative to give a near suffocating hug. You must bury his head inside your chest and let him feel blessed. At this moment, you are the

master's little mother. Never forget to console your master's heart. Never let your master feel lonely and always let him know that you are always beside him..."

"This book is truly worthy to be called Grandma's treasured mystical book!" After the half-elf girl finished sighing, she became filled with unwavering determination as she clenched her small fists: "Tomorrow, I will definitely work harder!"

Turning another page, the half-elf girl's face gradually reddened as if set on fire.

She stealthily looked at the door and discovered no one. She immediately closed the door and hid inside her bed with the book. Hiding beneath her blanket, she peeked at the book and unconsciously sighed in admiration from time to time, "Hawawa. It looks like I can also do it like this. It seems like waiting upon master is an extremely profound study... Will master like this kind of posture? Very good, my breasts are big enough and I match the conditions. I have the advantage in this position, only, I am not sure if master would like it this way..."

After Yue Yang's big battle ended, with his body and mind relaxed, he returned to the hall.

The blush on the half-elf girl's face hasn't vanished yet. Her gaze unconsciously looked towards her master and used her hands to compare their height difference.

When Yue Yang turned towards her, she frantically waved her

hand to tell him that nothing was wrong. After Yue Yang turned away, she quietly muttered: “Master is too tall. It looks like there are many positions that I can’t use. If I tiptoed, it should be barely enough... If only I could grow a bit more!”

Butler Yan Zheng and Fat Toad Jia De had gone to the auction earlier on and hadn’t returned.

Those slaves had once again dug up good ores and entrusted the dagger girl, Xia Yi, to report to Master Titan.

Originally Xia Yi did not have a good impression towards Yue Yang. She even thought that Mr.Titan Sr. was the true Ranker, while Mr.Titan Jr. was from the second generation, who would not be able to defeat her without his full set equipments. However, Mr. Titan Sr. had left Mr.Titan Jr. to manage things. Without any other options left, she could only nurse her grudge against Yue Yang, the younger Mr. Titan. In these few days her grudge had settled down a lot, but she still continued to look down upon Yue Yang. If she did not bicker Yue Yang for one day, she would feel disgusted, as if something was missing. As a result, whenever the slaves dug up a good ore, she would actively bring them over. On one side, it was to help the slaves receive their bonuses and on the other, it was to quarrel with Yue Yang.

She would not neglect her work and her grudge.

Maybe this was the thing they called a natural enemy.

With regards to Yue Yang buying a busty female slave with a

huge sum of money, Xia Yi was especially disgusted.

A childish face with huge breasts. She only had slightly bigger breasts and slightly more innocent look. It wasn't as if her face wouldn't suddenly grow flowers if he looked at her more! He was a pervert that had never seen big breasts his whole life! Xia Yi classified Yue Yang as a Breast Loving Beast. She evilly made conjectures like: 'Yue Yang did not drink milk when he was born, or the milk had all been drunk by the strong Mr. Titan Sr. And that this became his heart's shadow when he was a child. As a result he became such a huge pervert.'

Of course, if someone said that she was jealous because she had small breast, she would never admit it!

"You came at the right time, take off your clothes..." When Yue Yang said this, Xia Yi's beautiful big eyes immediately burn with rage. Did you think 'I' am your female slave? One you could order to take off her clothes or put them back on whenever you want to?!

"Dream on!" Xi Yi's first action was to draw out her dagger. Although she knew that she was not his opponent, she must still resist.

"Try changing into this, who would want to look at your book-like body? Your chest is flat as an airport runway!" Yue Yang severely criticized Xia Yi's unacceptable self-defensive response towards perverts. Xia Yi became angry. Although she did not understand what an airport runway was, anyone who described her with a flat chest must be killed. If it was not because of the half-elf girl pulling her away, she would fight to the death with

Yue Yang.

It might be small and not as exaggerated as the half-elf girl's. However, it was absolutely not flat!

Xia Yi felt that her own chest was not bad. Although it was not big, its shape was still beautiful with a tender color. It was round and not drooping. It stood up with pride and was a grade A class treasure. She did not imagine that this pervert did not understand how to admire beauty and specially criticized it.

She could not stand this kind of Breast Loving Beast...

She was definitely angry, but there is no harm in changing clothes.

This brat made her new clothes, why would she be polite? Taking up his hospitality was her good fortune.

After the indignant Xia Yi changed into the new uniform, she was stupefied. This... this heroic beauty in the mirror... was it truly her?

It was a skintight uniform that she had never seen before. Her black hat was flat, and there was a weird yet majestic-looking golden crest in front. Her black-coloured top was ironed straight, decorated with small, silver strips of badges. The stars embroidered on her shoulders were awe-inspiring, and there was also gold-coloured tassels hanging down from her chest, as if it was

a gold-coloured rainbow. Her tight, short skirt also emphasized her long legs and slender figure. Her legs were adorned in a black-coloured pump. Xia Yi felt that she had turned into a whole new person.

Wearing these clothes made her entire soul tremble. She was filled with strength.

A kind of unspeakable grandeur radiated from within her body.

Even she herself felt that this uniform suits her very much. Compared to a warrior's uniform or a robber's uniform, this was even more of a fit.

She then placed the silver dagger inside the leather belt. Xia Yi slowly stood straight with her head held high. She gathered her feet together as she looked at the person in the mirror. The reflection of a heroic-looking, beautiful female soldier was so unfamiliar that she could not believe that it was her.

“Not bad, pity it lack something.” Yue Yang stretched his hand and stroke Xia Yi's neck, fixing the collar and hat: “Wearing a white shirt inside and a scarlet necktie would be better. Also it lacks a pair of white gloves.” Originally these touchy feely action would enrage Xia Yi. However, without knowing why, Xia Yi discovered that she actually replied softly: “Is that so?”

“Later, I will join the auction, accompany me!” Yue Yang stretched out his hand and lightly caressed the half-elf girl who was not willing to show up in public. His movements were like an

owner caressing an obedient cat. However, towards Xia Yi, he simply ordered her strictly.

“No!” When Xia Yi heard his hard toned command, she became angry and refused him immediately. However, her legs quickly followed him for an unknown reason.

Chapter 388 – Dark Prison Royal Jelly

The Villain City was located in the centre of the Thunder Fortress among three other districts.

It was where all the rich men of the Thunder Fortress resided and was a haven for those who seek an unbridled and materialistic life.

King Chong Ni's palace was located on the highest hill of the Thunder Fortress, which could be seen when one followed through the winding tunnels to the ground level. Under the hill, there was a small lake below a steep cliff that belonged to the King Chong Ni. No one else dared to live there. Tall buildings were found scattered in the other three directions. Among all, the busiest central district was the Villain City.

If one could afford to own a mansion in the Underground City but had no properties in the Villain City, no matter how rich the person might be, he would only be considered a parvenu.

Of course An Dong owned properties in the Villain City, he even owned two retail outlets.

However it was already ransacked by Demon Eye's followers even before Jia De could go and take over them... Even a blind man would be able to tell now that Demon Eye, one of the three leaders, harboured a deep grudge against Titan the newbie.

Demon Eye supported An Dong originally, and it could be said that he was An Dong's greatest ally. But now, An Dong lost

everything and Titan took his place. Having lost both his right hand man and his two great followers, Nightmare and Tiger Nian, Demon Eye had proclaimed several times that he was going to teach Yue Yang a lesson. He would make Yue Yang understand that even a powerful dragon cannot crush a snake in its old haunts. The attitude of the two other leaders, Mountain Elf and Blood River, were completely the opposite. They have indicated on various occasions that they would welcome Titan with open arms. They even quipped that they didn't mind a situation where there would be four leaders, showing their full support towards him.

Ma Long the Underground City Master took a neutral stance.

Since Titan wasn't interested in fighting with him to take over as the next City Master of the Underground City, Ma Long didn't feel threatened.

Moreover, Ma Long had plans to acquire the arena and had sent men over to negotiate with Titan's subordinate, the Toad Merchant and Yan Zheng the housekeeper. They were only left with deciding on the final price, so if Titan and Demon Eye were to really fight against each other, Ma Long might side with Yue Yang.

Although the Villain City was prosperous, Yue Yang didn't care about it as these were all nothing to him. The only thing that mattered in the Tong Tian Tower was power!

If Chong Ni and the three leaders were to die, then the Thunder Fortress would become a bloody killing ground where mobs loot and murder.

“Master, this way please.” The fat Jia De welcomed Yue Yang eagerly.

When Jia De first saw Xia Yi in a smart policewoman uniform, he almost didn't recognise her as he thought Mr. Titan had gotten a new beauty. It was only on closer look did he realise that it was Xia Yi who always picked a fight with his master, Yue Yang, all the time.

Seeing Jia De opening his mouth wide in shock, Xia Yi couldn't help but to feel pleased.

After jumping down from the carriage, Yue Yang proceeded to the auction house.

There was an unwritten rule in the auction house that weak Merchants and Warriors were to reach the place early to greet the Rankers who would arrive later. Of course, those who were at rivalry to each other would not abide by it. For example, when all the merchants stood to applause and greet Yue Yang, a few who were under Demon Eye remained seated.

Forget about the merchants around the auction house, even those of high status sitting in the private boxes waved their hands through the windows to show their respect.

As Yue Yang was an Innate Ranker who could kill Nightmare and Tiger Nian, he could possibly be one of the four leaders of the Thunder Fortress in the future. Hence ,they had to forge some

kind of relationship with him first.

When Yue Yang entered the VIP private box in level 2, a few people started to buzz around.

Their discussions were all surrounding Yue Yang's mysterious identity, looks and strength.

Soon after Yue Yang entered the auction house, the City Master of the Underground City, Ma Long, Mountain Elf and Blood River who were part of the three leaders arrived not long after. Chong Ni did not come, making Demon Eye the one with the highest power. He arrived the latest to show that he was of the highest status.

Demon Eye was a foreign man with eyes glowing with a red light. Standing at three metres tall, he had horns on his head and beard growing from the side of his head and down his chin. He wore a circular neck brace-like object that was connected to the skeletal bones of his shoulders. His arms bulged with the horns, and his black nails were razor sharp. One thing Yue Yang noticed was that Demon Eye was wearing a shiny ring. It didn't look like a normal jewel, instead, it resembled a storage ring with unique functions and it was a Platinum-ranked equipment.... Yue Yang felt that it would be worth killing Demon Eye just to get this Platinum-ranked ring in return.

For someone like Demon Eye, he would definitely put a lot of treasures within his ring.

Demon Eye waved to Mountain Elf, Blood River and Ma Long

individually, showing that he was magnanimous Ranker.

However, he didn't wave to Mr. Titan who was of equal status as the trio. He acted as if he had never heard of him. Everyone watched secretly, anticipating to see a good show.

“Ha, boss Demon Eye, please allow me to introduce someone to you. The man who replaced An Dong as the new owner of the Western Wind Mine is also here. Do you want to see him and extend our welcome to him as the leader of the Thunder Fortress?” Mountain Elf was a scrawny man with a skinny build, and he had long arms with sunken eyes. However all these weren't an apt exemplification of his power. He was actually on par to Demon Eye in terms of strength.

“Indeed, Mr. Titan is someone who deserves our respect.” Blood River also agreed.

Blood River was a handsome man.

He looked middle aged, but the handlebar moustache above his lips made him look fashionable. He had a clear sharp eyes and was clad in a fiery red cloak.

Both of his hands were smooth like that of a woman's. But it was this pair of hand that made him powerful as he was known for his ultimate skill, the Heaven Engulfing Fiery Palm!

Demon Eye knew that Mountain Elf and Blood River did it

deliberately to sow discords between him and Mr. Titan, so that their relations would worsen under the public eye. With a small hmph, Demon Eye pretended to be amicable as he laughed. “I didn’t know that Mr. Titan is here, if not I would have welcomed him warmly. With regards to him replacing An Dong, I have heard of it from my assistant.”

In the end, he still didn’t acknowledge Yue Yang as he walked into his VIP private box laughing.

Everyone looked towards Yue Yang.

They wanted to see how, as an Innate Ranker, the newcomer Mr. Titan would react to himself being ignored publicly.

“Jia De, as a junior, shall we send some gifts over to our senior? Get the firewood at the corner and give it to the leader Demon Eye as form of respect.” Upon hearing what Yue Yang said, everyone was stunned. Sending a gift over? Using firewood as a gift? What does it mean?

“Wh-what does this mean?” On the auction house below, Jia De handed a firewood over to Demon Eye’s follower respectfully, making Demon Eye’s follower completely incensed.

“My master had said that in his homeland, a man worthy of jewels will be given jewels, while a useless man worthy of [firewood](#) will be given firewood. We think that the most suitable present for your master is these firewood!” Jia De decided to risk it all. He knew that with the words that he said, if Demon Eye wasn’t killed

then he would be the one who will die. However, he had no other choices but to risk it all because if Demon Eye were to be killed, then that would make Yue Yang part of the three leaders, and his status would rise enormously, making him just a rank lower than the greatest man of Thunder Fortress.

(Want2eat: Firewood is a homonym of useless man)

“I’m going to kill you... “ The follower was even angrier.

“Stop. I will take the firewood, and help me relay to Mr. Titan that these firewood could be put into good use to beat up dogs in the future!” Demon Eye poked his head out from the window and smirked.

“It’s a good thing to receive gifts. I didn’t even receive any!” Blood River laughed as he tried to clear the awkwardness in the air.

He looked at Mountain Elf as they nodded discreetly.

The rest of the crowd felt that there would be more dramas coming up in the future and was contemplating on whose side they would support.

They couldn’t afford to choose wrongly because the consequences of it would be dire... If they chose Demon Eye but Titan won in the end, Titan would definitely get rid of all Demon Eye’s followers. But if Demon Eye wins, those who chose Titan wrongly would perish too... So choosing sides was definitely an important skill to master!

The auction began on a rivalrous note.

As the Toad Merchant Jia De had already declared war openly, he wasn't polite to Demon Eye's follower as he competed to bid for every single item Demon Eye's followers wanted to take down.

Yue Yang had already authorised Jia De to do so, but Jia De didn't really want those items. He merely wanted to make Demon Eye's followers pay more. And Jia De was astute enough not to participate in the bidding for items wanted by Mountain Elf and Blood River's followers, but instead, they allied to suppress Demon Eye's followers, almost causing them to flare up. Demon Eye also didn't expect Yue Yang to be so full of guts to challenge him so openly. This trapped him in a predicament and he had no choice but to continue. As he was doing so he secretly measured Yue Yang's real power... If the rascal really possessed similar powers as he do, coupled with the help of Mountain Elf and Blood River, he would definitely be a threat to him.

But once his strongest ally arrive, this rascal would die.

His trump card was his strong ally, so he wasn't afraid at all.

Everything would be okay as long as they don't start fighting now.

Demon Eye kept trying to suppress his anger. If it was in the past, he would have attacked the opponent who provoked him immediately.

“Up next will be the Dark Prison Royal Jelly. It is a Sixth Ranked Medicine where women use it for a youthful and radiant look while men use it to attain inexhaustible energy. Most importantly, this is the only bottle that could be found in the whole of Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower this year. Starting bid is 1000 gold coins, and a minimum addition of 100 gold coins is required for every bid.” The auction officer introduced the product enthusiastically on the stage.

“...” Yue Yang was a little wavered.

To others, the Dark Prison Royal Jelly was merely a drug used to replenish energy and its use was limited to boosting sexual drives.

But to Yue Yang who have read the Medicine Encyclopedia inside out and with the memories passed down from the tragic guy's mother, this Dark Prison Royal Jelly had three other uses unknown to people. Although it had to be added with other medicinal ingredients for concoction, it was a necessity as it was the main ingredient of the pill. When one managed to create a ‘Hundred Enchanting Fragrance Pill’ from Dark Prison Royal Jelly, it could give off a deadly temptation to all Insect-type Beasts. No matter if one were to use it during contracting, attracting or battling an Insect-type beast, it would be produce an extremely effective result.

It could also be used to make the rarer ‘Queen Demon Charm Potion’, which could be used to rank-up Insect-type Beasts.

It could even be used to make the ‘Dark Prison Grim Reaper Pill’, where poisonous herbs like the ‘Grim Reaper Blood Sickle Flower’, ‘Evil Green Plague Mushroom’ and others had to be added. It could be used to poison and kill Insect-type Beasts instantly, including Gold King Beasts. Even humanoid Holy Beasts could only barely defend against it.

Initially Yue Yang was disinterested in the auction as he was merely thinking of how to kill Demon Eye. He was also thinking of how to stir up some trouble in Thunder Fortress, which was the robbers’ den and kill some evil warriors to earn himself some rewards.

But now that Yue Yang saw such a good deal, of course he would be tempted.

Chapter 389 – An Old Love Rival, Sky Dragon!

“You want the Royal Jelly?” Xia Yi sat for a long time and felt bored. On seeing that Yue Yang took interest in the Dark Prison Royal Jelly, she couldn’t help but want to spit on him. He certainly lived up to his name of being an ultra pervert as he was only interested in aphrodisiacs. Thinking that she could help him bid for it but she’ll pay with his money, Xia Yi raised the sign used to bid. She quoted a price that shocked even herself. “Three Thousand Gold!”

“Wow!”

This made the crowd stunned.

Even if this was a good thing, it could only be consumed once and would be gone in one gulp. Moreover, its effects would only last for one night. Would all these warrant such a high price?

Could it be that Mr. Titan Jr. liked sex toys and wanted to use the Dark Prison Royal Jelly to aid him in the procedure?

Or was it that he just had too much money to spare to the point that he did not see the value of gold coins anymore?

Everyone was curious why Mr. Titan Jr., who did not indicate interest in any goods the whole night, actually made his female guard bid for the Dark Prison Royal Jelly.

Jia De who was under the stage was shocked too.

But he was no stranger to Yue Yang's carefree attitude and behaviours.

Moreover, the Dark Prison Royal Jelly was indeed a good medicine that both sexes could consume with no side effects.

"3500 gold." Demon Eye's followers finally got their chance as they tried to bid up the price desperately.

"4000 gold." Xia Yi smiled coldly. The one paying won't be me anyway, if you all wish to bid up the price, I will play along. It will be best if i can make this guy bankrupt, bring it on! This guy is filthy rich anyway, he wouldn't become poor even if the price goes up to forty thousand gold. When Xia Yi first started to bid, she was a little afraid and worried that Yue Yang would scold her. However on stealing glances at Yue Yang, she saw that he was smiling and didn't seem to care about the money. So she relaxed and decided to continue with the bidding since he did not seem to object to it.

"We'll bid 4500 gold." Demon Eye's follower immediately pushed up the price. You want to take down something you like? No way!

"5000," Xia Yi quoted her price immediately.

"5500." Another one of Demon Eye's follower stood up to quote the price as they were unwilling to relent.

“We don’t want it anymore.” Xia Yi’s quit made Yue Yang shocked too. Since when was she not stupid anymore?

Xia Yi snorted delightedly. “That guy wore a cunning look, I’m sure he’s not going bid anymore once I quoted 6000. He must be rejoicing and thinking that I’m stupid in his mind, but i won’t fall for his tricks! It’s okay that we didn’t get it. Just get your elder brother to snatch it back for you! Anyway you have already picked a fight with Demon Eye, so it will be an opportunity for you to get back at him!”

“...” Yan Zheng the butler who was at the door looked at Xia Yi, dumbstruck. He felt that she might have been badly influenced by Yue Yang after following him around for so long.

It was not even three minutes when a sneaky guy ran towards them.

He slipped a note to Yan Zheng.

It turned out that a black market dealer had a big bottle of the Dark Prison Royal Jelly and was willing to give it to Mr. Titan at the minimum bidding price, 1000 gold. He also wished to make friends with Mr. Titan.

Xia Yi was speechless. This guy is so lucky!

Just a few moments before, they wished to buy it at a higher

price but to no avail. However, someone was actually willing to sell it to him at such a low price now, it was almost as if they were giving it to him for free... Seems like she wouldn't have to worry about saving money for him!

“Next up we have the high quality Meteorite Vital Iron which was extracted from the core of a million ton meteorite. It weighs 1628 kilograms and is 99% pure. It is best suited to make a Gold-ranked equipment. I'm sure that everyone here will know its value without me going on further. The minimum bidding price is 5000 gold, with at least 300 additional gold with every bid. The highest bidder gets it.”

The auction officer revealed the long Meteorite Vital Iron under the red cloth, grabbing everyone's attention at once.

Although the Meteorite Vital Iron wasn't as good as the Meteorite Vital Gold, it was still a rare treasure.

The most important thing was that the Meteorite Vital Iron was of large quantity.

Many Rankers require heavy weapons as they weren't accustomed to use light weapons.

However, casting an equipment was met with the problems of energy usage and chances of it being successful. But this Meteorite Vital Iron here was 1628 kilograms, so it would be more than enough to make two heavy weapons. If an individual who prefer large weapons could create a Giant Axe or a Wolf Teeth Gauntlet,

their combat power would definitely increase by a lot. For those who prefer shorter equipments, they could use the remaining Meteorite Vital Iron to create an armour as the Meteorite Vital Iron was a good defense material too.

Yue Yang gave Xia Yi a limit of one hundred thousand for bidding.

Who knew that Xia Yi liked to ask for trouble when she quoted a price of one hundred thousand without even thinking.

This left everyone stunned instantly.

Everyone believed that at the end of the bidding, the price of the Meteorite Vital Iron would go up to a hundred thousand, but she quoted this price on first bid, how would she expect everyone to react?

“Th-the price quoted by this lady here is the highest bid now, one hundred thousand, congratulations, this amount, ahem, is great, if there are no more bidders, then this Meteorite Vital Iron will go to this lady over here... Are there any bidders who are willing to offer more than one hundred thousand? Going once, going twice... No one else?” The auction officer said after going blank for a while.

Demon did not care about Xia Yi as he stared at Yue Yang. “One hundred and ten thousand gold!” He said aloofly.

“Two hundred thousand,” Yue Yang said as he showed everyone

what it means to be rich.

“Hey!” Xia Yi was anxious. The Meteorite Vital Iron wasn’t worth two hundred thousand, if Yue Yang was the highest bidder, he would suffer a huge loss. She couldn’t stop him openly, so she stepped on his foot under the table, signalling for him not to fight with Demon Eye as it really wasn’t worth the money. Even if he was very rich, he shouldn’t waste it like this. Xia Yi was even worried that when this pervert goes home, he would be scolded by his elder brother.

“Two hundred and ten thousand...” Demon Eye wouldn’t relent as money were merely numbers to him. Forget about his own wealth, he hadn’t even spend a single cent of the few million assets confiscated from An Dong’s treasury, so he was fearless in competing with Yue Yang.

“I’ll offer two hundred and twenty thousand.” Normal people wouldn’t even dare to bid for it. Even if they wanted and had the money for it, they wouldn’t bid for it. Only Blood River who was of equal status as Demon Eye would do so. Demon Eye glared at Blood River and looked at Yue Yang as he finally went back to his private box. He was calling out on Yue Yang, not Blood River, so he would let it slide this time round.

“Congratulations, congrats leader Blood River.” The auction officer said as he perspired profusely. The atmosphere was very tensed as he could lose his life anytime.

“ You can congratulate Mr. Titan. I’ve decided to give this Meteorite Vital Iron to him!” On hearing what Blood River said,

Demon Eye's expression ashened.

“Looks like I'll have to give Mr. Titan something too or it would seem that I'm a stingy person. It would be so unpresentable of me as a leader if a honoured guest were to come to the Thunder Fortress without receiving any gift from me!” Mountain Elf was even more generous as he gave the Green Dragon Pearl he bid for five hundred thousand to Yue Yang. Demon Eye's face changed drastically as he had to think of something to retaliate before he lost his standing. Two leaders who were of equal status as he was had already decided to support Titan openly. It was obvious that they were trying to gang up on him. It seemed like the auction wouldn't end in peace today.

Just when Demon Eye's eye was glimmering to think of his comeback, a laughter came from outside the auction house.

An enormous pressure descended the entire auction house. Other than Blood River, Mountain Elf, Ma Long and Yue Yang, the rest felt like they had just landed in an icehouse as they were suffocating from the pressure.

The auction officer raised the hammer but realised that he couldn't knock it.

Many were familiar with this pressure. Only the Thunder Fortress's owner, Chong Ni, would possess such an intense aura.

However, if it were to be Chong Ni's, it would be more violent with an air of royalty surrounding it. This pressure, on the other

hand, was more invisible and gentle, which made people shiver.

The pressure vanished suddenly and everyone felt that they could breathe again.

A young handsome man in white was welcomed by a crowd who bowed when he walked in. He ignored everyone and only smiled to the Demon Eye who went to welcome him. “Long time no see, brother Demon Eye. I heard that you were troubled this few days, so as a senior I came down to drink your sorrow away with you. Come, this is the ‘Demonic Wine’ native to the Demonic Palace at Falling Cangue Mountain, come drink it with me!”

Behind the man in white, there were two mesmerising beauties following him.

They were only clad in thin layer of clothes, showing off their wondrous bodies as their conspicuous breasts and butts swayed especially when they walked, captivating everyone around them.

One of them was holding a golden dragon pot while the other was holding a silver dragon round plate with two jade cups on it.

On seeing him, the expressions of Mountain Elf and Blood River changed.

The white-robed man’s arrogant attitude of choosing to ignore the two Innate Rankers, Mountain Elf and Blood River, as he continued to drink with Demon Eye embarrassed them even more.

But even as they were embarrassed and bitter, they could only swallow their pride.

Because the man in white wasn't someone they could mess with...

“Brother Sky Dragon, I thought you'd arrive tomorrow or the day after. I'd forever grateful for your timely arrival! Come, please be seated!” Demon Eye clinked bottles with the man in white excitedly as he drained the cup in one gulp. He felt that the tables had turned and luck was favouring him now that his strong ally had arrived and he had nothing to fear! Demon Eye led the man in white to his VIP private box as he glanced delightedly at Mountain Elf and Blood River. He was especially showing off to Yue Yang, his gaze as if saying: See how you'd die later!

“A Level 6 Innate Ranker...” Xia Yi watched the Innate Heavenly Badge on the man in white as she trembled and quickly pulled Yue Yang's hands. “Let's go, he's not someone to be messed with. Quickly go back and report it to Mr Titan Sr.!”

“Is there a some rats bothering you? If you are having any difficulties, I'd have your back as your brother!” The man in white did not even look in Yue Yang's direction.

Just by sensing his smell, Sky Dragon could conclude that Yue Yang was only a Level Six Elder.

To him, his ranking was even more insignificant than an ant. Sky

Dragon was even puzzled as to why Demon Eye would fear such an opponent. Could it be that there's a stronger man behind the mask? In Demon Eye's letter for help, he did not mention anything explicitly but only said something about a pair of mysterious twin brothers... But now, it seemed weird to the man in white. If one of the twin was only a Level Six Elder, even if the other one was an Innate, he wouldn't be anyway near being strong. Did the twin really kill Nightmare and Tiger Nian? This was certainly puzzling.

Demon Eye nodded. "There is just a little rat here, the bigger one is hiding in a cave. Furthermore the wild dogs were barking frequently these days, and these affected my sleep, sorry to make you see this, brother Sky Dragon."

The man in white started laughing. "These are all trivial matters, I'd help you with taking them down. I'm sure it'd be a piece of cake."

Mountain Elf and Blood River's complexion darkened. Not only were they weaker than Sky Dragon, his backing, the Demonic Palace, was also very strong and not to be trifled with. Even the arrogant Chong Ni would politely ask Sky Dragon about the well being of sky demons in the Demonic Palace whenever he sees him. Also, It was said that Chong Ni had previously met and trained with Sky Wrath and Sky Disaster. They had developed a bit of camaraderie, as a result, Chong Ni treated Sky Dragon favorably.

Glancing at Yue Yang, Blood River and Mountain Elf prepared to leave. They would have to relent today, or else they would land in a disadvantageous situation.

However, Yue Yang stood up instead, and Xia Yi wasn't able to stop him.

Not only did he stand up to the shock of everyone, he said something even more shocking. "Why are you so arrogant, do you think that Tong Tian Tower is yours? I didn't even speak, and a loser like you is actually saying that you could take me down easily? Even Sky Law, one of the Three Major Sky Demons, would smile sweetly when she sees me while you are merely the lousiest sky demon ranked tenth on the list, do you think you can scare me like that? Do you think that the Demonic Palace is a big deal? I was just respecting Sky Law, if not I would have attacked you guys long ago. Do you think you are a biggie just because you came from the Soaring Dragon Continent that was just like a refugee camp?"

The man in white was the Sky Dragon that they met in Jun Wu You's palace.

As he had a crush on Sky Law the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, he could be considered as Yue Yang's love rival.

In the past, he was extremely jealous of Yue Yang.

Because not only did Yue Yang possess the World Exterminating Wheel, he was also intimate with Sky Law and impressed the Night empress, and his introducer was Zhi Zun!

But he wasn't able to recognise his love rival Yue Yang now. After the battle at the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, Yue Yang's power had already improved enormously. If Sky Dragon were to fight

with Yue Yang now, it wouldn't be the same as the one they had at Jun Wu You's palace.

“What did you say?! “ Clad in white, Sky Dragon was incensed. How dare a Level Six Elder like Yue Yang say something like this to him?

Chapter 390 – Xia Yi

“You are asking for death!” The two beauties beside Sky Dragon frowned their eyebrows in anger. How dare this weak guy offend their master! Forget about an Innate, even if he was an Innate Ranker, they would kill him!

The face of the beauty on the left started to disfigure as her red lips tore to the sides of her ear, and out came her razor sharp teeth.

Her eyes were glimmering with green light.

White scales grew all over her tender hands as her nails became dark, forming a pair of poisonous killer claws.

With the power of an Innate, the ebony wooden floor burst under the impact of her stomp. In a flash, sharp dark claws were waving in front of Yue Yang. As they were waving everywhere, it was hard to tell between the real and fake claws. Suddenly one of the claws shot out from among the pretense, and reached straight for Yue Yang’s heart... Xia Yi cried as she went to Yue Yang’s aid. However, as she was only a Level Six Elder, she wasn’t on par to the Innate Ranker in terms of power and speed.

Before she could pull out the dagger from her waist, the claws of their opponent had already reached Yue Yang’s heart.

Xia Yi rushed forth quickly as she tried to push Yue Yang away.

Maybe she wanted to use her body to shield her bad tempered, difficult, arrogant, but kind master... She did not even think of why she wanted to do it, because she had wanted to kill him before. But now, when his life was at stake, her body functioned way faster than her mind.

“No!”

Xia Yi realised that she was still a tad slower.

Just when she was about to reach him, the dark claws of the woman who attacked from a distance had already pressed onto Yue Yang’s chest and in the next second, it tore through his chest.

Xia Yi could even see the cruel, wicked smile of her opponent, but all she could do was to cry out in sadness.

“No...”

When Xia Yi’s tears rolled down and blurred her vision, she felt that something burst.

Fresh blood shot out all over the place.

A lot of it went onto Xia Yi’s face and body.

That’s it!

Xia Yi closed her eyes in grief. She had never cried for a man, but now hot tears streamed down her face. When he was still alive, she hated him for being such a boob obsessed pervert (previously breast loving beast) and thought that if not for his powerful brother, he would have become minced meat from being beaten up by his rivals. But when he was actually killed, she wasn't happy at all, and instead, she was unable to accept it and was overwhelmed with sadness. It tore and devoured her, and all she wished was to roll around on the floor and torture herself just so that she wouldn't have to accept the reality.

At the same time, endless anger and hatred filled her.

Kill that goddamn opponent to avenge his death.

Kill!

A crazed wrath overcame Xia Yi as she felt that something broke inside her. Her soul exploded as a foreign yet powerful energy rose from her Dan Tian and inundated her body. Her four limbs trembled as if they were going to break from this very energy.

However, Xia Yi couldn't care less as she held onto the dagger tightly.

Gritting her teeth, she used her greatest strength.

She charged towards where the opponent was... She had never learn how to slash someone with a dagger, but it became an

instinct now.

Or simply put, it was a form of hatred, a destructive one!

She swore to destroy the opponent regardless of anything!

“Ahhh!” Xia Yi groaned angrily. Although she hadn’t opened her eyes, the long dagger had already slashed the dark clawed woman into half with terrifying wrath.

The Bronze-ranked long dagger couldn’t withstand the crazed wrath and broke into pieces, scattered all over the ground, after slashing the black clawed woman into half.

After killing the opponent, Xia Yi’s legs gave way as she collapsed onto the ground as if she had lost all her energy.

Overwhelmed with grief, she was about to burst into tears.

She did not care if the remaining opponents would slash her or beat her to a pulp, all she wanted was to cry and let it all out.

She only wanted to vent the agonising pain...

Her tears streamed down like rain.

But before she started to cry, a familiar voice sounded amazingly.

“Hey, what are you doing?”

Xia Yi opened her eyes, and was stunned by what she saw.

Mr Titan Jr. whose chest was tore through by the opponent wasn't dead and he looked well and alive.

Xia Yi looked at Yue Yang who was staring at her as he carried the headless corpse of his opponent, and then glanced at remaining half body of the dark clawed woman. She realised that her dark claws were on the Wyvern Armour worn on Yue Yang's chest, but it did not tear through it. Xia Yi was elated instantly and she jumped in joy. “You are not dead?” She yelled euphorically.

“You don't say!” Yue Yang said as he tossed the corpse of the woman, whose skull was shattered by him and body was slashed into half by Xia Yi, out of the window.

“Waaa waaa...” Xia Yi felt a wave of emotions inundating her as she let her guards down due to the new found surprise. She wanted to run towards Yue Yang and hug him tightly, but instead she ran to the corner of the wall as she squatted down, covered her face and cried out loud.

Tears seeped out of her fingers and wet her clothes.

Yue Yang had never seen such a weird girl. Its okay if she wanted to cry but why is she crying secretly at the corner?

Yue Yang would have teased her if not for the incensed look on Sky Dragon's face that made him look as if he wanted to swallow a man whole.

It was only until then did Sky Dragon realise Yue Yang was pretending to be weak this whole time.

This rascal definitely possessed the power of an Innate, he was only pretending to be a Level Six Elder!

On second thoughts, it all made sense. If Yue Yang hadn't been an Innate Ranker, how would he have dared to call out on Demon Eye openly? Demon Eye could kill a Level Six Elder easily, why would he call him for help? Sky Dragon wanted to unleash his Innate power instantly to kill his opponent, but as a sensitive Ranker, he had realised that the opponent who was provoking him was not as easy as he seemed.

The other dark clawed woman beside Sky Dragon was already trembling in fear.

If it wasn't her sister but her who attacked them just now, she would be dead already... She saw her dead sister who was morphing back into the shape of a silver python on the ground and started to lose control of her bladder.

Demon Eye's complexion darkened.

He had heard that the elder brother of the Titan brother was an

Innate who could kill Nightmare and Tiger Nian instantly, witnessed by the public's eye.

He did not expect that Titan Jr. was pretending to be a Level Six Elder and that he was also an Innate. Seeing the peaceful look on his face, his power might not even be inferior to his. It was no wonder he would challenge him so openly. Both brothers were actually Innates with powers on par to him!

Mountain Elf and Blood River's complexions, on the other hand, were completely different. They almost cheered out loud and applauded.

They did not expect the twist that Mr Titan Jr. was also an Innate Ranker. But they were definitely welcoming to this surprising twist.

Now, they felt that their choice to ally with the Titan brothers was the correct move.

Although Demon Eye had Sky Dragon as his strongest ally, if he were to fight with the Titan brothers, it would be hard to determine who would win.

Furthermore, Sky Dragon was an outsider after all, he wouldn't stay in the Thunder Fortress forever. Even if the Titan Brothers were a little more inferior in terms of power, once Sky Dragon leaves, how could Demon Eye, without any ally, survive?

“It is impossible to resolve my hatred towards you for killing my concubine. Since the both of us are Innates, we will do the talking with our power. Lets fight!” Sky Dragon definitely wouldn’t be able to take it in his strides. He was an Innate Ranker, and was even a Level Six Innate. If he did not avenge the death of his concubine who was killed publicly, how could he walk with his head held high in the Tong Tian Tower in the future? Although he had a lot of concubines, he couldn’t let his pride down!

“It was your concubine who attacked me, an Innate. I had a reason to kill her. If you want to avenge her death, then game on!” Yue Yang smiled aloofly.

Forget about him not being part of the Innate Alliance, even if he was a member, he could justify his actions.

Anyone who launched attacks on an Innate with ill will would be seen as challenging the pride of the Innate.

A powerful man had the say regardless whether he was right or wrong.

It would still be alright if Sky Dragon were to win. But if he didn’t, Yue Yang had every right to kill him.

Seeing that Mr Titan Jr. wasn’t afraid even when facing a Level Six Innate, Mountain Elf and Blood River were ecstatic. The Titan brothers were so arrogant that they could even fight with Sky Dragon who was a Level Six Innate, they definitely had to ally with them!

Both of them looked at each other and then stood up.

“A battle between two Innates would be destructive, why not shift the battleground to the Blood Warrior Arena to prevent injuring the innocents,” Mountain Elf said in a stentorian tone.

Blood River nodded in agreement. “If both of you couldn’t wait until King Chong Ni arrive to bear witness personally, both of us together with Underground City Master Ma Long can help to bear witness on his behalf!”

“Let’s go!” Sky Dragon’s expression changed slightly upon hearing, but it returned back to the usual haughtiness in an instant.

His hands waved slightly, shattering the windows and sending the tables and chairs flying in the air. It was as if a giant invisible hand had hit the place as merchants and warriors all fell to the ground. Sky Dragon unleashed his Qi and flew to the sky, breaking the roof of the auction house as he morphed into a meteorite and went to the Blood Warrior Arena. The dark clawed woman followed closely behind as she shot out like a bird, morphing into a silver python spanning a length of 30 over metres. Gilding through the air, she followed behind her master.

Yue Yang glanced at Jia De and Yan Zheng the butler. “You all don’t need to come,” he instructed.

In the past, Jia De thought that Yue Yang got all his worldly

possessions because he had a strong elder brother. Although he still respected him, it was nowhere near the respect he had for Mr Titan Sr. Now, it seemed that both brothers were both strong, the only difference was that Mr. Titan Sr. was cooler and rarely interfere with any business while Mr. Titan Jr. was more extroverted and took charge of everything... Maybe both of them were equally powerful. Thinking of this, Jia De grew more apologetic and respectful towards Yue Yang as he kneeled down to beg for forgiveness.

“I will go back immediately and report it to Mr. Titan Sr.” Yan Zheng the butler was similarly shocked when he knew that Mr. Titan Jr. was also an Innate. But he knew that they could only win if both brothers worked together to battle against Sky Dragon.

“If its two versus one, the Demonic Palace will say that my brother and I are bullying him, so me alone will suffice.” Yue Yang waved his hands, he knew that the Evil Gemini Shadow could only fool those who weren’t Innates. Sky Dragon would definitely see through it. Moreover, if he could defeat Sky Dragon in a battle without Mr. Titan Sr.’s help, he would look even more impressive. Even if Chong Ni wanted to side with Sky Dragon, he would be apprehensive. Yue Yang did not want to take down Chong Ni first as he didn’t know anything about him. Yue Yang decided that the best time to take Chong Ni down would be after he got his hands on the Ten Thousand Years Motherland Potion and contracting Jiang Ying the Hornless Dragon.

Yue Yang would be a fool if he didn’t beat up his love rival, Sky Dragon, now that the opportunity arose.

Yue Yang wasn't fearful of any one of the Ten Great Sky Demons of the Demonic Palace, except Sky Execution which he wasn't certain if he could defeat.

Moreover, that chick Sky Law still fancied him... Would Sky Execution and Sky Law condemn him if he were to beat up Sky Dragon, who was the lousiest among all? Impossible!

Especially Sky Law the Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was vexed by all the pestering by Sky Dragon. Now that he was going to beat up the irksome Sky Dragon, she would definitely be happy, and might even reward him with a delightful suffocation from her gigantic breasts!

"He is actually Mr. Titan Sr. right?" On seeing Yue Yang leaving the auction house, Ma Long the City Master went forward to inquire.

"No! He is definitely Mr. Titan Jr.!" Xia Yi with tear streaked all over her face from crying just now recovered and said firmly. "Mr. Titan Sr. is very cool, he is the complete opposite of Mr. Titan Jr.!"

"Little sister, I saw that your dagger is broken. I have a Demon Killing Dagger for you." Ma Long's wife went forward to try to bribe her and rope her in. She was generous enough to tie a top quality Silver-ranked dagger around Xia Yi's waist and addressed her affectionately as her sister in a extremely sweet voice as if they were really family. Xia Yi wanted to reject her but Ma Long's wife pretended to be angry as she tried to coax her. "Mr. Titan Jr. is an Innate Ranker, his battle with Sky Dragon will definitely make him famous. As your sister, I'm very envious of you, so rest

assured, I wouldn't just watch from the sidelines... Let's go and see their battle!"

Chapter 391 – Arrogant Huh? I'd Beat You To A Pulp!

Xia Yi was very worried as the strength of a Level Six Innate Ranker was an existence that she couldn't even imagine.

Forget about Sky Dragon with the power of a Level Six Innate, even an Innate Level One, or a Lesser Innate would be able to kill her in an instant. Then how did she manage to unleash all her power and use the dagger to slash the body of the dark clawed woman who was a Lesser Innate? Xia Yi wasn't able to comprehend, but she thought that maybe it was because the Innate Mr. Titan Jr. had already killed the dark clawed woman, that's why she could kill her easily.

As the atmosphere tensed up, she didn't have the time to spare for more thoughts.

Xia Yi felt that every part of her was aching. It seemed like she had used too much strength just now, so much so that she had injured her tendons and muscles.

"Are you alright?" Ma Long's wife saw that with every step Xia Yi took, there would be holes formed on the solid ebony floor. She thought as she saw that there was an obvious footprint on the limestone floor where Xia Yi stepped on, but the strange thing was that Xia Yi wasn't aware of all of these.

"Nothing, I'm just a little nervous." Xia Yi did not realise the abnormality about her body at all.

In the past, she could only break the limestone floor using full strength.

Making such an obvious footprint on the limestone floor would be a difficult feat even with the help of a Beast. But now, the whole of the limestone street was covered in her footprints from all the steps she took... They looked like those left on a beach.

The fat Jia De saw it and his jaw dropped so widely it could fit an entire Hippopotamus!

What is going on with Xia Yi?

In the Blood Warrior Arena, Yue Yang and Sky Dragon were ready for their battle.

Yue Yang summoned the Reaper Mantis, and did not summon for Beasts like the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, Bloody Queen Red and Barbarian Cow Shadow.

He unleashed the strength of a Level One Innate gradually. In front of him was Sky Dragon who had unleashed his power as Level Three Innate. But Sky Dragon soon realised that his vital energy wasn't yet on par to Yue Yang, as the chilly cold wind given off from him was devoured by Yue Yang's Yin Yang whirlpool continually. Sky Dragon gritted his teeth as he moved on to unleash his power as a Level Four and Level Five Innate. A Level Nine Platinum-ranked Thunder Dragon was summoned by Sky Dragon. It was his strengthening-type Guardian Beast which could

merge with Sky Dragon quickly. With flickering lightning and rumbling thunder, the Thunder Dragon became one with Sky Dragon.

Sky Dragon's body grew taller rapidly, becoming enormous as a dragon horn grew on his head. His lips tore to the edge of his ears as his teeth elongates, becoming like razor sharp knives.

A pair of silver wing gradually grew on his back.

With a gush of wind, a giant wing pointed to the sky haughtily, as if showing its might to all creatures that it was an overlord-level giant dragon. Its body, arms and legs were all covered in silver dragon scales. At first there were only a few, but within a matter of two seconds, it spreaded all over its body, protecting Sky Dragon's body fully.

Electric current flowed through Sky Dragon's body with a sizzling sound.

His ten fingernails became sharper and pointier, emerging into powerful dragon claws that could tear everything in pieces.

The same went for his legs as dragon claws emerged from his torn shoes, as his healthy skin bulged, seemingly filled with energy.

At last, Sky Dragon opened his previously tightly-closed eyes as an electric light shot out from his eyes and up into the sky, like a

sharp sword that could tear down the skies... It looked really impressive!

Sky Dragon caressed the Platinum Grimoire with his claws, as raging flame rose from his nose and mouth. “Hoo, come and let me take a look at you. As haughty as you may be, let me see what power you have. I hope your power equivalent to your eloquence. Come out, doubled-headed dragon, that Reaper Mantis will be your prey today!” The Platinum Grimoire glimmered with a golden light as a double-headed giant dragon had been summoned this time.

It was two times larger than a normal giant dragon.

It had two heads and four wings.

The head on the left could spew poisonous fluid while the one on the right could shoot sulfuric fire. When it appeared, it let out a groan that resonated through the skies.

Its chilly might made all the weaker Beasts and Rankers who weren't Innate shiver as they feared the Level Nine Platinum-ranked double-headed giant dragon wholly.

Although the Reaper Mantis was the giant dragon's nemesis, and was also Platinum-ranked, their level differed too vastly.

The Reaper Mantis was only Level Four Platinum-ranked. There was a great difference between their levels.

Nobody thought that the Reaper Mantis would be able to defeat the double-headed giant dragon that was five levels higher than it. Only Mountain Elf and Blood River felt that if Mr. Titan Jr. were to challenge Sky Dragon confidently, he would possess other even more powerful Beasts.

“If it is an idiot, any extra head would be useless.” Yue Yang smiled aloofly. He did not summon, nor did any Grimoire appear, but a flaming Spirit of Flame and Smoke appeared beside him. It was a level higher than the Reaper Mantis, but was only Level Five Platinum-ranked. However Sky Dragon’s expression changed when he saw her appear.

The element type beast that was in near human form could have been a Holy Beast if it was on par to one in terms of intellectual capacity.

The sourcefire of the Spirit of Flame and Smoke even made Sky Dragon terrified.

It was not a normal Spirit of Flame and Smoke...

On facing the Spirit of Flame and Smoke of higher rank, the double-headed dragon lost all its might because all of its attacks would be rendered useless towards the element type Spirit of Flame and Smoke. Not only would the double headed dragon’s poisonous fluid be useless towards the Spirit of Flame and Smoke, its sulphuric fire would also add onto the strength of the opponent.

“Earth-shattering water dragon, come out quick!” Sky Dragon

pressed its claws on the Summoning Grimoire as he summoned a Level Ten Gold-ranked Water Horned Python.

“Small trick.” Yue Yang loved comparing Beasts.

Both sides summoned all their Beasts as they battled each other with their entire army.

In this way, more possessions would be acquired after the battle and chances of the opponent backing out would be at a minimum. Most importantly, his beasts could grow during the battle.

Boom!

The Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man had become increasingly alike to a female [Delaney](#) as she back flipped thrice in the air and landed agily.

(Want2eat: Delaney is an Irish professional footballer)

Her eyes were shining with a glow of wisdom, as she looked completely different from the muddle-headed barbarian cow.

After much reconstructions, shedding her old self for rebirth with the Nirvana Flames and with her Innate Qi and Ancient Rune, her power was only below Xiao Wen Li. Even Hui Tai Lang the Divine Beast wouldn't fight with her rashly. Of course, the most terrifying thing of her was her Bloodeye Double Kill and Doom's Eyes. Although the chances weren't high, and certain capability would be required to trigger them, once they were triggered, not

only the rivalry Beast would suffer a humiliating death, the same would go for its master.

When Ah Man appeared, her trampling skills shocked the entire arena.

The mighty-looking Water Horned Python that was preparing to shoot water at Spirit of Flame and Smoke collapsed from the vibration directly. Its head shook in a daze and it did not manage to recover from it after a while.

Sky Dragon's complexion ashened...

A holy Beast, this female barbarian cow was definitely a Holy Beast.

All Beasts, on becoming Holy Beasts, would be able to do a qualitative leap, normal Holy Beasts symptoms wouldn't be able to test for them anymore. For example, this Barbarian Cow looked as if she was Level One Diamond-ranked, but her real power during combat would definitely make the Level Ten Gold-ranked Water Horned Python suffer because her accurate rank was definitely One Star Holy Beast!

It was equivalent to Level One Innate, and according to some abilities of unique Beasts, they could be even more powerful than Innates!

This female Barbarian Cow is a Guardian Beast, so she wasn't an

Innate initially. She must have ranked up all the way.

Then how did she rank up to a One Star Diamond-ranked creature?

When ranking up to Gold-ranked, there would be a cut off that would restrict all Beasts from changing ranks. So how did this female barbarian cow turn from Gold-ranked to Platinum-ranked and eventually to Diamond-ranked? One must know that Diamond-ranked creatures are completely different from other ranks... Mr. Titan Jr. must have some ways that could groom his Beasts into Diamond-ranked, so if he were to force him to tell his secrets, it would be Sky Dragon's greatest takeaway.

A Holy Beast wasn't a thing that everyone could possess.

One must sufficient luck and fate with it. Not only so, he must also be approved by the Beast in order to contract it.

As for grooming, Sky Dragon exhausted all means but his Guardian Beast was only Level Nine Platinum-ranked. Even after consuming over a hundred Wisdom Fruits, he still wasn't able to unlock its intelligence of a Holy Beast.

"Come, it's the ultimate showdown now. Let's battle!" Seeing Yue Yang's Beast, which was also his Guardian Beast, Sky Dragon felt that the situation might have become a little tricky. The only thing he was confident about was that the Mr. Titan Jr. seemed to not become a Level Six Innate now, so Yue Yang was still inferior to him at the moment. Although Yue Yang's Beasts were better

than his, he was still superior to him in terms of combat power.

Sky Dragon felt that he could still continue with the battle as it was one between two Innates. They were not only fighting against each other with their Beasts but also with their own power.

The Earthquake Dragon that was over a hundred tons and the Lizard Head Dragon carrying plague virus were summoned by Sky Dragon. Both were Level Eight Gold-ranked.

If he could win Yue Yang in terms of quality of Beasts, he could compensate for that in terms of quantity.

And the best way to defeat this Mr. Titan Jr. who was a tad lousier than him was... To capture his leader, Sky Dragon thought to himself.

The Earthquake Dragon could suppress the strong female barbarian cow temporarily. And if the Lizard Head Dragon and the double-headed dragon work hand in hand, they could defeat the Reaper Mantis completely. As for the Water Horned Python, because of its type, it could have a tie with the Spirit of Flame and Smoke. As long as they don't get caught up with the female barbarian cow, Sky Dragon could still accept a situation with one loss and one win. After all she was a Holy Beast, a fight would land them in a disadvantaged situation.

“Kill, kill that Reaper Mantis!” Sky Dragon roared like thunder as he ordered all of his Beasts when they began their battle.

“In your dreams!” Yue Yang did not back off but rather, he went forward.

Sky Dragon, who had unleashed his power as a Level Five Innate, waved a impactful punch onto Yue Yang ‘s chest as he was being hit with Yue Yang ‘s punch at the same time.

Sky Dragon felt a torturing pain that could tear his body apart.

He realised that his dragon claws that could cleave metals and crush rocks couldn’t tear through Yue Yang ‘s skin. On the opposite, Mr. Titan Jr.’s punches could crush his dragon scales that protected his body , how, how is this possible? To the shock of everyone, and under the eye goggling gaze of Demon Eye, Mountain Elf and Blood River, Yue Yang clenched hard on Sky Dragon’s fists as he raised Sky Dragon’s body into the air, thrusting Sky Dragon, with power of a Level Five Innate, onto the ground of the arena with power as a Level One Innate.

The entire arena was shocked!

The shockwave from the thrust caused the buildings around the Blood Warrior Arena collapsed as if swept by a hurricane. Other than Mountain Elf, Blood River, Demon Eye and Ma Long, Fatty Jia De, Xia Yi and the rest all flew more than ten metres away from the shock. Those weaker ones landed more than hundred metres away.

This was how powerful a single strike of Mr. Titan Jr. was!

A battle between a Level Five Innate and a Level One Innate, yet Sky Dragon lost it.

Why?

Yue Yang did not even bother explaining why. After summoning the Grimoire, he was backed by Giant Phantom Shadows, causing his power to increase drastically, even Sky Dragon was shocked by the extent.

”Ha!” Sky Dragon vomited blood from the impact of Yue Yang ‘s single punch as blood shot across a distance of ten metres.

A huge pit formed on the arena made of obsidian stone after Sky Dragon fell.

Scales flew from his legs as his dragon claws on the ground almost cracked.

This was the power of a single punch!

“Arrogant huh? I’d beat you to a pulp, and make you vomit three litres of blood!” Yue Yang leaped again as he raised his fist to attack Sky Dragon. It scared him so much that he dodged all the way, and did not dare to retaliate.

Sky Dragon’s embarrassing dodges from Yue Yang ‘s consecutive attacks looked even more pitiful than a fleeing wild dog. It was until the last moment when the effects of the Giant Phantom

Shadows wore off completely did Yue Yang stop his attacks. Sky Dragon who kept vomiting blood then stopped, and started panting to quell its racing heart. Yue Yang was too strange, the assistance provided by his Beast was superb. Luckily the duration wasn't long, if not he really couldn't fight with Yue Yang.

“You forced me into it, don't blame me if you die because you asked for it.” Sky Dragon decided to unleash his power as a Level Six Innate, if not he wouldn't be able to turn the table around being heavily injured,

“Come, continue bragging!” Yue Yang was very pleased, it would be best this way. Anger the opponent and find an appropriate opportunity to kill Sky Dragon. Of course, he had to find the golden time to do it because for him to be a Level Six Innate, he wouldn't be an idiot. If Sky Dragon were to realise that he couldn't fight Yue Yang, he would definitely run.

Demon Eye, Blood River, Mountain Elf and Ma Long were already stunned.

This battle had already blew their minds away, how could a person of lower rank win a person of high rank? Who would believe that a Level One Innate could beat up a Level Five Innate, and even till the point that he vomits blood?

And of course Mr. Titan Jr.'s Beasts were impressive. They had never seen such terrifying Beasts that could amplify their master's power to ten times or even up to hundred times.

Possessing such strong Beasts, Mr. Titan Jr. would be powerful even if he did not wish to.

If there was no time limit, Sky Dragon would have been so scared that he would crush the Teleportation Stone to escape.

Jia De was in tears. His master was just too impressive such that he could make the famous, powerful Sky Dragon puke blood... Xia Yi clenched her small fist tightly as she knew that Sky Dragon was a Level Six Innate Ranker, it was a completely different thing as a Level Five Innate. Ten Level Five Innates might not even win against a Level Six Innate. Although Mr. Titan Jr. had won against Sky Dragon this time, what about next round?

Would Yue Yang still be able to beat him up to the point that he puke blood?

Boom!

A deafening vibration shook everyone like bow an earthquake would.

Everyone turned their heads uncontrollably as they realised that the Barbarian Cow had already made the heavy Earthquake Dragon collapse onto the ground. They then turned and saw that she was holding the Water Horned Python in her hand like a giant cane as she whipped it onto the ground continually, making terrifying booming noises. In a blink of an eye, the Water Horned Python had lost all his combat power as it was on the verge of death from a broken spine. It could only wait for death now.

Everyone almost fainted.

Even if the Barbarian Cow was a one star Holy Beast, how could she have killed a Level Eight Gold-ranked Earthquake Dragon weighing over a hundred tons and a Level Ten Gold-ranked Water Horned Python in an instant?

Sick skills she had there!

Chapter 392 – Killing Sky Dragon

“Roar!”

Sky Dragon roared to the sky as he clutched onto the hard Dark Obsidian stone pavement tightly.

His body that was already enormous expanded several times bigger. His body also turned strangely longer, as he morphed into a monster snake. His two legs joined together to form a huge, long tail. The wings on his back elongated, forming a weird wing the shape of a fin. Sky Dragon's head formed two fiery red meat horns that looked like cockscomb as his original horn darkened, becoming thick and wrinkled, and twisted like that of a buffalo's.

This was Sky Dragon's true form, a Demon-winged Sea Dragon.

Different from a Beast that could personify, Sky Dragon was a mixed blood between human and demon, hence he could morph into two forms.

One being the demonic form and the other being the human form.

The Summoning Grimoire shone with a bright light akin to that of a lightning as Sky Dragon unleashed his Domain of Power, 'Raging Lightning', instantly. He rotated slowly in the crazed shockwave with twelve huge thunder balls surrounding him. Any creatures within fifty metres of Sky Dragon would be bombarded mercilessly by the thunder balls.

The electricity on his horns were sizzling as Sky Dragon, now with the power of a Level Six Innate, had sufficient confidence now.

He felt that he could definitely defeat his opponent and win the battle.

In comparing Beasts, he would definitely be inferior.

But he possessed powers that his opponent could never reach.

The Domain of Power was an important symbol of an Innate Ranker, only those with Domain of Power could be considered to be a real Innate Ranker, and only then would they have hopes of soaring to greater heights.

“Ha!”

Sky Dragon shook his arms and unleashed an intense vital energy, sending the spectators who were hundred metres away flying into the sky.

Even Demon Eye who unleashed powers as a Level Five Innate swayed uncontrollably, almost falling to the ground.

Blood River, Mountain Elf and Ma Long who had yet to unleash their powers fully were jolted back a few steps from the shock.

Their powers weren't weaker than that of Demon Eye's, and their difference was extremely insignificant. But now, as the situation wasn't clear yet, they are unsure if Mr. Titan Jr. would be able to defeat Sky Dragon, so they did not unleash all their power so it wouldn't appear that they were opposing Sky Dragon. To put it bluntly, they were still waiting. If they see that Mr. Titan Jr. possessed the power to fight against Sky Dragon, they wouldn't mind to rub it in Demon Eye's face and combine forces to attack him.

“ You only possess so little power?” Yue Yang felt nothing towards a Level Six Innate because all along, he had been fighting with people way stronger than that, for example, the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian, Black Prince, Thousand Goblins Sect Leader and the Great Demon King Baruth, or the Rankers in the Dark Prison Palace like the undying Huang Sha who was a Level Eight Innate whom Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia killed together in the Second Hall. Being a Level Six Innate was powerful indeed, the Green Summit Sect Leader Duan Mu Long Cheng was also of this level, but he was scared witless by Yue Yang in the past and even went to seek refuge with Demon Abyss, but was still instakilled by the Phoenix Sisters in the end.

After battling with the three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm, he felt like it was a piece of cake fighting with a Level Six Innate.

Under the guidance of the Heavenly Sword Goddess and after his Nirvana Rebirth, Yue Yang's rank as a Level One Innate could surpass a Level Five Innate even without the support of his Beasts.

So Sky Dragon is a Level Six Innate now?

“Unseal!” Yue Yang shouted in anger, his deafening voice resonated through the skies.

A chilly energy was unleashed from his body as his Yin and Yang Ability formed a whirlpool that could devour all energy. It circled around his body. The power of the Star Explosion filled his body, causing him to look like a bright shining star that was dazzling.

The Star Explosion Domain that could only form a ball previously slowly developed and expanded.

It then became star fragments, surrounding Yue Yang like the Milky Way, although it was smaller than the domain of others, it still occupied a region of five metres and could be considered as a recent breakthrough for Yue Yang. If not for the cultivation in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace and solely relying on daily cultivations, two to three years would be required for one to expand the Star Explosion Domain... A purple flame and a blue frosty ice lay on opposite ends of Yue Yang’s hands, slashing the sky into half with one side being the feisty fire hell and the other one was being snowy winter hell.

Those who were in them were either perspiring profusely or shivering from the cold.

The weirdest one was Jia De the fat toad who happened to be in the middle of the two. His clothes on the left were covered in frost, causing his face to be numbed from the cold while his body on the right was perspiring profusely, as perspiration showered down like

waterfall, causing him great agony.

Both sides are bad, but he chose to be in the winter hell because after all he is obese and fat is a great insulator of heat.

Fire Hell?

Everyone knows that plump people were afraid of the heat.

“He’s just a Level Two Innate yet he could use the Domain of Power?” After seeing, Demon Eye’s face as so twisted that it almost went out of shape and his eyes were burning with jealousy.

“What a strong energy, he’s only a Level Two Innate, but could fight against a Level Six Innate, this battle...” Blood River was overwhelmed, but he did not continue further. He merely looked at Mountain Elf as they nodded discreetly. Now that they saw Mr. Titan Jr. could at least fight to a tie with Sky Dragon, they would choose to side with him now and get rid of Demon Eye.

Forming an ally would be a hundred times better than making an enemy.

Demon Eye was an ambitious man, he would not be contented with just being the City Master of the Thunder Fortress. He would definitely clear everyone obstructing his path in order to become the real owner of the Thunder Fortress.

Be it for their safety or for their future, Blood River and

Mountain Elf had to prevent Demon Eye from staying in the Thunder Fortress any longer.

On the contrary, the new Titan Brothers seemed to be disinterested in the pursuit of power here.

They were similar to Chong Ni, who was just using the Thunder Fortress as his springboard. Both parties wouldn't stay in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower for long, and would definitely move on to the Seventh Floor, Eighth Floor or even higher, that's where they aspired to go... This kind of ally was best in working hand in hand with. Mountain Elf and Blood River knew that they had exhausted most of their potential and their chances of going up any further wouldn't be high, so they would be contented with just being the rich masters of the Thunder Fortress in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

With a stance like theirs, they believed that the Titan Brothers would definitely form alliance with them because after all nobody likes a man too ambitious, the popular ones would be those powerful yet contented ones.

“Divine Dragon Spitting Pearls!” Sky Dragon raised a thunder ball in his domain.

His Guardian Beast, Thunder Dragon, appeared in the sky in a flash.

With the Dragon's Breath coming from the image of the Thunder Dragon, and also with all the power of Sky Dragon, the thunder

ball moved swiftly like a meteorite and shot towards Yue Yang.

As long as it hit squarely onto something, even a hill could be razed to the ground... Sky Dragon believed that with his power and the energy of his Thunderball, no man would be able to fight against him, at least not for someone whose level was lower than he was.

Yue Yang reached out his hands as he prepared to receive the Thunderball directly.

Sky Dragon's python-like body disappeared and then reappeared behind Yue Yang.

Numerous lightning morphed into dragon heads that would devour any man that it sees. It shot out from Sky Dragon's hands as it charged towards Yue Yang, with his giant mouth wide opened.

Facing attacks from the front and the back. Sky Dragon had never seen a survivor after he launched this attack.

A giant pillar appeared.

It looked like those pillars in a palace that supported the roof as it was giant and perfectly round, nobody had ever used it as a weapon before, except Yue Yang. The Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar that couldn't even be carried around one's body appeared on Yue Yang's hand. After brushing it back and forth, he swung off the thunder ball like it was a baseball, and then he used

it to bombard the Dragon Head formed from lightning, causing it to dissipate into numerous sparks, and then forming an electrical network in the sky... It was the special practicing pillars of the Prison Emperor, Rankers from the Heaven's realm or even the Great Leaders of Heaven Realm wouldn't be able to destroy it, it was a joke that Sky Dragon thought his tiny thunder ball and Dragon Head morphed from lightning could destroy it.

The Dragon Head hit by the Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar was sent flying hundred metres through the sky and subsequently crashed into the ground, causing stones and mud to splatter everywhere.

He shot out from the pile of stones.

The Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar hit his head squarely from the sky...

If it gets hit, Sky Dragon's would no longer be called Demon-winged Sea Dragon, he will be re-named as a coward.

“Thousand Thunderbolt!” Sky Dragon avoided the critical hit by mere luck, and fell back by a hundred meters, summoned a sky filled with thunderbolts and aimed at Yue Yang.

“Tch, trickster's lowly skills.” Yue Yang sneered, summoned countless meteors which evaded the thunderbolts, launching his counterattack. However, it's for show, the real deal lies in Yue Yang's left hand. In the flash of bright light, Demon eye, Blood River and Mountain Elf were unable to see clearly what treasure

the rays of light belonged to, all they could see was Yue Yang waving his hand, while Sky Dragon froze with a blank look as the flash of light cut through his throat with ease.

“Ahhh....” Sky Dragon painfully covered his throat as red blood spurt out.

If it was a normal human, Sky dragon would have been done for.

Fortunately, he was Innate Goblin.

Sky Dragon forcefully crushed the Teleportation stone in his hand.

He realised that if he continued, his life will definitely be in danger. That Titan Jr. has too many sly moves and treasures, for instance that mysterious seven coloured light just now could actually slit his throat easily. What is even more terrifying is that his powerful ability to self heal could not be used and his wounds were tore and worsened.

Pa!

The most high level escape tool, teleportation stone shattered, yet Sy Dragon was not teleported away.

Prison Emperor's Seven Star Pillars along with the Prison Emperor Divine Sword could still restrain the most powerful and mysterious Ming Yue Guang out of the three Heaven Realm Great

Leader!

If Sky Dragon could have escaped from the Prison Emperor's Seven Star Pillars' restriction, then that would be called uncanny!

“Roar!” Sky Dragon sensing that things were taking a turn for the worst, immediately charged towards the sky with every ounce of energy he had before launching himself downwards. With the help of Raging Lightning Domain, he escaped from Thunder Fortress as quick as lightning.

When it comes to attacking, Sky Dragon does think that he might have been somewhat weaker.

But when it comes to speed, the Sky Dragon who possessed Raging Lightning Domain had enough confidence... In this word, was there anything faster than thunder and lightning?

Currently, not just Sky Dragon, even Demon Eye was hurrying to flee.

Blood River and Mountain Elf waited for quite a while; so has Underground City's owner, Ma Long. Ma Long had changed his previously neutral position, unleashing his Innate strength. The first being stopped Demon Eye, who was deemed an underdog, “Ah-Ha, Ma Long has not sparred with you for a long time, today i'm interested, let's fight and learn from each other.”

The dark clawed woman who had lost her sister, did not dare to

go into the field and fight, instead she stood outside.

When she saw that her owner, Sky Dragon has already fled, she immediately turned her body.

She was preparing to flee in the opposite direction.

However, there stood a person in front of her way long ago, Xia Yi.

The dark clawed woman furiously raised her sharp claws, while Xia Yi unsheathed her Demon Killing Dagger like a tigress. Using the dagger as a sword, she slashed at her enemy.

In the sky, the Lizard Head Dragon that was preparing to flee howled in tremendous pain.

It was swept into a body of the Spirit of Flame and Smoke which was made of raging flames, violent storm and thick smoke. Tumbling in the raging flames of the fire tornado, the Sky Dragon was nearly at the death's door, his fate sealed. The Spirit of Flame and Smoke even had time to release a small tornado from herself so as to absorb the lightning energy emitted by the Sky Dragon. She seemed to like this kind of food.

Only the double-headed giant dragon and Reaper Mantis were able to resist and fight against each other.

Reaper Mantis had an upper hand due to his attribute as well as

flying speed. On the other hand, the double-headed giant dragon's size, level and power worked to his favour. For now, the match was even.

Ah Man thundered over, carrying the carcass of the Earthquake Dragon by lifting it above her head with both hands. As she hurled out the carcass of the Earthquake Dragon, her eyes flashed with crimson light as flames and thick smoke puffing out from her nose and mouth.

Even before the carcass of the Earthquake Dragon crashed into the double-headed giant dragon, it had let out a miserable cry before collapsing to the ground.

Its soul perished immediately, with no signs of struggling.

Doom's Eyes was activated!

The double-headed giant dragon that was killed in an instant was not the only one with bad luck..... More than ten kilometres away, Sky Dragon that was flying at high speed felt a sharp pain at his head, as if it's soul was being slashed by a sharp sickle. Although it did not faint on the spot nor did it plunged to his death, the pain was intolerable. Sky Dragon's mind was a swirling mess as fresh blood gushed out from his nose and mouth.

“What in the world happened?” Sky Dragon was baffled, he was already more than ten kilometres away from the Thunder Fortress and ready to leave with a teleportation stone. He didn't expect to receive a long-ranged attack from his enemies from such a remote

distance. Moreover this kind of attack came from the soul, to which he was completely defenceless.

“Bloodeye Double Kill, but there is no need for you to know. The dead has no use of this information. ”

Yue Yang’s voice came from behind his back.

First, his right hand holding the teleportation stone was chopped off forcibly using Crescent Moon. Then the Innate Invisible Sword Qi broke through his defence and pierced into his skull.

With Xiao Wen Li’s Binding inherent skill, Sky Dragon was helpless as he watched Yue Yang gliding his World Exterminating Wheel across his neck, slicing open his motionless body gracefully.

A small globe of light escaped from Sky Dragon’s body. That was Sky Dragon’s Orb baring his soul, consciousness and all of his power. However, before he could flee as far as a metre, Yue Yang grasped him using his right hand and burned him with Nirvana’s Flame..... Ten seconds later, without his body’s protection, the Sky Dragon’s soul and consciousness in the Orb was incinerated. All that was left was a purified Innate Level 6 Orb.

This victory was the result of Yue Yang’s meticulous planning that had been carefully crafted for ages.

However, killing Sky Dragon is only the beginning.

Chapter 393 – Demon Eye's Death

After getting rid of his old love rival, Sky Dragon, Yue Yang still pretended to be angry that he let his enemy escape and returned to the Blood Warrior Arena.

He did not give out the expression of a victorious Ranker and instead showed anger.

Yue Yang's response made everyone have a misconception... Although Sky Dragon was a scoundrel, he was still able to escape Titan Jr. with his speed. Everybody thought this was correct, after all Sky Dragon possessed Raging Lightning Domain and was an expert in flying. If he flew out of the space's confines, it was possible for him to use a Teleportation Stone.

Blood River, Mountain Elf and Ma Long did not doubt Sky Dragon's escape. After all, he was Level 6 Innate, killing him would not be easy.

Titan Jr's strength, being able to beat up Sky Dragon and forcing him to escape, was already very abnormal.

The three people did not think about Sky Dragon's life and death anymore. It has nothing to do with them. The most important thing was how to eliminate Demon Eye.

Now that Demon Eye had a falling out with them, he must die!

When Demon Eye saw Yue Yang return, his complexion became awful. He kept rolling his eyes, as if thinking of how to escape.

“Mr. Titan Jr., although I did not extend a hand of friendship to you nor did I welcome your arrival, there is no need to put me to death right?” Demon Eye knew that there is a fine line between Life and Death. If the opposite side attacked, Blood River, Mountain Elf and Ma Long would work together and have Titan Jr. call the shots. He was not Sky Dragon, so he would undoubtedly die! The only way was to give a reason

“Seizing my assets and tarnishing my name.” Yue Yang’s voice was bone-piercing cold.

“...” Demon Eye was now extremely regretful. At that time, if he had not deliberately showed his strength by showing that he was above the law and plunder An Dong’s treasury, then he would not have provoked this deathly calamity.

He had taken three million gold and a few ores and treasures from An Dong’s treasury.

Demon Eye was willing to immediately return these.

He was also willing to pay compensation. However, would Titan Jr. be willing to accept his apology?

Blood River strongly shouted: “Demon Eye, I had respected you as the next leader after Chong Ni and even treated you as a model

brother. Who would have thought that you actually did these shameful acts. Not only did you not respect strong Innates, instead you intentionally tarnished his name and despicably seized his assets. It sickens me. Today, you and I are now divided, the three great leaders are now disbanded. Even if you call yourself the number one leader, I, Blood River, disdain to be associated with you.”

Mountain Elf raised his arm and turned his fingers at him: “Demon Eye, your annual earnings from the ore mine, taxes and offerings does not go below ten million. You have wealth equivalent to an entire nation, yet you are still so greedy. You truly make people speechless.”

Ma Long the Underground City Master slowly shook his head: “Demon Eye, there is no need to say who is right or wrong because you are definitely wrong! There is no need to speak about justice in the Thunder Fortress, if you have the ability, use it to speak for you!”

Demon Eye seizing others assets did not only happen in Yue Yang’s case.

In the past hundred years, he had already done this a lot of times.

Whenever he had the opportunity, Demon Eye would seize other’s assets. Even Ma Long, Blood River and Mountain Elf had suffered in secret.

The only reason they did not dare be angry and speak was

because their strength was weaker than Demon Eye at that time. They secretly endured the losses in silence.

Until now, whenever they think about this, their hearts would explode in anger.

The matter about Demon Eye emptying An Dong's treasury and stealing everything from An Dong's stores, Blood River, Mountain Elf and Ma Long knew about all these. Moreover, they had also thought that Titan, who was an Innate capable of simultaneously killing Nightmare and Tiger Nian, would definitely not leave matters at that. As a result they were very cautious and restricted their subordinates from participating in the looting... Now, they were aware that they did a smart thing. Sure enough, the Titan Brothers were not saints. Moreover, compared to the cool Titan Sr., the flamboyant Titan Jr. seemed to be more disgusted with these kinds of evil acts. He simply must take revenge... Isn't stealing a Ranker's treasures an act of slapping their face?

To Rankers, money is a small matter, but this kind of act was absolutely not tolerated.

If it was replaced with Demon Eye being robbed, it would be weird if he did not fight back!

Titan Jr. was not afraid of Demon Palace's Sky Dragon backing him. Now that Demon Eye had no backers, would Titan Jr. let him go?

“Let me leave. I only beg to leave Thunder Fortress. I'll give you

all my property and ore mines, consider it my apology.” Demon Eye quickly spoke begging for forgiveness. As long as he had the strength, he would be able to prosper anywhere. He was a Level 5 Innate and would be an overlord wherever he went. What’s the worth in money? Those things can be obtained anytime!

“Cut off your right arm and remove your eyes, then kowtow once more before I consider it.” Yue Yang gave his conditions.

“What?” Demon Eye was stupefied.

He was very clear what cutting his right arm meant.

If it was his left arm, he would do so without hesitation.

However, his right arm was where his true strength lied. After hundreds of years of cultivation, he had successfully moved the magic stone from his head to his right arm. This was done in order to prevent his enemies from injuring him fatally by attacking the defenseless head. If he cut off his right arm, it was equivalent to destroying half of his strength, maybe his strength would immediately drop to Level 1 Innate. His eyes on the other hand was where he could display the most battle strength. If he was blind, then his remaining strength would also be destroyed and he would not be able to become an Innate anymore.

The last point was kneeling to his opponents, kowtowing and begging for mercy.

If this shameful and humiliating thing was spread out, then he would not be able to fit in anywhere in the Tong Tian Tower anymore.

“Let me leave my left arm instead...” Demon Eye moved the Platinum Ranked Ring from his left hand to his right hand. His feet slowly moved, on one side waiting for an opportunity to escape, on the other haggling the price.

“Speaking to you is only a waste of my time.” Yue Yang saw that this bastard was already close to death yet still hated to part with his Platinum ranked Ring. He immediately raised Crescent Moon and used Yin and Yang Spiral to attack Demon Eye.

Blood River and Mountain Elf looked at each other and felt that Demon Eye moving the ring was very funny. It's fine that he did not want to part with his right arm and changed to his left, but he also moved the Platinum ranked ring. These kinds of people truly only have money in their eyes. Ma Long on the other hand hiddenly gestured. He knows that other than hating to part with his treasures, Demon Eye had another deep thought. That was to use the Platinum Ranked Ring's special ability to escape.

Light more violent than the sun was emitted from Demon Eye's hands.

The point with the strongest light came from the Platinum Ranked Ring.

Under the support of Demon Eye's right hand, light ten million

times brighter burst forth, making everyone unable to open their eyes.

“Soul Restraining Eye.” Demon Eye’s Guardian Beast was a huge Demonic Eye. It was extremely ugly and covered with tentacles and eyes all around. In the middle of it was a huge eye that suddenly opened. It emitted a purplish black spirit light, fiercely hot towards Yue Yang’s body.

As long as they have been hit by the spirit light, anyone weaker than Demon Eye would receive injury on their souls.

The Gold ranked Level 10 Demonic Eye was also capable of restraining souls for a minute. Within the minute, Demon Eye could do anything to the physical body without any resistance.

Demon Eye did not have any hopes that his own Guardian Beast would be able to kill Yue Yang.

As long as it was able to hold Yue Yang for a minute or even ten seconds was enough.

Blood River, Mountain Elf and Ma Long and the others were stung by the strong light. Titan Jr. was also hit by the strong light but also hit by the spirit light. This was the best opportunity to escape. Compared to Sky Dragon who had to travel tens of kilometers to escape, Demon Eye, who was familiar with the Thunder Fortress, was confident that he could escape without a trace within a minute. When all’s said and done, Demon Eye was still a Level 5 Innate. His odds of winning when fighting one

against three or fighting one on one with Titan Jr. was low, but it did not equate that he could not escape.

“Success.” Demon Eye discovered that Yue Yang used his crescent blade to block the strong light and completely did not notice the spirit light.

He immediately turned around and used his entire strength and speed to escape.

However, before he moved, before his feet even left the ground, a single finger pressed on the back of his head. A frightening Sword Qi lightly penetrated the protective energy and shot from the back of his head and out of the forehead.

Before his painful scream rushed out from his throat, an extremely sharp crescent blade already pierced from the back. It passed through his throat, slicing his chin, and fiercely sliced upwards in between his teeth.

The severed tongue also splashed in mid air.

Demon Eye naturally responded by waving his hands. His right hand, that radiated light brighter than the sun, flew in the air as it had been chopped by the demon blade burning with demon fire.

Demon Eye had gave up all hope. He wanted to turn his head and use the last of his strength in his eyes to self-destruct and perish with his enemy.

When he turned around, what he saw was endless darkness...

The Silver-ranked Eye Destroyer Dagger with special abilities to injure the eyes mercilessly streaked across.

The Demonic Eye that tried to save its master was easily killed by the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear.

The Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear could easily kill huge dragons. Regarding the Demonic Eye that was good at using spiritual attacks, it was only a minute existence in front of this spear. The spear had also accurately pierced through the Magic Crystal inside its body. One hit kill, there was absolutely no need for a second hit! At this moment, the right hand that was flying in mid air with the shining Platinum-ranked ring slowly fell down onto Yue Yang's hands.

Demon Eye slowly collapsed.

His eyes became blind. His valiant body was still struggling as he neared death. However, a Thorny Flower Stalk appeared and directly swallowed him inside its stomach.

After the Thorny Flower Stalk and right hand had been put away by Yue Yang, the Blood Warrior Arena returned to its original state.

Demon Eye, who was a Level 5 Innate, seemed as if he never

appeared in this world, already disappeared without a trace. Perhaps the people in the future would talk about it. About how he had become fertilizer, how he was so arrogant, so rampant, so greedy and so funny... Blood River, Mountain Elf and Ma Long looked at each other. They knew that Demon Eye would not be able to escape. However, they never imagined that he would die so fast in such a miserable way... Even his corpse did not remain, and immediately became food for a beast. Amongst the Innates, Demon Eye was probably the champion of bad luck.

Other than the Demonic Eye becoming light and disappeared, Yue Yang had also put away the corpses of the Earthquake Dragon, Two-headed Dragon and Single-horned Python and other beasts.

As for the Lizard-headed Dragon, it had already become minced meat.

The Spirit of Flame and Smoke was now stronger. She possess Storm Power, Flames and Smoke and Spirit Energy. Now after the battle, thunder and lightning were also added. This was from absorbing the Raging Lightning Domain and the Thousand Thunderbolt's energy. Although it was not yet strengthened, if the Spirit of Flame and Smoke continued to grow like this, its future would be limitless.

Now, her form is a spirit, fire is her body and smoke is her clothing. Storm is her chair and lightning is her hair.

Even though she was not a Holy Beast, she had now taken her first steps in becoming one.

Chapter 394 – Ancient Sealing Circle?

After the battle, Ah Man and the Spirit of Flame and Smoke returned to the Grimoire World. As for the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, she only returned after strangling and devouring Demon Eye using the veins of the stalk of her flower. Only the Reaper Mantis stayed to accompany his master.

The battle between the two Innate Rankers had ended.

But the fight between normal Warriors had just begun.

Mountain Elf and Blood River's followers charged towards Demon Eye's followers ferociously, as a bloody fight between both sides ascended.

The morale among Demon Eye's followers was low as everyone was only thinking of leaving the Thunder Fortress. As the saying goes, when the tree topples the monkeys scatter. Now that their master, Demon Eye, was killed, they knew that they wouldn't be able to reap any benefits from continuing their stay in the Thunder Fortress. But how would Mountain Elf, Blood River, and their people let them go so easily? With the new powers, Titan Brothers, replacing Demon Eye in the Thunder Fortress, this would be an ideal time for them to show off their abilities and win the Titan Brothers' favour.

Moreover, Blood River and Mountain Elf's followers had had enough of Demon Eye's followers already.

They had always wanted to teach them a lesson!

“Scram!” In another fight, Xia Yi and the dark clawed woman were drenched in blood from their fight as both were beaten black and blue. In terms of power, the dark clawed woman was superior to Xia Yi by a lot, but the thing was that she had already lost her will. And now, with Xia Yi’s new found strong power, and the support from Ma Long’s wife, Yan Zheng the butler and the others, she became more bold and fierce as she unleashed her power beyond her original potential and fought with the dark clawed woman using all her might. The dark clawed woman was actually no match for Xia Yi. This scene had made Jia De, the fat toad merchant who was sent flying in the air by the dark clawed woman’s kick, jaws dropped to the ground with shock..

“In your dreams!” Xia Yi stood firmly.

She wasn’t sure how she was able to contend against a Lesser Innate.

With her original power, she would be defeated instantly by the dark clawed woman. But the strange thing was that Xia Yi felt that she was only a little weaker than the dark clawed woman and the fight could go on for three days and three nights without anyone emerging victorious.

But of course Xia Yi did not have the time to think deeper as she gritted her teeth to continue the fight. She swore to defeat her enemy.

The dark clawed woman had already tore various wounds on Xia Yi's body, but as stubborn as she was unyielding, Xia Yi continued to push on.

Her Demon Killing Dagger had similarly slashed more than ten bloody wounds which unfurled on the dark clawed woman's skin and flesh.

One was too terrified, thus her strength decreased greatly; the other one was fearless, increasing her combat power tremendously.

With all these compensations, both sides could have a tie.

The fight came to a deadlock.

The angry and fearful dark clawed woman couldn't withstand the mental duress anymore.

When she looked at the dead Demon Eye on the ground, she decided to quit the fight and let out a poisonous mist that obstructed Xia Yi's vision. Then, she morphed into a giant silver python quickly, knocking down Yan Zheng and Ma Long's wife who were obstructing her path and glided off.

Seeing the dark clawed woman's attempt to escape, a dark shadow flashed in the air.

The Reaper Mantis appeared and dived towards her.

Previously, the reason why there was a deadlock in its fight with the double-headed dragon wasn't because it was powerful but because it was a Level Nine Platinum-ranked Beast. The fact that there was a tie was already very impressive for the Reaper Mantis as they differed greatly in terms of rank, size and power. Although the Reaper Mantis was growing, it hadn't grown to its maximum potential yet. It was still much smaller than its mother in terms of size.

Although it couldn't take down the double-headed dragon, this did not mean that it couldn't deal with the dark clawed woman.

Seizing the opportunity, the Reaper Mantis dived down in a flash, clamping the head of the silver python with its scythe. It then wolfed down her head with its sharp teeth as it tore and devoured the Magic Crystal in her head.

The silver python curled up its body panickingly, as it attempted to suffocate the Reaper Mantis.

But to the Reaper Mantis, the attempt to suffocate it seemed like a joke. Just by flapping its wings, it could change the whole situation.

It dodged the silver python's attempt to curl, suffocated it cleverly and shook the silver python's head vigorously.

Its powerful scythe penetrated into the spine of the silver python.

And through the spine, it branched into the joints of the silver python.

The weakness of a snake lay in its spine and its Qi Cun point. Once these areas were hit, a snake would become weak and powerless.

(want2eat: Qi Cun is a point seven inches away from a snake's head)

The silver python rolled on the ground, vigorously at the start, but towards the end, its neck became numb and only its tail was able to move. Then, even its tail began to move slower, and eventually it lay supine on the ground, motionless. Although it hadn't died, it was too weak to struggle as the Reaper Mantis began to devour her. Seeing it, Xia Yi relaxed and fell to the ground, drenched in blood.

Ma long's wife carried her up immediately. "Congratulations, my sister. You have successfully defeated a strong opponent. If you don't mind, I can help to heal your wounds."

The quick-witted fat toad, Jia De, had already gotten the best doctor over...

Regarding the matter on clearing up the mess, Yue Yang wasn't worried at all.

There would be someone doing it for him.

Blood River, Mountain Elf and Ma Long were all keen to make connections with a Ranker like Yue Yang. Especially so when they knew that there were two of them who were equally powerful. Blood River invited Yue Yang over to his Blood River Palace and told him that a small thing like handling of Demon Eye's asset could be settled by his men, and every single cent would be passed into Yue Yang's hand in the end. Of course Yue Yang didn't care about the small amount of money. The best treasures must be hidden in Demon Eye's Platinum Storage Ring, his mine, his shop and the Devil Eye Palace he resided in. Yue Yang would just instruct Jia De and Yan Zheng the butler to retrieve all the assets.

"My brother and I were merely passing through the Thunder Fortress and decided to stay here temporarily because there aren't many restrictive rules here. After a while, we will move on to the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower." Yue Yang indicated that his ambition didn't lie in a small place like the Thunder Fortress. And with that, Blood River, Mountain Elf and Ma Long were extremely pleased.

"The name of Titan Brothers will definitely become famous throughout the Tong Tian Tower. Although the Thunder Fortress is a small place, we will always have your back," Blood River responded quickly.

"Please tell us if you need anything," Mountain Elf possessed great interpersonal skills too.

"How could we not celebrate this joyous occasion with wine, I have a bottle of Qi Lan Wine with me today, please savour its taste

with me.” Ma Long the City Master of the Underground City took out a bottle of Qi Lan Wine that he kept for a long time. This precious wine was a gift from An Dong in the past. It was said that the Qi Lan Wine was made by a Wine Saint, and only ten bottles could be found in the whole of Qi Lan Continent. It was sealed for a thousand years by the Time Sand, and was worth ten thousands of gold. Money can be earned easily, but fine wine are hard to come by. Ma Long was even reluctant to give it to King Chong Ni. However, as Ma Long felt that he did not contribute significantly today, and also to gain the favour of Yue Yang, he decided to offer it.

“Brother Ma Long, why didn’t you take out your wine earlier? Haha, it is the product of the Wine Saint and can be considered a priceless treasure.” On hearing what Ma Long said, the craving for wine in Mountain Elf and Blood River’s minds were triggered as the Qi Lan Wine was something that couldn’t even be bought with money.

The entire process of taking over and sorting out Demon Eye’s asset wouldn’t be very fast.

An Dong’s underground mansion couldn’t even compare to Demon Eye’s Devil Eye Palace.

Fat Toad Jia De exhausted all of their men to remove Demon Eye’s logo from all parts of the Devil Eye Palace, and replaced them with Yue Yang ‘s Gemini logo. Undoubtedly, this requires time. When Jia De was awfully busy, the maids helped to tidy up the Devil Eye Palace such that it could be turned into the Titan Palace for the Titan Brothers.

As for Demon Eye's slaves, they either escaped or was captured.

His female slaves were also locked away, awaiting Yan Zheng the butler's decision on which were the loyal ones that could be used as servants.

After Yue Yang walked out of the Blood River Palace and into his new residence, Titan Palace, he discovered that there were a lot of people busily tidying up the place and his slaves from the mine were also happily painting the wall, especially Pepin whose wrinkled smiling face blossomed like a flower. The Xia Pu Brothers were perspiring profusely as they were removing Demon Eye's giant, sturdy logo with great effort... Xia Yi who was recovering from her injuries slept on the stairs outside the entrance, weary.

A few female slaves were guarding her, but they did not dare to persuade her to rest inside as they felt that she might be waiting for her master, Mr. Titan Jr.

All the slaves who passed by Xia Yi bowed to her slightly.

The Titan brothers made good masters, that was for sure. If not for Miss Xia Yi who requested for more rights for the slaves, Mr. Titan Jr. wouldn't have given them so much. At least not so quickly, because they were all Innate Ranker of high status, they wouldn't care about the well beings of the slaves.

It was Xia Yi who told them what the slaves needed.

“Send some men to escort her to rest. How could she rest here!”
Yue Yang covered Xia Yi with his outer coat casually.

Although it was only one clothing, it touched all the slaves.

There wouldn't be a better master in the world. Only Mr. Titan Jr. would care so much for the slaves. If it were to be other Innate Rankers instead, they wouldn't even spare them a glance!

The half-elf girl was also busily preparing her master's new bedroom. She did not choose the big, luxurious bedroom previously owned by Demon Eye because with a sensitive nose, she felt that the room was reeking of blood and carried a weird rotten smell. Although it was from a long time ago, she felt that it would be an insult to her master to live in that kind of place. Hence, she decided that Yue Yang 's temporary residence would be on a small elegant hall beside a scenic man-made lake.

Yue Yang took the dinner prepared by the half elf girl, and returned to his Grimoire World after petting her head.

After resting for a night, as the treasures in Demon Eye's Platinum Storage Ring were just too much, Yue Yang got dizzy from looking at them so he decided to leave them as they are temporarily... As for Sky Dragon, he placed all his treasures in his Grimoire, so Yue Yang had to put in some effort to get them.

The people outside were still busy doing their jobs, leaving Yue Yang the most idle person around as he walked about aimlessly.

The slaves in the places he passed had their morales boosted tremendously as they worked with renewed vigor.

But Yue Yang was bored.

He didn't have the habit of inspecting places as a leader.

In the end, he decided to claim his rewards at the Warrior Guild first.

Killing Demon Eye would yield him a handsome reward. Yue Yang felt that he should forgo getting the Wisdom Fruits at the moment and get the Immortal Spring from the Warrior Guild. It was an Eighth Rank treasure which couldn't be bought with any amount of money and could be used to cast metals, refine equipments and medicine, and strengthen Beasts. Most importantly, the Immortal Spring had extremely strong strengthening effect. If it were to be refined together with a consumable object, there would be a high chance for these objects to become permanent... If all the Giant Phantom Shadows summoned could become permanent, piled on top of each other and stacked on Yue Yang's body, he would be able to defeat even a Level Ten Innate with just one punch.

Of course, the Immortal Spring would be difficult to obtain. Yue Yang wasn't sure if the Warrior Guild would be willing to offer him any reward for just killing Demon Eye alone.

Even if they were to offer any, there wouldn't be much to offer.

As for Sky Dragon's death, Yue Yang decided to hide the truth temporarily because he killed No. Ten of the Top Ten Sky Demons of the Demonic Palace after all. Would Sky Execution and the rest do nothing if they were to know about it?

In any case, the reward for killing Sky Dragon wouldn't become less if he were to collect it later...

After teleporting to the Plaza of the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, Yue Yang had not even walked for two steps when he saw Bao Er running towards him, shouting 'Slave!'. Yue Yang was pleased, but thought that it would be more accurate if she were to call him 'husband' instead... Seeing the big loli Golden Elf perspiring profusely to the point that even her nose tip was covered in perspiration and her body giving off a light aromatic fragrance unique to a virgin, Yue Yang walked towards her directly and brushed his body against hers. However, his words differ from his actions, "Little chick, leave me alone, I don't know you!"

"We discovered this Sealing Circle in the Jadeite Forest. All of us couldn't identify it, and Sister Anna and brother said that it could be a Sealing Circle from a long time ago. Everyone is trying to remove the seal, and brother asked me to come back to get you to look at it too." Bao Er boasted proudly as she further mentioned that the Sealing Circle was discovered by her.

"God, who asked you all to touch it? Is it something that could be played with?"

What does an ancient sealing circle represent?

The only thing that could be sealed inside would either be a destructive Beast, or an inhumane monster. Or it could be some terrifying curse...

He carried Bao Er onto his shoulders and rushed towards the Warrior Guild. He did not even bother to claim the Immortality Spring as he charged towards the

Teleportation Room. “Jadeite Forest, this is urgent. Start the Teleportation Circle immediately!”

Chapter 395 – Mysterious Dimension, The Five Elements Palace

Inside was Chief Matthew who was Yue Yang's guarantor when he signed up to be an Anti-Dragon Hunters Mercenary. When he saw Yue Yang rushing over with Bao Er on his shoulders, he started the Teleportation Circle quickly.

He even tried to ask further. "Young man, did you encounter a Dragon Hunter? Do you need the Guild to dispatch the Iron Blood Guards?"

"No thanks." Just after Yue Yang completed his sentence, he disappeared with Bao Er.

In the Jadeite Forest, Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the rest were sitting on the ground disinterestedly.

The Li Brothers were polishing their weapons as Xue Tan Lang and Prince Tian Luo were quietly meditating and reading. The four orc girls were chomping on their roast meat while the Ox Head Party Leader Li Ao was keeping guard of the lot. Fan Lun Tie the Ox-head girl were gulping on a beer... Only Lin En and Anna were perusing the Sealing Circle on the stone wall.

According to their investigation, the Sealing Circle was preserved for a long time as there were algae overgrowth. If not for the energy that the Sealing Circle was emitting, this place would have been a flora paradise. The Sealing Circle was extremely big, more than 10 metres in height and width. It was dark-coloured and

circular in shape, and there are four different Heaven Runes in its four sides, top, bottom, left and right. They seemed to be connected yet completely unrelated, and there was also a complicated pattern in the centre. Even the knowledgeable Lin En and Anna weren't able to tell what it meant.

“The Heaven Runes around could be shifted, but why not the one in the centre?” After exploring around, Anna realised that the crystals embedded on the Heaven Runes could be rotated, but no matter how they shifted it, they would still be connected to those beside them.

“There's a hole in the centre one, could it be that we have to put a Magic Crystal into it as its source of energy?” Lin En realised that there's a small circular hole in the middle.

“Don't waste your effort, wait for your 'cook' to come, he will definitely understand. That fellow can even write a love poem with Heaven Runes, this will be a piece of cake for him. As for the Magic Crystals, he has a lot of them, and all are of the highest quality.” Fatty Hai was a lazy guy, he was more than willing to let Yue Yang take over things that he did not understand.

“He may not be free today, we'll approach him after we are done with our observations!” The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie did not want to admit that she made a wrong judgement and merely said that Yue Yang bluffed everyone.

“What if something went wrong? What do we do?” Ye Kong advised the Ox-head girl not to touch the stones.

“There’s still Hui Tai Lang, no? It is a Divine Beast!” The four orc girls were very confident as they felt that Divine Beasts would be able to accomplish anything in the world.

“Meow.” Hui Tai Lang appeared humble this time and indicated that he was not up for such a heavy responsibility.

Being curious, Lin En really placed a Level Three fire-type Magic Crystal into the small hole.

But maybe its level was too low, or its energy too little.

After the Level Three Magic Crystal flashed briefly for a second, all became still and there were no further response. But this flash triggered everyone’s desire to study it. Hey, something’s up, a Magic Crystal could really be placed in it! Fatty Hai and the rest crowded around as some fished out their Magic Crystals while others tried to turn the stones. After a while, nobody knew who did what but the Sealing Circle gave off a dazzling glow that shrouded everyone. Under the gaze of Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others, a ball of light began to develop in the centre of the Sealing Circle as a Teleportation door was formed.

Lin En and Anna wanted to ask everyone to move back, but the bravest Ox-head Fan Lun Tie and the four orc girls reacted as if they saw a legendary hidden treasury.

They held onto their weapons tightly, staring at the Teleportation Door as they carefully walked towards it.

“Fan Lun Tie, I feel that we should report this to the Warrior Guild. We all aren’t sure of what’s inside, so don’t take the risk easily,” warned Lin En.

The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie looked at the Teleportation Door unwillingly. “There may be hidden treasures inside, if we were to report it, we’d only get 5% of the reward. We should enter the place to look for treasures first. After getting them, then we will go and report it to the Warrior Guild. Anyway only those with affinity gets the treasures, so if we’re able to open the Teleportation Door today, that means that we have affinity with the treasures!”

The four orc girls agreed to what Fan Lun Tie said.

Fatty Hai and the rest were a bit wavered too, they felt that if there were really treasure in it, it would be a pity to report it to the Warrior Guild and let them take the treasures.

Even if there weren’t any good treasures, they could treat it as a form of exploration, and cultivation...

There might be many traps inside, but nobody here are weaklings, if they could work together and stay alert, then it wouldn’t be too dangerous. Moreover, with the accompany of Hui Tai Lang the Divine Beast, if they really couldn’t control the situation, they could always use the Teleportation Stone or Teleportation Scroll to get Yue Yang.

It would be a waste now that they opened the Teleportation Door

and leave without exploring what was inside.

This was the best opportunity, they had to go in no matter what.

Lin En and Anna were leaning towards reporting it to the Warrior Guild while Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the rest felt that instead of reporting to the Warrior Guild, they should find Yue Yang immediately. If Yue Yang were to know that they didn't take any treasures after opening the Teleportation Door, or that they handed it over to the Warrior Guild, he would definitely be mad. The Ox Head Party Leader Li Ao, Xue Tan Lang and Prince Tian Luo's opinion were to wait for Bao Er to get Yue Yang, while Fan Lun Tie and the four Orc girls felt that they should send someone in to explore around, if not Yue Yang would look down on them and find them incompetent... As they couldn't arrive at a conclusion, they decided using the rock-scissors-paper game.

The Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie was lucky enough to win, hence waving her giant hands, she decided to take a look inside.

The first batch, comprising of Fan Lun Tie and the four orc girls, went in.

Following closely behind was the Ox Head Party Leader Li Ao, Fatty Hai and Ye Kong, and then it was Xue Tan Lang and Prince Tian Luo, Anna, Li En and Hui Tai Lang trailing behind.

The Li Brothers stayed behind so that in case of any emergencies, they could go get Yue Yang to help immediately... After half an hour, Yue Yang took Bao Er along and rushed there. But Fatty Hai

and the rest went in way before, so he did not manage to arrive in time to stop them.

“What the hell? Your guts have grown bigger than a water tank now.” Yue Yang was speechless towards them. How could they just go in without knowing anything?

Even if there were hidden treasures, would they be so easy to get?

The Heavens Runes on the wall indicated that it was a door of death, and was obviously a warning for people not to go in.

But they went ahead without comprehending them.

He wasn't sure if he should call them brave or reckless.

The Li Brothers were instructed to stay. The reason was because Yue Yang wanted them to prevent anyone from destroying the Teleportation Door, and also if anyone among Fatty Hai and the rest comes out, they could help. He wasn't sure if the Teleportation Door could go both ways, as it seemed like it, but Fatty Hai and the rest did not come out immediately, so even if it could transport both ways, it wouldn't be on two common points.

Bao Er had to stay originally, but she kept on sticking to Yue Yang and insisted on going in.

If Yue Yang were to reject her, her tears might flood the entire Jadeite Forest.

Anyway there's the Grimoire World, he could always throw her into it if the situation required him to do so. Yue Yang was still confident about protecting Bao Er.

He agreed to bring along the big loli as he held onto her hand and stepped into the Teleportation Door... After a short dazed moment of being transported into a different space, Yue Yang discovered that he was in a very unique dimension. It felt like the Twelve Zodiac Temples as it was filled with restrictive power. Although he had the power of an Innate, he couldn't use them at all. Yue Yang summoned his Grimoire and realised that he could only summon one of his Beast and nothing more. He was shocked as the restrictions here were far more stringent than that in the Twelve Zodiac Temples, what on earth is happening?

After some tries, Yue Yang realised that anyone who entered this mysterious dimension would have a hard time.

The restrictions here were so stringent that it made his hair rise on its end.

One wouldn't be able to use any of his main power, and would only be able to summon one Beast. Those strengthening-types and elemental-types were rendered useless and unique-types' strength were ten times weaker. Only the Combat Beasts could use half of their power... What is this goddamn mysterious dimension trying to do? What kind of powerful being is sealed within? What kind of Beast is sealed in here? Must it actually render the power of strengthening-type and elemental-type Beasts useless?!

Yue Yang got more perplexed from thinking about it. Could it be that a pure strengthening-type or elemental-type Beast was sealed with?

Ahead of him, there were no footprints left behind by Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the rest, and there weren't any scent of Hui Tai Lang too.

Facing the passages that looked like a maze to Yue Yang, he could conclude almost immediately that the entrance of the Teleportation Door was completely random, and there weren't any fixed points.

From this, it looked like everyone was separated apart from Yue Yang who was worried and held on to Bao Er. It would be alright for Fatty Hai and Ye Kong because even without aid of their Beasts and their own power, they could still escape and defend themselves. But Anna and Lin En's lives would be hard as they only own elemental-type Beast who couldn't do anything in this mysterious dimension.

The same would go for the Ox Head Party Leader Li Ao, Fan Lun Tie and the four orc girls as they were all pure strengthening-type Beasts.

Xue Tan Lang and Prince Tian Luo's strongest Beast, Giant Snowman and Skyfire Meteor, were also useless in this dimension. But they still had combat type Beasts and together with their own power, they wouldn't face much problems. Luckily the Li Brothers did not enter, if not they would be landed in a similar predicament as the others.

This mysterious dimension was abnormal, Yue Yang had never seen such a restrictive space before.

The Reaper Mantis whose power was halved couldn't control its body as it kept crashing into caves while flying, so Yue Yang had to recall it and changed his Beast to the puppet type Silver-ranked Storm Hawk.

The puppet type Storm Hawk unexpectedly wasn't affected by any of the restrictions, and it seemed that its strength was raised instead as its combat power was doubled.

It was only now Yue Yang understood what was happening.

In this weird mysterious dimension, only the puppet type Beasts were freed of all restrictions. From this, it was apparent that there were puppet type Beasts sealed within the ancient Sealing Circle, what were they guarding then? Are there really treasures? Or a vicious devil? Yue Yang's curiosity was triggered.

After walking around the winding maze-like tunnels, Yue Yang discovered an exit.

There was a broad platform and a Night Pearl made the platform shine like it was daytime.

There were various groups of puppet type Beast patrolling around rhythmically, everyone of them were Level Ten Bronze-

ranked while their leader was Level Ten Silver-ranked. In the centre of the platform, there were four even more gigantic Golden Beasts that were in forms of a tiger, leopard, lion and wolf. They were all Level Ten Gold-ranked.

Under their paws was a lid covered with Heaven Runes. That might be the entrance to a dimension in the next level.

Or it could be leading to a vault filled with treasures.

“There’s something wrong, I feel that there’s something fishy going on.” Yue Yang frowned his eyebrows as he thought hard about it. Seeing the scene in front of him, he seemed to understand something.

But he couldn’t catch the main point.

He was just one step away from finding out the truth, but he couldn’t do so.

Bao Er hid behind Yue Yang, completely oblivious to the dangers around her. “It sucks that we can’t fight with them, I can’t even show off my superb shooting skills. Why are there so many puppet Beast, they looked like a troop to me, is this some kind of Emperor’s tomb? There’s so many guards around his tomb!” Bao Er complained.

She said those words casually, but Yue Yang was enlightened instantly after hearing her words.

He understood that this was very similar to Yue Gong's puppet palace...

This was the legendary Five Elements Palace. It should be the one mentioned in the memories inherited from the tragic guy's mother. This was the Gold Palace among all other elements namely Wood, Water, Fire and Sand!

Chapter 396 – [Daddy-con? Lolicon?](#)

Heliumm: I would like to clarify the term Lolicon and ‘Daddy-con’ used in this chapter. Lolicon technically came from anime and manga, the chinese character used by the author 控 could mean control or (sth) -philia. Lolicon means to have a fetish for Lolita(young girls). For Daddy-con it has a similar meaning. For those who might have issue understanding this, i hope this explanation helps > <.

“What the hell is this place?” Fatty Hai realised his Hippo Meteor Punch was entirely useless; and he was being beaten badly by a Wind Breath Seabird shooting sharp wind blades. He couldn’t have done anything if this Wind Breath Seabird was high ranked, but to his chagrin, it was only Bronze-ranked Level 5. Normally, Bronze-ranked Level 5 beasts trying to fight against Fatty Hai would be considered to be a suicidal beast.

Now, he was being chased with nowhere to hide.

Fatty Hai was at a different location compared to Yue Yang and Bao Er, he was teleported to an underground beach. At the edges, there were steep cliffs which was impossible to climb.

The dome of the underground cave was so high there were even small whiffs of clouds and mist, but there were definitely stalactites of the karst cave above.

Far away from the underground beach, there was a small island glowing faintly in the distance.

It seemed as if valuable treasures would be hidden within the island.

Treasures? Fatty Hai suddenly didn't want it anymore, all that he wanted to do was to get rid of this damned Wind Breath Seabird. This detestable little thing had a grudge against him. When Fatty Hai first arrived he thought it would be a easy prey and wanted to eat fried chicken. Unexpectedly the Wind Breath Seabird shot hundreds of sharp wind blades continuously, despite being tired, it was persistent in its pursuit, following Fatty Hai relentlessly. Every now and then, it attacked the miserable Fatty Hai, who appeared stupid yet unusually nimble. Fatty Hai was at the verge of going crazy, but he couldn't do anything at all. Even if he summoned his Iron Rhinoceros and Little Hippo, being unable to fly, they would just get beaten up. More importantly, this Wind Breath Seabird was very clever, it was solely focused on attacking Fatty Hai.

Lin En and Anna were also in a dire situation.

The two of them realised that they entered an area filled with raging flames of lava and were standing right at the side of the river of lava. Here, other than Fire-type beasts, no other beasts could be summoned.

Lin En has fire type beasts, but they were only used as light source and have no battle capabilities.

If not for Hui Tai Lang who was also teleported to a nearby area

and protected the two of them, they probably would have already died.

Thousands of fire monsters were moving about in the lava river, their levels were not very high; at most around Bronze-ranked Level 6, while some were Silver and Gold ranked Level 6. However, their vast number and unique battlefield terrain were more than enough to overwhelm any enemy.

They did not dare to provoke Hui Tai Lang, and Hui Tai Lang did not dare to leave Lin En and Anna too far away, in case any fire-type monster decided to take the opportunity to kill them. Hui Tai Lang could only take Lin En and Anna and walked upstream together. Lin En and Anna hoped to quickly find the exit and get out of this terrifying place. The creepiest thing was that teleportation stones could not be used here. The only way out was to use the teleportation circle.

“Go away! Go away!” The Ox-head girl, Fan Lun Tie and the four orc girls were in an underground savannah.

A pack of hyenas and desert spiders were chasing them. Some were only Bronze-ranked Level 5, yet Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie was unable to fight back and could only flee.

Ox-head Party Leader Li Ao and Ye Kong were in the same dire situation. Luckily Ye Kong could still summon his beasts, and although their original strength was halved, once Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle appeared, they were invincible. Although there were numerous hyenas, desert spiders, Gigantic Rock Guardians, djinns and other monsters, they could only watch from afar. They

didn't dared to step up and attack the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle.

Obviously, even if they attacked the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, it would have been in vain.

The Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle's powerful defense rendered the majority of the monsters' fangs and claws useless, as if they were nothing but decoration.

Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo furrowed their eyebrows while walking through the forest.

Prince of Tian Luo's Sharp-clawed seeker puppet beast which was Silver-ranked Level 5 fought to create a path in front.

There were man-eating flowers, vines and trees every where, it was almost as if the entire forest was alive, and could claim lives. For the first time, Xue Tan Lang realised that Plant-type Beasts could be a headache if there were too many of them.

Yue Yang was unaware of his comrades' situation, but he could imagine.

He needed to find Fatty Hai and the rest quickly.

Staying here for too long would definitely be life-threatening, especially if they were running around blindly. If they end up in the lands of death, they would be done for.

Under Yue Yang's command, Storm Hawk drew the Puppet Soldier Guards away. Yue Yang carried Bao Er with him, tied to his back with a rope, and lured away the four Gold Beast Guardians himself. Faster than lightening, Yue Yang turned back half-way in the air, landing on the metal lid full of Heaven Runes. "Hurry up, faster, that four Gold Beast Guardians are running back again!" Bao Er urged him.

"I told you to hide first, but you just didn't listen." Yue Yang was frustrated, at first he wanted to let Bao Er hide somewhere but she stubbornly refused.

"I won't be fooled by you again, once you go in you would abandon me! Ah, watch out..." Bao Er noticed that a Gold-ranked Level 10 Tiger had actually sprouted its wings. It could actually fly! Furthermore, that Gold Leopard actually knew rock climbing and was preparing to launch an attack from the skies.

"Be quiet!"

Yue Yang dodged the Gold Leopard's pounce skillfully.

His dancing figure headed straight for the rock cliff, and at the instant they were millimetres away, he instantly whirled around. In the end, the Gold Tiger crashed into the rock wall with a loud bang.

The Gold Lion and Wolf pursued closely, but there was a huge gap between their speed and Yue Yang, an Innate Ranker.

Ten minutes later, Yue Yang successfully undid the Rune Circle on the metal lid.

The metal lid bounced open, revealing a deep tunnel.

Yue Yang carried Bao Er and jumped down without hesitation, but the four Gold Beast Guardians actually stopped and gave up their chase immediately. One minute later, the metal lid closed slowly, and the four Gold Beast Guardians returned to their original position and crouched down, as if nothing had happened. Not far away from them, the Storm Hawk had already become a bunch of scrap metals, as a result of the Gold Tiger's attack. Among the four Golden Beast Guardians, the Gold Tiger was undoubtedly its main force.

When Bao Er heard the metal lid close with a 'bang', she questioned breathlessly, "Would we be trapped here forever, unable to get out for eternity?"

"I don't know about you, but I definitely won't." Yue Yang loosened the straps to put her down, but Bao Er was clutching onto him like an octopus.

"Nope." Bao Er felt that it was really comfortable being carried this way and simply refused to get down.

She didn't think about how tiring it would be for Yue Yang to fly while carrying her, but luckily Yue Yang was an Innate Ranker. If it was a level 6 Elder flying in such a restricted space for so long,

he would be so worn out, and end up dog tired.

Flying alone versus flying while carrying someone was entirely different.

For instance, for a Battle Eagle, flying a thousand miles would be a piece of cake. However, if it was carrying a person, even if its an infant, it would drop to the ground after a few hundred miles.

If one were to carry someone of a vastly different level himself, both would feel extremely uncomfortable. Especially if one were to carry a more powerful being than himself, he would feel even heavier. Before Yue Yang learnt how to control and blend his Innate Qi with 'Energy Fusion', despite Bloody Queen's highly skilled flying ability, she was unable to carry Yue Yang for long periods of flight. Of course, now it was different. After Bloody Queen mastered Energy Fusion like her master, she could almost live with Yue Yang together in the sky. Her flying ability became ten times even better.

This secret cheat of Energy Fusion was taught to Yue Yang by the Qilin girl.

She claimed that for the Eastern Fairy Tribe, riding beasts were a piece of cake, the more powerful the owner, the easier it was for the beast to carry. It was entirely different from the outdated riding technique used by the Soaring Dragon Continent.

“Hurry up and get down!” Seeing that this elf loli refused to come down, Yue Yang whipped her buttocks with his hand.

“It hurts...” Bao Er twisted her body and complained miserably: “Even until this age, I have never gotten hit before... Isn’t it okay? I’m scared of the dark, and I want your protection too...!” Since she acted like a spoilt child, Yue Yang’s pedo-side felt the urge to discipline her. Carrying a beautiful loli on a piggyback ride was something others desire but unable to do. Although her chest size was not very big, against his back, that bittersweet-feel was precisely why lolitas were the best.

As for her little ass, it was not bad.

Yue Yang could not help but to hit her again, meanwhile secretly thinking that the golden elf lolita’s body was alluring. If she were to grow up, with that charming little face, lovely body line with a golden ratio as well as her elastic ass; Let alone feeling her touch, just a few glance from her might be enough to kill others.

On the surface, Yue Yang would definitely scold her a little. However, Bao Er still refused to let go and come down even after getting scolded.

She has instantly fallen for the feeling of lying on his back. It was strong, safe and exceptionally comfortable, giving her an unprecedented sense of security.

“I don’t have a father, you should just be my Daddy!” Hearing Bao Er’s comment, Yue Yang spat out the water he was drinking.

“Why don’t you have a father?” Yue Yang was bewildered, were

you the same as the [Monkey King](#), and came from the rock?

“Golden Elves normally only have a mother, so I don’t know who my father is. Mommy knows, but she told me a long long time ago that he died during a war. I have never met him before.” Bao Er embraced Yue Yang’s neck, intimately snuggling up to Yue Yang and happily resting on his back, sighing relentlessly, “I think being carried on Daddy’s back, would probably feel just like this!”

“Piggyback rides are fine, but you shouldn’t randomly just call anyone your father.” Yue Yang suspected that this chic was Daddy-con, but nevermind, she did not even have a father, it was something she could not control. It was a kind of thought, a nostalgic memory, a substitute. Besides, her Daddy-con was also directed to himself, so it might not be a bad thing if she was a Daddy-con!

“.....” Bao Er stuck her tongue out, but did not gave a reply. She closed her eyes and enjoyed this moment of comfort, happily sniffing Yue Yang’s back.

After Yue Yang walked further out by a few hundred meters, although he called for her, there were no responses.

Turning his head, Yue Yang discovered that this lolita has fallen asleep, peacefully like an infant.

With the experience he gained from entering the Puppet Palace, Yue Gong’s knowledge and the Control bracelet, Yue Yang was able to get pass the Puppet beasts and checkpoints with ease.

To someone with Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, the trap mechanisms were just pieces of cake.

Finally, Yue Yang reached a place with a huge Runic Circle.... This Runic Circle was engraved on the surface of the wall.

The wall was nearly a few hundred meters, it was as smooth as a mirror. Yue Yang had avoided the Guardian Beasts, but soon discovered that flying was impossible. There were curses to prevent flying. The treasure in the Golden Palace seems to be inside the Runic Circle. Of course, it might have sealed a terrifying monster. Yue Yang thought that the latter was less likely. Inside, there should be treasures that were exceptionally helpful for puppet beasts. Previously, Yue Yang was not passionate enough about puppet beasts. But after the incident with Yue Gong and after making a promise with him to complete the third secret treasure, Yue Yang had a new responsibility... Within the Runic Circle, there might just be the third secret treasure.

He had to take opportunity of this chance and take the treasure out of the seal.

Besides, when would someone pass on a treasure when they saw one?

Yue Yang was just like a nimble lizard as he climbed up the smooth surface of the wall slowly.

This was a display of his Innate Qi's most skillful capabilities.

Forming a whirlpool-like suction force on his ten fingers using Innate Qi, Yue Yang was able to support his body and climb up slowly.

The Treasure was just right ahead!

Chapter 397 – Don't Get Complacent Too Early!

While Yue Yang was dashing through the Gold Palace, one of the Five Elements Palace, the Li brothers guarding outside the teleportation gate noticed a group of people approaching from the distance.

They were adventurers drawn by the bright light.

At first, they didn't approach them and simply stood from afar, discussing.

After a short while, some individuals crushed their teleportation stone, it seemed as if they had teleported away to call for their friends. The Li brothers panicked. At this rate, the secret of the teleportation gate would be exposed. They were still hesitating whether to kill all those people. The other party had a few Level 7 Overlords, which made the Li brothers fear that it was not possible to kill all of them in an instant. If some of them escaped, they might develop a deep-seated grudge against them, and it would only make the situation worse. The Li brothers, clueless about what to do, took out their weapons. They decided to forget about the other problems and defend the teleportation gate first.

With a sudden burst of clamour, a hundred Iron Blood Guards lead by Ou Gen rushed over.

“What happened here? Are Titian and that Golden Elf your teammates? Did he enter the teleportation gate?” Ou Gen had a

very strong memory, he recognised that the Li brothers were Yue Yang's teammates and immediately approached to question them.

Ou Gen didn't come to work just now, but Elder Matthew told him that a lad named Titan and a Golden Elf had teleported to Jadeite Forest. They might have encountered the Dragon Hunters. Since Ou Gen couldn't bear to have a promising youngster like Titan perish at such a young age, he gathered the Iron Blood Guards to assist in driving the Dragon Hunters away. However, they still couldn't find the Dragon Hunters after searching for them for ages. Upon seeing the Li twins guarding in front of the teleportation gate, Ou Gen was able to catch a gist of what happened.

The elder one of the Li brothers nodded his head but remained alert. Even if the other party was from the Warrior Guild, he could not be trusted completely.

The leader of Iron Blood Guards furrowed his eyebrows, "Ou Gen, this sealing circle looked very old. We never knew its existence before, but today it was suddenly activated. A beast may have been born and broke through the seal."

Once said, gloom shadowed over Ou Gen's face, "If that is the case, the people inside would be in danger."

Li Ge quickly shook his hand, "No, this sealing circle was unsealed by us, there were no monsters nor beasts entering into the teleportation gate. According to the guild's rules, once we discover a new space, new territory or new district, we have the right to be the first to explore and scout. We would not occupy it

for a long time but we have to enjoy the first rights of exploring. I believe that this rule that is drawn up by the Innate Alliance can not be refuted. Whoever wants to get past here had to first consult the weapons in our hands first.”

The leader of Iron Blood Guards snorted coldly, “Who wants to rob you people of your treasures? We only came with good intentions to help you. If you don’t want help, then so be it!”

Ou Gen had to quickly smooth things over, “There is no need for everyone to be so agitated, perhaps danger is lurking right around us. The fact that Titan and the rest went in to scout should be considered a good thing. The Warrior Guild needs their information.”

“As long as you people do not enter, I will suggest to our party leader to share the information with the Warrior Guild later.” Li Qie nodded seriously.

“How long had Titan been in there?” Ou Gen asked.

“An hour.” The Li brothers did not speak of the truth. In reality, Fatty Hai and the rest who had been inside the longest stayed in for about three hours.

“There are monsters coming out from inside...” The advancing adventures were increasing quickly in numbers, within half an hour, more than two hundred adventures arrived. It was only because they were afraid of the Warrior Guild’s power that they didn’t start attacking. If there were only the Li brothers, they

would have charged forward already. As the number of people increased, the situation got more and more dire. Suddenly, the light from the teleportation gate flickered and flashed as a Gold-ranked level 10 Flame General burst out of the teleportation gate. Blazing flames covered it from head to toe, and it started puffing out flames at the sight of the adventurers.

“Oh no!” Ou Gen’s face paled for a second time. There were actually monsters coming out! On top of that, it was such a powerful Level 10 Gold-ranked monster. The fate of Titan and the others’ looked grim.

“Kill the Flame General before rescuing the others.” Although discontented with the Li brothers’ reason for hindering the Iron Blood Guards, the leader of the Iron Blood Guards reacted immediately, commanding his subordinates to surround the Flame General and charge into the teleportation gate to rescue the others. The Li brothers’ hearts were in great turmoil, if not for their trust in Yue Yang, they would have been crushed by despair. Monsters appeared from the teleportation gate, what could this mean? Did all those that entered suffer a total defeat? Right now, they could only hope that Yue Yang was protecting everyone and that their comrades were safe and sound.

“Look, you guys can still keep your right to explore, but let us go in to rescue them. Right now this is urgent. Money and treasure are merely external possessions, human lives are way more important!” Ou Gen tried to persuade the Li brothers while ordering an Iron Blood Guard to return to the Warrior Guild to report and request for backup.

“Boom!”

The Level 10 Gold-ranked Flame General was strong but there were hundreds of Iron Blood Guards.

Being surrounded, the Flame General was strained and battered. In the end, it was slaughtered by Ou Gen on the spot before it could escape back into the teleportation gate.

The leader of Iron Blood Guild ordered his subordinate to enter. However, after he reconsidered it and exchanged ideas with Ou Gen, he decided to let twenty Iron Blood Guards remain behind while letting the eighty Iron Blood Guards advance. At last, he added while looking at the Li brothers, “You guys stay here, it is dangerous in there. You guys are strong but you can’t assimilate into our battle formation, so you guys won’t be helpful.”

How can the Li brothers not go? Not only are they anxious for the others’ safety, they also wanted to inform Yue Yang that a large number of people were coming in so that he could make necessary preparations.

Without a word, they charged into the teleportation gate.

The leader of the Iron Blood Guild stomped the floor angrily, “Ridiculous, those two threw their lives away in the face of wealth!”

Ou Gen on the other hand gave a quick smile, “Youngster are

always like this, when you and I were at their age, even if it was just a Level 3 Irish Elk, neither of us would have given others a chance to touch it. Let them be, who hadn't been young before? Let's go, what we have to do now is to assist and rescue. Once those youngsters suffer a few losses, they will slowly mature."

The Iron Blood Guards thundered towards the teleportation gate with only twenty left outside.

Although there were only a few, the Iron Blood Guards, renown for their combat power kept the two-three hundred adventurers at bay. After all, to be enemies with Iron Blood Guild would mean that they were picking a fight with the Warrior Guild, which many did not dared to do.

In the crowd, some were cursing, while some sighed in disappointment as they had no luck in finding the treasure.

The adventurers continued to gather, eventually their number exceeded five hundred. One group was clearly Dragon Hunters' Fallen Warriors. With a hideous grin, they threw themselves at the Iron Blood Guards.

There was a Fallen Innate Ranker amongst the Dragon Hunters, the Iron Blood Guards were no match for them, and were forced back one step after another... A few hundred adventurers saw their chance and drove forward, one after another. Some joined the massacre while some sneaked through the teleportation gate. There were also some that helped to assist the Iron Blood Guards so that they could escape... The Dragon Hunters didn't try to eradicate the Iron Blood Guards, but flocked through the gates

under the lead of the Fallen Innate Ranker.

Of course, once they entered, their miserable fate was sealed.

Some of them dropped into the man-eating forest of the Wood Palace, with countless man-eating vines wriggling and twisting to welcome their arrival. Some dropped into the Fire Palace filled with lava, and the weaker adventurers fell straight into the lava river and turned into ashes. Those who made to the river bank shrieked in fear as they come face to face with thousands and millions of fire-type monsters.

Miserable cries echoed throughout the Wood and Fire Palace. It echoed from the quicksand traps of the Sand Palace, from the midst of the the huge waves by the Sirens in the Water Palace, and from the Gold Palace of the Puppet Soldiers.

Those who entered tried to fight back, however, due to the various restrictions imposed, they were doomed.

Being restricted from using elemental and strengthening-type beasts, they were unable to muster their full strength. Unique-type beasts were weakened, Fighting-type beasts' strength were reduced by half. This resulted in the adventurers ability to fight to fall, the monsters they once knocked out easily could now easily pulverize them, leaving them with nowhere to hide. The leader of the Iron Blood Guild was on the verge of going berserk when he saw his defenceless subordinates being torn to pieces by the supposedly weak hyenas. "Go, leave, we must leave this place immediately... These damned traps... No, the rescue... Good gracious, we're done for!" He roared.

At first he still wanted to rescue those being dragged into the quicksand by desert spiders, but later he found out that it was all futile; A swarm of desert spiders were encircling them.

Even a single second of delay could lead to a complete defeat.

The ten plus Iron Blood Guards by his side once faced thousands and millions of desert spiders and hyenas fearlessly. The Iron Blood Guards Leader who had always been bold and fearless could only choose to flee right now, because he was a specialised strengthening-type beasts user.

Ou Gen's gaze seem to shake, there were a dozen Iron Blood Guards and hundreds of adventurers around him, defeated and scattered. The Gold-ranked level 10 Flame Beast in the lava river was practically invincible. Moreover, most of the adventurers' beast were hardly useful. The handful of remaining beasts were overwhelmed by the numerous flame-beasts' attack.

They couldn't continue this fight, because it was equivalent to suicide.

Meanwhile, Yue Yang just managed to undo the Runic Circle's seal.

Rays of light sparked and flashed.

With a tremendous boom, a strong ray of light beam shot out

from the centre of the Runic Circle and onto the rock wall across the seal.

The rock wall across the seal crumbled... In the middle of the Runic Circle, a dark cylindrical cave appeared, it was deep and mysterious.

Yue Yang stopped immediately. He did not climb in, full of joy, unlike what an ordinary person would have done. Instead, he stood outside and waited. After a long time, a voice drifted out from the cave, as if the person was sleep-talking: “Smart lad, how did you know there was someone inside? Thank you for undoing the millennium seal for me, I would like to repay you with the best treasure ever. All you have to do is do me a small favour.”

“What favour?” Deep in Yue Yang’s eyes, a flash of light gleamed, as if showing his bloodlust, mocking the owner of the voice.

“You may not know, but this place is the Five Element Palace. Go to the Water Palace and make me a vase. Once you give it to me, I will give you the best treasure I have. Or perhaps a treasure you long for.” The voice was full of enticement, bewitchingly tempting to Yue Yang. He had to will himself to break free from the enticement in the voice.

“Who are you? Why were you sealed here, and why the vase from Water Palace?”

“My name is too ancient, I’m certain you have not heard of it. As for the vase, it contains the highly valuable God’s Wine, it can help

me restore my power. Bring it to me then you can exchange it for the treasure. You don't have to worry, I won't harm you, I swear in the name of god, if I cause you and your pals the slightest harm, I will be imprisoned here forever. You have to understand that all I long for is freedom, I just want to get out of here. Why would I hurt you? You should know that all Elemental-type and Strengthening-type beasts are useless here. All my beasts are elemental-types, so you don't have to worry at all. Fate brought us together, why not let us be friends? We will both get what we want, you want the treasure, I want the God's Wine." The tempting voice was filled with emotions and persuasive, even Yue Yang himself cannot help but feel the urge to help him.

"All right, but I hope you can give me the box next to you, that is the treasure from Gold Palace. It is also my target." Yue Yang stated his condition.

"Why not? To me, this thing does more harm than good." Before he finish, a small golden box flew out.

Yue Yang saw and reached out to catch it.

Suddenly, a gigantic golden hand spawn out of the box and transformed into Devil's Claw. It clawed viciously at Yue Yang's body with unimaginable speed. Yue Yang, who was carrying the sound asleep Bao Er, was unable to dodge quickly.

Yue Yang summoned the Grimoire, activating his protective shield to block this fatal blow.

However, the gold Devil's Claw was slowly penetrating the protective shield and closing in, preparing to crush Yue Yang.

“I knew you couldn't resist asking for the golden box, no one can resist their greed for treasures. I spent a thousand years transferring my soul into it, simply for this day. Did you know? Once anyone asked for it, the restrictions here will not restrict my abilities anymore. Heh heh, after I take over your body, the whole Tong Tian Tower will tremble at the sight of my return! ” The voice sneered coldly.

“Don't be so cocky. Although you have a few tricks up your sleeve, don't assume others are idiots.” Yue Yang's eyes gleamed with bloodlust.

As if music from heaven, a Phoenix's cry resonated through the air.

Nirvana's Flames soared through the sky.

Chapter 398 – Divine Molten Meteorite Gold

A wise person may be ruined by his own wisdom.

If the powerful opponent hiding inside the golden box knew that not long ago, the Dark Golden Specter, which broke through the White Jade Beetle upon being unsealed, was killed instantly by the Phoenix Sisters due to the fact that it attacked Yue Yang, it probably would not have done such a foolish thing. Immortal Beasts were often extremely powerful, they were also kind hearted by nature. Normally they would not take the initiative to attack any other living creatures. However, once they were attacked maliciously by their enemies, they would strike back immediately, causing destructive damage mercilessly. This was also a display of the [Immortal Beasts](#)' dignity.

(Shiro: For those who are confused, there are Eastern Goblin Tribe and Eastern Immortal Tribe.

Eastern Goblin Tribe: Flying Tiger Ambassador, Leopard, Bears and the others who attacked Yue Yang during the Hundred Schools Tournament.

Eastern Immortal Tribe: Qilin girl, the two phoenix sisters in Yue Yang's body, the two Dragon Girls who were with the Elder Nan Gong when Yue Yang was offered a position in the Innate Alliance.

Eastern Goblin Tribe is the sub-race of the Eastern Immortal Tribe, which is much more powerful.)

Similarly, the Phoenix Sisters, being Guardian Beasts were also the same.

When their owner, Yue Yang was subjected to attacks that he

could not defend, they would immediately wake up from their slumber and fiercely attack the enemies.

The Five Element Palace's overpowering Restrictive Code works even on an Innate Ranker like Yue Yang, however, for the Phoenix Sisters, they could ignore the Five Element Palace's restrictions entirely. Nirvana's Flames soared through the sky, instantly forming a gigantic Nirvana Flame Phoenix. Even though the Phoenix Sisters did not appear, the Nirvana Flame was under their control making it extremely formidable.

When the metamorphosed Nirvana Flame Phoenix attacked the golden box using a ball of raging flames, the hidden opponent who had lost its physical body and was left with only his spirit energy, quickly escaped from the box in horror.

The golden box melted quickly as the demon-like shadow fled quickly, while trying to break through the encircling Nirvana's Flames.

However, it was all in vain.

His spirit energy dissolved as if it was snow in the Nirvana's Flames, leaving nothing behind.

The demon-like shadow turned and rolled under the raging flames, in severe pain worse than death.

"Let me go, I am willing to be your servant..." The demon-like

shadow struggled with all his might. Before his body dissolved, he called out to Yue Yang to compromise.

“Not a bad idea, looks like I can consider.” Yue Yang pretended to be thinking hard.

“No, Spare me!” After shouting out this last request, the demon-like shadow was unable to make any more noises as his entire body had dissolved.

The Nirvana Flame burnt even more brightly, as if its flames had life, whirling slowly.

A vortex was formed.

The flames quickly cleansed everything in the area.

Not even half a minute, the Nirvana Flames cleansed the dissolved demon-like shadow completely, leaving only a small Silver Pearl which dropped into Yue Yang’s palms with a “Pa” sound.

Yue Yang fished out the Dark Pearl left by the Dark Golden Specter, upon comparison, he decided that the two were similar.

Looks like, they were both ancient rankers that were sealed. The question now was whether this type of seal was done by the same highly skilled person... Sigh, when could he possess such a powerful sealing ability? Yue Yang was really looking forward to

the future. If he could master this kind of sealing technique, Shun Tian, Black Prince and Thousand Goblins Sect Leader would all just become small fries.

In the sky, the Nirvana Flame Phoenix held onto a lump of shiny golden liquid using its beaks and flew down.

This was the treasure inside the golden box, now it had already become liquid.

Delighted, Yue Yang quickly used a jade vase to receive it, and used his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to examine. “Oh my god! It was actually ‘Divine Molten Meteorite Gold!’ ”

Molten gold normally refers to gold that had melted to its liquid state.

Divine Molten Meteorite Gold actually refers to the legendary Divine-ranked weapons or treasures used by extremely strong fighters, that had been melted into liquid... Divine-ranked weapons were unbreakable existences, especially those that contained spirits such as the Prison Emperor Divine Sword and Prison Emperor Divine Staff. They were all unbreakable existences. Divine-ranked weapons that could be melted into molten gold were one in a million.

This meant that the owner could recast the Divine-ranked weapon.

Yue Yang was sure that the Golden box just now contained parts or fragments of a Divine-ranked Weapon. As to how it was broken, he does not know. Anyways, the Phoenix sisters had gave him big help, they unexpectedly melted the fragments of the Divine-ranked Weapon into liquid using Nirvana's Flame.

If it were Yue Yang instead, even if he tried smelting everyday for a month diligently without stopping, to the point that he would drop to the ground from fatigue, he may still be unable to smelt it.

More importantly, after being smelted by the Phoenix Sisters, not only did it leave the Divine-ranked Weapon fragments inherent qualities undamaged, its value was also upgraded.

Yue Yang wouldn't have this confidence if he were to smelt it himself. Being able to retain the inherent qualities of the Divine-ranked Weapon's fragments was a miracle. Now with the phoenix sisters' help, Yue Yang was bursting with joy. With the Immortal Beasts in my hand, the whole world will be mine! Right now the phoenix sisters were still young, yet they were so impressive. When they grow up, wouldn't they be capable of wreaking disasters and havoc? Yue Yang really wanted to hug the phoenix sisters and kiss their tiny cheeks. Too bad the phoenix sisters didn't plan on coming out to give him this chance to express his feelings.

Looking at the Divine Molten Meteorite Gold in the vase, Yue Yang's eyes almost turned heart shaped.

In fact, he was not the one to blame. If a Dwarf Elder saw it, he would probably strip himself naked, run around, and then stand at

the peak of the Dwarf Castle and scream for three days and three nights.....

Divine Molten Meteorite Gold was something used to create divine weapons.

If he were to add a legendary Warrior's Soul and a few drops of God's Blood, he would be able to make a divine weapon immediately and a high quality one at that!

Even without the Warrior's Soul or God's Blood, sacrificing a psychic-type beast or embedding a Soul Pearl, Dragon Crystal, etc would do the trick. It would be a Level 1 divine weapon, but at the very least, it would still be a Divine-ranked Weapon.

“The only downside was there was only a little of this treasure. Only one small bottle, it would be nice if there was a whole tank full.” Yue Yang sighed greedily. Divine Molten Meteorite Gold was not mineral water, one small bottle was enough to make others green with envy. To be specific, Divine Molten Meteorite Gold was more precious than divine weapons. Divine weapons select their own owner, but Divine Molten Meteorite Gold could be made into their very own, custom-made divine weapon. Comparing the two, even fools would choose Divine Molten Meteorite Gold.

“Zzzzzzz... “ Bao Er was still sound asleep heartlessly.

Yue Yang pricked her finger with a needle lightly, but she only shrivelled a little and showed no sign of waking up at all.

Yue Yang grasped her finger and squeezed a drop of blood into Divine Molten Meteorite Gold. Immediately, a burst of rainbow-like light illuminated the whole cavern.

Virgin's blood could make the Divine Molten Meteorite Gold stay in liquid form longer. It was said that collecting nine chaste virgin's blood could increase the divine weapon by one level when casting the divine weapon.

Of course as to how Bao Er's blood contributed, Yue Yang would never tell this elf loli, in case she get too full of herself.

He put away the Divine Molten Meteorite Gold and collected the Silver Pearl.

Yue Yang once again entered the deep cave with its seal undone. Inside, there were numerous ancient characters, as if it was a record or some sort. Yue Yang did not recognise a single word, but he believed if he brought it back, the sickly beauty would be happy to enlighten him. After making a copy, Yue Yang found a sealing circle. Too bad it was already broken and battered after Yue Yang forced it open, or else Yue Yang would have made a copy and try to seal an Innate Ranker himself for practice.

As a rule, he made a copy of the broken Sealing Circle to give it to the sickly-beauty for research.

After exiting the cave, Yue Yang discovered that on the rock wall across where the beam of light shone onto, the crumbled rock wall had revealed a gigantic teleportation circle. This should be the

teleportation circle that leads to the centre of the Five Element Palace or the next palace.

Yue Yang stood on the teleportation circle and inputted some energy.

He was teleported in a flash.

The next second, Yue Yang found himself on the surface of what seemed like an underground sea. Dozens of sea nymphs and sirens quickly swam towards him one after another.

In the centre of the underground sea, there was a tiny island that glowed faintly.

On the beach in a distance away, upon thousands of Wind Breath Seabirds' attack, countless mercenaries were battered and beaten as they tried to flee.

If it wasn't for the Bronze-rank Level 5 Wind Breath Seabirds' weak attacks due to their low levels, these people would have been dead long ago. Yue Yang saw those mercenaries that looked like black points from afar, but he didn't pay any attention to them. He turned towards the island and started treading on the waves instead. Before those sea nymphs and sirens that intended to attack could even approach him, they realised that a Little Lamia Loli had appeared. Immediately after Stone-element Medusa and Storm Mermaid appeared, they scattered and fled in all directions... Stone-element Medusa didn't chase them, instead, she summoned the Gold Tiger Shark for Yue Yang to ride on.

The Storm Mermaid created a huge wave, aiding the Gold Tiger Shark's swimming speed and charged towards the tiny island.

The sea nymphs and sirens along the way were terrified and fled in different directions.

Although they may not have the intelligence, their instincts could tell them what was dangerous...

Around ten kilometres away, Fatty Hai was suffering from a headache. The Wind Breath Seabird was still pursuing him closely, however, both were exhausted.

When Fatty Hai stops to rest, that Wind Breath Seabird also stops, as if exhausted. However, once Fatty Hai stood up, it would start flying immediately, continuing the chase. It just won't spare this Fatty.

"Please sir, could you, I beg you, spare me!" Fatty Hai's on the verge of tears. What the hell was this place? None of his companions were around, he didn't even know where the teleportation exit was. Just staying here was miserable enough, but there just had to be a Wind Breath Seabird that wouldn't give up and leave him alone. He just wanted to catch it and eat roasted meat, now that it had already beat him a few hundred times, couldn't it just forgive him?

"Help, help!" Fatty Hai suddenly heard someone calling for help, and that someone was calling towards him. Round the corner,

Fatty Hai saw numerous Wind Breath Seabirds shrouding the entire sky as they chased after a bunch of mercenaries.

Fatty Hai jumped out of his skin. One Wind Breath Seabird was already a torture, a thousand of Wind Breath Seabirds would definitely eat him alive!

Fatty Hai didn't have the habit of doing good deeds like [Lei Feng](#). When he heard the others calling for help, his first thought was still to save his own pitiful life.

(Shiro: [Lei Feng](#) is basically a selfless soldier who died for his country. He is used as propaganda by Mao Ze Dong after his death.)

He widened his stride and ran back madly with all his might.

That Wind Breath Seabird continued to chase after him relentlessly.

After an hour—

With the help of Xiao Wen Li, Stone-element Medusa and the Storm Mermaid, Yue Yang who defeated the Guardian of the Water Palace, Demon Tidal Fang, obtained the Water Palace's treasure, 'Dragon Sealing Pearl' with ease. However, the God's Wine was nowhere to be found. The Ranker whom he annihilated was probably lying to make Yue Yang let his guard down.

Riding the Gold Tiger Shark, he swam under the ocean with ease. All of a sudden he found Fatty Hai lying on the sandy beach like a

dead dog, flat on his back with his beer belly facing up.

Next to him was a Wind Breath Seabird in a similar position.

“What are you doing here?” Yue Yang was curious about the exhausted Fatty Hai who was lying on the beach. Did his head get caught in the teleportation gate just now? Could the teleportation gate do that?

“What actually happened was that, this goddamned bird kept on chasing me. Of course I had to run, but it continued chasing so I continued to run, and then I got so freaking tired.” Fatty Hai had difficulties trying to explain. He found it difficult to explain himself. Don’t even talk about Yue Yang, he couldn’t even believe it himself that a Bronze-ranked Level five Wind Breath Seabird was capable of beating him to a pulp. Was this even possible? Who would believe this?

“Oh, ok. Please carry on!” Yue Yang seemed to be very understanding. Before he left, he commented, “This little birdy was not bad, it looks quite clever.”

“Did you hear that? He said you are smart! That bastard Yue Yang hardly praises anyone!” Fatty Hai shouted noisily at the Wind Breath Seabird which was also so exhausted that it laid flat on its back. Fatty Hai tiptoe-ed and approached it. Suddenly he pounced to catch it, but the Wind Breath Seabird flapped its wings and flew up into the air, leaving Fatty Hai helpless to catch it.

Once Fatty Hai saw that Yue Yang really left, he started running

after him fearfully, following closely behind.

That Wind Breath Seabird spat out a Wind Blade, hitting Fatty right in his big fat ass, causing him to fall, almost on his face. Fatty Hai was so furious he almost fumed, “Motherfucker, don’t let me catch you. Otherwise, I swear I will strip your feathers one by one! If you have the guts, get out of here and fight me one on one. Bullying me here does not count. Come, follow me if you dare... Fuck, I forgot I had Contract Scroll. You are dead meat. Once my contract is successful, I will roast you. Don’t run if you have the guts!”

Once it saw Fatty Hai taking out his Contract Scroll, the smart Wind Breath Seabird realised the tables have turned and immediately fled.

Fatty Hai glanced in the direction which Yue Yang took his leave. He gritted his teeth and decided to take care of this Seabird first and foremost... He took two steps at a time with huge strides, chasing continuously. Now the situation had flipped. Just now it was a bird chasing a man, now it was a man chasing a bird!

At that moment, Yue Yang was already teleported to the Wood Palace.

The whole forest was filled with man-eating flowers and veins, but once the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen appeared, they behaved so well, a hundred times way better than an obedient child. Everyone stood motionless, quietly.

Not only that, the man-eating trees along the path even pointed out the directions to Yue Yang. Leading him into the Wood Palace's core region, where the Millennium Ancient Tree was located.

Chapter 399 – World Treasure, Wishing Dutchman's Pipe

“What did you say? A hundred thousand gold? Do you think I'm a millionaire?!” Prince of Tian Luo madly shouted.

Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo stood under a hundred meter-tall tree. The huge tree appeared like it had a human face. Its had eyes, nose, and mouth, that looked a little sinister. Its two huge hands extended from its chin. It had no neck and an extremely short body. Its knees were deeply rooted into the earth and its head was abnormally lushful. It looked like a tiny dwarf who was wearing a helmet of overgrown bush. It looked extremely hilarious.

This was the Wood Palace's Guardian, the Evil [Millennium Ancient Tree](#).

(Shiro: Disclaimer – it is actually ten thousand years old, but millennium ancient tree sounds nicer than ten thousand years old ancient tree. I think Oxford need to invent a word to describe ten thousand years collectively.)

Of course, this Evil Millennium Ancient Tree was unlike those evil, homicidal human being maniacs. Although its name was Evil Millennium Ancient Tree, it was only a little money-grubbing and stingy.

Just as Xue Tan Lang and the Prince of Tian Luo came in front of it, to ask where the teleportation point was, it asked for a hundred thousand gold. This price even made Prince of Tian Luo, who came

from a prosperous family, shout in shock.

“No money? If you don’t have money I can’t tell you the teleportation point.” When that Evil Millennium Ancient Tree heard that they didn’t have money, it immediately closed its eyes and did not pay anymore attention to them.

“...” Prince of Tian Luo was speechless. If it was outside, he would have already summoned a meteor to destroy it.

Unfortunately he had no way of summoning in this mysterious space.

Inside the Wood Palace, summoning any other beasts besides plant-type beasts would result in a tragedy.

Xue Tan Lang did not say a thing. His face remained calm and cool. His Storm Giant and Prince of Tian Luo’s Heavenly Meteor were both elemental-types and could not be summoned here. Since they had no way of attacking, they could only wait there. Waiting for Fatty Hai and Ye Kong won’t do, they had to wait for Yue Yang. Xue Tan Lang had a lot of patience. He simply closed his eyes, sat cross-legged under the tree and began cultivating.

Seeing this, the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree immediately shouted: “Hey, Wait a minute. If you guys want to train here, you must first ask me, the owner, for my permission. If you want to let me agree to let you stay here and train, it’s very easy, just give me money! If you don’t have a hundred thousand then ten thousand. You should probably have ten thousand gold right? Hand it over or

I will not allow you to train here!”

Prince of Tian Luo was baffled. This ancient tree stayed here for its entire lifetime, what use would money be?

Now, it actually wants us to hand over ten thousand gold?

The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree urged tens of times. In the end it angered Xue Tan Lang and he angrily roared: “Shut up!”

That Evil Millennium Ancient Tree only bullies the weak and fears the strong. Seeing the ice cube guy truly become angry, it conceded and used its black slender arms to scratch its head as if a human scratching their heads: “Then let’s do it like this, the benevolent me allow you to pay late, but there is an interest, do you understand? The interest cannot be lacking.”

“What interest?” Having heard Xue Tan Lang shout angrily, Yue Yang had thought that his brother-in-law had been attacked and ran over here to see. He discovered a very funny looking treant stood in front and couldn’t help but give it a thumbs up: “Your appearance is extremely interesting and creative. I have no choice but to say that you are a masterpiece of heaven and earth!”

“Thank you, but I like money more than praises. Do you have money? If you give me a thousand gold, I would become happier, at the same time it would represent the Wood Palace’s welcome to your arrival. Do you want to leave? I can tell you where the teleportation point is as long as you give me money! Also, do you need treasures? You can exchange them with money. Whatever

treasure you want I have them all as long as you have enough money. I dare say that you can get the treasure that you have been yearning for!” The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree believed that Yue Yang was praising him and laughed out loud. He then extended his tree arms and his branch fingers to peddle into business with Yue Yang.

Yue Yang didn’t think that the ugly appearance of the treant was unusual, because most of the plant-type beasts were also ugly. Only a few were not.

However, this was the first time Yue Yang met an ugly AND greedy treant.

When he heard about money, Yue Yang ‘s response was not as helpless as the Tan Luo Prince’s.

He immediately clapped and laughed.

Yue Yang lightly knocked on his Gemini Mask: “Treant, please take note, you are currently speaking with a rich man.”

Prince of Tian Luo looked at Yue Yang and became pleasantly surprised. However, when he heard that he was prepared to do business with the treant, he immediately pulled Yue Yang to one side: “This wretched treant is a blood-sucker. When he starts to talk it would be a hundred thousand gold. Let me tell you, don’t waste words with it and directly use fire to burn it. Or, how about calling your Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen out and tell her to swallow this bastard. But I don’t know if swallowing this

damned treant would cause her indigestion!”

“Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen?” When the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree heard this, its face slightly perspired. It knew that the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was the strongest plant-type beast. The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen wouldn’t be a joke.

“Do you want me to let her out and say hi to you?” Yue Yang asked with a brilliant smile.

The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree shook its big head with a rustle as the leaves on its head trembled: “N, no. Dear Ranker, from a while ago, I have already received the report from the tree demons. I have already received the news of the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queens’ arrival. The sincere me welcomes her arrival and also welcome you, because you are her owner. Let us return to the business conversation. Do you have any interests in buying treasures from me? No matter what treasure, I have them, as long as you can pay the amount. I have the ‘Cyan Tree Shoot’. No matter where you plant it, you can grow a tree fort and endless wood, how about it? Do you want this treasure? It only costs ten thousand gold!”

Yue Yang nodded his head: “The Warrior’s Guild outside only sell it for a thousand gold and you are selling it for ten times the price. You black hearted merchant, no, black hearted old tree!”

The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree did not have any reactions towards Yue Yang’s criticism. It shamelessly haggled the price: “You get what you pay for. This Cyan Tree Shoot worth a hundred

thousand gold is different. This is an Ancient Tree Shoot, do you understand? This shoot came from ten thousand years ago!”

Yue Yang was surprised and asked: “Will shoots from ten thousand years ago still grow?”

The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree sweated and coughed: “Of course it can, as long as you spend thirty thousand gold to buy a bottle of ‘Earth’s Core Dew’. This dew is collected from the spirit energy of the Earth’s Core for ten million years. It is the world’s most delicious spring water, when an ordinary person drinks a drop, even if their body was extremely spent, they would immediately recover their full strength.

Yue Yang clapped his hand: “Earth’s Core Dew is indeed good stuff. The problem is one bottle is only worth six hundred gold. On the Night Empress’ Sky Garden, the Spirit Energy Spring that comes out from under the Rainbow Waterfall produces this kind of stuff. I normally use it to take a bath and water the plants. You are not wrong for opening the price at thirty thousand, but whoever buys it from you would be the world’s greatest idiot. Do you want me to sell you a bucket of it for six hundred gold, my dear clever Treant?”

“Okay, I can give you Earth’s Core Dew for free. However, the Cyan Tree Sprout must be bought for ten thousand gold. I cannot change this price.” The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree persisted on this. Seeing that Yue Yang was still unmoved, it worriedly corrected itself: “Cough, it seems I have two stalks of them, two for ten thousand, how does that sound?”

“Add in ten bottles of Earth’s Core Dew!” Yue Yang’s attitude was to ask for more goods at a lower price.

“Didn’t you have a lot of Earth’s Core Dew?” The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree became angry.

“If I have them, then it is my business. Even if I like to use it to flush the toilet what can you do about it? No, let’s call it off... besides I already know where the teleportation point in the Wood Place is already, since the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen helped me ask earlier.” Yue Yang was prepared to leave. This was a technique necessary in buying things from a store. Seeing that the customer was about to leave, the shop owner will definitely rush over and pull him back in the store and talk again. Most likely they would definitely agree with the customer’s price. If not, they could ignore the customer’s price and continued to latch onto the customer relentlessly, the only problem was the amount they earned.

“Then let us quickly go. The way I see it, let’s not take this item!” Prince of Tian Luo agreed with Yue Yang’s haggling.

“Wait a minute, don’t rush to leave the Wood Palace. Our deal is not yet over. Okay, I agree with you, but I only have three bottles of Earth’s Core Dew. How about three bottles of Earth’s Core Dew and Two stalks of Cyan Tree Shoots for a total of nine thousand nine hundred and ninety nine gold?” The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree inquired.

“I’ll give you the ten thousand gold, you beggar!” Yue Yang got angry and almost kicked the ancient tree down.

“Thank you, thank you for your purchase!” The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree shamelessly agreed.

“What!” Prince of Tian Luo’s head almost fell on the ground.

After transacting the Cyan Tree Sprout and the Earth’s Core Dew, the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree happily swallowed the ten thousand gold. Its body emitted a faint golden aura, making him incessantly happy. He laughed loudly and asked: “Let us continue with the business, do you still have money?”

Yue Yang raised his thumb in an extremely cool manner and shook it: “I feel that your customer service is really bad. If you must know, this person in front of you is a billionaire!”

When the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree heard it, it immediately bowed, making its leaves rustle: “Yes, let me apologize!”

Yue Yang took out a chair and sat on it like a master, the only thing missing would be having two servant girls behind him fanning him, “What other treasures do you have? Let me hear it. If it’s low ranked, you don’t have to tell me. Even the trash swept out from the corner my house are all gold-ranked treasures!”

Hearing this, the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree breathed quickly, “I won’t hide it from you. I have a true treasure, but it is a priceless treasure. You should at least give me ten million gold without a single gold missing. It must be ten million gold, because, that is... Let me confirm if you have ten million gold. If you don’t, quickly

go back and get it. If I don't see the money, I will never tell you what treasure it is!"

Hearing this, Prince of Tian Luo's heart shook, it seems like the treant truly has an precious treasure.

However, he knew that if Yue Yang showed interest in it, the greedy treant would definitely increase the price. He signaled to Xue Tan Lang with his eye: "What treasure could be so expensive?"

Xue Tan Lang intentionally snorted: "The item is definitely a fake!"

The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree's body trembled continuously, as if it was very angry. It blurted out without thinking: "You two loathsome paupers, let me tell you how genuine I am. Have you ever heard of the 'Wishing Dutchman's Pipe? As long as you make a wish with it, then there is a chance that your beasts would level up to become a Holy Beast, or even Divine Beasts! Could both of you country bumpkins even understand how precious it is? I was afraid that it might shock you, see if you still doubt me!"

"Tch, who doesn't know about the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe. It is a Rank 7 Treasure. If the wish is too small, it's not worth it; if the wish is too big, it would not succeed. It is only a dubious treasure. The most important thing is that, it will immediately wilt regardless of whether the wish is granted or not. It is only a single use item, what use would it be." Of course, Prince of Tian Luo knew the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe price. However, it was a rare item that simply cannot be bought by money. Even if it only has a small probability of making Beasts into Holy Beasts, it was still a

treasure yearned by many Rankers.

“What do you understand? I used God’s Dew, God’s Wine and God’s Water to grow this Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe. Its flowers are everlasting, do you understand? It is a Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe that will never wilt! Whoever could obtain this can make wishes forever. Of course, there is a three year interval for making wishes, but it is the world’s best treasure. No, I must ask for a hundred million gold for this, I will not sell it for less.” After the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree spoke, Prince of Tian Luo almost drooled a waterfall.

Prince of Tian Luo pulled Yue Yang over: “Brother-in-law, we must get this treasure. If you don’t have enough money, I can go back and move the entire Tian Luo’s treasury here.”

Hearing this, Xue Tan Lang was also stunned.

It would sell a Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe that could make wishes forever? How could there be such an idiot in this world?

However, thinking about it, even if the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree had it, it would be useless. This was because the Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe must be used by an owner on his beasts. It was only an Evil Treant and not a Divine Beast. It was like a beggar having a treasury without the keys to it and still starve in the end.

Yue Yang poured the gold that he received from An Dong’s treasury as well as the gold from Demon Eye’s Platinum-ranked Ring on the floor, creating a small gold mountain.

He stood on top of the gold mountain with an arrogant attitude: “As long as you say yes, then all this gold will be yours. On the other hand, if you hesitated even a little, or if you want to haggle over the price, I will immediately take away the money and walk away, never coming back here ever. I will begin the countdown from ten. If you don’t speak within ten counts, then I will take my leave!”

The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree’s body shook, it had never seen so much gold before.

Let alone the treant, even the Prince of Tian Luo, who had entered the Tian Luo Kingdom’s Treasury before, had never seen so much money. Even if there wasn’t ten million gold inside, it would still at least be millions of gold. How in the world did Yue Yang manage to rob so much gold?

“Ten, nine, eight, seven...”

Yue Yang counted quickly, so fast that the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree didn’t have time to ponder on it.

The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree’s eyes flickered with two \$\$ sign. It quickly shouted, “Stop counting, stop counting. The more you count the more worried I am. Stop counting, I will agree to it, let us exchange. Now leave the stack of gold, quickly leave, and don’t attempt to steal a single one because it’s all mine! Forest God up above, thank you for finally listening to my prayers! I’ve been poor for ten thousand years, now I finally have money! Ahaha, I

finally have money!”

After receiving the crystal bottle containing the Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe, Yue Yang, Prince of Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang quickly left.

On one hand, they were afraid that the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree would be regretful, because an Eternal Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe was far too important and precious.

On the other hand, they could not tolerate its greedy attitude. Prince of Tian Luo said that he had seen the greediest man before, but he pale in comparison to this Evil Millennium Ancient Tree.

When they arrived at the teleportation gate and prepared to enter the Fire Palace, Prince of Tian Luo asked: “Could the Ancient Cyan Tree Shoot really be bought using a thousand gold?”

Yue Yang smiled and did not answer.

In truth, the lowest auction price for the Ancient Cyan Tree Shoot was five hundred thousand gold and cannot be obtained without reaching two to three million.

As for the Earth’s Core Dew, it was something Yue Yang truly wanted. The Sky Garden simply did not have it. Moreover, how could he use Earth’s Core Dew to take a bath and water the flower? In the black market, a bottle would cost a million gold. Moreover, even if one wished to buy it, it would already be sold out.

Many treasures were simply too priceless and could only come by once in a blue moon!

Chapter 400 – Hui Tai Lang, Hui Tai Lang!

The Wishing Dutchman's Pipe was considered to be an extremely high quality treasure, or something of little value that you could not bear to throw away.

Its value was determined by its ability to realise one's wish. If it could, then no other treasures could match up to it.

Of course, it would also depend on how greedy the wisher was.

If he was too greedy, for example, turning a Level 1 Bronze-ranked beast to Level 10 Diamond-ranked beast, needless to say, he would definitely fail. After thousand years of historical records and experiences from all the past wishers, it could be concluded that the wish-realising ability of the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe had stringent restrictions and a mysterious probability of success. It was said that those virgins who were pure physically and mentally had the highest rate of success. If it were to be a shady, scheming conspirator, the level of difficulties of them utilising the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe to make a Holy Beast would be akin to passing a mammoth through the eye of a needle.

As for the probability, those who used it in the past shared various experiences.

Almost everyone concluded that wishes that were close enough to current condition would have the highest probability to succeed.

In other words, if a Beast's power was near a Holy Beast already, and there were just some gaps in terms of intellectual ability, there would be a huge probability that it would turn into a Holy Beast after its owner wished for it.

Another way to succeed would be to make a wish easily accomplished... For example, two thousand years ago, there was a Warrior named Gou Wa who made a wish to the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe for his Beast, a mongrel with skin diseases to have a smooth and shiny fur again. In the end his wish was granted, and the mongrel with skin disease levelled up to become a [Howling Celestial Dog](#). He became powerful from then on and after many years, Gou Wa who made the wish became a famous Innate Ranker known as 'Tian Gou', and he went on to fight the Demon Abyss with his Howling Celestial Dog, and prevented the Demon's invasion. Although he died from the battle later on, he took down two Demon Kings with him, making him a human Ranker who had shocked the whole of Demon Abyss.

(Shiro: Howling Celestial Dog is [Er Lang Shen](#)'s dog. [Tian Gou](#) means Heavenly Dog)

Normal people did not know that Gou Wa was just a Level Two Braveman before making the wish. His rank was just an insignificant as an ant to the Demon Kings.

After making the wish, his dog with skin disease became a Howling Celestial Dog while Gou Wa became Tian Gou that could fight against two Demon Kings.

This was the power of a Wishing Dutchman's Pipe.

“Brother-in-law, don’t go to the Wood Palace ever again, if not the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree would kill you, definitely!” Prince Tian Luo felt that Yue Yang was too wicked, he had never seen such an evil person. Even if the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree was a hundred times more wicked, it couldn’t compare to him.

“This is great.” Xue Tan Lang curled his aloof lips into a rare smile.

The eternal Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe that would not wither forever, it could definitely surpass a divine weapon. No one would even exchange it for ten divine weapons.

One can make a wish every three years.

That would make ten wishes in thirty years and one hundred wishes in three hundred years.

How could all the hundred wishes fail to realise? If one wish was realised, then it would make the Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe worthy. It would be rewarding if two wishes were realised... The 10% success rate would make all other divine weapons pale in comparison. One had to know that not everyone could be as abnormal as Yue Yang as to own so many Guardian Beasts and Holy Beasts, and even Hui Tai Lang the Divine Beast!

Other Warriors could only wish for a Holy Beast in his lifetime.

Owning a Holy Beast was already a wishful yearning for all the

warriors...

“You guys, don’t be too anxious. Wait for me to study it slowly, after i find out the method to achieve the highest success rate, we can test it out repeatedly.” Yue Yang did not expect that it would allow him to mass produce Holy Beasts, it would be impossible, but using the Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe to level up his Beasts and overcome some of their limitations would definitely be possible.

The greatest obstruction that prevented a Beast from turning into a Holy Beast was either its own potential, or an inherent unbreakable hindrance.

Only by breaking these hindrance would they be awarded with the possibility of levelling up progressively.

For example, for a Beast without any intelligence, if it were to be awarded with some intelligence, even just a little, it could mark the start for it to become a Holy Beast. Them becoming a Holy Beast would be a different story, but at least they were awarded with such opportunities.

After leaving the Wood Palace, they entered the Fire Palace.

The huge lake of lava made Xue Tan Lang’s combat power dip to a minimum. However, on contrary, Prince Tian Luo’s combat power rose to the maximum.

Reason being, his Guardian Beast, ‘Sky Fire Meteor’ was a fire

type, so he could use it effectively in the Fire Palace and maximise its strength.

The duo separated with Yue Yang temporarily as Yue Yang the treasure hunter maniac went to the centre of the lava lake to fight the BOSS. As Prince Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang wouldn't be of much help, they went downstream in hopes of looking for missing teammates. As they went along, they left some markings such that when the other teammates see them, they could catch up quickly.

More than ten kilometres from them, Li En and Anna were resting on a rock wearily.

With Hui Tai Lang around, the two Golden Elves would be safe.

But the adventurers who were further away suffered tremendously as they fled in a sorry state.

Ou Gen led the Iron Blood Guards, together with ten other adventurers who were following them to charge forward as the Fire Monsters and Flame Demons were chasing closely behind from the lava pool.

Five minutes later, Ou Gen discovered Anna and Lin En. Although he was also in danger, the helpful Ou Gen still tried to reach out to them. "Don't move, I'll go and help you all right away, don't move, wait for me!" Not knowing if they should laugh or cry, Lin En and Anna watched as Ou Gen tried to distract Flame Demon and Fire Monster and then making a sharp turn quickly as he ran in front of Hui Tai Lang, panting. "Quick, bring along your pet

dog, we have to leave soon, those monsters from the lava lake will be coming for us anytime...eh, why are they not chasing us?" Ou Gen shouted to Lin En.

All the Fire Monsters and Flame Demons stopped dead in their track one thousand metres away. With the instinct of a beast, they sensed danger.

Especially those Fire Monsters whom Hui Tai Lang had accidentally left out from killing. After a furious discussion on the river bed of the lava pool, the troop of Flame Demons and Fire Monsters stopped their pursuit.

The leader of the Flame Demons, a Level Ten Gold-ranked Flame Demon Commander, groaned lowly while the other lower-ranked Demon Commanders walked about, as they dare not to advance easily when facing the lazy Hui Tai Lang. This was because too many of their own kind were killed around the area and the place reeked of death, making them extremely wary and fearful.

The only thing that puzzled them was that the root of their threat was merely a Level Three Bronze-ranked Iron Back Demon Wolf.

Without verbal interaction and comprehending what was going on, and together with the lack of sufficient intelligence to understand the truth, the few Flame Demon Commanders were lost, furious and fearful. They stopped one thousand metres away from them, semi-besieging Ou Gen's troop of Iron Blood Guards and the other adventurers at a distance.

“Rest assured, you are safe now, Hui Tai Lang will protect everyone, don’t leave its side too far, wait for my fellow teammates to rescue us,” the kind Anna tried to comfort Ou Gen.

“What, protecting us with a pet dog?” Upon hearing, some of the adventurers swallowed their saliva while others rolled their eyes. Some even burst out laughing.

“Woof!” Hui Tai Lang indicated disdain towards their responses.

“I’m guessing that there’s an artifact here that stopped the Fire Monster from coming near.” An adventurer was still dreaming that he could discover some hidden treasure stash here.

“A fire type monster require ice type and water type Beast to restrain it, but among us, only a few of our beasts are of these two types. However, even those few beasts are all under the healing category... It’s good that they are not advancing now, I’m just scared that this will change.” Ou Gen wasn’t bothered about Hui Tai Lang. Not only it was low-levelled, more importantly, it was very lazy and appeared low on energy. It did not appear like a strong beast at all.

Moreover, it did not have a contract, how could he depend on it if he wasn’t sure if it would be loyal?

Ou Gen did not really dare to believe Anna.

Anna and Lin En were different from Bao Er, who just arrived to the Seventh Floor from the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. They had been cultivating in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower for a long time, and they knew that men were unpredictable and complicated creatures, not to mention very vicious too. They wouldn't reveal Hui Tai Lang's real identity publicly.

They did not mention a single word on it being a Divine Beast.

Those adventurers who could summon fire type Beast became excited from thinking that there were artifacts around the area that could restrict the Fire Monsters.

They tried to run outside, and on seeing that the Fire Monsters really did not dare to advance, they regained their confidence as they instructed their fire type Beast who were skilled at long distance combat to attack the Fire Monsters, thinking that it was an opportunity bestowed by heaven. With the protection of artifacts, they could attack the monsters without worrying for their retaliation, how good is that! But such thoughts did not even last for a minute. The Flame Demon Commander waved his arms covered in raging flames and immediately, hundreds of the Flame Demons and Fire Monsters charged forward. They then started dragging those whimsical adventurers into the lava lake as they tore and devoured them.

There were even some Lava Fire Snake with no intelligence who glided towards Ou Gen greedily.

The adventurers dispersed in confusions and flee in disarray like ants in a hot pot.

Ou Gen and the Iron Blood Guards gritted their teeth secretly, as they prepared to fight with the demons with their limited manpower to break out of the besiege.

“Wait for me to charge forward with my troop, and then you all flee west immediately, I will send two Iron Blood Guards to shield you all!”

Anna waved her hand to prevent the guards from dying for nothing. “Don’t move, with Hui Tai Lang, those Flame Demons won’t dare to attack, it will protect us, and if you all don’t leave, it can protect you all too... You all will be the safest with us!”

“What?” Ou Gen was stunned when he heard Anna said it for the second time.

Golden Elves wouldn’t lie, but because the previous one was too ridiculous, he did not think much into it.

But on hearing it for the second time, he couldn’t help but look at Hui Tai Lang seriously.

Could this Level Three Bronze-ranked Iron Back Demon Wolf really protect them?

If one were to say that it’s a fire type Beast, it wouldn’t be strange because fire type and earth type Beasts made up the majority of beasts. But seeing Hui Tai Lang, forget about it defeating a Level

Ten Gold-ranked Flame Demon Commander, it might not even be able to defeat a Level Six Bronzed-ranked Flame Demon. Not only were their levels high, they were also in a favourable geographical location. Also, this Iron Back Demon Wolf had a physical body, unlike those elemental fire demons. Although it was fire type too, it would definitely die if it fell into the lava pool. It would be lucky if it could protect itself under such a situation!

Forget about Ou Gen's disbelief, even those less knowledgeable adventurers couldn't believe it either.

A fight between Level three Bronze-ranked beast versus a Level Six Bronze-ranked beast, the outcome was apparent!

A black shadow flashed past.

With a loud booming that shook the entire stone wall, it sent lava crashing out of the lava pool.

Two Lava Fire Snake spanning ten metres were pressed onto the rock and killed easily by Hui Tai Lang. Their heads burst out, spurting out their fiery brain matter all around the lava lake...

Everyone's jaws dropped onto the ground.

The Lava Fire Snake was Level Eight Bronze-ranked. Forget about it being in the geographically advantageous Fire Palace, even if they were outside, normal adventurers wouldn't dare to provoke them, because they were akin to lava. It merely took the form of a

snake, and it was a fire type demon... If they tried fighting it with beasts other than ice or water-types, defeating it would be tough. The Lava Fire Snakes would only die if all the lava in their body were exhausted and their body flooded with large amount of cold water subsequently to harden them, and finally digging the magic crystals out of their skulls.

But the Lava Fire Snake, whom the adventurers thought would be hard to defeat, was killed instantly by Hui Tai Lang, who was merely a Level Three Bronze-ranked Iron Back Demon Wolf!

How could they believe their own eyes?

“Impossible!” A few adventurer leaders yelled weirdly as they couldn’t accept the fact.

“...” However Hui Tai Lang took out two fiery red magic crystals from the lava lake and gulped it down in one mouthful. It then walked back slowly towards the place it was resting before.

The place it passed sent all the Lava Fire Snake scrambling to escape; the adventurer troop also panicked and became disorganised as they formed a passage in the middle for Hui Tai Lang to make its way onto the highest rock and it slept on it lazily.

Upon looking at it again, their disbelief had turned into shock!

Everyone, including Ou Gen, was extremely shocked.

With reality staring them right in their eyes, they could only be convinced... The instant kill caused the Flame Demon Commander to withdraw his troop one thousand metres away. Many Flame Demons hid in the lava lake in fear, not daring to come out even after a long while.

“Is it a Holy Beast?” After a long while, Ou Gen asked, swallowing his saliva.

“I don’t know, because it isn’t my Beast.” Lin En smiled as she shook her head, she wanted to say that it was a Divine Beast, a real Divine Beast!

“Oh so it’s a Holy Beast, no wonder it looked so majestic, look at that smooth and silky fur, one would know that it is a Holy Beast with just one glance!” The adventurers who recovered from shock started to bootlick immediately.

“I had mentioned that it doesn’t look like a simpleton, have you ever seen Level Three Bronze-ranked Iron Back Demon Wolf in the Tong Tian Tower? No! Except for this one, because it is a Holy Beast! Tsk tsk, this Holy Beast really has its own style, look at its ears, it really looked... Too majestic. There’s no other way, I have decided to rename our adventurer party after this Demon Wolf. We will be called the Demon Wolf Party from today onwards...” Another adventurer leader started to praise it shamelessly, almost causing Hui Tai Lang to puke.

If you were to mention corny, Fatty Hai’s bootlick was cornier by a hundred times.

But at least Fatty Hai would only bootlick when there was a need to, this guy on the other hand was totally born to be a bootlicker!

The central lava lake in the distance burst out in a violent tornado as innumerable lava were sucked into the sky, forming a frightening yet grand scene.

Sensing it, Hui Tai Lang jumped up in excitement, its tail wagging frantically.

Its sleepiness was all gone.

Master!

Its master was in the central lava pool, battling. That violent tornado was the original form of the Spirit of Flame and Smoke...

Hui Tai Lang's blood was boiling with excitement as it raised its head and howled into the sky. Giving off a devilish vibe, a black hell flame rose up from its body and formed a giant fire wing spanning ten metres. It flapped its wings and soared to the sky and like a meteorite, it shoot towards the lava lake in the centre, towards its master.